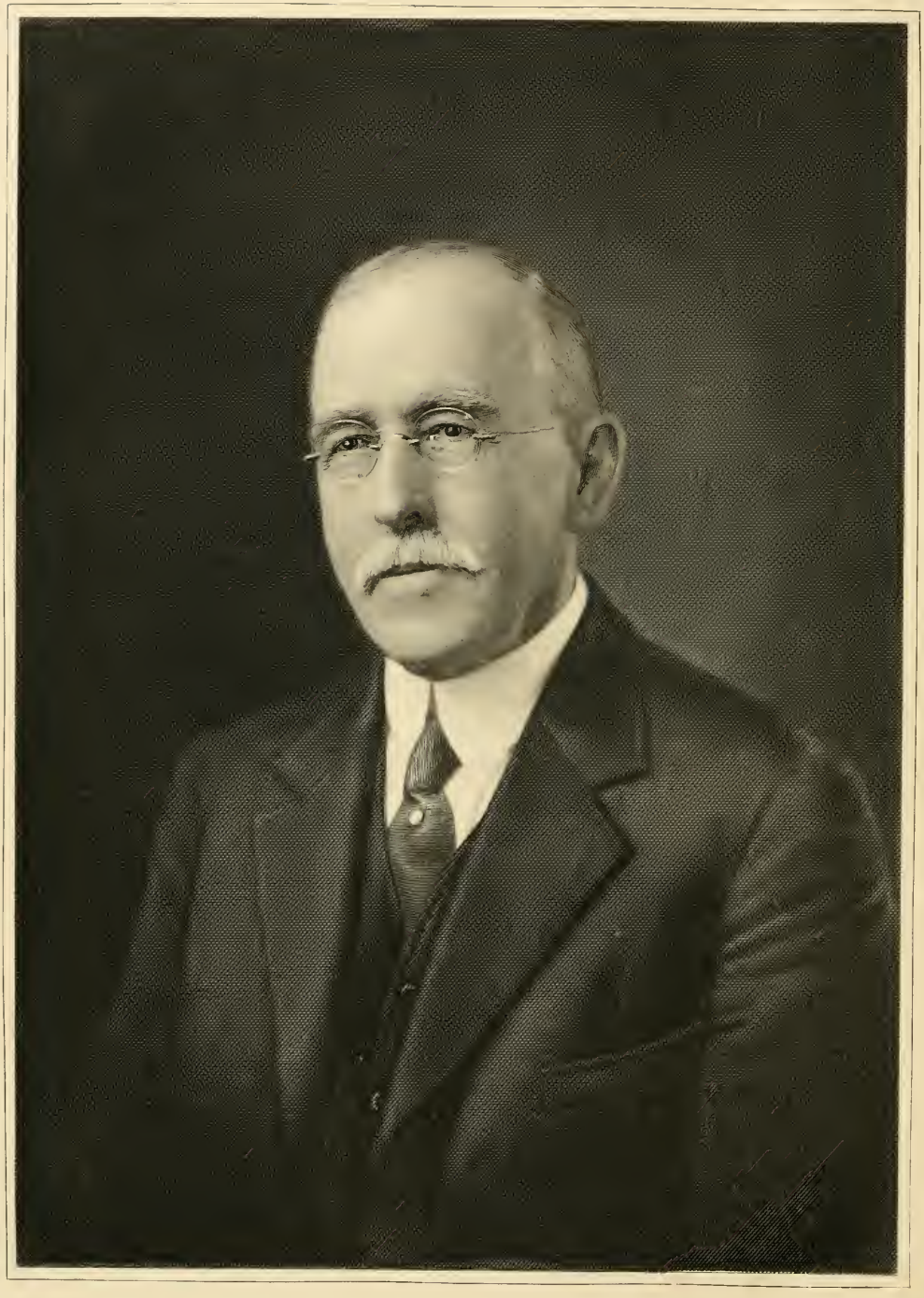
NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07954448 6

1QH
Essex Co.
(

IQH
Essex Co

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS



Benj. F. Arrington

# MUNICIPAL HISTORY

OF

# ESSEX COUNTY

IN

# MASSACHUSETTS

TERCENTENARY EDITION

A classified work, devoted to the County's remarkable growth in all lines of human endeavor; more especially to within a period of fifty years

BENJ. F. ARRINGTON
Editor-in-Chief

---

VOLUME I.

---

1922
LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY
NEW YORK

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
79407A
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1922 L

COPYRIGHT
LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING CO.
1922

# FOREWORD

More than three decades have elapsed since a history of Essex County was presented to the public. The animating purpose in the present work has been two-fold: First, that while provision be made for preservation of the essentials of a recorded past, sundry classifications (second) should also distinguish the activities that attend community growth as well as industrial and commercial expansion. To this end, various subjects have been taken up for individual treatment by writers qualified alike by local association and familiarity with fundamentals to deal befittingly with the matters thus assigned. And this leads to the observation, pertinent both to the moment and mention, that the list of these contributors does not, in all cases, correspond to the enumeration set forth in local preliminary prospectuses. By reason of illness, unexpected pressure of business, or other causes that need not be expressed, some of the listed contributors felt compelled to retire. In a few instances, such were the respective competencies of these gentlemen that the original engagements were held open, at embarrassment from the publishers' standpoint, until the printers were set at work. Then, when the fact became apparent that extension of time could not be rewarded with the promised papers, the common procedure followed, whereby experienced staff writers supplied the need.

While it would have been highly desirable to deal at length with the roster of men from Essex County communities who served in the late World War, in whatever capacity, the fact became manifest at an early stage that anything like adequate enrollment was entirely out of question. County, State and Federal records are yet in an incomplete form. Time, care and patience are among the essentials of such a record as shall command full confidence. If any evidence were needed to demonstrate the imperativeness of awaiting more propitious conditions for the publication of such a record as is here indicated, that evidence could surely be found in Federal government listing of so-called "slackers," in which have appeared, unfortunate to add, the names of service men who either paid the supreme sacrifice on European battle fields, or else died from wounds or from disease contracted in the service. Here and there, to be sure, certain private local collections are reputed to be approximately complete. Even were these deemed competent for insertion in a history framed on lines which mark the present work, they are not available in every instance, primarily because of the intention on the part of their compilers to utilize them in a personal publication, later on. Without appearing, much less attempting, to derogate, it may be said, with perfect candor, that historical works should have for basis in the exploitation of so important a subject as the roster of men who entered the service of the United States in the World War that accuracy which is commonly associated with government supervision, in conjunction with the larger re-

sources of government. Hence the exclusion of even partial lists in this quarter from the special military section of the History. There has been an endeavor, however, carefully to compile the names of those heroes who sacrificed their lives in the late Titanic conflict. In all such listings, dependence has been placed upon local tabulations, under the auspices of town or city authority.

In the compilation of this work, due heed has been paid to the necessities of the constituency sought to be served, in order that individual interest in Massachusetts history, as it is concerned with the proud distinction achieved by Essex County, might be both stimulated and satisfied. This being the case, and that desire having formed the rule and guide to action, the History is presented to the public with the hope that it may prove no less welcome than acceptable.

* * *

As to the special contributors: Mr. Philip Emerson, principal of the Central Junior High School, Lynn, answered the call to write the "Geology and Geography" paper with which this work is prefaced. How well he has contributed to a wider understanding of an ever-interesting subject is attested by the article in question. Frank A. Gardner, M.D., of Salem, prepared "The Story of the Planters." As president of the Old Planters' Society, author of "The Founders of the Massachusetts Bay Colony," "John Endicott and the Men Who Came to Salem in the Abigail in 1626," "The Higginson-Skelton Migration to Salem in 1629," and other publications, he is fully equipped to deal with facts. "Bench and Bar," by Archie N. Frost, Esq., of Lawrence, clerk of courts of Essex county, is the contribution of a writer able to invest his recital with interest to lay readers. Mr. Francis Haseltine, of Lynn, (principal of the Western Junior High School, with a service of thirty-eight years in his profession), deals entertainingly with the public schools of that city; his references to the stimulation of patriotic impulses among the growing youth, as the resultant of juvenile identification with war work at home, are not without significance. "Witchcraft," by Mr. Winfield S. Nevins, of Salem, (whose decease followed not long after the submission of his article), is a resumé of merit. A ready writer on historical subjects, he was able, by reason of previous authorship and study of the witchcraft delusion in Essex county, to speak understandingly. Hon. Albert L. Bartlett, of Haverhill, a prominent figure in the political and commercial life of that city, (Mayor, 1915-1916, and present Commissioner of Public Safety), has portrayed the progress of Haverhill from its early beginnings to the present; the reader will note that the material concerns are treated in the division germane to the city's industrial development. Miss Annie Stevens Perkins, of Lynnfield Centre, who has contributed to the "Youth's Companion" and other publications, tells the story of the growth of Lynnfield. The history of Georgetown is divided between

Miss Ellen W. Spofford and Mr. Harold F. Blake, a member of the newspaper fraternity. The former deals specifically with various features intimately connected with purely historical aspects, while Mr. Blake addresses himself to the general history. Mr. George W. Noyes is the author of the paper on Georgetown's educational interests. Dr. Charles H. Bangs, of Swampscott, vice-president of the Massachusetts Society Sons of the American Revolution, president of the University of Massachusetts, Inc., and secretary of the Edward Bangs Descendants, Inc., wrote the municipal history of Lynn and also the history of Swampscott. It was largely through his efforts that the chart of Massachusetts Bay, appropriately discussed in the Swampscott chapter, was brought to light, after persistent search. Mr. John D. Woodbury, a veteran reporter on Gloucester newspapers, weekly and daily, is the author of several articles, namely: The Postoffice, Lighthouses, Custom House and Newspapers of Gloucester. Yet another newspaper worker, Mr. William C. Morgan, city editor of the Beverly "Times," visualizes shoemaking in that city, and also sketches its newspaper history; while Mr. George A. Mellen, of Lawrence, of the "Eagle-Tribune", performs a similar service in the case of his own city. For the medical chapters, both city and town, the following classification will establish authorship: Lynn, Dr. Carolus M. Cobb; Ipswich, Dr. George A. MacArthur; Peabody, Dr. Horace K. Foster; Lawrence, Dr. V. A. Reed; Amesbury, Dr. John W. Rand. The Catholic churches specially portrayed are those of Lynn, by Right Rev. Arthur J. Teeling; Salem, Rev. John P. Sullivan; Amesbury, Rev. D. F. Lee. The Protestant churches have enlisted the following contributors: Gloucester, Miss Susan Babson; Beverly, Rev. E. J. V. Huiginn; Amesbury, Rev. Robert LeBlanc Lynch; Salem, Rev. Alfred Manchester; Danvers, Rev. A. V. House; Georgetown, Rev. Bartlett H. Weston. The United Shoe Machinery Company, Beverly, supplied through its publicity department, at the hands of Mr. Charles T. Cahill, the interesting account of the striking growth of this great enterprise. Mr. Dana W. Scott, for forty years secretary to Agent Walter E. Parker, of the Pacific Mills, Lawrence, has written the story of that corporation. Mr. Arthur B. Sutherland contributes the chapter on the merchants of Lawrence. To Mr. Freeman Putney, of Gloucester, is to be given the credit for review of the educational concerns of that city, while a like distinction belongs to Prof. L. Thomas Hopkins for corresponding exposition of the public schools of Amesbury. The review of the Chamber of Commerce of the last-named town is from the pen of Mr. Frank T. Perry, a member of the staff of the Amesbury "Daily News." Mr. Fred W. Bushby, for twenty-four years a member of the Board of Trustees, supplies the satisfactory account of the Peabody Institute and Library.

* * *

Of the staff writers in the service of the publishers, it fell to the lot of Mr. Will L. Clark, of Woodbine, Iowa, to act as compiler of the Muni-

cipal History of Essex County. A former newspaper man, both as editor and publisher, he abandoned the profession, upwards of a quarter of a century ago, to specialize in historical work. During that period, his pen has actively been employed in County and State historical publications, as well on the sundown side of the Mississippi as in the teeming fields east of the "Father of Waters." In entering upon his responsible duties as compiler of the accompanying volumes, he brought to the task those qualities justly to be cited as the fruits of ripened experience. His fidelity to engagements, the assiduity with which he pursued his labors (not infrequently in the face of embarrassments of no slight volume), and the zeal with which he sought to accommodate his compilations, alike in the interest of the History and of the reader—all these call for a measure of recognition. It is in tribute, brief and modest, to the record thus achieved by Mr. Clark that his associate would dedicate these few lines, as indicative of a meed of appreciation richly won.

BENJ. F. ARRINGTON.

Lynn, 1922.

---

## ACKNOWLEDGMENT

The Publishers would fail in justice and propriety, did they not express their appreciation of the valuable service rendered by Mr. Benjamin F. Arrington during the preparation of this "History of Essex County." To fine literary tastes and ability he has added a hearty enthusiasm and spirit of local loyalty, while his fund of knowledge has been of immeasurable aid to our writers and compilers.

F. Y. HEDLEY,
Editor.

New York, 1922.

# CONTENTS


Page

Chapter I—Geography and Geology of Essex County—Relics of the Glacial Period—The Foundation Rocks—The Tombolos—Formation of Islands—Earth Resources ..... 1

Chapter II—The Story of the Planters—Captain Bartholomew Gosnold—First White Intercourse with the Indians—Charter from the English Crown—The Dorchester Company—New Plymouth —Roger Conant at Cape Ann ..... 10

Chapter III—Salem, "The City of Peace"—First Settlers under Roger Conant—Account by William Wood in his "New England's Prospect"—John Endicott's Company—The First Council —Third Migration to Salem—Record of Voyage and List of Those Who Came ..... 20

Chapter IV—Organization of Essex County—First Incorporated Towns—Courts Established—The New Charter—Public Buildings Erected—State Institutions in the County—Statistics ..... 40

Chapter V—Town of Saugus—Settlement—First Town Meeting—Iron Industries—Other Manufactures—Churches ..... 53

Chapter VI—Town of Ipswich—Territory known as Agawam—First White Settlement — Churches — Industries — Manufacturing ..... 64

Chapter VII—Town of Newbury—Settlement—Churches—Present Conditions ..... 86

Chapter VIII—Town of Rowley—Early Settlers—Development of Community ..... 92

Chapter IX—Town of Marblehead—Settlement—Local Government Instituted — Industries — Sea Commerce — Early Disasters—Churches—Present Conditions ..... 98

Chapter X—Town of Salisbury—Settlement and History ..... 114

Chapter XI—Town of Wenham—First Settlers—Incorporation—Industries—Distinguished Citizens—Churches ..... 120

Chapter XII—Town of Manchester—Land Acquired from Indians—First Settlers — Shipbuilding — Churches — History to Present Time ..... 129

Chapter XIII—Town of Andover—Settlement—Indian Troubles—Manufacturing Development—Libraries—Theological Seminary —Religion ..... 147

Page

Chapter XIV—Town of Topsfield — Settlement — Anniversary of Founding of Town—Picturesque Region ..... 161

Chapter XV—Town of Amesbury—First Comers—Early Industries —Commercial and Financial Interests—Important Manufactures—Library—Home of Whittier—Church History ..... 168

Chapter XVI—Town of Boxford — First Settlers — Industries— Churches ..... 186

Chapter XVII—Town of Middleton—David Stiles Quoted—Early Records—Industries ..... 190

Chapter XVIII—Town of Danvers — Incorporation Act—Church History—Danversport ..... 194

Chapter XIX—Town of Lynnfield—An Outpost of Lynn—First Settlers — Churches—Ancient Families—Old Landmarks—National Celebrities—Military Record ..... 209

Chapter XX—Town of Hamilton—Early Land Grants—Development of Community ..... 224

Chapter XXI—Town of West Newbury—Establishment of Town— Present Conditions ..... 228

Chapter XXII —Town of Essex—The Home of Many Prominent Men—Early Settlers—Grant of Land by Sagamore of Agawam—Shipbuilding—Church History ..... 232

Chapter XXIII—Town of Georgetown—Historical Narrative—Industrially, Commercially, Officially ..... 241

Chapter XXIV—Town of Rockport—Settlement—Present-day Conditions—Industries—Churches ..... 270

Chapter XXV—Town of Bradford— Incorporation — Manufactures —Churches—Government ..... 279

Chapter XXVI—Town of Groveland — Settlement — Industries —Churches—Government ..... 283

Chapter XXVII—Town of Swampscott — Early Annals — Noted Characters—The Humphrey Home—Henry S. Baldwin Quoted —Statistical—Town Officers ..... 286

Chapter XXVIII—Town of Nahant—Early History—Development —Library—Henry Cabot Lodge—Fort Gardner—Churches ..... 298

Chapter XXIX—Town of North Andover — Settlement — Early Manufacturing—Incorporation—Local Officiary—Churches ..... 307

Chapter XXX—Town of Merrimac — Early Settlers — Municipal Affairs—Industries—Churches—Fraternal Orders ..... 313

Page

Chapter XXXI—Town of Methuen—Early Settlers—Local Officials —Churches ..... 318

Chapter XXXII—The City of Salem—Settlement—Organization—Municipal History—Essex Institute—Peabody Museum—Foreign Trade Reminiscences—Industrial History—Disasters—Salem Hospital—Parks and Environments—Churches ..... 325

Chapter XXXIII—City of Beverly — Settlement—Incorporation—Present-day Industries—Shoemaking—Church History—Present Conditions ..... 357

Chapter XXXIV—City of Lynn—Conditions at Coming of First Settlers—Early Residents — "The Town Saugust" — Ancient Map—Lynn in the Revolution—Early Iron Works—First Mills —Timothy Dwight Quoted—City Organization—Swampscott—Distinguished Names—Industrial Exhibit — Parks and Playgrounds—Chamber of Commerce—The Shoe Industry—General Electric Company—Great Disasters—Religious History ..... 375

Chapter XXXV—Haverhill—The Ancient Settlement—The Dustin Tragedy—Indian Troubles—The Town Laid Out—Early Industries—Anti-Slavery Society—The Civil War—The City Charter —Bradford Academy—Historical Society—Anniversary Celebrations—Distinguished Citizens—The World War—Growth of City—The Shoe Industry—Public Library—Churches ..... 451

Chapter XXXVI—City of Lawrence—Pioneer Families—Incorporation as a Town—Present Municipal Government—Benevolent Institutions—The Andover Bridge—The Central Bridge—The Essex Company—Distinguished Visitors—Fall of Pemberton Mills — Parks and Playgrounds — Great Textile Strike—The Great Cotton Industry—American Woolen Company—Other Important Cotton Manufactories — Mercantile Interests—Religious History ..... 491

Chapter XXXVII—City of Newburyport—Settlement and Incorporation as a Town—Early Shipbuilding and Foreign Trade—Privateers Fitted Out—City Charter—City Officiary—Public Library—Churches ..... 539

Chapter XXXVIII—City of Peabody—Early Settlement—Pioneer Families—Early Churches—George Peabody—Industrial Development—Peabody Institute and Library—Present-day Conditions ..... 553

Chapter XXXIX—City of Gloucester—First Settlement—Pioneer Settlers—Municipal History—Sawyer Free Public Library—The Fishing Industry—A Famous Custom House—Post Office

Page

History—Light Houses—Remarkable Instances of Longevity—Points of Interest—Church History ..... 567

Chapter XL—Banks and Banking—Early and Present Banking Institutions — In Salem—Lynn—Danvers—Ipswich—Andover—Marblehead—Gloucester—Saugus—Beverly—Amesbury—Newburyport — Lawrence—Peabody—Groveland—Rockport—Manchester—Merrimac—Georgetown—Haverhill ..... 595

Chapter XLI—Railroads and Transportation — Early Vehicles—First Public Conveyance—First Railroad Charter in Massachusetts—Railway to Quincy Stone Quarries—First Railroads to Reach Salem, Saugus, Danvers, and Other Towns—Street Railways ..... 625

Chapter XLII—Educational Interests — Early School at Salem—Lynn Schools—Early School Usages—Ancient Records—Present Schools in Lynn—In Danvers—Lawrence—Essex—Amesbury—Salisbury—Andover—Hamilton—Boxford—Groveland—Haverhill—Ipswich—Middleton—Saugus—Methuen—Beverly—Newbury—Nahant—Bradford—Merrimac— Gloucester— Phillips Academy—Andover School for Girls and Young Women—Andover Theological Seminary — Beverly Academy — Baker Free School—Merrimac Academy—Manning School — Marblehead Academy—Franklin Academy—Salem Normal School—Saugus Female Seminary—Topsfield Academy ..... 631

Chapter XLIII—Physicians of the County—Medical Practice in Danvers—Medical History of Lynn—Essex—Rockport—Topsfield—Wenham—Georgetown—Beverly—Andover—Nahant— Rowley—Boxford—West Newbury—Haverhill—Gloucester—Groveland—Manchester—South Hamilton— Salisbury — Newburyport — Marblehead—Merrimac—Saugus— Middleton— Lynnfield Center — Salem—Ipswich—Methuen—Amesbury—Lawrence—Peabody ..... 693

Chapter XLIV—Newspapers of the County—The Essex Gazette—Newspapers in Salem—Scientific Periodicals—Newspapers in Lynn—Saugus—Haverhill— Newburyport — Amesbury — Peabody—Gloucester—Lawrence—Beverly—Ipswich—Marblehead 731

Chapter XLV—Military History—Indian Wars—Military Annals of Danvers—Salem—Lynn—Gloucester — Newburyport — Haverhill — Nahant — Boxford — Ipswich — Amesbury—Marblehead—Georgetown—Merrimac—Swampscott—Rockport—Rowley—Topsfield—Wenham—Groveland— Andover — Hamilton—North Andover—Saugus—Beverly — Peabody — Manchester—Lawrence— Salisbury ..... 763

Page

Chapter XLVI—Bench and Bar — First Establishment in Essex County — First General Court — The Various Courts — The Witchcraft Trials—Changes in Judicial System—Early Judicial Officiary — Attorneys General and District Attorneys—Provisions for Admission to the Bar—Bar Association—Names in Bar Book—Judicial Procedure ..... 825

Chapter XLVII—Agriculture and Horticulture—Early Farm Industries—Early Agricultural Society ..... 867

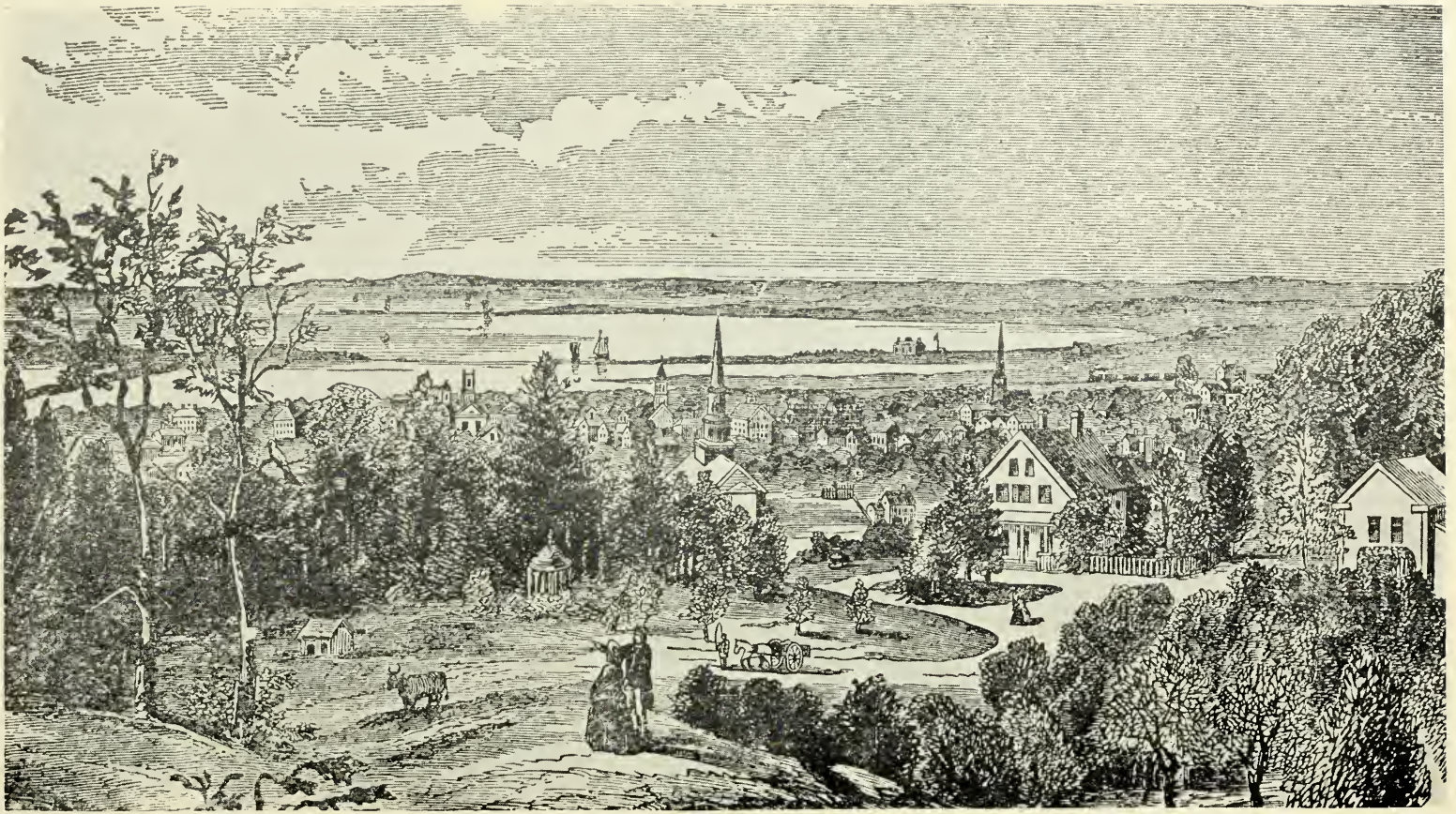
Chapter XLVIII—Lodges in Essex County—Masonic—Odd Fellows —Knights of Pythias—Other Orders ..... 871

Chapter XLIX—Witchcraft in Essex County—Early Cases—First Execution—List of Executions—Judges Presiding at Trials ..... 881

Chapter L—United Shoe Machinery Company ..... 891

Chapter LI—Miscellaneous—Essex County Congressmen—Presidential Votes—New England Laboratory Company ..... 901

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
DEN FOUNDATIONS



VIEW OF LYNN, 1854

## CHAPTER I.

## GEOGRAPHY AND GEOLOGY OF ESSEX COUNTY.

Relics of the Glacial Period—The Foundation Rocks—The Tombolos—Formation of Islands—Earth Resources.

The geology and geography of Essex County is most complicated and difficult. Its rocks are ancient, the roots of old mountains, greatly changed by the heat and pressure accompanying earth movements and the intrusion of molten rock. Its soils have been formed and distributed during successive glacial periods, by the ice, by fresh waters as the ice receded, by sea waves and the winds, as the county was emerging after being covered by the ocean. It is a subject for a scientist. One who would know the detail for his home town may find full treatment in the monograph on the "Physical Geography of Essex County" by John H. Sears, published in 1905 by the Essex Institute.

The geography of the county, however, affects the life of its residents intimately. A farmer must know the origin and nature of its soils, to develop his lands with intelligent wisdom and highest profits. The Chamber of Commerce of a city will plan its development to best advantage when its members know the nature as well as the appearance of their civic environment. The thousands who traverse the highways of the county in automobiles will find keener pleasure at every hill and plain, beside lake or river, if they know something of the origin and significance of these features of our varied scenery. Though details be left to scientists, anyone may know the main truths of our geography, and a simple statement about our lands and waters should be of appealing interest.

Following the Newburyport turnpike up hill and down dale, or any county road, the land seems a confusion of hills, swamps and plains. But view it from a distance—from the railway, or the ocean, toward the hill crests that extend from far west of Saugus eastward to Marblehead, and to Cape Ann. A fairly even, gradually-descending upland line is evident. Nevertheless, even a scientist would have failed to surmise that all the land once rose to this level, and that resistant rock hills are remnants of an ancient upland, were it not that as one travels westward the valleys occupy less and less area, the hilltops broaden and coalesce until they form the Berkshire plateau, trenched by the valley of the Deerfield and overtopped by summits like Monadnock that slow erosion never reduced to the common level.

The rock structure shows that long before the rolling upland was formed, Essex county, like all New England, was mountainous.

Mountains are the result of folding or breaking of the earth's crust, uplifting great domes or blocks of land, which are then carved into peaks and slowly worn down by weather, water, and wind. Our Essex rocks are the remnants of tilted strata, and of dikes and masses of other kinds of rock that were forced upward in a molten state into all cracks in the folded and fractured strata, or were crowded between rock layers as great masses, such as the granites in and near Peabody and on Cape Ann. It is estimated that the broad upfold or anticline that extended from Cape Ann far to the southwest, and included at least all the southern half of the county, has lost by erosion a depth of two miles or more of strata.

Only tough roots of the mountains are left, only hill remnants of the plateau. The mountains were slowly eroded during ages when the earth's crust here was fairly stable. At last the rivers swung lazily in broad valleys, little lower than the divides between them, on the gently-rolling lowland they had formed. Then came uplift. The rivers flowed swiftly down the steepening slope and cut valleys in the almost plain, or peneplain, that had become an upland. Far inland on hard rocks these valleys are deep and narrow still. Near the ocean they are of course shallow, and they have broadened and branched until they occupy more space than the hills that reach the old upland level.

Indeed, Nahant lies within a broad lowland—the Boston Basin, that extends from the hills of Lynn and Saugus to the Blue Hills of Milton. Between the Essex county anticline and another south from the Blue Hills is a deep suncline. During long geologic time this was a bay, where sediments accumulated to a great depth, as it slowly folded downward. Earth movements followed, the basin rocks were folded and fractured between the old land masses to north and south. A long line of fracturing formed along the southern flank of the Essex anticline, a similar fracture line just north of the Blue Hills. Between them the Boston Basin was lowered. When the region was slowly reduced to a peneplain the new rocks north of the line of fracture were worn away. When the peneplain was upraised, the weaker rocks within the basin were more quickly removed, and the resistant rim stands today as the long broken line of rugged hills, on which lie the Middlesex Fells, Lynn Woods and the Salem Pastures.

All this is vital; it determines life. The Boston Basin, into which Essex county extends, contains a fourth the population of all New England. Yet the uplands of its rim are as typically deserted as our remoter uplands. Blueberry pickers on Salem pastures find forgotten roads, old pear trees and wild apples, traces of long-past occupation; but until recently there were only two homes in the three miles between the thick-set houses of Lynn and Salem, only two town ways that cross these wastes of ledges, cedars, and barberry bushes. Lynn Woods and

the Fells are rugged and picturesque for parks, but unsuitable for culture, inhospitable for home sites. In fact, the entire upland area of the county north of the Boston Basin and back from the harbors of the coast and the industrial cities of the Merrimac has been a region of decreasing population, of abandoned farms, like all the New England uplands. And the same characteristics that have discouraged agriculture have attracted summer boarders, cottagers, campers—the main industry for much of rural New England. To understand the growth of our factory industries, the decline of agriculture, and the consequent shifting of population in the county, however, other features of our geography must be studied.

The old land of Essex County, with its broad valleys, should have correspondingly mature drainage, with rivers that have worn down to an even slope all waterfalls, and have filled with sediment or drained and worn away every lake. Yet even the Merrimac has rapids at Mitchell's Falls above Haverhill and at Lawrence, and there are falls and natural mill sites on every smaller stream. There are lakes, ponds and swamps in every town of the county and in such numbers that no one has ever counted the multitude of lakelets and pond holes that gather the rain waters every spring. Follow our upland south to counties of Virginia and the Carolinas, and lakes are lacking, falls are few. For our water powers and beautiful lakes we are indebted to the great glacier that overspread half of North America and moved out over Essex County southeastward to Cape Cod and the islands and shoals beyond, which were formed by the glacial deposits of land waste.

Years ago geologists gave no satisfactory account of our rounded ledges, the great boulders that rest on unlike rock, the plains and hillocks of gravel and sand that floor our valleys, the lakes and waterfalls of our streams. When the same forms were found at the front of Greenland and Alaskan glaciers in process of formation, their origin was clear. Ages ago New England was elevated, Essex County was inland, the rivers wore valleys deep that are now half filled with sands, the shore was far east of Marblehead and Rockport. The climate was colder on the high interior; snow accumulated, glaciers formed, that covered our highest eastern mountains and moved sluggishly southward and outward to the ocean. They scoured away the soil and rotten rock on the surface of hills and valleys, then used the harder fragments held in the glacier, with all the force of the mountain of moving ice above them, to rasp and plane the ledges below. The hills were rounded on their northern shoulders; they broke away on southern slopes, forming cliffs. This is still their usual form, for probably less than 10,000 years have passed since the glacier disappeared. The glacier moved vigorously through north-south valleys, deepening them. Such are the valleys entering the Boston Basin from the north, that from Essex to Manchester, and the one which separates

Gloucester from the mainland of Cape Ann along the line of the harbor and Squam river.

When the glacier retreated, all the land waste in its dirty ice was dropped in confusion across the county. At times the glacier was moving forward, yet melting as fast as it advanced. Boulders, sand and clay were dropped together at its stationary front, a frontal moraine. The finer materials were washed away. The boulders remain as the long belts or low ridges of rough ledge fragments that cross Cape Ann over Dogtown Commons, and those found extending from east to west in Lynn Woods and through the wild lands of South Peabody. Another boulder moraine extends from Newbury Old Town to Byfield, then south to Long Hill in Georgetown. More frequently the ice was stagnant near the front, but so covered with dirt that it melted very slowly. Streams from the melting ice farther north gushed forth at the ice front, full of sands and rock flour. At this time the land had sunk, perhaps under the glacier's weight, so the streams issued into the sea and their waters were checked and dropped their gravels and sands to form deltas in front of the glacier, like those on glacial rivers in Alaska today. The clays were carried forward into sheltered coves of deeper water and deposited there. We know this, because some of the gravels have the rounded pebbles and other characteristics of our present sea beaches, and the clays contain fossils of the same marine shells that are found in waters off Arctic shores today. Hence the soils of the valleys and lowlands of the county are largely sands and gravels, with occasional clay beds.

There were several main lines of drainage to the ice front across Essex County, by streams that probably flowed mainly beneath the glacier in ice tunnels they had formed. These tunnels often became choked with small boulders and gravels, so that when the ice melted, they were left as steep ridges that wind about just as the sub-glacial streams wound beneath the glacier. These narrow winding gravel ridges are called eskers. They lead south to gravel and sand plains that formed at the glacier front, and toward clay beds. One line of drainage was through Amesbury, where the esker ridge is seen crossing the highway to Merrimac, a little west of the town. Southward it broadens to form the sand ridge on which Newburyport is built, and is followed by High street nearly to Newbury Old Town. Another esker line passes over Red Oak Hill in Merrimac, then just east of the Whittier homestead in Haverhill, and into Groveland, where it is joined by a tributary line of eskers and sands from West Haverhill. It then passes south through the Boxford plains, past Topsfield and along the east side of Wenham Swamp and Wenham Lake, thence across Beverly to the harbor and the sea. A third train of sands enters from New Hampshire, crosses Methuen, Lawrence and Andover, and includes the well-known Indian Ridge there, then passes into Middlesex County. There are other

shorter series of eskers and sands, for example, that along South Salem from the Normal School on to the sand plains that reach from south of Forest river to the ocean front at Beach Bluff.

The northern border of this plain is typically steep and irregular, with many gravel hillocks and short ridges, called kames, and many little enclosed valleys among them, that are called dungeons in Marblehead. The stagnant edge of the glacial ice had many crevasses and detached ice blocks. Outflowing streams filled in gravels between and upon the ice masses. After the main glacier had disappeared, these covered and protected ice blocks also melted. The gravels and sands slumped down, with slopes steep and confused in proportion to the depth and complexity of the former ice margin.

Forest river flows eastward along the line of the vanished glacier front. If Salem Harbor had not been occupied by ice, but had been filled high with sands, Forest river valley would have been a lake. In just this way Wenham Lake and Wenham Swamp occupy the lowlands, filled by great ice blocks when the sand plains of Beverly were built in front of them.. Much of the southern and eastern shores rise steeply to the plain level, marking the ice contact line when the sands were deposited. While a few of the Essex County lakes occupy rock basins that were not filled with glacial deposits, like Forest Pond, Middleton, nearly all our lakes and ponds and many swamps lie within or beside sandy plains and slopes and occupy the holes left by the melting of ice blocks. Many have steep shores rising to sand plains, usually on the southern sides, to mark the old ice contacts. There were many smaller ice blocks buried in the sand, whose site is marked by shallow depressions in the plains, called kettle holes. They are usually dry, as the pondlets of spring time soon drain away.

These plains are usually too gravelly and sandy to be fertile. They make better roadways and building sites than rough hill slopes, but they are less favored for farms and pastures than the gentle slopes of glacial till, where the soil contains much clay and retains moisture. The early settlers often placed their town centers and buildings upon these plains; they are well adapted for use for fair grounds, race tracks, training fields for the militia, aviation fields, baseball fields. In some places, as at Danvers, South Peabody, Marblehead, the soils of the plain are finer, and being free from boulders are well adapted for use by market gardeners, who can afford to provide fertilizers as may be needed. The well-known milk farms of the Hood Milk Company in Beverly and Topsfield are not on the sand plains, however, but on Cherry Hill and one of the broad, smooth hills crossed by the Newburyport Turnpike; for the soil of many hills and slopes was formed beneath and within the glacier, where rock fragments and rock flour are intermingled. They are therefore moister and more fertile than the gravel and sand plains from which clays were swept by the glacial streams.

The scores of gently-curving, lens-shaped hills of glacial till, called drumlins, that are found from West Peabody to Ipswich and northward into New Hampshire are as marked a feature of Essex geography as our lakes. They are most abundant along the Merrimac, where Whittier sings, "The hills roll wavelike inland." They occur in groups and pairs, or singly, like Pigeon Hill in Rockport. There are many in the Boston Basin, but none on the rough highlands back of its rim, and none on Cape Ann except Pigeon Hill. They are composed of till, clay which includes stones and boulders, just as dropped and overridden by the ice, compressing and shaping them. We know how sand plains and their depressions were formed; geologists do not know just how drumlins formed. Perhaps they gathered beneath the glacier as sand bars form in rivers. They are smooth, fertile, beautiful features of our landscape, rising to summits higher than the low monadnocks of the uplands near the Boston Basin. The rock hills of Lynn Woods and Saugus are less than 300 feet above tides, the drumlins of North Andover rise to nearly 400 feet above sea level. They afford fine outlooks; the Danvers Asylum has a commanding position upon a drumlin. But any one of them might well have been called Bare Hill, like that east of North Andover center, for their steep side slopes turn the country roads away. There are nearly 200 drumlins in the county, most of them so conspicuous as to be well-known by local names. They are represented in every town and city except Gloucester and Manchester on Cape Ann, Salem and the five communities on the rough southern border of the county.

Our most recent geographical features, still in process of marked change from year to year, are along the coast, where waves, tides and currents are at work. There were doubtless drumlins and gravel deposits east of our present shores. The outer drumlin islands of Boston harbor show clay seacliffs and different stages of destruction, while reefs of boulders off Hull and Nantasket mark the site of drumlins that have been entirely washed away. The undertow has carried finer wastes into deep water offshore or to the quiet waters of bays. Storm waves breaking far out in shallow water built bars of sand; alongshore currents brought land waste to them, swept from the cliffs of bolder coasts nearby. Master storms raised the bars above low tide level, the wind heaped the finer sands into hillocks, the bar broadened and sand dunes rose well above the highest tides.

Some of these bars curve gently from the shore to an island, and are called tombolos. In this wise the three islands of Nahant, Bass Point and Little Nahant were tied together and to the mainland as a peninsula. Similarly, Marblehead Neck is tied to the shore at its southern end, and the island of Gloucester is reached by a highway from Cape Ann mainland along a barrier beach, although the old seaway to Squam river has been re-opened as a canal. Other wave-built bars

separate a marsh from the ocean, as at Phillips Beach, Swampscott, where the fresh waters seep through the beach in springs at low tide. Our greatest barrier beach is Plum Island. At its southern end, off the Ipswich shore, it starts from the remnants of drumlins; its dunes, outer beach and inner marshes extend thence northward to where the outflow of the Merrimac prevents waves and currents from making the bar continuous with Salisbury Beach.

Behind every bar is a lagoon. The smaller enclosures are shut from the ocean, as at Swampscott beaches. Larger ones are swept by the tides. The eel grass in the deeper waters of a lagoon catches the waste that sinks into the grasp of its tangle of blades at every turn of the tides, and the lagoon becomes shallower. The mudflats, bare of grasses, exposed twice daily, are upraised very slowly. Marsh grasses build outwards from the shore at high tide level, catching waste floated by streams from the land and by currents from along shore. Thus the lagoons are now occupied by broad marshes, intersected by winding tidal creeks, whose currents undercut and wear back the outgrowing marsh sod, maintaining one of the interesting balances between opposing natural forces. Broad marshes border Squam river in Gloucester and lie behind the bars of Coffin's Beach, Castle Neck in Ipswich, Plum Island and Salisbury beaches to the north. Creeks and canals give a waterway behind the bars. Years ago the marsh hay was highly valued, and farmers from miles inland went "mashin" every August at the right run of tides. Years hence the tides may be shut out by dikes, as is true of the polders of Holland, and these marsh soils may become very valuable farm lands. Meanwhile, their mudflats give us a harvest of clams yearly. The Saugus marshes are more likely to be filled in and used as factory sites; for they are underlaid by firm clays well able to support factory buildings, and are convenient for rail and ocean transportation of supplies and products.

A sand bar coast repels life, for it offers scant refuge from storms for either merchant vessels or pleasure yachts. Hence Plum Island was long almost a desert, save for its lighthouse, life-saving station, and one farm on the drumlin soils off Ipswich. Because sea front lands are all pre-empted along our rock shores, there are many summer cottages today at the northern end of Plum Island, easily reached by automobile over the causeway from Newburyport. But there are no large and growing cities between Portland and Gloucester, although there are many summer colonies dotted along the sand bar beaches from Essex County northward. From Cape Ann to Lynn, however, the North Shore of Massachusetts Bay is bold, rocky, irregular, with good harbors. A group of cities is growing about Salem harbor, once a leading port for commerce with far-eastern lands, now a center for the busy industries of Salem, Peabody, Beverly and Danvers. The harbor of Gloucester, set far out toward the fishing grounds, remains

the leading port for trawlers and for salt and smoked fish. All the adjacent bold shore lands and the hills inland are occupied by costly summer cottages that are often mansions. Nahant was famous generations ago. Lynn shore drive, leading to the great hotel at Swampscott, is famous for beauty today. Marblehead Neck and harbor are renowned as a yachting center. Society extends its sway back from the estates of millionaires at Beverly and Manchester-by-the-Sea to the golf and polo fields of Hamilton. The life of this bold North Shore, with its rocky islets, frequent fine harbors, its alternating cliffs and pocket beaches, is vastly unlike the deserted dunes and long straight beach of Plum Island.

The rocks of the picturesque coast are so resistant that storms have made small progress in cutting the ledges back. Where the dikes that cross the ledges and cliffs are relatively weaker, they have been cut out by the waves, forming chasms, purgatories, spouting horns, where the water dashes in and is thrown up with great force at the narrowing and abrupt inner end. There is endless variety in shore forms both in details and in combination of harbors and patches of marsh, outlying reefs and islands, sloping ledges and sharp cliffs, pocket beaches of cobbles, pebbles, or singing sands, whose minute crystals give a musical sound beneath passing footsteps. No wonder Whittier or Longfellow loved these home shores, praised their beauties and retold their legends in verse.

Essex County is lower than when its valleys were formed, hence their outlets seaward are now filled by salt waters as safe harbors—drowned valleys. The sand plains are higher than when many of them were formed; the plain on which the center of Lynn is built is continuous with the harbor mudflats; it is an upraised sea bottom, a coastal plain. Nevertheless, the coast has in recent centuries slowly sunk again. There are trunks and stumps of pines, oaks and other large trees to be seen at very low tides on several beaches and marshes along our shore, and it is clear that they once grew where they are still rooted, proving that the soil was formerly above high tide level. The depth of ledges below low tide level as recorded a century ago was two feet less than their present depth. But the change takes place so slowly that it has only partially offset the shoaling of harbors.

During the centuries since glacial time, and the periods between successive continental glaciers, there have been more marked invasions of the land by the sea. Remnants of old bars, with their dunes, now grass grown, and clay beds in the former lagoons, are found at the eastern angle of Georgetown, and in Topsfield along the road east of Fish Brook. Seaworn cobbles are found beneath later glacial deposits. Sea sands laid in horizontal beds, without the cross bedding characteristic of the frontal deposits on glacial deltas, cover extensive areas in Andover and southward into Middlesex County, also in Georgetown. While the

glacial ice actively rasped away solid rock on exposed ledges and through valleys where the ice flow was concentrated, at other places it overrode loose deposits of previous glacial invasions. All these intermingled forms of earlier and later deposits make details of our geography as uncertain as they are interesting. The main facts, however, are simple and clear.

The geographic resources of the county are not remarkably rich. As in most lands of folded rock strata, percolating heated waters have dissolved scattered minerals and deposited them in veins and lodes. Lead, copper, silver ores are found in the county, even gold. They have been mined. But the deposits are neither rich nor extensive. More silver has been sunk in the mine at Newburyport than has been taken from it. There are deposits of bog iron ore in our lakes, streams and swamps, from water leaching through glacial sands, which were a source of supply for the colonists at the early Saugus iron works, although no longer used. There is more profit now in spring waters of the county, some pure, some desirably impregnated with minerals, when bottled and sold for table use, than in mineral deposits from the underground waters of past ages.

But the county has some valuable earth resources. There are many quarries, active or abandoned, in the granite districts north of Lynn, while those of Gloucester and Rockport, next the shore, and able to ship building stone and paving blocks cheaply to coast cities and to sell their waste as a by-product for building breakwaters, are of large commercial importance. The tough rhyolite rock that borders the Boston Basin, as at Lynn, does not break along joint planes into rectangular blocks like granite, yet it has been used for buildings and is now actively quarried at several hills and cliffs for road material. And the brick clays of Lynn, Peabody, Danvers and other towns have been valuable for local supplies and should continue in use, even though better clays for pottery are found west of New England, and despite the use of cement and re-enforced concrete, where brick or granite were employed aforetime.

There are a thousand details of fascinating local geography worth setting forth: account of great glacial erratics, like Agassiz Rock in South Essex; of glacial markings on smoothed ledges, notably the deep rock groove in the park at Salem; mention of details of river action, like the abandoned channel of the Merrimac in West Newbury that undercut the clays of Long Hill drumlin; description of mill sites and water supply sources—but these best remain for studies of local geography. Viewing our geography in the large, its trends are those of the early rock folds, from southwest to northeast. The main rivers still follow the line of the strike of the rocks, and the Merrimac river and the North Shore are fairly parallel, with the Ipswich river winding between. Likewise, there is a line of busy industrial communities at the north from the waterpower sites of Lowell and Lawrence to the

waterway from Haverhill to Newburyport; and a parallel line of harbors and factory chimneys at the south from west of Lynn past Salem to Gloucester. Between are the scattered farms and villages, summer settlements and estates of the mid-county, less populous than years ago. Viewing details, they are mainly governed by glacial deposits, for sand-plains and drumlins determine the windings of the rivers, the location of lakes and swamps, of roads and hamlets, homesteads and fields. This returns us to the truth maintained at the outset, that our geology and geography repay study, since they constitute our environment and vitally affect our life. This chapter merely introduces the subject, even as it does this county history.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE STORY OF THE PLANTERS.

The Early Explorers—Sebastian Cabot—Captain Bartholomew Gosnold—First White Intercourse with Indians—Charter from the English Crown—The Dorchester Company—New Plymouth—Roger Conant at Cape Ann.

The aim and scope of this special article, which might not inaptly be considered as the Genesis of the present History, are sufficiently indicated by the foregoing caption. It concerns itself mainly with events as well in Essex County as in Salem prior to the year 1630. The second division brings fully into relief the developments in Salem of that colonization, humble in conception and glorious in fruition, which for so long a period has commanded the interest of historical students and writers. In order that no overlapping might follow, Salem's municipal history, chronologically listed elsewhere, avoids all treatment of the subject here specifically presented. It is not necessary to point to some of the more important features of the recital. These may well be left to the appreciation of intelligent readers, more especially of that element whose members are more or less conversant with the general aspects of the plantation era in the settlement of New England. Both in detail and in fullness, the story thus introduced to the attention of readers must hold a measure of lively concern proportioned to individual appreciation of the labors which its compilation has involved.

It is to Dr. Frank A. Gardner, M. D., of Salem, further mention of whom is made in "The Special Contributors" in our Foreword, that credit is due for this narrative, as well as that following, "Salem Before 1630." [Editor].

The history of Essex County in this period of formation is, in reality, the history of the founding of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. The successive governmental steps taken within this small section in the northeastern corner of the old Bay State resulted in the formation of a well-organized government, which was delivered by Governor John Endicott to Governor John Winthrop in 1630. The area of government had rapidly expanded within seven years from an insignificant and unsuccessful fishing station at Cape Ann to a territory covering the whole of the present Essex County and Suffolk County and a

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

STATUE OF ROGER CONANT, FOUNDER OF SALEM

generous section of what is now included in Norfolk County. The description of the boundaries of the territory purchased by the "Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England" defines its extent as follows: "That part of New England three miles north of the Merrimack and three miles south of the Charles River, in the bottom of Massachusetts Bay."

The promontories and indentations of the Essex County coast were visited and described by the very earliest explorers. The first white men to visit these shores were the Norsemen, who came about the year 1000. Sebastian Cabot visited the coast in 1498, exploring from Labrador to the region of Delaware Bay. He claimed possession for England. The fact that England's claim was based upon Cabot's discovery was recognized in the charter which Queen Elizabeth bestowed on Sir Humphrey Gilbert in 1583, and in accordance with which he took possession of Newfoundland. Many English vessels visited the coast for fish during the last half of the sixteenth century.

Captain Bartholomew Gosnold in 1602, in a "bark of Dartmouth, called the Concord," reached the coast and discovered among other places "an out point of woodie ground, the trees whereof were very high and straight." It is supposed that Cape Ann is referred to. He wrote that the natives "in bark shallops came boldly abourd them, apparrelled in wastcoats and breeches, some of black serdge, some of blue cloth, made after the sea fashion, with hose and shooes on their feet; a people tall of stature, broad and grym visaged; their eye browes paynted white and yt seemed by some words and signs which they made, that some barks of St. John de Luz, had fished and traded in this place." He named Cape Cod on this same voyage. Captain Martin Pring, in 1603, sailed along the coast from Casco Bay to Cape Cod Bay, and obtained a cargo of furs, sassafras, etc. He described the tall forests, excellent anchorage and fine fishing. Two years later, George Weymouth reached Cape Cod and sailed northward along the coast to the Kennebec. Champlain and Sieur de Mont, in this same year (1605), explored the coast of Maine and sailed south around Cape Cod to Martha's Vineyard. Champlain described the bay at the mouth of the Merrimack as "large," with "three or four rather large islands" (the Isles of Shoals). Cape Ann and Thatcher's Island he noted as a cape, with "three islands near the mainland full of wood of different kinds, as at Chonacoot and all along the coast, and still another flat one, where there are breakers and which extend a little further out to sea than the others, on which there is no wood at all." He named the place Island Cape, near which he saw a canoe containing five or six savages, who "came out near our barque, and then went back and danced on the beach. Sieur de Mont sent me on shore to observe them and to give each one of them a knife, and some biscuit, which caused them to dance again, better than before." When he had drawn

with his crayon a diagram of the bay in which they were, the Indians took the crayon "and drew the outline of another bay, which they represented as very large" (Massachusetts Bay). They also sketched in the Merrimack River. They failed to find a place of settlement that suited them and returned to the Maine coast. These men had come with a charter from the King of France, which conveyed "trading and seignoral rights in . . . . territory between the fortieth and forty-sixth parallels of latitude" (from St. John's, Newfoundland, to Philadelphia). Captain John Smith explored the coast in 1614 and in his "Description of New England," based on voyages made in that year, and the following, wrote: "The Coast of the Massachusetts is so indifferently mixed with high clayie or sandy cliffes in one place, and then tracts of large long ledges of divers sorts, and quarries of stones in other places so strangely divided with tinctured veines of divers colours; as, Freestone for building, Slate for tiling, smooth stone to make Fornaces and Forges for glasse or iron, and iron ore sufficient, conveniently to melt in them; but the most part so resembleth the Coast of Devonshire, I think most of the cliffes would make such limestone." He described the shores about Ipswich as follows: "Angoam is the next; This place might content a right curious judgement; but there are many sands at the entrance of the harbor: and the worst is, it is imbayed too farre from the deepe Sea. Heere are many rising hilles and on their tops and descents many corne fields, and delightful groves. On the East, is an Isle* of two or three leagues in length; the one halfe, plaine morish grasse fit for pasture, with many faire high groves of mulberrie trees gardens: and there is also Okes, Pines and other woods to make this place an excellent habitation, beeing a good safe harbor. Naimkeck though it be more rockie ground (for Angoam is sandie) not much inferior; neither for the harbor, nor any thing I could perceove, but the multitude of people. From hence doth stretch into the Sea the faire headland Tragabigganda fronted with three Isles called the Turks heads: to the North of this, doth enter a great Bay, where wee found some habitations and corne fields; they report a great Riuer, and at least thirtie habitations, doo possesse this Countrie. But because the French had got their Trade I had no leasure to discover it." On the map he gives Cape Anna, "Smith's Iles" (Isles of Shoals), and shows Plum Island and the islands at the entrance of Salem harbor. He mentions "particular countries," and names "Aggawom" and "Naemkeck." The names on the map do not coincide with the descriptive text, and he explains this by stating that "the Prince his Highnesse had altered the names." He then gives a "schedule," with explanations, as follows: "Naumkeag—Bastable; Cape Trabigznda—Cape Anne; Aggawam—Southampton."

*Plum Island.

Captain Thomas Dermer sailed along the coast of the county in 1619, in a ship belonging to Sir Ferdinando Gorges. He was wounded later by Indians at Martha's Vineyard, and died in Virginia from the effects of these wounds.

In 1622 there was published in England "A Brief Relation of the Discovery and Plantation of New England." This was dedicated to Prince Charles, and under the heading, "The platform of the government, and divisions of the territories in general," it was stated that "As there is no commonwealth that can stand without government, so the best governments have ever had their beginnings from one supreme head, who hath disposed of the administration of justice, and execution of public affairs, either according to laws established, or by the advice, or consent of the most eminent, discreetest, and best able in that kind. And upon this general ground, the kings of these realms did first lay the foundations of their monarchies; reserving unto themselves the sovereign power of all (as fit it was) and dividing their kingdoms into counties, baronies, hundreds and the like; instituted their lieutenants, or officers, meet to govern these subdivisions. This foundation being so certain, there is no reason for us to vary from it, and therefore we have resolved to build our edifices upon it. So as we purpose to commit the management of our whole affairs there in general, unto a governor, to be assisted by the advice and counsel of so many of the patentees as shall be there resident, together with the officers of state. By this head, and these members, united together, the great affairs of the whole state is to be managed, according to their several authorities, given them from their superiours, the president and council established as aforesaid."

"And for that all men by nature are best pleased to be their own carvers, or orders whereof themselves are authors; it is therefore resolved, that the general laws whereby that state is to be governed, shall be first framed and agreed upon by the general assembly of the states of those parts, both spiritual and temporal." This whole territory was to be divided into "counties, baronies, hundreds and the like, from all which deputies from every county, and barony, are to be sent in name and behalf of the subjects, under them to consult and agree upon the laws so to be framed, as also to reform any notable abuses committed in former proceedings." Counties were to be governed by a chief head, deputy and other officers. Further subdivisions into lordships, with courts, etc., were made.

A further statement is made, that "There is no less care to be taken for the trade and public commerce of merchants, whose governments ought to be within themselves, in respect of the several occasions arising between them, the tradesmen, and other the mechanicks, with whom they have most to do." "By this you see our main drift is but to take care for the well ordering of the business, seeking by all

means to avoid (what we may) the intermeddling with any man's monies or disposing of any men's fortunes, save only our own, leaving to every particular undertaker the employment of their profits, out of their proper limits, and possessions, as shall seem best to themselves, or their officers, or ministers, whom they employ, and whom they may be bold to question, or displace, as to themselves shall seem most fitting." This scheme met with the king's approval, and Captain John Smith, in his "General History," published in 1624, shows a map with New England divided among "twenty patentees, that divided my map into twenty parts and cast lots for their share."

Thornton wrote: "The council's transaction being thus ratified by the crown, the several patentees of the territory of New England became each a lord protector of his portion, with an absolute title thereto, clothed with all the powers of government, originally in the king, and by him vested in them. Thus was derived the title and authority of Lord Sheffield, in the exercise of which he issued the charter for Cape Anne, under which the colony was founded in 1624, which is now expanded into the Commonwealth of Massachusetts."

In 1623, Edward Winslow was sent by the Pilgrims at Plymouth to England, to report about the colony and procure supplies. In London, he conferred with Mr. Robert Cushman, who had been at Plymouth, and whom Gov. Bradford called the "right hand with their friends, the adventurers, and for diverce years had done & agitated all their business with them to their great advantage." Interest in the affairs of New England was aroused by these men, and among those who were particularly attracted were the Rev. John White of Dorchester, England, father of the Cape Ann Colony, and Lord Sheffield, already mentioned, a prominent member of the Council for New England.

The charter, which the latter granted, was made on the "First day of January, Anno Dui 1623," by indenture "Betweene the right honorable Edmond Lord Sheffield, Knight of the Most Noble Order of the Garter on thone part, And Robert Cushman and Edward Winslowe for themselves, and their Associates and Planters at Plymouth in New England in America on thother part."

"Wytnesseth that the said Lord Sheffield **** Hath Gyven **** for the said Robert and Edward and their associates **** a certaine Tract of Ground in New England **** in a knowne place there commonly called Cape Anne, Together with the free use" of "the Bay of Cape Anne" *** "and free liberty to ffish, fowle, etc." and trade in the lands thereabout, and in all other places in New England aforesaid "whereof the said Lord Sheffield is or hath byn possessed." *** "Together also with ffive hundred Acres of free Land adioyning to the said Bay" **** "for the building of a Towne, Scholes, Churches, Hospitalls" etc. also "Thirty acres of Land and besides" **** "To be allotted" **** "for every particular person" **** "that shall come and dwell at

the aforesaid Cape Anne within Seaven years next after the Date hereof." After seven years they were to pay a rental of 12 pence for every "Thirty acres soe to be obteynyd."* Edward Winslow in a pamphlet issued in 1624, asks: "What may the planters expect when once they are seated, and make the most of their salt there, and employ themselves at least eight months in fishing"? He sailed back to England in 1623, and conferred in London with Robert Cushman. Supplies were furnished and preparations made to extend the fisheries and transport more persons "further to plant at Plymouth and in other parts of New England" especially "on a known place they commonly called Cape Anne."

This presentation of the advantages of such a settlement resulted in the forming of the Dorchester Company, with a capital of £3000 largely through the efforts of Rev. John White. He did not find it a difficult matter to convince the merchants of that section of the value of such a settlement. They had felt the need of it sorely in their previous fishing ventures, as the slow-going vessels had been late in arriving on the grounds in the spring, and had reached the markets of England and Spain too late in the season on their return to sell their fish to advantage. Consequently the idea of a colony, where the fisherman might winter and get the early spring catch, appealed to them. The company sent over a band of men in the winter of 1623-1624, or the early spring of the latter year, who established a settlement at Stage Point, in what is now Gloucester. Capt. John Smith in his "General Historye," written in 1624, states, "There hath beene afishing this yeere upon the Coast, about 50 English ships: and by Cape Anne, there is a Plantation by the Dorchester men, which they hold of those of New Plimouth, who also by themselves have set vp a fishing worke."

We thus have undoubted evidence that the Cape Ann planters settled there by right of the charter granted by Lord Sheffield to Winslow and Cushman. They immediately organized, with Mr. Thomas Gardner overseer of the plantation, who thus was the first man in authority on the territory, which later became the colony of Massachusetts Bay. Mr. John Tilley had charge of the fisheries.

The primary object of these Cape Ann planters was undoubtedly commercial, but we have many evidences that the desire to worship God in Puritan simplicity, unhampered by the leaders of the established church, strongly influenced them in coming. They were not separatists, like the Pilgrims of Plymouth. They hoped rather for reforms and modifications in the church than separation. We know that many of them were God-fearing men, who displayed their religious fervor a few years later in the active part which they took in the formation and maintenance of the churches at Salem and Beverly. Mather, in his Magnalia, contrasted them favorably with the English-

men who attempted various settlements on the coast of Maine: "There were more than a few attempts of the English to people and improve the parts of New England which were to the northward of New Plimouth. But the designs of these attempts being aimed no higher than the advancement of some worldly interest, a constant series of disasters has confounded them, until there was a plantation erected upon the nobler designs of Christianity; and that plantation, though it has had more adversaries than perhaps any one on earth, yet, having obtained help from God, it continues to this day. There have been very fine settlements in the northeast regions; but what has become of them? I have heard that one of our ministers once preaching to a congregation there, urged them to approve themselves a religious people from this consideration, that otherwise they would contradict the main end of planting this wilderness. Whereupon a well-known person then in the assembly, cried out, 'Sir, you are mistaken, you think you are preaching to the people at the Bay; our main end was to catch fish.'" The quotation from Reverend William Hubbard given in this work on the opening page of the chapter on "Salem Before 1630," shows the strong spiritual influence directing these men. Bradford, in his "History of the Plymouth Plantation," gives interesting references to the Cape Ann plantation.

The planters and fishermen of the Dorchester Company were not alone at Cape Ann. The Plymouth men attempted to conduct a fishing venture there and erected a fishing stage, house and salt works. In a letter written by Robert Cushman, January 24, 1623, we find: "We have tooke a patent for Cap-Anne." We read in the same history, under date of 1624: "The ship . . . was speedily discharged, and with her mr. & company sente to Cap-Anne (of which place they had gott a patente, as before is shewed) on fishing, and because ye season was so farr spente some of ye planters were sent to help to build their stage, to their owne hinderance. But partly by ye lateness of ye year, and more espetialy by ye basnes of ye mr., one Baker, they made a poore viage of it. He proved a very drunken beast . . . The shipcarpenter that was sent them, was an honest and very industrious man, and followed his labour dilligently, and made all that were imployed with him doe ye like; he quickly builte them 2 very good & strong shalops (which after did them greate service), and a great and strong lighter, and had hewne timber for 2 catches; but that was lost, for he fell into a feaver in ye hote season of ye year, and though he had the best means ye place could aforde, yet he dyed; of whom they had a very great loss, and were very sorie for his death. But he whom they sent to make salte was an ignorante, foolish, self-willd fellow; he bore them in hand he could doe great matters in making salt-works, so he was sente to seeke out fitte ground for his purpose; and after some serch he tould ye Govr that he had found a sufficiente place, with a

good botome to hold water, and otherwise very conveniente, which he doubted not but in a short time to bring to good perfection, and to yeeld them great profite; but he must have 8, or ten men to be constantly imployed. He was wisht to be sure that ye ground was good, and other things answerable, and yt he could bring it to perfection; otherwise he would bring upon them a great change by imploying him selfe and so many men. But he was after some triall, so confidente, as he caused them to send carpenters to rear a great frame for a large house, to receive ye salte & such other uses. But in ye end all proved vaine. Then he layed faulte of ye ground, in which he was deceived; but if he might have the lighter to cary clay, he was sure then he could doe it . . . . . as he by his bould confidence & large promises deceived them in England that sente him, so he had wound him selfe in to these mens high esteeme hear, so as they were faine to let him goe on till all men saw his vanity. For he could not doe any thing but boyle salt in pans, & yet would make them yt were joyned with him beleeve ther was so grat a misterie in it as was not easie to be attained, and made them doe many unnecessary things to blind their eye, till they discerned his sutlie. The next yere he was sente to Cap-Anne, and ye pans were set up ther wher the fishing was; but before somer was out, he burte the house, and the fire was so vehemente as it spoyld the pans, at least some of them, and this was the end of that chargeable bussines." Bradford severely arraigns the minister, Lyford, and his colleague, Oldham. They had both been at Plymouth, where they were evidently not welcome, and after going to Nantasket had removed to Cape Ann. Bradford's story of their misdemeanors is a long one and covers many pages of his history. He refers to these two men again in connection with Cape Ann and writes that "some of Lyfords and Oldoms freinds, and their adherents, set out a shipe on fishing, on their own accounte, and getting yet starte of ye ships that came to the plantation, they tooke away their stage, & other necessary provisions that they had made for fishing at Cap-Anne ye year before, at their great charge, and would not restore ye same, except they would fight for it. But ye Govr sent some of ye planters to help ye fishermen to build a new one, and so let them keepe it. This shipe also brought them some small supply, of little value; but they made so pore a bussines of their fishing, (neither could these men make them any returne for ye supply sente), so as, after this year, they never looked after them." We thus see that two fishing plants were set up at Cape Ann about the same time: One by the Dorchester Company and the other sent from the Pilgrim Colony at Plymouth. The existence of these two ventures is confirmed by Christopher Leavitt, Admiral of New England, in 1624. He wrote: "Neither was I at New Plymouth, but I fear that place is not so good as many others; for if it were, in my conceit, they would content them-

selves with it and not seek any other, having ten times so much ground as would serve ten times so many people, as they have now amongst them. But it seems they have no fish to make benefit of, for this year they had one ship fish at Pemaquid and another at Cape Ann, where they have begun a new plantation, but how long it will continue I know not.....I fear there hath been too fair a gloss set on Cape Ann. I am told there is a good harbor which makes a fair invitation, but when they are in, their entertainment is not answerable, for there is little good ground, and the ships which fished there this year, their boats went twenty miles to take their fish, and yet they were in great fear of (not) making their voyages, as one of the masters confessed unto me who was at my house."

Captain John Smith in his "General History," written in 1626, stated: "There hath beene a fishing this yeere upon the Coast about 50 English ships: and by Cape Anne there is a Plantation or beginning by Dorchester men, which they hold of those of New Plimouth, who also have set up a fishing works." Hubbard wrote: "In one of the fishing voyages about the year 1625 under the charge and command of one Mr. Hewes, employed by some of the west country merchants, there arose a sharp contest between the said Hewes and the people of New Plymouth, about a fishing stage built the year before about Cape Anne by Plymouth men, but was now in the absence of the builders made use of by Mr. Hewes' company, which the other, under the conduct of Captain Standish, very eagerly and peremptorily demanded; for the company of New Plymouth, having themselves obtained a useless (owing to unfitness of territory) patent for Cape Anne, about the year 1623, sent some of the ships, which their adventurers employed to transport passengers over to them, to make fish there; for which end they had built a stag there, in the year 1624. The dispute grew to be very hot, and high words passed between them which might have ended in blows, if not in blood and slaughter, had not the kindness and moderation of Roger Conant, at that time there present, and Mr. Peirses interposition, that lay just by with his ship, timely prevented. For Mr. Hewes had barricadoed his company with hogsheads on the stage head, while the demandants stood upon land, and might easily have been cut off; but the ships crew, by advice, promising to help build another, the difference was thereby ended. Captain Standish had been bred a soldier in the Low Countries, and never entered the school of our Saviour Christ, or of John Baptist, his harbinger, if he was ever there, had forgot his first lessons, to offer violence to no man, and to part with the cloak rather than needlessly contend for the coat, though taken away without order. A little chimney is soon fired; so was the Plymouth captain, a man of very little stature, yet of a very hot and angry temper. The fire of his passion soon kindled, and blown into a flame by hot words, might easily have consumed all, had

it not been seasonably quenched." Thornton in his "Landing at Cape Ann" wrote: "As the Plymouth Colonists and the Dorchester Adventurers had under patent, a unity of interests, touching all intruders, and Mr. Peirse was their true friend, Captain Standish could with propriety listen to their advice. He demanded the possession of the property of his government, withheld without right, or the pretence of right, and wrested from them, doubtless, by the machinations of Lyford. These circumstances, and the character of the actors, might well disturb milder tempers than that of Standish, and he deserved praise rather than Hubbard's censure, for his Christian endurance, forbearing even a blow under such an outrage. He had the approval of Bradford, who says they 'refused to restore it without fighting, upon which we let them keep it, and our Governor sends some planters to help the fishermen build another.'"

The attempt of the Plymouth men to conduct a fishing enterprise at Cape Ann came to an end as above narrated, and the Dorchester men had a hard time with their plantation, owing largely to the lack of fertility of the soil at the point chosen and the consequent inability of the men to raise the necessary food for the company. The authorities of the company in England, hearing of Roger Conant, who was at Nantasket, having left Plymouth, invited him to accept office "for the management and government of all their affairs at Cape Ann." He was engaged by the officers of the company and informed "that they had chosen him to be their governor in that place." The validity of this title need not be discussed. The fact that it was used by the officers of the company proves how he was regarded by them. It will also be recalled that in the "Platform of the government," approved by the king, which was quoted in full, which constituted the rules for government, the management of the whole affair on this side of the water, was to be committed to a "governor."

Roger Conant soon found out the cause of the failure of the first year's work. Hubbard states that he "disliked the place as much as the adventurers disliked the business; and therefore in the meanwhile had made some inquiry into a more commodious place near adjoining, on the other side of a creek, called Naumkeag, a little to the westward, where was much better encouragement as to the design of a plantation, than that which they had attempted upon before, at Cape Anne." Mr. White wrote to Conant that if he would induce John Woodbury, John Balch and Peter Palfrey to stay with him, that he would procure a charter for him and send whatever he needed, "either men or provisions or goods wherewith to trade with the Indians."

The removal of Roger Conant and his associates to Naumkeag (Salem) left Cape Ann deserted, as we have no evidence that any

remained there. Those who did not follow their leader went either to Virginia or returned to England, and the house which they occupied at Cape Ann was removed in 1628 to Salem to accommodate Governor Endicott. The new location was well chosen, and the planters by their courage and industry, enduring many privations and hardships, were able to overcome all difficulties and prove the possibility of a succesful settlement. The coming of Endicott and his company two years later (1628) made sure the founding of the good old Puritan city of Salem, as narrated in the chapter on that municipality. F. A. G.

---

## CHAPTER III.

## THE STORY OF THE PLANTERS—PART II.

### SALEM BEFORE 1630

Salem, the "City of Peace"—The First Settlers under Roger Conant—Account by William Wood in his "New England's Prospect"—John Endicott's Company—The First Council—Third Migration to Salem in 1629—Record of the Voyage and List of Those Who Came.

Salem, the "City of Peace," embodies in the name the spirit of Roger Conant, the founder of this historic Puritan community. The plantation at Cape Ann had proved a failure, owing in great degree to the lack of fertility of the soil at the point chosen. Conant, as Hubbard states, "disliked the place as much as the adventurers disliked the business; and therefore in the meanwhile had made some inquiry into a more commodious place near adjoining, on the other side of a creek, called Naumkeag, a little to the westward, where was much better encouragement as to the design of a plantation, than that which they had attempted upon before at Cape Anne." Hubbard further says of Conant: "Secretly conceiving in his mind, that in the following times (as since is fallen out) it might prove a receptacle for such, as upon the account of religion, would be willing to begin a foreign plantation in this part of the world, of which he gave some intimation to his friends in England. Whereupon that reverend person Mr. White (under God one of the chief founders of the Massachusetts Colony in New England) being grieved in his spirit that so good a work should be suffered to fall to the ground by the adventurers thus abruptly breaking off, did write to Mr. Conant not to desert his business; faithfully promising, that if himself with three others (whom he knew to be honest and prudent men) viz: John

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

A chart of Massachusetts Bay; drawn about 1634, on a scale of 2⅓ Italian miles, by estimation, to an inch. Size 2 ft. x 1 ft. 3 in. [Add 5415 g. iii].
The letter B in the map shows the location of the John Humphrey house in what is now Swampscott.

Same Continued

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Woodberry, John Balch, and Peter Palfreys,* employed by the adventurers, would stay at Naumkeag, and give timely notice thereof, he would provide a patent for them, and likewise send them whatever they should write for, either men or provisions, or goods wherewith to trade with the Indians. Answer was returned that they would all stay on those terms, entreating that they might be encouraged accordingly; yet it seems, before they received any return according to their desires, the last three mentioned began to recoil, and repenting of their engagement to stay at Naumkeag, for fear of the Indians, and the other inconveniences, resolved rather to go to Virginia, especially because Mr. Lyford, their minister, upon a loving invitation, was thither bound. But Mr. Conant, as one inspired by some superior instinct, though never so earnestly pressed upon to go along with them, peremptorily declared his mind to wait the providence of God in that place, where now they were, yea, though all the rest forsook him; not doubting, as he said, but if they departed he should soon have more company. The other three, observing his confident resolution, at last concurred with him, and soon after sent back John Woodbury to England, to procure necessaries for a plantation. But that God, who is ready to answer His people before they call, as He had filled the heart of that good man Mr. Conant, in New England, with courage and resolution to abide fixed in his purpose, notwithstanding all opposition and persuasion he met with to the contrary, had also inclined the hearts of several others in England about the same design." Roger Conant tells us, in his own words, how near this settlement came to being abandoned. In a petition to the General Court, he wrote: "Being one of the first, if not the very first, that resolved and made good any settlement, under God, in matter of plantation, with my family, in this Colony of Massachusetts Bay, and have been instrumental both for the founding and carrying on of the same. When in the infancy thereof, it was in great hassard of being deserted. I was the means, through grace assisting me, to stop the flight of those few that then were heere with me, and that, by my utter denial, to goe away with them who would haue gone either for England, or mostly for Virginia, but thereupon staid to the hassard of our lives." Conant's heroic determination to "hold on" is typified in his bronze statue in Washington Square, Salem; he firmly grasps the sturdy oak and stands in the face of the strong winds of adversity.

*Richard Brackenbury, in a deposition, mentioned the names of others who came to Salem with the above-named early planters: "old Goodman Norman, and son, William Allen, Walter Knight and others."

Thomas Gardner was in all probability one of these "others." He had been, as shown above, the first overseer at Cape Ann, and his name appears in the very earliest records of Salem. At a meeting of the London Company, held July 28, 1629, Mr. Webb mentioned "one Mr. Gardner, an able & expert man in divers faccultyes."

Hubbard, who was an intimate friend of Roger Conant, and who undoubtedly obtained his information from him, states that the settlement was made "on the other side of a creek called Naumkeag." The choice of the western side of the creek (which is now spanned by the Salem-Beverly bridge) was in all probability made by Conant, in order to avoid any complications on account of the Mason claims, which named the territory between the river and the Merrimack. He likewise took care to avoid any conflict with the natives, as Humphrey Woodbury shows in a deposition as follows: "The Indians were glad of the colonists company, planted by them, and came to them for protection against their Indian enemy up country, and we did shelter them when they fled, and we did have their free leave to build and plant, where we had taken up their lands." William Dixey, in a deposition, gave similar testimony concerning the harmony existing between the early planters and the Indians. The exact point of settlement of the planters when they came to Naumkeag is not definitely known, but there is excellent reason for believing that the first houses were erected on the southern side of the North river on the shore of the cove at the foot of what is now appropriately named Conant street and to the west of the present March street. Mr. Sidney Perley, in his papers on "Salem Before 1700," showed that many houses stood here early in the 17th century, and that an old road ran along on the shore of the North river in that locality. The old "Planter's Marsh" was between this site and the nearby Collins Cove. The present Planters street runs through this last-named section. The description of the little settlement, given by William Wood in his "New England's Prospect," published in 1634, tends strongly to confirm belief in the above location as the true one:

Four miles northeaft from Saugus lieth Salem, which ftands on the middle of a neck of land very pleafantly, having a fouth river on the one fide, and a north river on the other fide; upon this neck where moft of the houfes ftand is very bad and fandy ground, yet for feven years together it hath brought forth exceeding good corn, with being fifhed but every third year; in fome places is very good ground, and good timber, and divers fprings hard by the fea fide. Here likewise is ftore of fifh, as Baffes, Eels, Lobsters, Clams, etc.

Although their land is none of the beft, yet beyond thefe rivers is a very good foil, where they have taken farms, and get their hay, and plant their corn; there they crofs thefe rivers with fmall canoes, which are made of whole pine trees, being about two feet and an half over, and twenty feet long; in thefe they likewife go a fowling, fometimes two leagues to fea; there be more canoes in this town, than in all the whole patent; every houfehold having a water horfe or two.

This town wants an Alewife river, which is a great inconvenience; it hath two good harbours, the one being winter, the other fummer harbours, which lyeth within Derbin's fort, which place if it were well fortified, might keep fhips from landing of forces in any of thofe two places. (The author of the above, probably left New England in 1633.)

The first houses were undoubtedly built close to the shore for greater safety in case of Indian attack, and the canoes were their most common means of intercourse. The members of the little colony of planters were building, planting and fishing, in their endeavor to establish themselves, and in the meantime important events were transpiring in England. The Council, which had been established at Plymouth, England, and incorporated November 3, 1620, "for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of New England," sold in March, 1627, the following territory: "That part of New England three miles north of the Merrimack and three miles south of the Charles River in the bottom of the Massachusetts Bay." The purchasers were "some knights and gentlemen about Dorchester, viz., Sir Henry Roswell, Sir John Young, Knights, Thomas Southcoat, John Humphrey, John Endicott and Simon Whitcome, Gent." Reverend John White, the patriarch of Dorchester, England, tells us in his own quaint diction, the way in which the interest of these gentlemen was enlisted in this enterprise. I quote from his "Brief Relation," printed in 1630.

> Some then of the adventurers that still continued their desire to set forward the plantation of a Colony there, conceiving that if more cattle were sent over to those few men left behind, they might not only be a means of the comfortable subsisting of such as were already in the country, but of inviting some other of their friends and acquaintance to come over to them, adventured to send over twelve kine and bulls more; and conferring casually with some gentlemen in London, moved them to add unto them as many more. By which occasion, the business came to agitation afresh in London, and being at first approved by some and disliked by others, by argument and disputation it grew to be more vulgar; insomuch that some men showing some good affection to the work, and offering the help of their purses if fit men might be procured to go over, inquiry was made whether any would be willing to engage their persons in the voyage. By this inquiry it fell out that among others they lighted at last on Master Endicott, a man well known to divers persons of good note, who manifested much willingness to accept this offer as soon as it was tendered; which gave great encouragement to such as were upon the point of resolution to set on this work of erecting a new Colony upon the old foundation. Hereupon divers persons having subscribed for the raising of a reasonable sum of money, a patent was granted with large encouragements every way by his most excellent Majesty.

This company under the direction of John Endicott, sailed from Weymouth, England, June 20, 1628, in the ship "Abigail," commanded by Captain Henry Gauden, or Godden, and arrived at Naumkeag on the 6th of September. We have abundant contemporary evidence of the date of the arrival. Rev. John White, in the "Planter's Plea," above quoted, stated that Endicott arrived "in September, 1628, and uniting his own men with those which were formerly planted in the country into one body, they made up in all not much above fifty or sixty persons." Governor Dudley, in a letter written to the Countess

of Lincoln, March 12, 1630, in referring to the year 1628, wrote: "And the fame year we fent Mr. John Endicott and some with him, to begin a plantation; and to ftrengthen fuch as he fhould find there, which we fent thiether from Dorchester, fome places adjoyning; from whom the fame year receiving hopeful news." Governor Bradford, in his "letter book," after referring to some people who were sent to Plymouth from Leyden in 1629, wrote: "as the Lord fent thefe unto us, both to their and our comfort, fo at the fame time he fent many other godly perfons into the land, as the beginning of a plentiful harveft, as will appear more fully hereafter; So as the delay of our friends was now recompenfed with a large increafe, to the honour of God and joy of all good men; thefe began to pitch at Nahumkeak, fince called Salem, to which place was come in the latter end of fummer before, a worthy gentlemen, Mr. John Endicott by name, and fome others with him, to make fome preparation for the reft." Governor Bradford again mentions the historical position of this settlement in his "Verse on New England," reprinted in the publications of the Massachusetts Historical Society:

> Almost ten years we lived here alone
> In other places there were few or none
> For Salem was the next of any fame,
> That began to augment New England's name.

Another very interesting bit of evidence regarding the coming of the Endicott party is the following extract from the records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England: "This day dd a warrant to Mr. George Harwood, Threr, to pay Mr. Barnard Mitchell one hundred pounds, in pte of the ffreight of the.....Henry Gawden, Mr., from Waimouth to Naumkeke, the goods shipt.....of lading dated 20 June last, beeing p bill of lading 46 1-2 tuns of....., besyds ye chardge of Capten John Endicott, his wiffe and.....psons his company, theire passage & dyett."

"Unfortunately the space reserved for the number of persons in the above document was not filled out, and so we are in doubt in regard to the exact numerical strength of the company, which was evidently a small one. Deputy Governor Dudley stated that there came "Mr. John Endecott and some with him." The Reverend John White wrote: "Master Endicott.....assisted with a few men." He later stated that "uniting his own men with those which were formerly planted in the country into one body, they made up in all not much above fifty or sixty persons." Hubbard probably received his knowledge of this early period from Roger Conant, and his allusion to the Endicott Company is therefore especially interesting. He wrote in his "Narrative": "With Mr. Endicot in the year 1628, came

Mr. Gotte, Mr. Brackenbury, Mr. Davenport and others, who being added to Capt. Trask and John Woodberry (that was before this time returned with a comfortable answer to them that sent him over) went on comfortably together to make preparation for the new Colony."

We learn from Hubbard in the last quotation that Messrs. Gott, Brackenbury and Davenport came with Endicott and "some others." The Spragues (Ralph, Richard and William) have been placed by Felt and others as members of this company, and the omission of their names in the above list of Hubbard's caused Alexander Young in his "Chronicles" to assert that the claim was therefore invalidated. In the opinion of the writer, this does not necessarily follow. The Spragues may have been included in "the others" referred to, but not named. We know from a statement in the Charlestown records that the three Sprague brothers "arrived at Salem at their own charge." They might easily have paid their passage on the "Abigail," been included in the "others" referred to, and had their names omitted, as they were neither the employees of the company nor passengers at the company's expense.

John Woodbury, as we have stated in the "Founders of the Massachusetts Bay Colony," was one of the Cape Ann Planters who was sent back to England to procure supplies, returning to Naumkeag in 1628, before Endicott arrived. The manner in which Hubbard has coupled Captain Trask's name with Woodbury's leads us to think that in all probability Captain Trask came over with Woodbury when he returned hither. We believe that Trask came before Endicott.

The old planters who had come to Naumkeag two years before and had enjoyed their freedom under the mild domination of their peace-loving leader, Roger Conant, naturally chafed under the sterner rule of John Endicott. The chief bone of contention was the question of raising tobacco, Captain Endicott having been instructed not to allow any one to cultivate it, while the old planters had raised it for two years. This controversy resulted in the giving of special concessions to the earlier settlers, as Endicott received instructions from England to allow the Old Planters to cultivate it, and this privilege was renewed later. Hubbard tells us that the disagreement was "by the prudent moderation of Mr. Conant,.....quietly composed," and Rev. John White wrote that when the name was changed from Naumkeag to Salem, it was done "upon a fair ground, in remembrance of a peace settled upon a conference at a general meeting between them and their neighbors, after expectance of some dangerous jar."

The care exercised by the authorities of the company in England to guard the interests of the Old Planters was marked and was a substantial recognition of the value of these men. In the first letter of general instruction to Endicott, he was informed that they were

"content they shall be partakers of such privileges as we, from his Majesty's especial grace, with great cost, favor of personages of note, and much labor, have obtained; and that they shall be incorporated into this Society, and enjoy not only these lands which formerly they have manured, but such further proportion as by the advice and judgment" of Endicott and the rest of the Council, should be thought fit. They told him further that it was their purpose that the Planters "should have some benefit by the common stock,.....if it be held too much to take thirty per cent. and the freight of the goods for and in consideration of our adventure and disbursement of our moneys, to be paid in beaver at six shillings per pound, that you moderate the said rate, as you with the rest of the Council shall think to be agreeable to equity and good conscience." They wrote that they would "unwillingly do any act in debarring such as were inhabitants before us of that trade, as in conscience they ought to enjoy." They also provided for the participation of the Old Planters in the government by voting that "such of the said former planters as are willing to live within the limits of our Plantation, shall be enabled and are hereby authorized, to make choice of two, such as they shall think fit, to supply and make up the number of twelve of the said Council."

The necessity of peaceful co-operation for the common good evidently had much to do with the rapid disappearance of animosities. The fear of the Indians was evidently one factor, as the following quotation from a letter written by Rev. Thomas Cobbett to Increase Mather will show:

About ye yeare 1628 when those few yt came out with Colonel Indecot and began to settle at Nahumkeick, now called Salem, and in a manner all so seck of ye journey, that though they had both small and great guns, and powder and bullets for ym, yet had not strength to manage ym if suddenly put upon it, and tidings being certainly brought ym on a Lord's day morning yt a thousand Indians from Sugust were coming against ym to cut ym off, they had much adoe amongst ym all to charge two or three of ye great guns and trail ym to a place of advantage where ye Indians must pass to ym and there to shoot ym off, when they heard their noise they made in ye woods, yt ye Indians drew near, ye noise of which great artillery to which ye Indians were never wonted before, did occasionally (by ye good hand of God) strike such dread into ym yt by some lads, which lay as scouts in ye woods, they were heard to reiterate that outcrie (O Obbomock) and then fled confused back with all speed when none pursued.

Sickness from scurvy and other disorders weakened the strength of the company and made it still more necessary that they should live on as good terms with each other as possible. Endicott performed excellent service for the little band and when upon learning that they had at Plymouth in the person of Doctor Samuel Fuller, a very skilful man, sent to the governor there and asked that he be sent to Salem. The request was granted, to the great relief of the settlers, and later

Endicott in a letter to Bradford wrote, "I acknowledge myself much bound to you for your kind love and care in sending Mr. Fuller amongst us."

Morton and his people at Merry Mount added still further to Endicott's troubles and he administered summary justice. Endicott had a double right to interfere with these men in their illicit traffic with the Indians and their questionable festivities about the May-pole. Not only was the ground on which Morton's men lived within the territory covered by his patent, but he was instructed in the first letter that if "necessity require a more severe course, when fair means will not prevail," to deal with such people as his discretion should think "fittest for the general good and safety of the Plantation."

In order that the power of the company might be strengthened in the territory about Boston Bay, Endicott was instructed to send forty or fifty persons to inhabit about there as soon as they should arrive on the ships which were being fitted out. All men who desired to "settle themselves there, or to send servants thither," were to be given "all accommodation and encouragement." Endicott was instructed however, in the case of Englishmen whom he found planted there, and who were willing to live under the government, "to endeavour to give them all fitting and due accommodation as to any of ourselves; yea, if you see cause for it, though it be with more than ordinary privileges in point of trade." Thus we see again the great care which they exercised in their endeavors to avoid conflicts. This was also shown in the instructions concerning their dealing with the Indians. The same letter contained the following: "If any of the salvages pretend right of inheritance to all or any part of the lands granted in our patent, we pray you endeavour to purchase their title, that we may avoid the least scruple of intrusion." Young states that these instructions were literally observed, and quotes a letter from the provincial authorities to the home government in 1767, as follows: "We are satisfied there are no complaints against this Province by his Majesty's agents for Indian affairs; and that no settlements have been made or attempted by us without proper authority. It is with much pleasure we remind your Excellency, and inform the world, that greater care was taken of the Indians by our pious ancestors during the old charter, and by this government under the new, even to this day, than was ever required of us by the British government." Endicott was ordered "if it might be conveniently done, to compound and conclude with them all, (the Indians) or as many as you can, at one time, not doubting by your discreet ordering of this business, the natives will be willing to treat and compound with you on very easy conditions."

The powers vested in Endicott by the company were paternal as well as governmental, and thus his duties were greatly augmented. Every man was required to have some definite occupation, and it was

the business of the local authorities to see that he employed himself diligently in it. No drones were to be permitted to live in the precincts. Paternalism did not stop even here, and it is a matter of sincere regret to all students of this early period that the following instruction was not carried out to the letter: "The course we have prescribed for keeping a daily register in each family, of what is done by all and every person in the family, will be a great help and remembrance to you, and to future posterity for the upholding and continuance of this good act, if once well begun and settled; which we heartily wish and desire, as aforesaid." In the matter of indulgence in alcoholics, this same fatherly oversight was to be exercised, and Endicott was directed that if any should "exceed in that inordinate kind of drinking as to become drunk," he should "take care his punishment be made exemplary for all others."

Great care was taken that these rules should be generally known, and Endicott was told to "Let the laws be first published to forbid these disorders, and all others you fear may grow up; whereby they may not pretend ignorance of the one nor privilege to offend; and then fear not to put good laws, made upon good ground and warrant in due execution."

At a meeting of the company in England, held April 30, 1629, John Endicott was chosen Governor, with Messrs. Higginson, Skelton, Bright, John and Samuel Brown, Thomas Graves and Samuel Sharp as members of the Council. The Governor and Council were to choose three more and the Planters two in addition. The official name of this governing body of thirteen men was the "Governor and Council of London's Plantation in the Massachusetts Bay in New England." His election as Governor was announced to him in a letter from the company, dated May 28, 1629, which read as follows: "Wee have sithence our last and according as we then advised, at a full and ample Court assembled, elected and established you, Captain Endecott, to the place of the present Governour of our Plantation there, and as also some others to be of the Council with you, as more particularly you will perceive by an Act of Court herewith sent, confirmed by us at a General Court, and sealed with our common seal." The oath administered to Governor Endicott was as follows:

**You shall be faithful and loyal unto your Sovereign Lord, the King's Majesty, and to his heirs and successors. You shall support and maintain, to your power, the government and company of the Mattachusetts Bay, in New England, in America, and the privileges of the same, having no singular regard to yourself in derogation or hindrance of the common wealth of this Company; and to every person under your authority you shall administer indifferent and equal justice. Statutes and ordinancys shall you none make without the advice and consent of the Council for the government of the Mattachusetts Bay in New-England. You shall admit none into the freedom of this Company but such as may claim the same by virtue of the privileges thereof. You shall**

not bind yourself to enter into any business or process for or in the name of this Company, without the consent and agreement of the Council aforesaid, but shall endeavour faithfully and carefully to carry yourself in this place and office of Governor, as long as you shall continue in it. And likewise you shall do your best endeavour to draw the natives of this country, called New England, to the knowledge of the True God, and to conserve the planters and others coming hither, in the same knowledge and fear of God. And you shall endeavour, by all good means, to advance the good of the Plantations of this Company, and you shall endeavour the raising of such commodities for the benefit and encouragement of the adventurers and planters as, through God's blessing on your endeavours, may be produced for the good and service of the kingdom of England, this Company and their Plantations. All these premises you shall hold and keep to the uttermost of your power and skill, so long as you shall continue in the place of Governor of this fellowship. So help you God!

The oath administered to the members of the Council was similar, but shorter. Richard Brackenbury, one of the men who came with Endicott, deposed: "that Mr. Endicott, when he arrived hither, took possession of Cape Ann, and in the course of the year, had the house built there, pulled down for his own use and also took possession of Cape Ann side, and soon after laid out lots for tillage there" (the present Beverly).

We have seen above that the second migration to Salem under Endicott was a marked advance in matter of equipment and financial support over the little band of planters who came to Salem from Cape Ann in 1626 under Roger Conant, and the third company under the Revs. Higginson and Skelton in 1629 was a vast deal better supplied than either of the others had been. The fact that the shrewd men of means in England were willing to invest large sums for the equipment of this third company was a most eloquent tribute to the industry and fortitude of the hardy men who had preceded them to the wilderness and had demonstrated that New England was a region of great possibilities. White, in his "Brief Relation," written in 1630, proves this connection when he writes that "His (Endicott's) prosperous journey, and safe arrival of himself and all his company, and good report which he sent back of the country, gave such encouragement to the work, that more adventurers joining with the first undertakers, and all engaging themselves more deeply for the prosecution of the design, they sent over the next year about three hundred persons more. . . . By this time the often agitation of this affair in sundry parts of the kingdom, the good report of Captain Endicott's government, and the increase of the Colony, began to awaken the spirits of some persons of competent estates, not formerly engaged."

Governor Endicott, in his first letter to the officers of the company in England, dated September 13, 1628, and received by them February 13, 1628-9, requested that more men and supplies and stock be sent over, for Governor Craddock in his reply, dated February 16,

1628-9, wrote: "to give you hearty thanks for your large advice contained in this your letter, which I have fully imparted unto them, and further to certify to you that they intend not to be wanting by all good means to further the plantation. To which purpose (God willing), you shall hear more at large (from) them, and that speedily; there being one ship bought for the Company, of 100 tons, and two others hired, of about 200 tons each of them, one of 19, and the other 20 pieces of ordnance; besides, not unlike, but one other vessel shall come in company with these; in all which ships, for the general stock and for particular adventures, there is likely to be sent thither 'twixt 2 and 300 persons (we hope to reside there), and about 100 head of cattle." He mentioned the fact that he had forwarded to Governor Endicott in November, 1628, by Mr. Allerton, a letter, in which he stated that the company desired Endicott to provide "convenient housing fit to lodge as many as you can against they do come; and withal what beaver, or other commondities, or fish, (if you have the means to preserve it) can be gotten ready to return in the aforesaid ships; likewise wood, if no better lading be to be had; . . . whereby our ships, whereof two are to return back directly hither, may not come wholly empty." In closing, he wrote: "And so till my next, which shall be, (God willing) by our ships, who I make account will be ready to set sail from here about the 20th of this next month of March." As a matter of record, however, they did not sail until the middle of April.

In the above-mentioned letter Governor Craddock states that "It is fully resolved, by God's assistance, to send over two ministers, at the least, with the ships now intended to be sent thither." He mentioned Mr. Peters, but stated that "he is now in Holland, from whence his return hither I hold to be uncertain. Those we send you, shall be by the approbation of Mr. White, of Dorchester, and Mr. Davenport."

The records of the company show that at a meeting held March 23, 1628, "intimation was given by Mr. Nowell, by letters from Mr. Isaac Johnson, that Mr. Higgeson, of Leicester, an able minister, proffers to go to our plantation; who being approved for a reverend, grave minister, fit for our present occasions, it was thought by those present to entreat Mr. John Humfry to ride to Leicester, and if Mr. Higgeson may conveniently be had to go this present voyage, that he should deal with him; first, if his remove from hence be without scandal to that people, and approved by consent of some of the best affected among them, with the approbation of Mr. Hildersham, of Ashby-de-la-Zouch." This Mr. Hildersham referred to, has been called "a great and shining light of the Puritan party, and justly celebrated for his singular learning and piety." Mr. Higginson was found to be satisfactory to all concerned. In the letter of instructions to Governor Endicott, he was described as a "grave man, and of worthy commendations." Concerning the other leader of this company, we read in the same letter: "One of them

is well known to yourself, viz., Mr. Skelton, whom we have rather desired to bear a part in this work, for that we are informed yourself have formerly received much good by his ministry." A third minister was sent in the employ of the company, "Mr. Bright, some times trained up under Mr. Davenport."

Other prominent men selected to go were: Mr. Samuel Sharp, "by us entertained to be master-gunner of our ordnance;" Mr. Thomas Graves, the engineer, "a man commended to us as well for his honesty, as skill in many things very useful;" and Lambert Wilson, chirurgeon, "to remain with you in the service of the Plantation." The large majority of the men selected to come were artisans, such as carpenters, shipwrights, wheelwrights, shoemakers, hunters, and others whose labors would be of especial value in the establishment of a permanent settlement. The company was said (in a quotation which Prince gives) to number "Sixty women and maids, 26 children, and 300 men, with victuals, arms, apparel, tools, 140 head of cattle, &c., in the Lord Treasurer's warrant." The early spring days of 1629 must have been exceedingly busy ones for the promoters of this enterprise, who were purchasing and loading supplies of all kinds. Space forbids us to give more than brief mention of the many articles which appear in the lists made out by Mr. Washburne, the secretary. Great skill and foresight was displayed in the make-up of the cargoes. The ships were ballasted with "2 loads of chalk, 10 thousand of bricks, 5 chaldrons of sea-coals, nails, one ton of iron, 2 fagots of steel, 1 fodder (about 1600 to 2000 pounds) of lead, 1 barrel of red lead, with salt, sail-cloth and copper."

Articles of wearing apparel for 100 men were purchased, which included 400 pairs of shoes, 300 pairs of stockings, 200 suits of doublets and hose of leather, lined with oilskin leather, 100 waistcoats of green cotton bound with red tape, 500 red knit caps and many other things in proportion. The soldiers were to wear the following uniforms, of which one hundred were sent: 100 mandalions lined with white cotton, breeches and waist coats, and leather doublets and hose. For the military equipment of these hundred fighting men, they provided 3 drums, 2 ensigns, 2 partisans for captain and lieutenant, 3 halberds for three sergeants, 90 muskets of various kinds specified, 10 fowling pieces, 90 bandoliers for the muskets each with a bullet bag, 10 horn flasks for the long fowling-pieces, 100 swords and belts, 60 corslets, 60 pikes, twenty half pikes, 8 pieces of land ordnance for the fort, 12 barrels of powder, 900 pounds of shot, and great shot in proportion to the ordnance. The list of provisions included 45 tuns of beer, 22 hogsheads of beef, 40 bushels of pease, 10 firkins of butter and many other articles too numerous to mention.

Francis Higginson put us under deep obligation to him, when he wrote the account of this voyage, which proved to be so important to

the welfare and preservation of New England. The beginning of this record contains so much of interest that I will quote from it as follows:

A True Relacon of ye last voyage to New England made ye last Sumer, begun ye 25th of April being Saturday, Anno Doi 1629.

The company of New England consisting of many worthy gentlemen in ye citty of London, Dorchester & other places, ayming at ye glory of God, ye propagacon of ye gospell of Christ, ye conversion of ye Indians, & ye enlargemt of ye Kings maties dominions in America, & being authorised by his royall letters patent for yt end, at their very great costs & chardgs furnished 5 Ships to go to new England, for ye further setling of ye English plantacon yt had already begun there.

The names of ye 5 Shipps were as followeth. The first is called ye Talbot, a good & strong shipp of 300 tunnes, & 19 pieces of ordinance & served with 30 mariners. This ship carried about an 100 planters, 6 goates, 5 great pieces of ordinance, with meale, oatmeale, pease, & all manner of munitio and provisio for ye platacon for a twelve month. The second ye George, another strong ship also, about 300 tunnes, 20 pieces of ordinance, served with about 30 mariners; her chiefe carriage were cattell, 12 mares, 30 kyne, & some goates: also ther gad in her 52 planters & other provision. The 3d is called ye Lyons whelpe, a neat & nimble ship of 120 tunnes, 8 pieces of ordinance, carrying in her many mariners and about 40 planters, specially from dorchester & other places thereabouts, wth provision, and 4 goates. The 4th is called ye 4 sisters, as I heare of about 300 tuns, wch fayre ship carried many cattell wth passengera & provision. The 5th is called ye Mayflower, carrying passengers and provision.

Now amongst these 5 ships, ye George hauing the special & urgent cause of hastening her passage sett sayle before ye rest about ye midst of April. And ye 4 Sisters & ye Mayflower being not thoroughly furnished, intended as we heard to sett forth about 3 weeks after us: But we yt were in ye Talbot & ye Lions whelpe being ready for voyage by ye good hand of God's providence hoysed or sayle fro Graues end on Saturday ye 25th of April about 7 o'clock in ye morning. Having but a faynt wynd we could not go farre yt day, but at night wee ancred against Lie wch is 12 miles fro graues end & there we rested yt night & kept Sabbath ye next day.

They slowly worked their way along the coast and May 5th Mr. Higginson and his wife and daughter Mary and others went on shore near Yarmouth, remaining there while the ship added provisions until Saturday the 9th, when they returned to the ship. The final start was made on the 11th. The daily journal of the voyage which Mr. Higginson kept is exceedingly interesting, but space forbids our quoting further from it, excepting the record of the last day of the voyage, which reads as follows:

Monday (June 29) we came from Capan, to go to Naimkecke, the wind northerly. I should have told you before that the planters spying our English colours the Governour sent a shalop with 2 men on Saturday to pilot us. These rested the Sabbath with us at Capan; and this day, by God's blessing and their directions, we passed the curious and difficult entrance into the large spacious harbour of Naimkecke. And as we passed along it was wonderful to behould so many islands replenished with thicke wood and high trees, and many faire

green pastures. And being come into the harbour we saw the George to our great comfort then being come on Tuesday which was 7 daies before us. We rested that night with glad and thankful hearts that God had put an end to our long and tedious journey through the greatest sea in the world.

June 30. The next morning the governor came aboard to our ship, and bade us kindly welcome, and invited me and my wiffe to come on shoare, and take our lodging in his house which we did accordingly.

Visitors to Salem will attest that first impressions of the place are eagerly sought by the inhabitants, and we are pleased to record what some of the members of this company thought of the place. Francis Higginson, after narrating the beauties and advantages of Naumkeag, wrote: "Thus we see both Land and Sea abound with stores of blessings for the comfortable sustenance of Man's life"; and Thomas Graves, in a letter to England, wrote: "Thus much I can affirme in generall, that I neuer came in a more goodly Country in all my life, all things considered:..... I never saw except in Hungaria, unto which I always paralell this countrie, in all or most respects, for everything that is heere eyther sowne or planted prospereth far better than in old England..... The healthfulness of the countrie far exceedeth all parts that ever I have been in." Mr. Higginson closed his "Relation of New England" with the following account:

When we came first to Nehum-kek, we found about half a score houses, and a fair house newly built for the Governor. We found also abundance of corn planted by them, very good and well liking. And we brought with us about two hundred passengers and planters more, which, by common consent of the old planters, were all combined together into one body politic, under the same Governor. There are in all of us, both old and new planters, about three hundred, whereof two hundred of them are settled at Nehum-kek- now called Salem, and the rest have planted themselves at Massathulets Bay, beginning to build a town there, which we do call Cherton or Charlestown. We that are settled at Salem make what haste we can to build houses, so that within a short time we shall have a fair town. We have great ordnance, wherewith we doubt not but we shall fortify ourselves in a short time to keep out a potent adversary. But that which is our greatest comfort and means of defence above all others, is that we have here the true religion and holy ordinances of Almighty God taught amongst us.

We have the following account of the settlers who came with this third company to Salem:

John Baker went to Charlestown in 1629. It is probable that he was in some way connected with the large island in Salem harbor bearing that name, for John Winthrop, in his journal, under date of June 12, 1630, wrote: "As we stood toward the harbour, we saw another shallop coming to us; so we stood in to meet her, and passed through the narrow strait between Baker's Isle and Little Isle, and came to an anchor a little within the islands." Probably the name was given to Winthrop by the pilot who came out to take his vessel in. Baker may have erected a fishing shack or some similar structure on the island.

Thomas Beard, aged 30 in 1629, unmarried, shoemaker, was recommended to have 50 acres of land, "as one that transports himself at his own charge." He brought with him in the "Mayflower," "divers hides, both for soles and upper leathers, which he intends to make up in boots and shoes there in the country."

Alice Beckly or Beggerly, wife of John Beggerly, who did not come over, and from whom she was seeking a divorce.

Goodman Black. A child of his "which had a consumpcon before it came to shipp, dyed," on the passage. We can find no further record of him.

William Brackenbury was at Charlestown in 1629, and probably came with this company. He was a brother of Richard who came in 1628 with John Endicott. He was a baker.

Thomas Brude or Brand was a cleaver of timber, "entertained by us in halves with Mr. Craddock, our Governor."

Reverend Francis Bright came in the "Lion's Whelp," and went with the party to Charlestown.

John Browne, gentleman, and Mr. Samuel Browne, his brother, of Roxwell, England, came at their own charge. They were conformists to the Church of England, and for attempting to form a church party in Salem were sent back to England by Governor Endicott. A full account of the controversy has been given in "John Endicott and the Men Who Came to Salem in the Abigail in 1628."

Barnaby Claydon, aged twenty-three, came from Sutton, Bedfordshire. He was a wheelwright by trade. In the company's second general letter he was directed to work for Mr. Sharpe.

Richard Claydon, aged thirty-four, brought his wife, daughter, sister, and the above-named brother with him. He was a carpenter and wheelwright by trade and came under contract to work, said document bearing date of March 12, 1628. He was to instruct the company's servants in the trade of a ploughwright.

Edward Converse, evidently came with this company, for he was in Charlestown in 1629.

William Dady, a butcher by trade, was in Charlestown in 1630, and Wyman thinks that he may have come with the Higginson Company in 1629.

Captain William Dixey became one of the most prominent men in Beverly, holding many offices of honor and trust during his long life.

William Dodge was the son of John and Margery Dodge of Somersetshire. In the second letter of instruction to Governor Endicott, dated London, May 28, 1629, the secretary stated that Mr. White wished to have the following direction inserted: "That you would show all lawful favor and respect unto the planters that come in the Lion's Whelp, out of the Counties of Dorset and Somerset, that you would appoint unto

William Dodge, a skilful and painful husbandman, the charge of a team of horses."

William Eedes came as a servant to Sir Richard Saltonstall. He was a carpenter or wheelwright.

Richard Ewstead, a wheelwright, came commended by Mr. Davenport to work on shares for the company and Governor Craddock. In the company's letter he is described as "a very able man, though not without his imperfections. We pray you take notice of him and regard him as he shall well deserve."

George Farr was a shipwright, sent over under contract.

Hugh Garrett became an inhabitant of Charlestown in 1629 and was the tenth on the list of the first thirteen. He was a shoemaker, and perished in a storm, January 28, 1630-1. His daughter Hannah died "a fatherless child" 12 month, 1632.

Mr. Goffe is mentioned (probably Deputy Governor Thomas Goffe). He never came over, but his dog evidently started, for in the journal of the voyage we read that on May 26th "Mr. Goffes great dogg fell over board & could not be recouered."

Mr. Thomas Graves, the engineer, was one of the most valuable and useful men of this migration. He was to "have his charges borne, out and home; being a man of experience in iron works, in salt works, in measuring and surveying of lands, and in fortifications, &c., in lead, copper and alum mines." He was chosen a member of Governor Endicott's Council, April 30, 1629.

Thomas Hanscombe was brother-in-law of Richard Claydon, and was mentioned as one of a number to come with him. We find no further record of him and do not know that he actually came.

Richard Haward, from Bedfordshire, was mentioned as a man who would "well and orderly demean" himself. He was sent over with his family to Salem in 1629, by the Massachusetts Bay Company.

Henry Haughton was the first Ruling Elder of the church at Salem. According to the instruction of the company, he was to take Mr. Samuel Sharpe's place in various ways if the latter should be sick or absent. He died in the first winter, leaving one child.

Reverend Francis Higginson, the leader of this migration, was the son of Reverend John Higginson, Vicar of Claybrooke, Leistershire, and was baptized at that place August 6, 1586. He was educated at Jesus College, taking his B. A. degree in 1609, and his M. A. in 1613. He was ordained deacon September 25, 1614, and priest on the 8th of the following December. He was installed to the rectory of Barton-in-Fabis, Nottingham County, and deanery of Brigham, which he resigned August 4, 1616. Mr. E. C. Felton stated that it is certain that Francis Higginson, although he had the rectory of Barton-in-Fabis conferred upon him, was never inducted, and therefore never received any of the fruits of the benefice nor, we may take it, discharged any of the duties. His successor

was instituted, on his resignation, just a year afterwards, April 4, 1616. He further goes on to state that "The record of Higginson's institution states, in the accustomed form, that a mandate was sent to the Archbishop to induct him, so that failure to act upon it can only have arisen because Higginson himself did not seek induction." Later he was connected with the parish of St. Nicholas. Colonel Thomas Wentworth Higginson, in his "Descendants of the Reverend Francis Higginson," states: "It is clear that he became more and more dissatisfied with the Established Church as it then was, until finally he became 'a conscientious nonconformist.'" He founded at Salem, the first church in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and did us an invaluable service in his writings. He contracted consumption, probably on board the ship, from other cases which he mentions as occurring among the passengers, and died, deeply lamented, August 6, 1630. His son, Reverend John, later distinguished himself in his father's pulpit.

Simon Hoyte evidently came with this company, as his name appears in the list of the original thirteen in Charlestown.

Richard Ingersol came from Bedfordshire and was commended in the company's letter.

Lawrence Leech. Reference was made to him in the Company's letter as follows: "We desire you to take notice of one Lawrence Leech, whom we have found a careful and painful man, and we doubt not but he will continue his diligence; let him have deserving respect."

John Meech was in Charlestown in 1629, and probably came in this company. We know nothing further about him.

(Sydrach Miller, "a cooper and cleaver; who, demanding £45 for him and his man the first year, £50 a year the second and third year," was "held too dear for the Company to be at charges withal." This reference occurs in the records of the meeting of the Company held March 2, 1628, (-9). He is not referred to again, and we do not know that he came. The writer believes that he did not.)

Robert Moulton was the "chief" of the six ship-wrights sent by the Company. Soon after that, he removed to Charlestown and is believed to have resided on "Moulton's Point," the present site of the Navy Yard.

(George) Norton. In the Company's letter to Governor Endicott we read "there is one Norton, a carpenter, whom we pray you respect as he shall deseve." Pope believed that this was "George" Norton, who was made a freeman in Salem, May 14, 1634.

Abraham Palmer was a merchant and a member of the Company in England. He adventured £50 in the joint stock and was one of the fourteen to sign the instructions to John Endicott, May 30, 1628. He came to New England (in all probability with Higginson) and went to Charlestown, where he became prominent.

Walter Palmer was with Abraham among the thirteen first settlers of Charlestown.

Mr. Richard Palsgrave was a physician. His name appears third on the list of the first thirteen inhabitants of Charlestown, in 1629. He came from Stepney, Middlesex, England.

John Pratt, surgeon. From the records of the Court of Assistants, held in London, March 5, 1629, we learn that an attempt was made to induce a surgeon to sail for Salem: "A proposicon beeing made to intertayne a surgeon for the plantacon, Mr. (John) Pratt was propounded as an abell man vppon theis condicons, namely, That 40 pounds should bee allowed him, viz—for his chist 25 pounds, the rest for his own sallery for the first yeere, prouided he continues 3 yeeres, the Companie to bee at charge of transporting his wiffe and (servant), haue 20 pounds a yeere for the other 2 yeeres, and to build him a howse at the Companie's chardge and to allott him 100 acres of ground. But if he stay but one yeere, then the Companie to bee at charge of his bringing back for England and he to leave his servant and chist for the Companie's saruice."

Isaac Rickman was recommended by Mr. Simon Whetcombe to receive "diet and house-room at the charge of the Company." That body agreed, however, that they would pay £10 per annum for diet and lodging. He probably returned to England soon, as no more is heard of him.

William Ryall (Rial or Royal) was a cooper and cleaver of timber who was employed by the Company and Governor Craddock in equal shares. The district in Beverly lying to the eastward of Danvers river and north of Bass river is named for him—Rial Side. In 1636 he removed to what is now Yarmouth, Maine, and the river which flowed by his house has ever since borne the name of Royal's river.

John Sales or Sale was one of the original thirteen at Charlestown.

Mr. Samuel Sharpe was a valuable man in the little colony, having charge of the artillery. We first learn of him in the records of the Company in London, February 26, 1628 (-9), as follows: "For our five pieces of ordnance, long since bought and paid for, Mr. John Humphrey is entreated and doth promise forthwith to cause them to be delivered to Samuel Sharpe, who is to take care for having fit carriages made for them." March 3, we read: "Mr. Samuel Sharpe, with whom there hath been an agreement made in the behalf of the Company to give him £10 per year for three years, to have the oversight of the ordnance to be planted in the fort to be built upon the Plantation, and what else may concern artillery business to give his advice in; but for all other employments was left to be entertained (i. e. employed) by any other particular brethren of the Company, who for other occasions had entertained him already, and held not fit (proper) to be at further charge in that kind. The said Sharpe is also entertained to oversee the (servants) and employments of certain particular men of the Company. But for the general (Company's concern) presented a bill for three drums and other par-

ticulars, amounting to five pounds, nineteen shillings; which the treasurer hath order to pay."

A few days later Mr. Sharpe requested of the Company that "all or the better part of his salary might be paid him now, to provide him apparel withal; and if he should happen to die before he had deserved it, his said apparel should satisfy it. Upon debate whereof, it was thought fit that twenty pounds should be paid him; and this to be the Treasurer's warrant for payment thereof, upon his salary of £10 a year, for three years." At a meeting held April 30, 1629, he was elected a member of Governor Endicott's Council. He was elected an assistant of the Company in England, but being out of the country was not able to serve, as he could not take the oath, and Roger Ludlow was elected in his place, February 10, 1630. The Company intrusted to him the duplicate charter to be delivered to Governor Endicott and he also had charge of the Company's seal. Further evidence of the great confidence reposed in him was shown by the following instruction: "If, at the arrival of this ship, Mr. Endicott should be departed this life (which God forbid,) or should die before the other ships arrive, we authorize you, Mr. Skelton, and Mr. Samuel Sharpe, to take care of our affairs, and to govern the people according to order, until further order."

Mr. Sharpe was to employ as much of his time as was necessary in the office of master-gunner and "the rest he is to follow other employments of our Governor's (i. e., Governor Craddock, whose agent he was) and others, for whose employment he is particularly sent out." If any provisions were left "that was provided for the passengers accommodation." Mr. Sharpe was to have half for the use of Mr. Craddock and partners. The fort in which Mr. Sharpe set up the ordnance above mentioned was near what is now Sewall Street.

Reverend Samuel Skelton was baptized in 1592-3. He matriculated at Clare Hall, Cambridge University, as a sizer, July 7, 1608. He took his degree of B. A. in 1611, and M. A. in 1615. Mr. E. C. Felton, who has made an exhaustive study of the Skeltons in England, states that "It was not religious persecution which compelled Skelton to leave England. He was a Puritan of the Puritans, but there is no evidence that he was ever brought in collision with the ecclesiastical authorities." Mr. Felton thought it probable that Mr. Skelton while at Tattersholl was private chaplain to the Earl of Lincoln. Simon Bradstreet the younger, who became so important a figure in New England history, was, it is said, as a youth, in the household of the Earl. In the letter to Governor Endicott the following is found: "One of them (the ministers) is well known to you, viz. Mr. Skelton, who we have the rather desired to bear a part in this work, for that we are informed yourself have formerly received much good by his ministry." No one has as yet been able to find where or when the Governor had come under the influence of Mr. Skelton.

Mr. Skelton came in the ship "George Bonaventure" and arrived here on the 24th of June, and was chosen and ordained pastor on the 20th of July, 1629. In 1630 he was granted all of the land east of what is now Summer street in Salem from the mill pond probably as far north as what is now Creek or Norman streets. His home was probably by the water near the present Mill street. Edward Johnson described him as "a man of a gracious speech, full of faith, and furnished by the Lord with gifts from above to begin this great work of His, that makes the whole earth to ring again at the present day." In the County Court papers in Salem, the writer found the following: "The ould houfe in Salem which once was Mr. Skelton's being in eminent danger of present falling to the endangering of the lives of Children & Cattell and others, ordered yt within Ten Days should, house fail to be taken downe the penaltie of ffyfe pounds, etc., etc." (27th, 6th mo., 1644.)

Reverend Ralph Smith. Allusion is made to him in the first general letter of the Company to Governor Endicott, as follows: "Mr. Ralph Smith, a minister, hath desired passage in our ships; which was granted him before we understood of his difference in judgment in some things about our ministers. But his provisions for his voyage being shipped before notice was taken thereof, through many occasions wherewith those entrusted with this business have been employed, and for as much as from hence it is feared there may grow some distraction amongst you if there should be any siding, although we have a very good opinion of his honesty, yet we shall not, (we) hope, offend in charity to fear the worst that may grow from their different judgments. We have therefore thought fit to give this order, that unless he will be comfortable to our government you suffer him not to remain within the limits of our grant." He came in the ship with Mr. Higginson, who refers to him as follows, under date of May 21, 1629: "Thursday, there being two ministers in the ship, Mr. Smith & my selfe, we endeavoured together with others to consecrate the day as a solemne fasting & humiliacon to almighty God, as a furtherance of or present worke."

Nicholas Stowers and John Strickland, Stickland or Stickling, were both included in the original list of the inhabitants of Charlestown in 1629 and probably came with this company.

Hugh Tilly came in the "Lion's Whelp" as a servant to Sir Richard Saltonstall. Shortly after his arrival, he was appointed to help in setting up a saw mill.

Richard Waterman was a hunter. In the Company's letter we read the following, directly after the words of commendation concerning Lawrence Leech which we have quoted: "The like we say of Richard Waterman, whose chief employment will be to get you good venison."

(John Whitcomb) who was in Dorchester as a proprietor in 1636-9, and later went to Scituate, may have been the "Mr. Whitcomb" who was to see the leather discharged at Salem in 1629. See Suffolk Deeds, I.,xix.

Mr. Lambert Wilson, surgeon, was mentioned in the Company's letter as follows: "We have entertained Lambert Wilson, chirurgeon, to remain with you in the service of the Plantation; with whom we are agreed that he shall serve this Company and the other planters that live in the Plantation, for three years, and in that time apply himself to cure not only such as come from hence for the general and particular accounts, but also for the Indians, as from time to time he shall be directed by yourself or your successor and the rest of the Council. And moreover he is to educate and instruct in his art one or more youths, such as you and the Council shall appoint, that may be helpful to him and, if occasion serve, succeed him in the Plantation; which youth or youths, fit to learn that profession, let be placed with him; of which Mr. Huggesson's son, if his father approve thereof, may be one, the rather because he hath been trained up to literature; but if not he then such other as you shall judge most fittest." Winthrop states that Mr. Wilson, "our chief surgeon," was in the war with the Pequots in 1637.

The size of this company, composed as it was of a large number of men, skilled in divers occupations, and the great value of the large cargoes of much needed and very useful supplies, greatly strengthened the settlement. Many of the men who came became prominent in the affairs of the town and colony, and their descendants, leaders in many walks in life, are scattered all over this glorious land, which they themselves ably assisted in founding. F. A. G.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

## ORGANIZATION OF ESSEX COUNTY.

First Incorporated Towns—Courts Established—The New Charter—Public Buildings Erected—State Institutions in the County—Statistics.

The object of this chapter is to begin with the judicial power vested in the Court of Assistants in the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1639, and trace the various changes in sub-divisions and the government of such parts of the territory as were from time to time organized to operate in a sense, separate from and independent of the general colony.

September 9, 1639, it was enacted that "for as much as the business of the ordinary Court of Assistants are so much increased as they cannot be dispatched in such season as were fit, it is therefore ordered that such of the magistrates as shall reside in or near to Boston, or any five, four or three of them, the Governor or Deputy to be one, shall have power to assemble together upon the last fifth day of the eighth, eleventh, second and fifth months every year, and then and there to hear and determine all civil causes, whereof the debt or trespass and damages shall

not exceed twenty pounds, and all criminal causes, not extending to life or member or banishment, according to the cause of the Court of Assistants, and to summon juries out of the neighbor towns, and the Marshal or necessary officers are to give their attendance as at other courts."

March 3, 1635, it was enacted that "there shall be four courts kept every quarter, one at Ipswich, to which Newbury shall belong; two at Salem, to which Saugus shall belong; two at Newtown, to which Charlestown, Concord, Medford and Watertown shall belong; four at Boston, to which Roxbury, Dorchester, Weymouth and Hingham shall belong."

There were also to be four great Quarter Courts kept yearly in Boston by the Governor and the rest of the magistrates; "the first, the first Tuesday in the fourth month, called June; the second, the first Tuesday in September; the third, the first Tuesday in December; the fourth, the first Tuesday in the first month, called March." This was when the old calendar was in use.

June 2, 1641, it was enacted that "whereas it is desired by this Court to ease the country of all unnecessary travels and charges, it is ordered that there shall be four Quarter Courts kept yearly by the magistrates of Ipswich and Salem, with such others to be joined in commission with them as this Court shall appoint, not hindering any other magistrates that will help them; this order to take effect after the next Quarter Court shall be ended at Salem and Ipswich, two of these Quarter Courts to be kept in Salem and the other two at Ipswich; the first Court to be kept the last third day of the seventh month at Ipswich (and the next at the same time the former courts were) and the next at Salem, the third quarter at Ipswich, the fourth at Salem, and the magistrates of Ipswich and Salem to attend every of these courts, but no jurymen to be warned from Ipswich to Salem, nor from Salem to Ipswich; to each of these a grand jury shall be warned once a year, and these courts to have the same power both in criminal causes the Court of Assistants hath at Boston Court; provided it shall be lawful to appeal from any of these courts to Boston; the fines of these Courts to defray the charges of the same, and the overplus to be returned to the treasurer for the public. And Salisbury and Hampton are joined to this jurisdiction of Ipswich, and each of them to send a grand juryman once a year to Ipswich."

These enactments show the arrangement and distribution of judicial powers at the time of the division of the Massachusetts Bay Colony into counties, in 1643. May 10th that year it was enacted "that the whole plantation within this jurisdiction is divided into four shires, to wit:

Essex Shire—Salem, Lynn, Enon, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Gloucester and Chochicawick.

Middlesex—Charlestown, Cambridge, Watertown, Sudbury, Concord, Woburn, Medford, Lynn Village.

Suffolk—Boston, Roxbury, Dorchester, Dedham, Braintree, Weymouth, Hingham, Nantasket.

Norfolk—Salisbury, Hampton, Haverhill, Exeter, Dover, Strawberry Bank.

These were all of the incorporated towns in the Massachusetts Colony. In the shire of Essex, Salem was incorporated June 24th, 1629, as a town, and March 23, 1836, as a city; Lynn, in November, 1637, as a town, and in April, 1850, as a city; Enon (later known as Wenham) was incorporated May 10, 1643; Ipswich, August 5, 1634; Rowley, September 4, 1639, as a town; Newbury, May 6, 1635; Gloucester, May 22, 1639, as a town, and May 26, 1871, as a city; and Chochicawick (later Andover), May 6, 1646, after the incorporation of Essex county.

In Middlesex, Charlestown was incorporated June 24, 1629; Cambridge, September 8, 1633; Watertown, September 7, 1630; Sudbury, September 4, 1639; Concord, September 2, 1635; Woburn, May 18, 1642; Medford, September 28, 1630; Linn Village (after incorporated as Reading), May 29, 1644.

In Norfolk, Salisbury was incorporated October 7, 1640; Hampton, September 4, 1639; Haverhill, in 1645, as a town, and March 10, 1869, as a city; Exeter, and Dover and Strawberry Bank (now Portsmouth) became afterwards a part of New Hampshire.

In addition to the towns above named as a part of Essex County: Amesbury was incorporated April 29, 1668; Boxford, August 12, 1685; Beverly, October 14, 1668; Bradford, in 1675 (now a part of Haverhill); Danvers, 1757; Essex, 1819; Georgetown, 1838; Groveland, 1850; Hamilton, 1792; Lawrence, incorporated as a town April 17, 1847, and as a city March 21, 1853; Lynnfield, July 3, 1782; Manchester, May 14, 1645; Marblehead, May 2, 1649; Merrimac, April 11, 1876; Methuen, December 8, 1825; Middleton, June 20, 1728; Nahant, March 29, 1853; Newburyport, January 28, 1764, as a town, and May 24, 1852, as a city; North Andover, April 7, 1855; West Newbury, as Parsons, February 18, 1819, and under its present name June 14, 1820; Peabody, March 18, 1855, as South Danvers, and its present name given April 13, 1868; Rockport, February 27, 1840; Saugus, February 17, 1815; South Danvers, May 18, 1855; Swampscott, May 21, 1852; Topsfield, October 18, 1650; West Newbury, June 14, 1820.

The account given in all previous histories shows that as the towns of Amesbury, Haverhill and Salisbury were the only towns in Norfolk county outside of the territory of New Hampshire, which became a Royal province in 1679, the following act was passed by the General Court on February 4, 1679:

This Court being sensible of the great inconvenience and charge that it will be to Salisbury, Haverhill and Amesbury to continue their County Court, now some of the towns of Norfolk are taken off, and considering that these towns did formerly belong to Essex county, and attended at Essex courts, do order that these towns that are left be again joined to Essex and attend public business at Essex courts, there to implead and be impleaded, as occasion shall be; their records of lands being still kept

in some one of their own towns on the north of Merrimack, and all persons according to course of law are to attend in Essex county.

By this act Norfolk County, as incorporated in 1643, was extinguished, to be revived in another section of the State by an act of incorporation dated March 26, 1793. The act above mentioned alludes to a former union of Amesbury, Haverhill and Salisbury with Essex, which never actually existed. The allusion is probably to old court connections which existed before the incorporation of the county, in 1643. Amesbury was a part of the old town of Salisbury; Boxford of the old town of Rowley; Beverly a part of Salem, and afterwards of Danvers; Bradford, a part of Rowley; Danvers, a part of Salem; Essex, a part of Ipswich; Georgetown, a part of Rowley; Groveland, a part of Bradford and Boxford; Hamilton, a part of Ipswich; Lawrence, a part of Andover, North Andover and Methuen; Lynnfield, a part of Lynn; Manchester, a part of Salem; Marblehead, a part of Salem; Merrimack, a part of Amesbury; Methuen, a part of Haverhill; Middleton, a part of Salem, Topsfield, Boxford and Andover; Nahant, a part of Lynn; Newburyport, a part of Newbury; North Andover, a part of Andover; Peabody (formerly South Danvers and a part of Danvers); Rockport, a part of Gloucester; Saugus, a part of Lynn and Chelsea; Swampscott, a part of Lynn and Salem; Topsfield was New Meadows; Wenham was Enon, mentioned in the act incorporating the county; and West Newbury was a part of Newbury, incorporated as Parsons, and changed to its present name June 14, 1820.

Since the addition of the towns of Amesbury, Salisbury and Haverhill in 1679, the only change in the boundaries of the county of Essex is that already referred to, caused by the annexation of a part of Chelsea, in Suffolk County, to Saugus.

The State historians mention Essex County as follows: "Essex county, of which Salem, Lawrence and Newburyport are the shire towns, is situated in the northeast corner of Massachusetts, and is bounded on the northeast by the Atlantic Ocean, on the southeast by Massachusetts Bay, on the southwest by Suffolk and Middlesex counties, and on the northwest by New Hampshire." It contains about five hundred square miles, traversed by the Merrimac river, which flows into the ocean at Newburyport; the Shawsheen, which enters the Merrimac at Lawrence; the Parker river; Bass river, and the Ipswich river.

After the formation, in 1643, of the counties, the above courts continued, though the Strangers' Courts were modified, and the Quarter Courts, in their respective counties, were called County or Inferior Quarter Courts. It had also been provided by an act passed September 9, 1639, "that records be kept of all wills, administrations, inventories, of every marriage, birth and death, and of all men's houses and lands." It had before the above date been provided by a law passed April 1, 1634:

That the constable and four or more of the chief inhabitants of every town (to be chosen by all the freemen there at some meeting there) with the advice of some

one or more of the next assistants, shall make a surveying of the houses, back side, corn fields, mowing grounds and other lands improved or enclosed on, granted by special orders of the court, of every free inhabitant there, and shall enter the same in a book (fairly written in words at length and not in figures), with the several bounds and quantities by the nearest estimation, and shall deliver a transcript thereof into the court, where in six months next now ensuing; and the same so entered and recorded shall be a sufficient assurance to every such free inhabitant, his and their heirs and assigns of such estate of inheritance or as they shall have in any such houses, lands or frank tenements. The like course shall be taken for assurance of all houses and town lots of all such as shall be hereafter enfranchised, and every sale or grant of such houses or lots as shall be, from time to time, entered into the said book by the said constable, and four inhabitants or their successors (who shall be still supplied upon death or removal), for which entry the purchasers shall pay six pence and the like sum for a copy thereof under the hands of the said surveyors or three of them.

The recorder was the clerk of the court. In 1641 it was provided that in every town "a clerk of the writs" should be appointed, and a part of his duty was to record all births and deaths, and yearly deliver to the recorder of the court a transcript thereof. It was also provided that every married man bring a certificate, under the hand of the magistrate who married him, to the clerk of the writs, to be recorded and returned by him to the recorder. Thus it will be seen how extensive the jurisdiction of the county court was made. Aside from its ordinary judicial powers, it had charge of the records of deeds of probate matters and the laying out of highways, and included the departments now held by the judge and register of probate, the register of deeds, the clerk of the courts, and county commissioners.

With regard to the treasurers, their duties up to 1654 were performed by the treasurer of the whole Colony or of the county. In that year it was provided "that henceforth there shall be treasurers annually chosen in every county, provided that no clerk or recorder of any county court shall be treasurer of the county." The officer now called sheriff was in the days of the Colony called marshal. There was a marshal of the General Court alone, up to the formation of the counties, in 1643, and after that date each court apparently appointed its own marshal, though it is possible that even before that time every Quarter Court had its own officer bearing that name. So far as Essex County is concerned, it is proper to state that the present registry of deeds contains the entire records from 1638, and that the original probate records prior to 1671 are to be found in the office of the clerk of the courts, where they were originally kept. The registry of probate was located in Ipswich until 1851, when, under general powers conferred by law, the county commissioners removed it to Salem.

Another court may be mentioned, to complete the Colonial judicial system so far as it concerned the county. On September 6, 1638, it was ordered "that for avoiding of the countries charge by bringing small charges to the Court of Assistants, that any magistrate in the town

where he may hear and determine by his discretion all causes wherein the debt, or trespass, or danger, etc., doth not exceed twenty shillings, and in such town where no magistrate dwells, the General Court shall, from time to time, nominate three men; two thereof shall have like power to hear and determine all such actions under twenty shillings; and if any of the parties shall find themselves grieved with any such end or sentence, they may appeal to the next Quarter Court, or Court of Assistants. And if any person shall bring any such action to the Court of Assistants before he hath endeavored to have it ended at home (as in this order is appointed), he shall lose his action and pay the defendant's costs."

In 1691 a new charter was issued, embracing Massachusetts, Plymouth, Maine, Nova Scotia, and the intervening territory, in one government under the name of the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England. This charter reached Boston May 14, 1692, and under its provisions the government consisted of a governor, deputy-governor and secretary appointed by the King, and assistants or councilors chosen by the General Court, and a House of Representatives chosen annually by the people. The governor had the power of veto, and all acts and elections by the General Court must be transmitted to England and approved or disallowed by the King.

The first court established under the charter was a special court of Oyer and Terminer, organized by Governor William Phipps, the first governor of the Province, before any law had been passed authorizing it, for the purpose of trying, chiefly in Essex County, persons charged with witchcraft. June 2, 1692, the governor issued his commission appointing William Stoughton chief justice, and Nathaniel Saltonstall (who declined and was succeeded by Jonathan Curwin), John Richards, Bartholomew Gedney, Wait Winthrop, Samuel Sewall and Peter Sargeant, associate justices; Stephen Sewall, clerk; Thomas Newton, attorney-general; George Corwin, sheriff. The first meeting of this court was held at Salem on June 2, 1692, and its last meeting September 17, following which the court was dissolved. During this time the expense of the court for Essex county was £130, and nineteen persons were tried, condemned and hanged, and one was pressed to death.

November, 1692, a law was passed establishing Courts of Justices of the Peace, four courts of Quarter Sessions of the Peace for each county, an Inferior Court of Common Pleas for each county, a Superior Court of Judicature for the whole province, and a High Court of Chancery for the province. This act, however, was soon dissolved. June, 1697, another was passed, establishing County Courts, which was also disallowed. It appears that the chief business in those days was to plan for the change in the court systems. The Inferior Court of Common Pleas continued until 1782, when the Court of Common Pleas was established, to be held within each county at specified times and places, with four judges appointed by the Governor from within the county. This

Lawrence; Southern district, Moody Kimball, Newburyport; County court continued until June, 1811, when an act was passed providing that the commonwealth, except Dukes county and the county of Nantucket, should be divided into six circuits.

The office of county commissioner was first established March 4, 1826. These were to be appointed by the governor, by and with the consent of the Council, four persons in each of the counties of Essex, Worcester, Middlesex, Suffolk, Norfolk and Nantucket. There were also two persons appointed to act as special county commissioners.

In 1835 it was provided by law that in every county except Suffolk and Nantucket the judge of probate, register of probate, and clerk of the Court of Common Pleas, should be a Board of Examiners. The people were to elect the three county commissioners and two special commissioners for a term of three years. This law remained until 1854, when it was provided that commissioners should be elected alternately. The subjoined is a list of the county commissioners serving since the first board in 1828: 1828-33—Asa W. Wildes, of Newburyport; Joseph Winn, of Salem; Stephens Baker, of Ipswich; William B. Breed of Lynn. 1834—John W. Proctor, of South Danvers, in place of William Breed. 1835-37—Moses Newell, of West Newbury, in place of Asa W. Wildes. 1838-40—Asa T. Newhall, of Lynn. 1841-43—Charles Kimball, of Ipswich; Robert Patten, of Amesbury; William Whipple, of Rockport. 1844-46—Asa W. Wildes, of Newburyport, and Benj. F. Newhall, of Saugus. 1847-49—John I. Baker, of Beverly. 1850-54—Benjamin Mudge of Lynn.

In 1854 the law was so changed that the county commissioners were elected in such manner as to have one member go off the board each year and another chosen by the people for a term of three years. John I. Baker, by lot, drew the first class, Benjamin Mudge the second class, and Asa W. Wildes the third class. At the 1854 election and at subsequent elections, the following were chosen as commissioners: 1854, Stephens Baker, of Beverly; 1855, Eben B. Currier, of Lawrence; 1856, George Haskell, of Ipswich; 1857, Stephens Baker; 1858, Eben B. Currier; 1859, Abram D. Wait, of Ipswich; 1860, James Kimball, of Salem; 1861, Jackson B. Swett; 1862, Abram D. Wait; 1863, James Kimball; 1864, Jackson B. Swett; 1865, Abram D. Wait; 1866, James Kimball; 1867, Jackson B. Swett; 1868, Charles P. Preston, of Danvers; 1869, James Kimball; 1870, Jackson B. Swett; 1871, Charles P. Preston; 1872, James Kimball; 1873, Zachariah Graves, of Lynn; 1874, Joseph O. Proctor, of Gloucester; 1875, James Kimball; 1876, Zachariah Graves; 1877, Joseph O. Proctor; 1881, John W. Raymond, of Beverly; 1882, Edward B. Bishop, of Haverhill; 1883, George J. L. Colby; 1884, John W. Raymond; 1885, Edward B. Bishop; 1886, David W. Low, of Gloucester, in place of George J. L. Colby; 1886, John W. Raymond; 1887, George J. L. Colby; 1887, David W. Low; 1888, John W. Raymond; 1889, Ed B.

Bishop; 1890, David W. Low; 1891, Horace F. Longfellow; 1892, Ed B. Bishop; 1893, John M. Danforth; 1894, Samuel D. Smith; 1895, Ed B. Bishop; 1896, John M. Danforth; 1897, Samuel D. Smith; 1899, Wallace Bates; 1900, E. E. Sawyer; 1901, E. B. Bishop; 1902, Wallace Bates; 1903, E. B. Sawyer; 1904, Ed. B. Bishop; 1905, Wallace Bates; 1906, Moody Kimball; 1907, James C. Poor; 1908, John M. Grosvenor, Jr.; 1909, Moody Kimball; 1910, James C. Poor; 1911, John M. Grosvenor, Jr.; 1912, James C. Poor; 1913, James C. Poor; 1914, John M. Grosvenor, Jr.; 1915, Moody Kimball; 1916, J. C. Poor; 1917, John M. Grosvenor, Jr.; 1918, Moody Kimball; 1919, James C. Poor; 1920, John M. Grosvenor, Jr.; 1921, Benjamin B. Gilman.

The State Constitution was so amended in 1855 that every fifth year thereafter, the register should be chosen by the people for a term of five years. In 1856 a Court of Insolvency was established for each county. This court had a judge and register of probate, hence the offices of judge and register were created. In 1862 the Probate Court was made a court of record. The executive officers of the court in Colonial days up to 1685 were called marshals, except in the very earliest years, when they were styled beadles. The records show that as early as 1634, James Penn was chosen marshal. Under President Dudley he was called provost-marshal; under Andros he was called sheriff; and after Andros, until the province was established, in 1692, he was again called marshal. As nearly as present records show, the marshals of Essex county were: 1663, Samuel Archard; 1670, Henry Sherry; 1685, Robert Lord; 1686, Jeremiah Neals; 1691, John Rogers; 1692, John Harris.

The sheriffs of the county have been from 1692 to 1886 as follows: 1692, George Corwin; 1696, William Gedney; 1702, William Wainwright, William Gedney; 1708, Daniel Denison; 1710, William Gedney; 1715, John Denison; 1722, Benjamin Marston; 1746, Robert Hale; 1766, Richard Saltonstall; 1779, Michael Farley; 1792, Bailey Bartlett; 1831, Joseph E. Sprague; 1852, Frederick Robinson; 1854, Thomas E. Pason; 1856, James Carey; 1867, Horatio G. Herrick continued until 1893, when came Samuel A. Johnson to 1921, when the present sheriff, Arthur G. Wells, was elected.

The clerks of the courts were appointed by the courts during the Colonial period. During the provincial time, the clerks of the County Courts and those of the Superior Court of Judicature, and afterwards of the Supreme Judicial Court, were distinct until 1797, and the clerk of the two courts had his office in Boston. The appointments lay with the courts until 1811, when the Governor and Council were made the appointing power. In 1814 the appointment was given to the Supreme Judicial Court. It remained there until 1856, when the law provided that that year and every fifth year thereafter, clerks should be chosen by the people in the several counties. The following is probably a list of the various clerks of the courts in Essex from first to the present time:

1637, Ralph Fogg; 1647, Henry Bartholomew, Robert Lord; 1653, Elias Stileman; 1658, Hilliard Veren; 1683, Benjamin Gerrish; 1692, Stephen Sewall; 1750, Joseph Bowdich; 1771, William Jeffry; 1774, Joseph Blaney; 1779, Samuel Osgood; 1783, Isaac Osgood; 1795, Thomas Bancroft; 1797, Samuel Holton; 1798, Thomas Bancroft; 1804, Ichabod Tucker; 1812, Joseph E. Sprague; 1813, Ichabod Tucker; 1828, John Prince, Jr.; 1842, Ebenezer Shillaber; 1852, Asahel Huntington; 1872, Alfred A. Abbott; 1885, Dean Peabody to 1897, when came Edward B. George, serving until 1918, when the present clerk, Archie N. Frost, was elected. The register and clerk's offices were one and the same, until 1715, since which time the offices have been separate.

Up to 1869 the registry of deeds for the whole county was kept at Salem. June 22 that year an act was passed providing that the city of Lawrence and the towns of Andover, North Andover and Methuen should constitute a district for the registry of deeds, under the name of the Northern District of Essex, and that the other towns in the county should constitute the Southern District.

In 1654 the law provided that each county should annually elect a treasurer. With a few changes this office continued the same until 1855, when it was provided that a county treasurer should be chosen that year and every third year thereafter, for the term of three years. Up to 1654, when the treasurers were elected, the treasurer chosen by the General Court was the treasurer of the whole colony. These were as follows: May 13, 1629, George Harwood, chosen in England; December 1, 1629, Samuel Aldsey; 1632, William Pynchon; 1634, William Coddington; 1636, Richard Dummer; 1637, Richard Bellingham; 1640, William Tyng; 1644-54, Richard Russell. The records are silent as to who the treasurers were until 1774, after those above mentioned, but from 1774 to the present the treasurers of Essex County have been as follows: 1774, Michael Farley; 1792, Stephen Choate; 1813, Bailey Bartlett; 1814, Nathaniel Wade; 1852, Daniel Weed; 1853, Allen W. Dodge; 1878, Edward K. Jenkins to 1904, when the present county treasurer, David I. Robinson, was elected.

Prior to 1652 there was but one prison in the colony. May 22 that year, the court ordered one to be built at Ipswich. In September the "Seven men" contracted with Henry Pinder and Thomas Rowell to construct such a building. It was to stand near the old watch-house, a site near the First Church, and was to be of the "same hight and wyndes." "There were to be three floors of joist, set thick and well bounded with partition above and below, and sides and ends, stud and stud spaces, and to clapboard the house round and shingle it and to daub its whole wall, all but the gable-ends, and to underpin the house and make doors and hinges, and hang the doors and fit the locks, which said house shall be finished, with all the drawings, iron work for the doors and nails by the 15th of May next." The contract price was fixed at forty pounds.

The first keeper was Theophilus Wilson, in 1656, when he received as compensation three pounds five shillings per year for each prisoner, and prisoners were to pay their board if able; and if not able, to be kept alive on bread and water. The prisoners were required to work, and the "seven-men" were required to keep on hand hemp and flax for that purpose, that they might always have plenty to do. Another prison, or house of correction, was provided in 1684. This was ordered by the Quarterly Court, and the expense was to be paid by the towns that sent juries to Ipswich.

In 1751 the town voted to petition the General Court Sessions "that the late prison be effectually repaired and established as heretofore as a prison and a house of correction." As a result, in 1771 (but not before then) was the prayer answered in the construction of a new jail built on the site of the old one.

In 1809-10 a stone jail was built in Ipswich by the county. Its cost was $27,000; it stood where later was the "County House." In 1866 it was sold to the Eastern Railroad Company, who used it to arch a roadway.

A prison (or, as we say today jail) in Essex County was built in Salem in 1668, near the southwesterly end of the meeting-house, which gives color to the statement that the church was sometimes used for courthouse purposes. The second jail was built in Salem in 1684, near the corner of Federal and St. Peter's streets, and the next jail or prison was built in 1813.

The jail or House of Correction at Lawrence was built in 1853, and with considerable improvements and additions it still serves its purpose. The original cost was $100,000. It is a stone structure, located on Auburn street. It has 116 cells, and can easily care for 180 prisoners. The site cost $3,200.

From all that can now be discovered, the first courts were held and county business in Essex County was transacted in the church, and this continued many years. A courthouse was built in Salem in 1719, which also served and was partly paid for by the incorporation of Salem. It stood on Washington street, near the southern end of the railway tunnel. In this building the General Court met, October 31, 1728; also April 2, and June 25, 1729, by order of Governor Burnet, because he believed that undue influence was exerted in Boston against a grant for his salary.

May 25, 1774, the General Court was adjourned by Governor Gage, to meet at Salem on the 7th of June; and again the Salem town house became historic. The sessions lasted eleven days, during which the court protested against its removal from Boston, and the 17th passed a resolve appointing James Bowdoin, Thomas Cushing, Samuel Adams, John Adams and Robert Treat Paine delegates to the Congress at Philadelphia, "to consult upon measures for the restoration of harmony between Great Britain and the Colonies." Upon this action, Governor

Gage at once, on the same day, dissolved the court; and so ended, in the old town-house in Salem, which ought to be standing today, the last General Court in Massachusetts under a provincial governor.

On Thursday, the 1st of September, writs were issued by the governor for a new court, to convene at Salem on October 5, but were recalled by proclamation. The Assembly met, notwithstanding, and organized with John Hancock, chairman, and Benjamin Lincoln, clerk; and October 7 voted "that the members of foresaid do now resolve themselves into a Provincial Congress, to be joined by such other persons as have been or shall be chosen for that purpose, to take into consideration the dangerous and alarming situation of public affairs in this Province, and to consult and determine on such measures as they shall judge will tend to promote the true interest of His Majesty and the peace, welfare and prosperity of the province." After this action, the Congress adjourned to Concord, where it was more formally organized by the election of Mr. Hancock, president, and Mr. Lincoln secretary; and after sessions in Concord and Cambridge finally dissolved. Thus the old town-house again became memorable, and was not only the scene of the last act under the old dispensation, but the scene also of the first act under the new.

In 1785, another building was erected for the joint use of the town and county, in the middle of Washington street, nearly opposite the Tabernacle Church, and town meetings were there held until the erection in 1816 of the town-house in Derby Square, which was used until the incorporation of the city in 1836. In 1841 the present stone courthouse was completed, and in 1861 the handsome brick structure was added; the two buildings now connected, one with the other, still serve the needs of the county.

The second court house in Ipswich was completed in the spring of 1795. Its cost was $7,000, of which the town paid one-half. This served until 1855, when upon the removal of the courts from Ipswich, it was sold to the Methodist society and converted into a chapel. Later it was moved to Depot Square and converted into a business house.

Concerning the courthouse at Lawrence, it may be stated that at first the people of Lawrence were compelled to travel to Salem or Newburyport to attend court and to transact other county business. After the town-house or city hall was built in Lawrence, quarters were provided for the court, then known as the Court of Common Pleas, in the audience hall of such building. Later, sessions were held in Music Hall, but in 1859 the county completed a courthouse there. The Essex Company donated the land, the city provided the foundation, and the Essex county commissioners erected the building. In the great fire of 1859, which burned the United States Hotel, this courthouse was almost ruined, but in 1860 was rebuilt. This served Lawrence until 1900, when through the members of the Essex county bar and the State Legislature, the present building was provided at a cost of $250,000, all told, from beginning to

completion. Here are ample rooms for all departments of the county's business, including the superior criminal, a superior civil and a probate court, a registry of deeds, a law library, besides numerous offices. The law library is claimed to be one of the best in all New England, with its 13,000 volumes. The structure is fireproof, built of brick with free-stone trimmings.

What is usually known as the Essex County Industrial Farm is one of the most unique experiments ever tried out with a good degree of success in this country. This enterprise was started in the dark days of the late World War, when every available foot of land was being required by the government, in order that enough provisions might be obtained successfully to carry on our part of the conflict—feed our home people and send abroad what we could possibly spare. It was then that the county commissioners of Essex county bethought themselves to set the some forty or more convicts at work clearing a tract of land near Danvers and making it fit for cultivation. This was accomplished, and in 1918 there was produced a crop of 450 bushels of potatoes, all the fresh vegetables that could be consumed in the prison camp and an excess for the county jail, a large supply of winter vegetables including turnips, beets, beans, and buckwheat, and some 3,000 head of cabbage, more than could be used in the camp and in the Salem House of Correction. This crop was secured from land that a few months before was under a heavy underbrush and covered with thousands upon thousands of stones, which these forty county prisoners had to remove before plowing and planting could proceed.

No inmate is required to go against his will, but once he decides to join the colony, he is expected to "brace up" and make a man of himself; to conform to the few simple rules as laid down by the county commissioners; and not to leave the immediate vicinity of the camp without permission. These prisoners are chiefly victims of the liquor habit, who have been sentenced to the county jail. Here they are well fed, have excellent beds, and work sufficient to keep them healthy in both body and mind. They also were set at work clearing off grounds, near by the camp, where now stands the great tubercular hospital. This preliminary work was all accomplished by these trusty prisoners, who work without any guard. In the life of the institution, only one man has made his escape. It is good for the men and also good for the county.

Essex County was incorporated in 1643, and has three shire towns —Salem, Lawrence and Newburyport. Its officers at this time include: Judges of Probate and Insolvency, Harry R. Dow, North Andover, and Alden P. White, Salem. Register of Probate and Insolvency, Horace H. Atherton, Jr., Lynn; Sheriff, Arthur G. Wells, Lynn; Clerk of the Courts, Archie N. Frost, Lawrence; County Treasurer, David I. Robinson, Gloucester; Registers of Deeds, Northern district, Moses Marshall,

Commissioners: John M. Grosvenor, Jr., Swampscott; James C. Poor, North Andover; Benjamin B. Gilman, Haverhill. Trial Justices: Albion G. Peirce, Methuen; Culver J. Stone, Andover; Newton P. Fry, North Andover; Moses S. Case, Marblehead; William E. Ludden, Saugus; Walter H. Southwick, Nahant.

Essex County has the following institutions belonging to various State Departments: The Essex County Agricultural School, located at Danvers (Hawthorne postoffice), Fred A. Smith, present director; Trustees—George C. Thurlow, George W. Cressy, Ralph S. Bauer, Justin E. Varney, and the county commissioners.

The State Normal School at Salem was opened in 1854. The present principal (1921) is J. Asbury Pitman.

The Danvers State Hospital for the Insane has for trustees at this time (1921): Francis S. Caskins, Jr., Danvers, term expires 1921; Mary Ward Nichols, Danvers, 1922; S. Herbert Wilkins (chairman), Salem, 1923; James F. Ingraham, Jr., Peabody, 1924; Arthur C. Nason, Newburyport, 1925; Katherine Abbott, Manchester, 1926; Samuel Cole (secretary), Beverly, 1927. John B. Macdonald, M. D. is superintendent.

The following shows the valuation of property in Essex County in 1921:

| | Polls | Property | | Polls | Property |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Amesbury | 2,723 | $ 9,011,893 | Methuen | 4,095 | 14,639,117 |
| Andover | 2,025 | 9,658,714 | Middleton | 305 | 1,070,551 |
| Beverly | 5,961 | 38,539,605 | Nahant | 495 | 4,597,237 |
| Boxford | 166 | 896,193 | Newbury | 480 | 2,115,755 |
| Danvers | 2,713 | 9,155,522 | Newburyport | 4,025 | 13,177,349 |
| Essex | 470 | 1,391,653 | North Andover | 1,718 | 9,174,392 |
| Georgetown | 515 | 1,360,651 | Peabody | 6,358 | 26,501,199 |
| Gloucester | 7,084 | 29,462,107 | Rockport | 1,172 | 4,467,604 |
| Groveland | 631 | 1,506,326 | Rowley | 359 | 1,110,884 |
| Hamilton | 467 | 4,163,397 | Salem | 11,033 | 46,304,119 |
| Haverhill | 15,019 | 53,770,544 | Salisbury | 499 | 1,999,570 |
| Ipswich | 1,480 | 6,785,382 | Saugus | 2,646 | 7,983,680 |
| Lawrence | 20,053 | 101,226,232 | Swampscott | 1,991 | 14,797,505 |
| Lynn | 26,553 | 106,443,504 | Topsfield | 280 | 2,476,756 |
| Lynnfield | 414 | 1,649,932 | Wenham | 278 | 2,346,339 |
| Manchester | 760 | 12,802,237 | West Newbury | 419 | 1,045,305 |
| Marblehead | 2,079 | 11,839,237 | | | |
| Merrimac | 585 | 1,749,300 | Totals | 125,851 | $555,219,791 |

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

OLD NEW ENGLAND GARDEN

## CHAPTER V.

## TOWN OF SAUGUS.

Saugus is in the extreme southern corner of Essex county, Massachusetts. It is almost six miles in length by two and four-tenths miles in width. It is bounded on the north by Lynnfield and Wakefield, easterly by Lynn city, southerly by Revere, and westerly by Revere, Melrose and Wakefield. It has an area of near thirteen and one-half square miles. Over two miles square are included in the salt marsh at the south end of the township, being separated from Massachusetts Bay only by a narrow strip of land known as Revere Beach. From Boston it is only nine miles. The name Saugus is Indian, meaning "extended," suggested by its broad salt marshes. The Indians called all the territory between Boston on the south and Salem on the north Saugus. What is now called Saugus river was known by the Indians as "Abousett," a much prettier name than Saugus.

The first political status of Saugus is found October 19, 1630, when John Taylor was admitted as a freeman to the General Court. In 1634 Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins and Thomas Willis were representatives from Saugus to the first legislature. Not over seven "prudential men" were allowed to be chosen in 1636.

The city of Lynn, as now known, and the towns of Swampscott, Lynnfield, Reading, Wakefield and Nahant, in 1636 were all included within Saugus township. Not liking the Indian name Saugus, and wishing a legal change of the name, and thinking of the city of Lynn, England, they asked the legislature to change the name to Lynn. The petition was granted November 15, 1637, when the shortest bill ever passed, possibly, was made a record—"Saugust is called Lin." The name so remained until November 15, 1815, when by a legislative act the present territory was set off from Lynn and received its original name—Saugus. For many years before this, however, it was styled ecclesiastically, "West Parish."

In 1815 the town had a population of nearly 700 persons. The first census taken by the United States government was in 1820, when it was 748. In 1885 the State census figures gave Saugus 2,855. The last three Federal census periods show the population to have been: In 1900, 5,084; 1910, 8,047; 1920 census, 10,874.

As settlement increased and on account of the topography of this town, it was decided best to divide into lesser villages. Almost in the center of the town is Saugus Centre. Few villages have a more charming view of landscape scenery than this. Looking easterly from Round Hill the scene toward the ocean is beautiful. Cliftondale, directly to the south of Centre, was formerly known as Sweetser's Corner; in the eighties this portion of the town grew rapidly. East Saugus is situated in

the river valley, reached only by Winter street, at the southerly side of the valley. About two miles from the Centre, in the extreme northerly end of the town is North Saugus, once a most fertile farming section. The Saugus river flows beside this village, while two branches—Penny and Hawkes Brooks—flow directly through the place. Oaklandale is a mile and a half from the Centre, northwesterly, and its domain is coursed by the waters of Strawberry Brook, which finds its way into Saugus river below North Saugus.

During the year 1630 many immigrants found their way to our shores, and from among this number a considerable proportion came by boat and overland travel to what is now Saugus. Centuries before, doubtless, the Indian tribes had here fished, hunted, built their wigwams and raised corn and sweet pumpkins. In East Saugus have been found many Indian relics including shell-heaps, pestles, stone hatchets, bones, and neatly fashioned arrow-heads.

Among the earliest to invade this town for actual settlement was William Ballard, who received sixty acres in the allotment of 1638. He was admitted as a freeman in 1638. His farm comprised what is now known as the village of East Saugus. Edward Baker received an allotment of forty acres on the road to North Saugus. Samuel Bennet, a carpenter, and member of the Ancient Artillery Company in 1639, received an allotment of twenty acres. Thomas Dexter, farmer, was admitted as a freeman in 1631, and given an allotment of 350 acres. He lived in the center of Saugus, near the old iron works; he was commonly styled "Farmer Dexter." He built a corn grindingmill on the Saugus river; also had a fish-way from which he took one hundred and fifty barrels of fish and cured them in the first years of his operations. Thomas Hudson lived in the western part of the town, near the river and at the ironworks, where he held a tract of sixty acres of land. Captain Richard Walker, a farmer, located on the west side of the river and had allotted to him 200 acres of land. He was born in 1593, and died at the age of ninety-five years. Adam Hawkes settled in North Saugus in 1634, having landed with the Endicott company in 1630. In 1672 he owned 550 acres of land in this township.

The first postoffice was established in the village of East Saugus in 1832, and it remained the only postoffice within the town until 1858, when two more offices were established—one in Cliftondale and another in Saugus Center. Among the early postmasters are now recalled: In East Saugus, 1832, Henry Slade, George Newhall; 1856, Herbert B. Newhall; 1863, Charlotte M. Hawkes; 1873, Charles Mills; 1885, Henry J. Mills. At Saugus Center, 1858, Julian D. Lawrence; 1870, John E. Stocker. At Cliftondale, 1858, William Williams; 1860, George H. Sweetser, A. H. Sweetser; 1877, M. A. Putnam; 1883, M. S. Fisk. At this time (1921) there are three station postoffices in this town—Saugus Centre Station, William H. Merritt, superintendent; Cliftondale Station,

Ernest C. Brown, superintendent; and East Saugus, Arthur Farnham, superintendent.

The first town meeting was held in the parish church, March 13, 1815, and later ones continued to be held there until 1818, after which time the schoolhouse was used—usually the Rock school house. In 1837 a town house was erected, the structure so planned and built that the lower portion was to be used as a school house, while the upper story was for town hall purposes. It was still used in the eighties for school purposes, but the present town hall was erected in 1875. When the first hall was erected, some two thousand dollars had fallen to Saugus as a revenue from the United States government as the surplus distributed by President Jackson. There arose quite a struggle to determine who should have this money. Several votes were taken on the subject. At first it was decided to distribute the amount to individuals throughout the town, but later this was rescinded and other elections followed, when finally it was decided that $2,000 of the sum should go toward erecting a townhouse, the vote standing 90 to 74. In March, 1838, the town appropriated $600 more with which to complete the building. This was in use until the present town hall was built in 1875. The town purchased a low, wet piece of land of Samuel A. Parker, and had it filled in at great expense. The result of building this large town building was the incurring of a $50,000 debt by the town. The first story was from the first used for town offices, high school and public library; and the second story for an assembly room.

With the coming and going of the years, there were many improvements made within Saugus in way of building and highways. Usually excellent men were chosen for selectmen, and the affairs of the town were well administered. The present (1920-21) town officials include the following: Town Clerk, Henry A. Parker; Selectmen: Walter Sprague, chairman; Francis M. Hill, John G. Holmes; Assessors: Lewis J. Austin, chairman; Daniel B. Willis, Edwin K. Hayden; Treasurer, H. Dwight Bisbee; Constable, W. Charles Sellick; Tax Collector, Henry A. Parker; Chairman of Library Trustees, Vernon W. Evans; Chairman of Board of Health, Charles E. Light; Chairman of School Committee, Ernest W. Homan; Chairman of Cemetery Commissioners, Benjamin F. Fullerton; Tree Warden, Thomas E. Berrett; Town Accountant, Granville A. Clark; Chairman of Finance Committee, Harry T. Turner; Town Counsel, William E. Ludden.

While today Saugus is not known for its great factory and milling industries, it should not be forgotten that here were many of the original industries of New England worked out successfully, and a brief account of them cannot be without interest in this connection. Without going into detail, it may be stated that in Saugus was the first attempt at establishing successful iron works in New England. In 1632 mention was

in November, 1637, the General Court of Massachusetts granted Abraham Shaw one-half of the benefit of any "coles or yron which shall be found in any ground which is in the countryes disposeing." Iron had been found in small ponds on the western bank of Saugus river soon after its settlement in 1629, and in 1642 specimens of it were taken to London by Robert Bridges, in hopes a company might be formed for the manufacture of iron. As a result a company known as "The Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works" was formed of English capitalists and Thomas Dexter and Robert Bridges, both of Lynn. Workmen were brought from England in 1643, and the foundry was erected on the western bank of Saugus river, just at the head of tidewater, in what later became known as Saugus Centre. The village at the foundry was named Hammersmith, after an English village. In 1644 the General Court granted this company three miles square in each of six places it might occupy in the prosecution of its business. On August 4, 1648, Governor Winthrop wrote from Boston to his son in Connecticut, that "the iron work goeth on with more hope. It yields now about seven tons a week." Later he said, "the furnace runs eight tons a week, and their bar iron is as good as Spanish."

Concerning the Saugus iron industry, it should be stated that the General Court granted many privileges to this industry. All men engaged in the iron works were exempt from taxes for ten years, and did not have to serve in the military companies. Liberty was given to cut timber for charcoal purposes, to make highways, and construct dams and ponds. It is certain that this furnace was in operation in September, 1648, and had been running for at least three years before that date. It will be understood that this iron was simply "bog-iron," and found only in limited quantities. For this reason, when iron was discovered farther west in America, work here naturally was abandoned.

How many today know that Saugus became quite noted for its large snuff industry that existed from 1798 to about 1846? An old flour mill on Saugus river was purchased by George Makepeace of Boston in 1792. He tore the old mill down and erected a new one, in which he had two run of millstones for grinding meal and flour; also in one end of the building he had two mortars for grinding snuff. These mortars were fashioned from large buttonwood logs in their rude state, the rough bark being left on. The business later fell into the hands of Jonathan Makepeace, a nephew of the founder. He gave personal attention to the snuff business. He used only the finest grade of tobacco leaf, cured in the best known manner. The tobacco was ground, scented nicely, and put up in wooden kegs, each bearing his own autograph. This snuff had a remarkable sale and enriched the maker, who was known as Major Makepeace.

The first place of which there is any account of making chocolate in America was in Saugus, commencing about 1796, in the addition made

to the Makepeace flouring and snuff mills above mentioned. In order to do this a new water-wheel was installed and more wareroom provided. Of this plant Benjamin F. Newhall furnished the following for the "Lynn Reporter," among other interesting sketches of early days in Saugus:

In 1812 the last war with England commenced, which gave a new impetus to the chocolate business. The mill was overwhelmed with work, so that it was carried on in summer, and the cooling was done in cellars. Mr. Childs, with others, entered quite largely into the manufacture, which yielded, in the beginning of the war, a large profit. Very soon, with the large demand, cocoa began to advance in price, and continued to do so until it rose from eight cents per pound to thirty-three cents, a rise of over three hundred per cent. After this extreme it soon receded, and finally settled into a healthy trade.

One of the most amusing things connected with this old chocolate manufacture was the pretended art and skill indispensable to a successful issue. This art and skill was believed to be a secret possessed by only here and there an individual. Even the persons who carried on the manufacture did not pretend to any knowledge of the art. It seemed to be a general concession of the public that the science of the manufacture was unknown except to a very few who had obtained it, by great labor and expense from Spain or South America. This acknowledgement gave the pretenders a superiority, and placed them in a position not only to be honored, but to be well paid. The man who had brass enough to carry the pretense through successfully, managed everything about to his own mind.

In my early boyhood I used to work in this chocolate mill, as considerable of the work could be done by boys better than by men. The grand magician of that day was Josiah Rhodes, nicknamed "Slim Caesar." He exercised the most unlimited control over the whole establishment. So arbitrary was he in the exercise of his pretended skill that scarcely anyone dared to look at the chocolate in process of manufacture. The roaster and stirring kettle were objects forbidden by him to be examined by the ignorant world. I well remember with what veneration I used to look upon this aged cadaverous veteran. The smoke of the roaster could be seen curling up over the fire, but none had the courage in his presence to smell of the forbidden odor.

Occasionally a small mysterious white powder from a piece of clean white paper would be cast into the roaster or kettle, in a mysterious and magical manner, completely blinding the eyes of the uninitiated. Such was the dignity and haughtiness attendant upon the exercise of his skill, that he rarely ever smiled or spoke when engaged. Even his employers hardly ever dared to ask a question. Men who labored years under him never dared to raise a pretense of knowing anything. Such were the pretended mysteries of the trade in olden times.

Subsequently, about 1800, Mr. Makepeace added a nail factory with machinery to cut nails by hand, which industry lasted six years. A saw mill was also built and cut its hundreds of thousands of feet of lumber. The founder of these mills, Major Makepeace, retired to Charlestown, where he died in 1820, aged eighty years. Amariah Childs succeeded to the business, and added a spice mill, supplying the Boston spice trade. Charles Sweetser purchased the property and continued until overtaken by death in 1865. Charles A. Sweetser fell to the ownership, and in 1883 removed all snuff-making machinery and worked extensively at grinding various herbs. July 8, 1887, the mills caught fire and were totally consumed, never to be rebuilt. H. B. Newhall was the man interested in the latter operations of this milling industry.

About 1822, William Gray and other Boston men engaged in the making of duck-cloth, the factory having been in operation at Stonenam before that date. This grade of ducking was made from flax and hemp material. The works were in a part of the old mill and chocolate

works already mentioned. But misfortunes befell the property, and after less than two years it was closed. In 1826 the property passed to the hands of True & Broadhead, who raised the mill-dam, which caused endless litigation in the valley. In 1829 flannel was being manufactured here, and this was the beginning of a great industry for Saugus. In 1846 another and much larger building was built, of brick. Both buildings were equipped with six sets of cards, thirteen jacks and forty looms. Each jack carried one hundred and eighty spindles. Other buildings were demanded and erected for the wool-pulling and sheep-skin tanning departments. Edward Pranker, the owner died in 1865. In 1879 six grandchildren of Edward Pranker associated themselves under the name of the Pranker Manufacturing Company, and carried on a large woolen manufacturing business many years. In 1888 they employed more than one hundred operatives and made goods amounting at factory prices to $300,000. A half million pounds of clean wool had to be used in a single year's work. All-wool shirtings, ladies' dress goods, sackings of all colors, as well as plain and twilled flannels, were here produced. The 1866 fire greatly injured the plant, but all was replaced, and in 1884 a round smokestack ten feet in diameter at the base was built to the height of one hundred feet.

In 1887 the mills of A. A. Scott were manufacturing linen duck and all-wool flannels. Of both fine and coarse grades, he made eight hundred thousand yards annually. Fifty workmen and women, aided by improved machinery, brought out this annual output.

That portion of Saugus known as Cliftondale, formerly styled Sweetser's Corners, traces its origin and real prosperity to the manufacture of tobacco in various forms—snuff, chewing and smoking tobacco, and cigars. This line was established about 1798, William Sweetser being the founder.

After the close of the War of 1812-14, crockery was hard to obtain from other countries, and hence the fine quality of potter's clay found in the land known as Jackson's Meadows was utilized by William Jackson, an Englishman, in the production of a good grade of earthenware. Time proved that only a cheaper, coarser grade of crockery could be made from this material. After many years, even this business was abandoned.

To be somewhat engaged in the shoe manufacturing business was of course needful even in Saugus, for it was hard-by and at that time a part of the city of Lynn, and Lynn has ever been in the lead as a "shoe town." It was in 1802 when Ebenezer Oakman commenced the manufacture of shoes in East Saugus. Within a few years he erected numerous factories. His goods found ready sale among the wholesalers of Philadelphia, who finally shipped abroad by sailing vessels from Boston. Fine calf boots were also made to considerable extent in these shops. It was during the war of 1812-14 that it became unsafe to

ship the products of these factories by packet, as they had been before, so the owner established a line of large baggage-waggons, drawn by six horses, with two skillful drivers, making the trip to Philadelphia and back in about six weeks. Among the drivers of such "shoe-express" lines were Captain Jacob Newhall, Jesse Rice and Captain Jacob Baird. These shoes were all hand-made, and were made in private houses and small near-by shops. Men would put the soles on, while the women would bind the uppers. The uppers, binding, thread and all needful to make the shoes were doled out at the main office, tucked away in a sack, and the shoemaker would take the stock home and work it up, then return with the shoes ready for inspection and to take home another supply of material. But in the fifties the business was much improved and machinery was introduced, thus throwing many shoemakers out of work. In the history published in 1888, that portion mentioning the shoe factory business, says: "One by one, our shoe manufacturers went to Lynn, where they could work to better advantage. Many men and women would go down to Lynn by horse or steam cars in the morning and return at night."

From 1841 on for more than twenty years, there were great activities in Saugus among those engaged in making building brick. Among the pioneers in this line are recalled such men as Frederick Stocker, who made from one half to one million brick annually. After he retired his son Frederick carried on the business, in which he for several years kept account of the amount of wood consumed in the burning of his brick, and found it amounted to about four hundred cords per season. He employed from ten to twenty workmen.

As early as 1812, bricks were made at the yards on the north side of the river, by Thomas Raddin. In the same place there was a brick plant in 1859 operated by A. Hatch, and from 1850 to 1860 William M. Newhall was engaged in like industry. He made a million brick annually, until the clay was practically exhausted.

For a number of years from 1848 on, the preparation of plastering hair was conducted successfully in Saugus and Cliftondale, where the firm of Kent & Marvin operated and carried forward a business amounting to over $50,000 per year. In the eighties, these works were still being conducted, and by then had added hair prepared for spinners and saddlery work, as well as for upholstering.

Without entering into details concerning the manufacturing interests in Saugus and connecting villages, let it be stated that the interests include the following enterprises: The Cliftondale Wood-Working Company; the United States Worsted Goods Manufactory; Wire Brace factory, by Henry B. Robinson; Nelson Brothers, manufacturers of motors; the Novelty Manufacturing Company, by Arthur B. Coates; Rand & Byam Rendering Company; the United States Woolen Mills; the New England Lace and Braid Company; a Sausage factory recently established on an extensive scale.

The town clerk's report for 1920 shows the following vital statistics for the town of Saugus: Births registered in 1920, 239; American parentage, 113; foreign parentage, 70; mixed parentage, 56. Marriages registered, 132; American born, 193; foreign born, 71; average age of groom, 29 years; average age of bride, 26; oldest person, 62; youngest person, 15. Number of deaths in 1920, 139; males, 64; females 75; under five years, 40; from eighty to ninety, fifteen.

The assessor's report shows: Number of polls assessed, 2,691; persons paying on property tax, 5,110; persons paying poll tax, 1,291; persons liable to military duty, 2,018; population as found by assessor, 11,488; number of dwelling houses, 2,615; number acres of land, 6,640; number of horses, 181; cows, 549; swine, 519; sheep, 2; fowl, 7,021; registered dogs (females), 127; males, 390; total number of dogs, 517.

Total Amount Property Assessed—Resident real estate, $5,886,502; non-resident real estate, $1,704,125; resident personal estate, $577,290; non-resident personal estate, $294,271. Total, $8,462,188.

The report of the Charities Department shows that in 1920 the appropriation for the use of the unfortunate poor was $9,869, all of which was spent but about seventy dollars. The pay-roll for mothers with dependent children amounted to $150 per week. The Saugus Home received from all sources the sum of $13,583, of which $12,485 was spent. It was recommended that another year the appropriation should be $14,000.

Mrs. Laura Taylor, librarian of the Public Library, in her annual report for 1920, gave out the following: Circulation for the last year—Main library, 18,478 volumes; at Cliftondale, 8,866; at East Saugus, 6,029; at Lynnhurst, 935; at North Saugus, 295. The Library was established through the aid of Andrew Carnegie.

The subjoined shows the tax-rate and assessed valuations in the town of Saugus since 1860—sixty year period:

| | | Tax-rate |
|---|---|---|
| 1860—Valuation of all property, as per assessment | $1,179,592— | $ 6.80 |
| 1870—Valuation, as per assessment | 1,462,830— | 13.33 |
| 1880—Valuation, as per assessment | 1,465,876— | 16.50 |
| 1890—Valuation, as per assessment | 2,493,000— | 18.00 |
| 1900—Valuation, as per assessment | 3,679,760— | 19.80 |
| 1910—Valuation, as per assessment | 5,599,786— | 22.00 |
| 1920—Valuation, as per assessment | 8,462,188— | 35.95 |

The First Parish and Society was organized in 1737, and is now situated in the town of Saugus, Essex county. Its present total membership is eighty persons. The Sunday school in connection, has an average of seventy-nine pupils and teachers; Arthur Edmands is the present superintendent. This church was the first founded in Saugus, and was famous in the Colony during Revolutionary war times. Among its pastors are recalled Revs. Edward Cheever, Joseph Roby (who was pastor fifty years), followed by a long list of successors. Some of the

more recent pastors were Revs. C. A. Skinner, T. W. Iliman and G. W. Whitmer. The present pastor is Rev. F. S. Rice. The first building was a wooden structure built by volunteer labor. The second edifice was built in 1861 and is valued at $20,000. Concerning this pioneer church, Wilbur F. Newhall wrote many years ago:

The first step was the union of all the principal men to build a meetinghouse. The union was named the "Proprietors of the Meetinghouse." In 1736 the work was commenced, and the best of oak timber was cut for the frame. The work made much progress during the year, although it was not probably finished till 1737. The finishing only extended so far as to build a pulpit and cover the floor with plain seats, one side called the "men's seats" and the other the "women's seats." At this state of affairs the parish records commence. The first book of records was a present to the parish from Thomas Cheever. It is a remarkable vellum-covered book, and served the parish ninety years. On the first page of the book is written: "This book is a gift to the society of Proprietors of the New Meetinghouse, in the westerly end of the town of Lynn, by Thomas Cheever."

We cannot sufficiently admire the zeal of our ancestors—then few in number and widely scattered—to undertake a work of such magnitude as the building of a church. It was forty-four feet long by thirty-six wide, with about twenty foot posts. It had upper and lower windows, all round, of common-sized glass. On its front, or south side, was the front door, with a large porch or vestibule, which was entered by three doors. It had, besides, a door on each end opening into the church. No doubt the model of this was found in the "Old Tunnel," so called, on Lynn Common. Let us go into the church. The pulpit is on the north side of the house, in the center, raised high, with a seat in the front for the deacons. A gallery runs around the front and two ends, the front gallery seats being appropriated for the singers. The floor of the church is seated with plain plank seats, divided into two sections. What a pattern of plain Puritan simplicity must this church have presented, with its "men's seats" on one side and its "womens seats" on the other; and then the worshippers with their antique dresses!

At a meeting of the committee held December 8, 1740, was reported as follows: "We are of opinion, there being room enough to erect twenty-nine pews in said meetinghouse, nineteen wall pews and ten pews on the floor. All persons that make choice of a wall pew, they maintaining the glass against their own pews. The Proprietors of the house to have the choice of the pews. That each person having a pew shall pay for the erection of his own pew. That the pew shall be taxed forty shillings per week as apportioned." This committee, finding that more pews were needed, made a plan to increase the number to thirty-four, by making five more.

The committee report reads thus: "By taking two seats of the men's, and two hindermost seats of the women's with five feet of the women's fore-seats and second seat, will make room for five pews more, making thirty-four in all." It was voted that every pew occupier should supply a half cord of wood yearly, and more or less as the tax might be. The course adopted by the West Parish about the construction of pews was an improvement on the "Old Tunnel" method. In that house every one made his pew to his own taste, but here the society built the pews uniformily and the pew-owner paid the cost.

St. John's Episcopal Church is situated on Central street, in the village of Saugus. It was organized in 1883 as a Sunday school for the Episcopal children of the community. It was started by Thomas Ashworth in a building opposite the present church edifice. Occasional services were held by Rev. John Beers. In 1885 the Mission was placed in charge of Rev. Thomas L. Fisher, of Linden. May 8, 1888, the present church building was consecrated by Bishop Paddock and dedicated to St. John. From that date to 1902, no church records can be found. At that time the Mission was placed in charge of Francis L. Beal, a lay reader, who reported thus: "The conditions were depressing; congre-

gation less than a score; Sunday school almost the same number; the Mission had little hold on the community. We found no register; the edifice was in need of repairs and all conveniences for worship lacking." Out of such conditions Mr. Beal built up a prosperous church. The total membership at Saugus church is 129 families. The Sunday school has a membership of 80. The church edifice is built of wood, as is also the neat Rectory house.

Of the work at Cliftondale let it be said that this Mission, begun in 1906, passed into the care of St. Stephen's at Lynn, until 1914, when it became a separate parish, under the rectorship of Rev. Charles W. G. Lyon, and the growth has been steady ever since. A Rectory house was bought on Pleasant street in 1919.

The list of rectors at the Saugus church (St. John's) is as follows: Revs. John Beers, 1883-85; Thomas L. Fisher, 1885-87; L. H. Merrill, 1887-89; Dr. C. H. Sycmour, 1890-91; Joseph Carden (layman), 1892-94; E. A. Danks, 1895-98; C. W. G. Lyon, 1900-10, commenced as a layman; A. H. Ross, Charles W. G. Lyon, Musgrave F. Hilton (1917-19); and C. H. Heigham (1919-20). The present Rector, Dr. Musgrave F. Hilton, has served to date.

The Methodist Episcopal Church at Cliftondale was organized in 1855. Among the charter members were Sebastian S. Dunn, Mrs. Augusta Raddin, Mrs. Emeline Proctor, Charles Raddin, George H. Sweetser, Charles Sweetser and Stephen Coates. The present total membership is 450; present in Sunday school, 675. The superintendent is Ernest A. Hodgdon.

The pastors that have served are as follows: Revs. James Blodgett, 1857; George F. Pool, 1857-59; Solomon Chapin, 1859-61; J. S. Day, 1861-63; Daniel Waitt, 1863-66; F. G. Morris, 1866-68; J. F. Bassett, 1869-69; J. E. Richards, 1869-70; George E. Reed, 1870-71; Joshua Gill, 1871-72; R. W. Allen, 1872-75; G. W. Wilder, 1875-77; A. O. Hamilton, 1877-78; G. M. Melden, 1878-80; W. P. O'Dell, 1880-83; G. A. Phiney, 1883-86; C. A. Littlefield, 1886-89; Edward Higgins, 1889-90; C. H. Walters, 1890-93; George S. Painter, 1893-94; A. R. Sweetser, 1894-95; L. C. Clark, 1895-96; R. L. McKensie, 1896-99; F. O. Beck, 1899-1901; J. S. Dancey, 1901-02; Donald H. Gerrish, 1902-08; William M. Gilbert, 1908-13; A. F. Reimer, 1913-16; James C. Cairns, 1916-21; Shirley D. Coffin, appointed 1921.

A chapel was built in 1857, and remodeled in 1881. June 19, 1914, it was burned to the ground, and the following year a new church was erected on a lot in Cliftondale Square. The present building was dedicated March 5, 1916. The value of the latter edifice is about $90,000. In 1921 there was a pipe organ installed, the value of which is $5,000. This was the gift of the women of the parish.

The Church of the Nazarene organized in Cliftondale, March 22, 1897, charter members including the following persons: Sarah Bond,

Alexander Mumo, Lottie G. Mumo, Angie Merrithen, John F. Newton, Sarah Newton, Charles Phillmore, Mary Phillmore, Frank L. Sprague, Athella E. Sprague, Whitman J. Webber, Mary L. Webber, Agnes M. Wilson. The present membership is forty six, with a Sunday school attendance of about sixty-eight pupils; W. L. Weddleton is the superintendent. At first this society worshipped in a hall in Clifton Square, and later in a building now used as a depot. The church was dedicated April 19, 1899. The supposed value of this property is $4,000. The society was "burned out of home" while occupying the Odd Fellows' Hall, February 25, 1899. The various pastors have been in order as follows: Revs. Charles H. Davis, A. B. Riggs, F. E. Talbee, H. B. Horley, Martha E. Curry, J. C. Bearse, Edward E. Martin, C. H. Strong, Tom M. Brown, Robert J. Dixon, C. P. Lanpher, J. Glenn Gould, present pastor.

Saugus Center Methodist Episcopal Church was organized July 23, 1877, and a church edifice was dedicated April 24, 1878. It was a wooden structure, and is still standing. It was built largely by members of the church. The present membership of the church is fifty, and that of the Sunday school is about fifty-eight pupils. The superintendent is Ellery Metcalf.

The first members of this organization were as follows: William W. L. Cripps, James Kettelle, Mrs. Mary Oliver Kettelle, Mrs. Margaret Whitley, Mrs. Mary Jones, Mrs. Angeline Spinney. These were received on confession of their faith by Presiding Elder Rev. Daniel Dorchester, D. D. The following were received by church letters: James W. Dearborn, Henry Inarmby, Mrs. Elizabeth Inarmby, George F. Spinney, Helen Mann, Mrs. Susan W. Warhurst, Miss Charlotte M. Townsend, Mrs. Martha J. Hall, Benj. Homan, Mrs. Sarah Homan, Ralph Homan, Ida C. Homan, John L. Andrews, Hattie Andrews, Vina Andrews, Mrs. Clara A. Andrews, Wilbur J. Bryant, Mrs. Sara W. Bryant, James T. Vanstone, Mrs. Nancy Vanstone, James Amery, William Penney, Sarah Elizabeth Penney, Lizzie Cripps, Mrs. Judith Ingalls, Lucy Ingalls, Laura Ingalls, Mary Cook, Mary Whiteley, Nellie Wilson, Sarah Wilson, A. Libby, Emmeline Libby.

The following have served as pastors: Revs. Emerson H. McKenney, Samuel Plantz, Arthur W. Terreill, Webster Millar, Daniel Richards, C. I. Mills, George W. Mansfield, Frank K. Stratton, F. H. Taylor, Thomas L. McConnell, Harry Compton, James A. Ross, W. L. Clapp, Delo C. Grover, Lonis I. Holway, E. W. Strecker, E. L. Benedict, Richard Evans, E. W. Dunlavy, Thomas Walker, A. B. Gilbert, C. Howard Fisher, William Full, George H. Sutherland, J. W. Higgins, Henry E. Leech, W. F. Koonsen, James C. Watson, S. T. Lippincott, G. Albert Higgins, Victor B. Chiconine.

## CHAPTER VI.

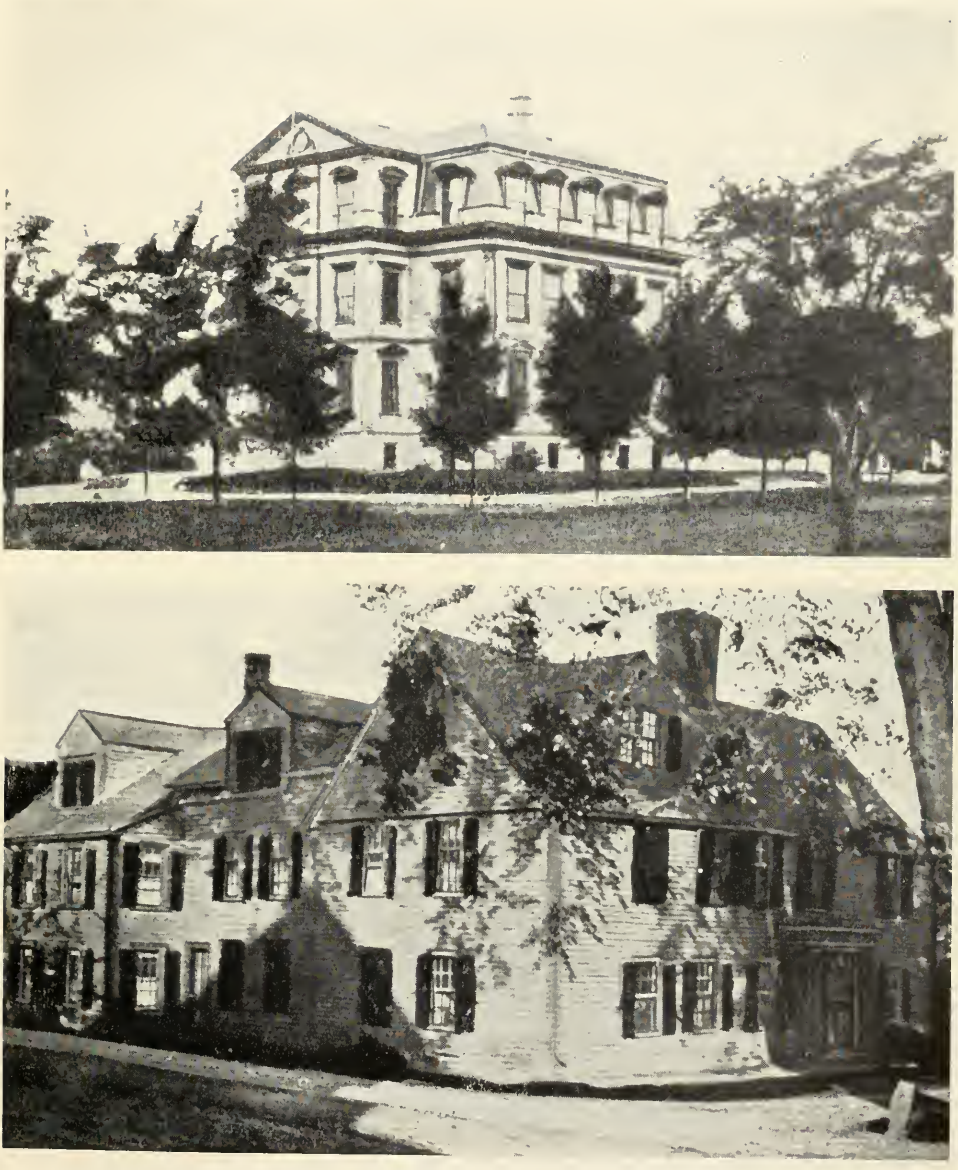
## TOWN OF IPSWICH.

While it has been fairly well decided that this section of the country had been settled, after a manner, hundreds of years prior to the landing of the "Mayflower," it is not the province of this work to enter into this pre-historic record in this connection, although it will be touched upon elsewhere in this work. To begin this sketch of Ipswich, it is well to give something concerning the Indians the first white men, as now known to have landed here, found upon their arrival.

This territory known as Agawam, meaning "resort for fish of passage," consisted of about 118,500 acres. In the summer, schools of mackerel darkened the waters of the bay as they migrated to their southern home. The name of the Sagamore of this domain was Masconnomet, meaning "John" with us. His relation to other Indian tribes is unknown to this day. Possibly his was a sub-tribe of the Massachusetts, or the Algonquins, whose power is said to have extended from Charles river to the Merrimac. His subjects are always represented to have been kind and easily managed. It was Captain Hardie and Nicholas Hobson, exploring the coast in 1611, who testified that these Indians were kinderhearted than any tribes they met. Masconnomet was converted under the teachings of Governor Winthrop's company, and it should be recalled that the good Governor came to New England originally for the purpose of Christianizing the Indians. It was on March 8, 1644, that the old chief in question put himself, his subjects and all his possessions, under the government protection of the Massachusetts Bay Company, and agreed to be instructed in the Christian religion. The subjoined is an account of the examination given the chief by the Whites:

1—Will you worship the only true God and not blaspheme? Answer—We do desire to reverence the God of the English, and to speak well of him, because we see he doth better to the English than other gods do to the others.
2—Will you cease from swearing falsley? Answer—We know not what swearing is.
3—Will you refrain from working on the Sabbath, especially in Christian towns? Answer—It is easy for us—we have little to do any day, and can well rest on that day.
4—Will you honor your parents and all of your superiors? Answer—It is our custom to do so.
5—Will you refrain from killing any man without cause or authority? Answer—It is good, and we desire it.
6—Will you put away fornication, adultery, incest, rape and sodomy? Answer—Though some of our people do some of these things, we count them naught, and do not allow them.
7—Will you put away stealing? Answer—We answer this as the sixth question.
8—Will you allow your children to read the word of God, so they may know Him aright, and worship Him in their own way? Answer—We will allow this as opportunity may permit, and as the English live among us, we desire to do so.

About 1617 a fearful pestilence prevailed among these Indians and depleted them to a large extent. Perley, a local writer, thus describes



ABOVE, MANNING HIGH SCHOOL, IPSWICH; BELOW, ROSS TAVERN, IPSWICH, BUILT 1734, STAGE COACH STATION ON BOSTON ROAD

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

the death of the friendly old Indian chief: "Masconnomet saw his tribe fade away, as a summer cloud; his rich domain become the abode of the pale face; his scepter broken, fall from his nerveless grasp. In 1655 the selectmen granted him a life interest in six acres of planting ground. He died March 6, 1658. The 18th of the following June his widow was granted the same ground during her widowhood. Both were buried on Sagamore Hill in Hamilton. With him were buried his gun, tomahawk, and other implements of the chase. The tribe lived in scattered wigwams, much at the town charge, till it was practically extinct about 1730."

The landscape of this section of Essex county affords a variety of beautiful natural scenery—the hills, the dale, the meadow and the marsh lands, with streams here and there to make glad the scene. In summer time the verdure of the flowers, the cattle and sheep feeding leisurely, the first setting of the waving grain, the ripening fruit, including the purple plums, and the golden and amber autumn leaf, one and all are objects of untold beauty. While the general topography is the same today as it was years ago, of course drainage and time's hand has made various changes. In the year 1885 the following was written concerning this portion of the county:

> The Linebrook District has a beautiful sheet of water called Baker's, Pritchard's, Great and Hood's Pond, by which last name it is now known. Its surface is eighty feet above Town Hill, or one hundred and ninety-two feet above sea-level. It might be made an excellent reservoir for fire or other purpose, for the village of Topsfield, or Ipswich, or perhaps both. Rev. Jacob Hood, of Lynnfield, who died in 1885, at the age of ninety-four years, surveyed it in his youth and computed the area at nearly eighty acres. In the winter of 1861-62, M. V. B. Perley surveyed this pond and made by traverse table sixty-five and nine-tenths acres. A third of the pond is in Topsfield, and in 1874 the town stocked it with perch and black bass, thus availing itself of the State law which, for that purpose gave that town exclusive control of the waters for fifteen years. On its bosom blooms the fragrant white petaled lily; and boats for rowing and sailing invite to healthful recreation; and it lends a charm to the surrounding hills. On the west, rising seventy feet above its surface, is a broad grazing field where General Israel Putnam in his boyhood, when in the tutelage of his stepfather, went to find and "fetch" the cows; and on the east is Burnham's Hill, named from James Burnham, who in 1717 owned the land.

The chief streams of this town are Winthrop's, Norton's, Howlet's, Mile and Bull brooks, which used to be good fishing for pickerel and trout. Other streams are the North or Egypt river, Muddy and Ipswich rivers. The last named stream rises in Maple Meadow brook, in the town of Burlington, and meanders through Wilmington, North Reading, Middleton and Topsfield, entering Ipswich upon the southwest border. On its banks have been from an early time sawmills, gristmills, papermills, tanneries, cotton and woolen mills, while today its chief industry is the immense hosiery mills, among the largest in the world.

Old deeds speak of ponds in the vicinity of the West Meadow, but which are unknown to this generation; yet there are swamps which answer to the location and size.

Numerous hills make charming the landscape of this town. They

include the following: Heartbreak Hill, 196 feet high, from which it is related an ancient hunter's daughter watched in vain for the return of her lover (a sailor boy), and there died of a broken heart. Turner's Hill, 250 feet high, which years ago became a well improved and frequently sought summer resort; it has long since been styled "Mount Turner." Bartholomew's Hill, 204 feet high, stands just above the William Bartholomew farm, whose owner was an early benefactor of this neighborhood. Turkey Hill, 240 feet; Jewett's Hill, 212 feet high; Little Turner, 197 feet high; Bush Hill, 193 feet high; Scott's Hill, 180 feet high; Sagamore Hill, 172 feet high; Prospect Hill, 262 feet above sea-level, shows us White Mountains, and Old Monadnock in all its beauty. Cemetery Hill, or Town Hill, is 184 feet high, showing the city and surrounding farming community, as well as the spires of numerous churches in Amesbury and Newburyport. Castle Hill, located on the famous Ipswich Beach, at the mouth of Ipswich and Plum Island rivers, rises a distance of 165 feet above the railway track in Ipswich.

Not far from a dozen years after the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth, four and a half years after Captain Endicott colonized at Salem, and three years after Governor John Winthrop formed a colony known in history as the Massachusetts Bay, it was learned in Boston that a movement was being made to settle a colony of Jesuits in way of a mission. So in order to prevent this religious sect from getting a foothold, Winthrop sent a colony of thirteen men, with his son John Winthrop, Jr., as leader, to forestall the talked of enterprise. The record of events connected with this affair show that the company was made up of John Winthrop, Jr., John Thorndyke, William Clark, John Biggs, Robert Cole, John Gage, Thomas Hardy, Thomas Howlett, William Perkins, William Sergeant, and three others, who in March 1633 took actual possession of the soil of Agawam.

The record shows "A Court holden att Newe Towne—Cambridge—August 5th, 1634, ordered that Agawam shall be called Ipswitch," wherefore August 16, 1634, begins the corporate history of this town. It was named in honor of Ipswich, England, from whence the colony mostly sailed, and where they were well treated before departure from the Mother Country. The records show that Masconnomet sold his fee in Ipswich to John Winthrop, Jr., March 13, 1638, and that he expressed himself satisfied with such deal, March 5, 1639. The following is the deed—one of no little interest, even after these two hundred and eighty-three years:

I Masconnomet Sagamore of Agawam do by these presents acknowledge to have received of Mr. John Winthrop the sum of £20, in full satisfaction of all the right, property, and claim I have or ought to have, unto all the land, lying and being in the Bay of Agawam, alias Ipswich, being so called by the English, as well as such land, belonging to me in these parts, Mr. Dummer's farm excepted only; and I hereby relinquish all the right and interest I have unto all the havens, rivers, creeks, islands, huntings and fishings, with all the woods, swamps, timber and whatever else

is or may be, in or upon the said ground to me belonging; and I do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction from the said John Winthrop for all former agreements, touching the premises and parts of them; and I do hereby bind myself to make good the aforesaid bargain and sale unto the said John Winthrop, his heirs and assigns forever, and to secure him against the title and claim of all other Indians and natives whatsoever.

Witness my hand, 28th of June, 1638.

Witness hereunto: JOHN JOYLIFF, JAMES DOWNING, THOMAS COYTMORE, ROBERT HARDING.

MASCONNOMET
his X mark.

The Court ordered that Ipswich refund to John Winthrop, Jr., the twenty pounds named in the above deed, November 5, 1639. February 22, 1705, the record says: "The Court orders that Samuel Appleton, and our two Representatives, Nehemiah Jewett and Nathaniel Knowlton, treat with Hon. Wait Winthrop about Masconnomet's deed of Agawam, made to his father, deceased."

When Ipswich was settled in 1633, the boundary on the north and west was the boundary of the ancient Agawam; on the east the ocean; on the south, Cape Ann (Gloucester), Jeffrey's Creek (Manchester), Enon (Wenham), and Salem village (Danvers), four hamlets then belonging to Salem. Newbury, 12,300 acres, was set off in 1635 and contributed to the territory of Newburyport 4,575 acres in 1764, and Parsons 8,072 acres in 1819 which became West Newbury, June 14, 1820. In 1636 the Court established the western line of the town six miles in the country. The eastern and southern boundaries remained the same. In 1639, Ipswich with Newbury contributed to Rowley 10,310 acres for which the two towns received £800, and out of which were made the towns of Bradford, 4,564 acres, in 1675; of Boxford, 14,200 acres in 1685; of Middleton in part, about 2,500 acres, in 1728; of Georgetown, 7,548 acres in 1838; and of Groveland, 5,230 acres in 1850.

In 1650 Ipswich contributed the part of Topsfield north of the river, a part of 7,375 acres. The hamlet of Ipswich, 9,440 acres, was incorporated as Hamilton in 1793, and the Chebacco of Ipswich, 7,839 acres, became Essex in 1819. In 1774 certain families of Ipswich were set off to Topsfield; in 1784 others were set off to Rowley; and in 1846 still others to Boxford, and there now remain 25,478 acres, the heart of the town as known today.

Concerning the first settlement, and from what was styled the "Wonder-working Providence," the following is quoted: "The peopling of this towne is by men of good ranke and quality, meany of them having the yearly revenue of large estates in England before they came to this wildernesse." In Rev. Joseph Felt's history of the Town, we read: "A large proportion of the inhabitants possessed intelligent minds, virtuous hearts, useful influence and remarkable character. They well understood how the elements of society should be for the promotion of its welfare, and how such elements should be formed and kept pure from ignorance

and irreligion. They were careful of their own example, and thereby gave force to their precepts. They attended to the concerns of society as persons, who felt bound to consult the benefit of posterity as well as their own immediate good."

As a matter of citizenship it may be stated that no person was allowed to plant or inhabit Agawam without leave of the court. The following list of names is compiled from the public records of this town, and are supposed to be all who settled in the first decade—between 1633 and 1644. As many of their descendants still reside within this county, it is believed that such a roster will be of value, and of no little personal interest to many of the readers of this work:

SETTLED IN 1633—

Winthrop, John Jr.,
Thorndyke, John,
Clark, William,
Biggs, John,
Carr, George,
Cole, Robert,
Gage, John,
Hardy, Thomas,
Howlett, Thomas,
Perkins, William,
Sellman, Thomas,
Sergeant, William,
Shatswell, John.

SETTLED IN 1634—

Currin, Matthias,
Dillingham, John,
Easton, Nicholas,
Elliot, ———,
Fawne, John,
Franklin, William,
Fuller, John,
Manning, John,
Newman, John,
Parker, Thomas,
Perkins, John,
Robinson, John,
Sewell, Henry,
Spencer, John,
Symonds, Mark,
Ward, Nathaniel.

SETTLED IN 1635—

Andrews, Robert,
Bartholomew, William,
Bradstreet, Simon,
Bracey, Thomas
Bradstreet, Humphrey,
Bradstreet, Dudley,
Coggswell, John,
Covington, John,
Cross, John,
Denison, Daniel,
Dudley, Thomas,
Dudley, Samuel,
Firman, Thomas,
Foster, Reginald,
Fowler, Philip,
French, Thomas,
Fuller, William,
Gardner, Edmund,
Gidding, George,
Goodhue, William,
Haffield, Richard,
Hassell, John,
Hubbard, William,
Jackson, John,
Jacob, Richard,
Johnson, John,
Jordan, Francis,
Kent, Richard,
Kinsman, Robert,
Knight, Alexander,
Lancton, Roger,
Metcalf, Joseph,
Moody, William,
Mussey, John,
Mussey, Robert,
Osgood, Christopher,
Perley, Allan,
Procter, John,
Saltonstall, Richard,
Saunders, John,
Sayward, Edmund,
Scott, Thomas,
Sherrat, Hugh,
Short, Anthony,
Short, Henry,
Symonds, William,
Tredwell, Edward,
Tuttle, John,
Varnum, George,
Wade, Jonathan,
Wainwright, Francis,
Webster, John,
Wells, Thomas,
White, William,
Whiteyear, John,
Williamson, Paul,
Woodmouse, Mr.
Wyatte, John,
Wythe, Humphrey,
Younglove, Samuel.

SETTLED IN 1636—

Bishop, Thomas,
Clark, Daniel,
Dorman, Thomas,
Hall, Samuel,
Harris, Thomas,
Hart, Nathaniel,
Jennings, Richard,
Lord, Robert,
Merriall, John,
Norton, John,
Norton, William,
Peabody, Francis,
Rogers, Nathaniel.
Sawyer, Edmund,
Seaverns, John,
Sherman, Samuel,
Wilson, Theophilus,

SETTLED IN 1637—

Appleton, Samuel,
Archer, Henry,
Averill, William,
Bishop, Nathaniel,
Bixby, Nathaniel,
Boardman, Thomas,
Hayes, Robert,
Heldred, William,
Hovey, Daniel,
Jordan, Stephen,
Kimball, Richard,
Ladd, Daniel,
Quilter, Mark,
Rawlinsone, Thomas,
Reading, Joseph,
Symonds, Joseph,
Thornton, John,
Turner, Capt.

Browning, Thomas,
Challis, Philip,
Clark, Thomas,
Colby, Arthur,
Comesone, Symond,
Cross, Robert,
French, Edward,
Lawson, William,
Lord, Widow Catherine
Morse, Joseph,
Northe, John,
Perkins, Isaac,
Pike, ———,
Purrier, William,
Vincent, Humphrey,
Warren, William,
Wattles, Richard,
Wedgewood, John,
Whitred, William,
Whitingham, John,
Williamson, Michael.

SETTLED IN 1638—

Baker, John,
Brown, Edward,
Burnham, John,
Cochame, Henry,
Cartwright, Michael,
Cummings, Isaac,
Cooley, John,
Crame, Robert,
Dane, John,
Dix, Widow,
Emerson, John,
Emerson, Thomas,
English, William,
Eppes, Daniel,
Gibson, Thomas,
Graves, Robert,
Greenfield, Samuel,
Hanchet, John,
Kimball, Henry,
Kingsbury, Henry,
Knight, William,
Lumkin, Richard,
Metcalf, Thomas
Miller, William,
Morse, John,
Newmarch, John,
Nicholas, Richard,
Paine, William,
Scott, Robert,
Sherman Thomas,
Silver, Thomas,
Stacy, Simon,
Swindjer, William,
Taylor, Samuel,
Tredwell, John,
Whipple, Matthew,
Whitman, Robert,
Wilkinson, Henry.

SETTLED IN 1639—

Andrews, John,
Belcher, Jeremiah,
Bellingham, Richard,
Bird, Jathnell,
Bird, Thomas,
Boardman, Samuel,
Bosworth, Samuel,
Chute, Lionell,
Davis, John,
Farnum, Ralph,
Filbrich, Robert,
Firman, Dr Giles,
Gilvin, Thomas,
Hadley, George,
Newman, Thomas,
Pitney, James,
Preston, Roger,
Smith, Thomas,
Storey, Andrew,
Thompson, Simon,
Tingby, Palmer,
Button, Matthias,
Cochame, Edward,
Castell, Robert,
Hodges, Andrew,
Humphrey, ———,
Hatley, Richard,
Knowlton, John,
Mohey, Robert.

SETTLED IN 1640—

1640
Bachelor, Henry,
Lee, John,
Paine, Robert,
Urann, ———,

SETTLED IN 1641—

Hart, Thomas,
Hoyt, John,
Safford, Thomas,

SETTLED IN 1642—

Adams, William,
Annable, John,
Beacham, Robert,
Bitgood, Richard,
Brown, Thomas,
Brown, John,
Cowley, John,
Dane, Francis,
Davis, Richard,
Day, Robert,
Douglass, William,
Fellews, William,
Green, Henry,
Howe, James,
Knight, Oleph,
Knowlton, William,
Knowlton, Thomas,
Lee, Thomas,
Lamson, Edward,
Lammas, Richard,
Perry, Thomas,
Pettis, John,
Pinder, Henry,
Pengry, Moses,
Podd, Daniel,
Redding, John,
Scofield, Richard,
Smith, Richard,
Warner, Daniel.

SETTLED IN 1643—

Andrews, Richard,
Buckley, William,
Low, Thomas,
Windall, Thomas.

The population in 1650 was not far from one hundred and forty families, or about 700 souls. In 1680 there were 126 voters, equal to about 850 people. The United States census returns in 1830 gave this town 2,951; in 1885 it had reached 4,247; in 1887 the Manual of the Legislature for the Commonwealth gave the number of voters as being in 1920 shows the town's population to be 6,201.
1,016. In 1900 the census shows 4,658; that of 1910 shows 5,777; that

The idea of religious freedom was deeply set in the hearts of our sturdy forefathers. When they had once a real right to form a government of their own, they naturally chose the book of all books—the Bible—as their guide. It was to them all authority, and contained the true principles of all municipal, moral and religious governments. This was in fact the origin of our unique form of town government—a pure democracy—which was confirmed and established by law in 1636, when the General Court conferred upon the towns the right to grant lots of land and to make and enforce most of the laws that should govern them. Occasionally there was an exception to this rule, as in the case when in 1636 the General Court ordered that the next term there should be passed a law that Ipswich, with other towns, "shall have libertie to stay soe many of their ffreemen att home for the safety of their own towne as they judged needful, and that the saide ffreemen that are appointed by the towne to stay att home, shall have their libertie for this court to send their votes by proxy." In 1631 it was enacted that only church members could vote, and this was not repealed until 1644. In 1692 a voter for representative had to be worth at least a realty of forty shillings a year, and other estate of forty pounds. Aside from these provisions it was a government of equal rights.

Originally, the title of the office now known as selectmen was called "sevenmen"—doubtless from the Scripture sayings like these: "Wisdom hath hewn out seven pillars;" "Seven men that can render a reason," etc. They began their duties when the town was organized. In 1638 they numbered eleven; from 1723 the number was reduced to five. After 1740 the "seven" seems to have lost its power. In 1794 one man was selected from the north side of the river, one from the south side, and one from Chebacco. In 1798 it was voted to have five selectmen, at a salary of $19. Fifteen men were chosen and all declined the office. The salary was then raised to $38, when it was possible to secure five selectmen. In 1797 the meetings were held in the school-house chamber. The town officers included a clerk, constables, tithingmen, treasurer, surveyors, commissioner of taxes, fireman, hog-reeves and hog-ringers, haywards, fence-viewers, town-crier, clerk of the market, etc.

The first roads for general travel were laid out a rod and one-half wide. But they seldom were worked that width, for a mere path or trail was sufficient, as travel was mostly by horseback or by footmen. A pathway was first opened up between Boston and Newburyport in 1635. In 1641 the road to Salem was determined; another to Andover in 1652. The highway to Essex was laid out in 1654, and from Newburyport to Topsfield in 1717, via Linebrook. Records show that as late as 1832 there were only wagon roads in the town amounting to seventy-two miles. Other chapters will treat on the various railways of Essex county, including the lines in this town. A former history of this portion of the State has the following on an early canal:

In 1652, 22:12, Thomas Clark and Reginal Foster, were "to have ten pounds for cutting a passage from this river to Chebacco river of ten foot wide and soe deepe as a lighter laden may pass, and making a forde and foote bridge over." In 1669 the selectmen "are to take care that the bargain concerning the cutting of the creek at Castle Hill be forwarded." In 1681, February 7, any townsman has libertie to perfect the cutting the Cut that comes up to Mr. Eppes his bridge. In 1694, whosoever will cut the Cut through the marsh at Mr. Eppes' shall have liberty, who pays five shillings toward it "shall have liberty to pass as they may have occasion forever. Others must pay three pence a cord or a ton, in money." The proprietors of the Essex Canal were incorporated June 15, 1820. The corporators' names were William Andrews, Jr., Adam Boyd, Tristram Brown, Robert Crowell, John Dexter, Moses Marshall, Parker, Jonathan, Benjamin, Samuel, Francis, Jacob, Jr., Ebenezer, Jr. and Nathan Burnham; Dudley, George and Joseph Choate; Enoch, Winthrop, and Joshua Low; Jonathan (4th), Jacob, Jonathan, Abel, Daniel and Eps Story. This canal was opened in 1821, was a half mile long and cost one thousand one hundred dollars. The stock was twenty-seven shares at forty dollars each, and paid nearly six per cent. per annumn. It connected the Merrimack river with Chebacco river, and so let in ship timber at reduced rates. Later years it has been of little or no use, and early in the eighties its walls were falling in.

May 11, 1704, the town voted to build "forthwith, if the county could pay half, as it did for the town-house in Salem." Thus they sought to save by having one building serve as school, town-house and court-house. This plan went through, and a building twenty-eight by thirty-five feet in size was built. It had a steeple surmounting its roof. This served the town until 1795, when another town-house was erected. This was also used as a courthouse, the county paying half of the cost. As a town-house, it was discontinued in 1841, the town selling its share to the county for $1,250. In 1843 the town bought the old unused Unitarian church building which served from that date on.

Agriculture, stock-raising and fishing constituted the early resources of Ipswich. Farming was the chief industry upon which the people most depended for a good many years after settlement was effected. The early publication, styled the "Wonder-working Providence," remarked away back in the very early decades of the history of the town: "They have very good land for husbandry, where rocks hinder not the course of the plow." This land was used for the growth of cereals, such as corn, oats, barley, rye, wheat and flax. As late as 1733—a century after settlement—it was said of the potatoe that it was but a delicacy to accompany roast-beef dinner and unusual occasions; the turnip, then raised in abundance, took the place of potatoes on all common occasions. Corn and rye were the principal breadstuffs of our forefathers. Pastures were excellent, and all branches of farming then known in New England succeeded here in Ipswich. Without smiling at the orthography of an item in the above named publication, we ask that the following be read: "the Lord hath been pleased to increase them in Corne and Cattell of late [1650;] insomuch that they have many hundred quarters to spare yearly, and feed, at the latter end of the summer, the Town of Boston with good beefe."

Next in importance to farming and stock-raising came the fishing business in Ipswich. This industry had been evidently followed to quite an extent prior to 1633. It was an excellent place for fishing. The Neck furnished the wharfage, while Ipswich and Plum Island rivers, with Plum Island as a breakwater, the harbor. Cod and sturgeon and bass then belonged to these shores and streams. It was made profitable for those who desired to follow such business, for any person so disposed might after 1641 enclose his fishing stages, and each crew could plant an acre of ground. In 1670 they could take wood from the common for needed buildings and for fuel, and each crew could feed a cow on the common. By 1696 there were between seven and eight hundred persons doing a fishing business, together with other lines that naturally followed such an enterprise. History states that in 1758 there were six fishing schooners belonging at Ipswich, but another entry is made that by 1797 "only a few vessels were employed in the fishery."

The Ipswich river was noted from an early date for its fine fresh water fish, including shad, bass and alewives. As late as 1830 several barrels of alewives were being taken yearly out of some of the small tributaries of this stream. But with the settlement of the country, the change in water courses, the establishing of mill-dams and allowing impurities to enter the streams from factories and mills, these fish have mostly disappeared. Clams have been gathered here for all time since white men knew these wave-washed shores. In 1789 a thousand barrels of clams were dug, and they brought from five to seven dollars a barrel. The Ipswich clam ranks well up with the famous varieties of the Providence river or the Norfolk oyster. Coming down to 1885, the business here in this line amounted to $21,829, on a capital invested amounting to only $2,200.

Ipswich district was made a port of entry in May, 1796, by act of Congress. The first collector of customs was Asa Andrews.

Richard Saltonstall was the first man to employ power for grinding grain in this town; he commenced to grind in 1635, on the site of what was later styled the Farley Stone Mill. Jonathan Wade constructed, from timbers granted to him, a wind-mill on the hill that still bears that name, but it was not used many seasons, for the superiority of water-power was soon demonstrated to mill men. Saw mills were not in evidence very early here. Chebacco had several. In 1656 it was ordered that sawyers might fell trees in the woods three and a half miles from the meeting-house. It was provided, however, that one-fifteenth of the lumber thus obtained should go to the town.

1675 saw the first fulling-mill constructed in Ipswich; it was on the banks of Egypt river, but was not fully completed by the time allotted by the permit, hence later the mill-dam was removed from the river. Joseph Caleffe erected a fulling-mill, as will be observed from this town entry: "Joseph Caleffe might erect one where it will not prejudice

others, if he will full for the town's people sooner than for other town's men for money." This was in 1692. Caleffe, and two others named Potter, started a larger fulling-mill in 1693. Here homemade cloth was received and cleansed, scoured and pressed. When finally finished, such goods made a fine, compact, firm and very strong material, with a soft, glossy nap. Local historian Perley, of Ipswich, many years ago left this picture in words descriptive of early cloth-making in this section of the country:

In 1641 children and servants were to be taught the manufacture of cloth from wild hemp, with which the country abounded. In 1645 wool was scarce, and in 1654 no sheep might be transported, and none killed under two years of age, In 1656 the town was divided into classes of five, six and ten, and taught the art of spinning. One person should spin three pounds of linen, cotton, wool, monthly, for thirty weeks each year, or forfeit twelve pence per month for each pound short. Half and quarter spinners were required to do the same proportionately. Samuel Stacy was clothier in 1727. Those were the days of the "independent farmer." All his needs were supplied by his skill or care. Even his clothes were grown on his own field, in the azure-hued flax or the silvery fleece of his sheep. His family converted these into fine cool thread or soft warm yarn, and these latter they wove into cloth from which they made his and his family's garments. Our children's lips delighted to chord with the hum of the spinning-wheel. We have a vivid remembrance of the little wheel for linen and the big wheel for wool, but the clatter of the loom, that so deftly arranged the warp and woof, was a home-thrumming hardly so late as our day. The weaver's thrumms are now supplanted by a noisy profitless thrumming of the piano.

The late Thomas Franklin Waters of Ipswich, in his two volume work (1917) entitled "Ipswich in The Massachusetts Bay Colony," has given a fine description of the great textile industry of Ipswich, and from Vol. No. 2 of this work, we are permitted to make liberal extracts. While the following is not a copy of his writings, it is an article based largely on his writings on this topic, and for this we are thankful, for with such good authority, the reader will have no doubt as to the correctness of the statements herein made.

Prior to 1785, no power looms had even been known in the world, so far as our civilization knows. England wanted to keep her industry at home, and hence prohibited the shipment of machinery for making any kind of fabrics to America. American merchants were equally interested in having such industry started here, and were, as will be seen, equal to the emergency. They had to resort to every possible expedient to gain the needful information that was to make this country a manufacturing section. Men went to England and had models of cloth-making machines packed and sent to France, where they were repacked and reshipped to America by the American Minister to France. But these were finally seized in transit. However, later an Englishman acquainted with the business was induced to emigrate to America. He smuggled himself aboard the ship, but the owner of the vessel stopped and searched, and he was found and sent back and placed under bonds not to leave that

country again. But Yankee ingenuity prevailed in the end, and various portions of the machine found their way across the ocean and were here reassembled.

John Cabot of Beverly petitioned the legislature for the incorporation of a company to engage in the manufacture of cotton cloth in 1788. In the spring of 1789 the first cotton mill in New England, or in America, for that matter, was in successful operation. With it was one carding machine, nine spinning jennies, one warp mill and sixteen looms. The power was that furnished by two strong horses that worked in the basement of the factory. General George Washington visited this factory when passing through Beverly in the autumn time, and was greatly interested in the weaving of cotton cloth, denims, thicksett, corduroy, velveset, etc. This Beverly cotton mill furnished good goods, and found ready market, but financially it was a failure.

The first woolen factory in America was the one started at Hartford, Connecticut, in 1788. Dr. John Manning, the most progressive citizen of Ipswich, and who introduced inoculation as a preventive of small-pox, at the cost of much unpopularity, was now to play a part in a new role in the woolen mill industry. In 1792 he secured a grant from the town, and later purchased a lot now occupied by the Caldwell Block, and there he erected a two story building 32 by 105 feet. The Massachusetts Woolen Company was organized and the manufacture of broadcloth, blankets, flannels and kindred fabrics was begun. Finally, this plant went down, as did also the one at Beverly. It was closed down about 1800. Ipswich had relapsed into the same old routine of "age of homespuns." The yarn was spun on the great spinning wheel, stockings were knit, the long webs were woven on the family loom, flax was again spun and woven into fine and beautiful linen, lace of delicate and intricate patterns was wrought on the lace pillows, which found place in every Ipswich home.

One day two Englishmen from Nottingham—Benjamin Fewkes and George Warner—strolled into town, and their coming marked a new era and a gigantic industry was destined for the place. These men were real stocking-makers. Stocking-making as an industry was established many years before this in Nottingham, England, as well as in Derby and Leicester. A warp machine was added in 1782, and soon prices fell for all lace goods. Labor riots prevailed. The factories where the "frames" were in use were attacked and the machines destroyed. Upward of one thousand stocking frames were broken up, and a large number of lace-making machines. This destruction was brought about by the stocking knitters and lace making people in Nottingham, who could not be content with the introduction of machinery. Many of the persons thus thrown out of work in England emigrated to America, where they resolved to engage in their calling in a free country. Then it was that the English government placed a prohibitive duty on such machines as would

do this class of work. They placed every known obstacle in the way of these emigrants to their provinces in America. There was a penalty of £40 for the exporting of stocking-making machines to this country. This existed in 1788. In 1818 it amounted to £500. The agitators of the labor question furnished a pretext for extremely stringent laws in this respect. It was boldly stated that the bobbins, points, guides and needles of lace stocking machines came into Boston in 1818 to 1822, secreted in pots of good Yorkshire butter.

It was in 1818 that the first stocking machine arrived here in America. It finally reached Ipswich in 1822, being brought here by Benjamin Fewkes and George Warner. The first pair of stockings woven upon this machine in Ipswich was made by Benjamin Fewkes Sr., in the kitchen of a house then standing on the site of the present South Congregational Church building.

In February, 1824, the Boston and Ipswich Lace Company was formed, and consisted of Joseph Farley, William H. Sumner, Augustine Heard and George W. Heard, with a capital of $15,000. This company became insolvent, and the dwelling and factory were sold at auction, November 9, 1827, to Theodore Andrews, styled "Lace Manufacturer."

The New England Lace Company was formed January 1827, with a capital of $50,000. The names of the persons employed by the lace enterprise in Ipswich included: Superintendent, John Clark; machinists, James and Joseph Peatfield; lace weavers, Benjamin Fewkes, Samuel Gadd, George Gadd, James Clark, John Trueman, Mr. Watts, George Warner, Samuel Hunt, Sr., and a Mr. Harrison. Many girls were employed to mend the embroidery and wash laces.

As soon as England found that we were producing such goods in America, they at once placed a very high duty on thread, which then had to be imported from Great Britain. This for a time ruined the American industry, causing many investors to lose their money. After the lace-making failed here, the owners of mills turned their attention to making hosiery. In 1841 a round knitting machine was invented, and this changed conditions. But before passing to that, it should be stated that in 1829 there were only four well-started hosiery manufactories in this country and they were in Ipswich. In 1831 the United States census reports tell us that the only stocking factory in this country was the one at Newburyport.

The Ipswich Manufacturing Company was organized in 1828, on a capital of $50,000 and real estate amounting to $100,000. A new dam was constructed and a large stone mill was erected. Cotton machinery was installed and operations commenced in 1830. The day's work then consisted of fourteen hours. In 1832 the mill had three thousand spindles. There were 260 looms, and 80,000 pounds of cotton was made up into 450,000 yards of cloth annually; it was worth about ten cents a yard. The number of men employed was eighteen, and the number of

women employed was sixty-three. Meanwhile the manufacture of hosiery progressed rapidly. A large plant was finished in 1834. In a building erected by the Heads at the lower mills, and James and Joseph Peatfield, brothers, were engaged in knitting shirts and drawers upon a warp machine invented by James Peatfield in 1834. Encouraged by their success, these two brothers bought land in 1840 and proceeded to build the brick factory now known as the "Hayes Tavern." It was fully equipped with machinery invented by James Peatfield and there underwear was produced in large quantities. At what was called the Manning Mills, during the Civil War, there were made in 1864 over 55,000 pairs of socks for army use, and woolen goods additional to the amount of $135,000.

Hosiery then gave way to the making of blankets, by the Willowdale Manufacturing Company. This mill was destroyed by fire January 12, 1884, and it was never rebuilt. The decade of 1860 to 1870 was the period of another great advance in the textile industry of the town.

In 1863 a $40,000 stock company was organized with N. W. Pierce and George G. Colman of Boston, Joseph Ross, Captain Thomas Dodge and Henry L. Ordway, of Ipswich, as directors of the firm of Pierce, Hardy & Company, as selling agents. After five years the company decided to use its own yarn. The capital was increased to $50,000; knitting machinery was introduced, and the manufacture of hosiery was begun. The capital was then increased to $75,000, a new building provided, and improved machinery installed. All went well and a ten per cent. dividend was being declared, until the great Boston fire of 1873, when large warehouses filled with their products and other valuable property were destroyed, causing a financial calamity. Insurance companies failed, and only thirty-eight per cent. of the insurance was realized. This hosiery company struggled on until July, 1885, when it suspended operations.

The making of cotton cloth was carried on in Ipswich until 1868, when Amos A. Lawrence, of Boston, bought for $10,000 the mill and other property owned by the company. The cotton looms were removed and hosiery making was introduced as before related. Mr. Lawrence wrote in January, 1868: "I am starting up my mill at Ipswich again, which has been stopped for a few weeks. This attempt to manufacture cotton stockings by machinery so that they can be sold at $1.50 per dozen, has caused me to lose not less than one hundred dollars a day, for eight hundred days, or equal to $80,000. Yet I am not discouraged, though I feel the loss very much." Year after year the plant grew in popularity and favor with customers of these excellent goods. The old stone mill in which hosiery had first been made, was replaced by a new, large brick set of buildings, all in a modern style. Branch establishments have been set in operation in South Boston, Lowell, Belmont, New Hampshire and a large mill at Gloucester, the whole system constituting one of the world's largest plants in this line of goods.

At Ipswich alone, 1,500 operators usually find employment; seventy-five per cent. are females; 55,000 dozens of pairs of hose are produced each week, and an annual output of nearly three million dozen pairs. The total amount produced in the whole plant of the Ipswich Mills, is four million dozen pairs, valued at $5,000,000. Originally, the whole product of these mills was cotton goods, but now fully one-fourth are of silk derived from wood fibre. The administration of this extensive factory system is at Ipswich, and here the dyeing in various colors and shades is produced. The paper cartons and wooden packing cases are all made at Ipswich. From these mills go forth the hosiery for men, women and children, to all parts of the earth, including England (where they once laughed at our ability), France, Russia, Spain, Greece, and the South American States. During and after the World War, this factory was never so busy at producing such grades of hosiery as was wanted by army, navy and for domestic use. Now and then a little trouble is experienced here, as well as in most factory centers, relative to wages to workmen, but the liberal plan here pursued has usually kept the hundreds of persons employed about satisfied.

Ipswich has also smaller industries—the shoe heel factory of F. L. Burke & Son, one of the largest single plants of its kind in New England; and the Ipswich Tallow Company, makers of soap on an extensive scale. These are about the main industries, and they employ many persons and keep a steady pay-roll active, hence Ipswich never sees very hard times.

April 14, 1890, over thirty years ago, Rev. Augustine Caldwell, Charles A. Sayward, J. Increase Horton, John H. Cogswell and John W. Nourse met at the house of Rev. Thomas Franklin Waters to consider the organization of an Historical Society. Arthur W. Dow was detained, hence not present. It was talked over informally, and then finally voted then and there to organize a society to be known as the Ipswich Historical Society, and also there elected its first officers: Rev. Thomas Franklin Waters, president; John H. Cogswell, secretary; Charles A. Sayward, J. Increase Horton and John H. Cogswell, executive committee. Various places were used in which to meet as a society, including the South Church. The worthy president read a series of papers on the original locations of the early settlers, and some studies on the old houses. Mr. Sayward contributed an interesting paper on the probable visits of voyagers to the spot now occupied by the town before Winthrop's coming. And upon one occasion the society was interested in listening to a lecture by Winfield S. Nevins on "The Homes and Haunts of Hawthorne in Old Salem."

But with all the interest manifested upon the part of the membership, all felt that they would not succeed well until they owned a home of their own as a society. In the autumn of 1895, the postoffice having moved from the Odd Fellows building, this society seized the oppor-

tunity and was soon "at home" in leased quarters in this building. Subscriptions were coming in freely, and tables, desks, chairs, etc., with a goodly number of valuable books, documents, etc., were added to the effects of the new-born society.

Among the first results of this society was the influence which finally resulted in the procuring the splendid memorial monument and tablet, marking the spot near the First Church which perpetuates the great associations clustering about these spots. This memorial was the liberal, thoughtful gift of Francis R. Appleton. It was unveiled and dedicated with interesting exercises Wednesday, July 29, 1896. Since that good beginning there have been numerous "markers" placed at historic spots within Ipswich.

In May, 1898, at a cost of about $1,650, their present home, the ancient Whipple house, was purchased by the society. After much work and no little expense, this old frame house was restored and made suitable for the home of such a society. Old-fashioned furniture was collected, an old dwelling, unsightly in appearance, was bought and removed from a near-by lot, a stone fence was placed around a part of the lot, and many improvements were made. Ever since then, desks, tables and appropriate pictures have kept coming into the hands of the society. It is the aim of the members, as soon as possible to build a fire-proof building in which to keep in sacred trust and safety their large collection of beautiful and ancient pieces, documents and books, and it is believed it will soon be accomplished. Another feature mentioned is that of utilizing a part of the room in this new building for a Hall of Fame, where could be preserved enduring tablets of bronze, oil paintings and rare publications, with many articles which might form a very interesting museum. Already there are many articles of Puritan make, which could be transferred from the Whipple House (which of course will never be removed or allowed to decay, if possible). This old Whipple House, a story and a half frame residence, is now at least two hundred and eighty-six years old, having been built in 1635. It is no doubt among the most ancient places in the county of Essex. A history of its building, a genealogy and biography of all who have lived within its walls, would indeed make a work of many good sized volumes. It is situated within a few rods of the Boston & Maine railway station, in the town of Ipswich, and is open to the public every week day—a place well worth visiting.

It goes without saying that the people of Ipswich have long been a reading people and highly appreciate their splendid Public Library. As early as 1833 there were two libraries in the town. They were the social and the religious libraries, each containing about three hundred books. These libraries have long since been out of commission and forgotten by the younger part of the community. One was kept in the Town House. The unpaid fines, it is said, caused the books to fall into the hands of two or three persons, who had always kept their dues up.

The present Free Library was founded in 1868, by the liberality of Captain Augustine Heard. It was opened for public use March 1, 1869. Captain Heard donated the building, three thousand volumes, and an endowment fund of $10,000, making a total of $40,000. Professor Daniel Treadwell, of Harvard College, donated his fine private library, valuable paintings and a fund of $20,000. With the passing years, this library has been keeping pace with the times and adding to the volumes on its "stacks." In 1885 it had in excess of 10,000 volumes of books catalogued.

The original librarian served from 1869, for about a quarter of a century, without any changes, showing ability and popularity, in the person of Miss Lydia Caldwell.

In 1920-21 the town reports show a bonded indebtedness of $296,050; a water department sinking fund of $132,762, making a net bonded indebtedness of $163,287. In 1920 the town clerk's report showed there were 204 births recorded in this town during that year; parents residing in Ipswich, 185; residing in Essex, 5; residing in Gloucester, 1; residing in Hamilton, 7; residing in Rowley, 4; residing in Taunton, 1; residing in Wenham, 1; total 204.

"The poor ye have always with you," was spoken by the Master twenty centuries ago, and is still true. In ordinary years the Town Farm supports the unfortunate poor of Ipswich town, but when the late World War was on and when there were many idle men and women because of shut-downs in the mills, etc., an extra burden was placed on the overseers of the poor. That the readers of this work, now and in years to come, when conditions may change for the better (possibly for the worse) may understand how matters were handled at this date, a portion of the annual statement made by the overseers in 1920 will here be inserted:

Before aid has been granted, the Overseers of the Poor have endeavored to satisfy themselves in each instance as to whether the need could be met in some other way than from the town treasurer. It is not well to pauperize the applicant if it can be avoided. If he is able but is unwilling to help himself, he must be persuaded or compelled so to do. If unable to help himself and the distress is but temporary, perhaps friends or relatives, or the Associated Charities or the Red Cross, or some of the churches or fraternal orders, can help him and thus make drafts upon the public funds unnecessary. All these agencies have been summoned to the aid of the Out Poor Department during the past year and the response has been gratifying. Much closer co-operation has been effected between these agencies and the Poor Department, so that imposition in the duplication of supplies has been reduced to a negligible quantity.

The unusual problems with which the Overseers have been compelled to deal —problems arising from business depression, resulting in general unemployment— have been numerous, sometimes pathetic, and in other instances vexatious to say the least. Let it be understood that when a person applies for aid and declares himself to be in dire need, the responsibility of proving otherwise, falls squarely upon the shoulders of the Overseers. Their first duty is to make investigation of home conditions by examining the cupboard, the coal-bin, sleeping quarters, the ward-

robe, and by taking a general survey of the premises. If need be apparent, perhaps the shop-keeper will extend credit, or others may come to his assistance to prevent pauperization. If these sources fail, the bank is visited to ascertain as to whether there is any deposit to the credit of the applicant. In several cases we have found such deposits and have refused aid. In other cases we have learned of money secreted in the applicant's home, or snugly tucked away in a foreign bank where it has a largely enhanced value. A widow who pleaded poverty was found to have bought corporation stock at a recent date; not much, to be sure, but enough to show that she was not in need of assistance from this department. Another applicant was found to have $1,700 equity in real estate. Still another invested part of his first allowance in liquid moonshine, while his children cried for bread. Answers to questions regarding conditions have at times been anything but frank and ingenuous. Incorrect statements have occasionally been made, when the absolute truth would have helped the applicant's case immeasurably.

The foregoing is the vexatious side of the question, but there is also the pathetic side which has appealed to the sympathies in powerful manner:

How many American men, after the decease of their wives, would perform daily work in the mill, and again in the evening and on Saturday afternoon and Sundays, devote their time to the care of four children whose ages might range from four to eleven years, one child being a cripple and needing more than usual attention? Yet a man of foreign birth was found to have done this very thing, unaided, for more than eighteen months, not appealing for assistance during the first six weeks of his enforced idleness. He received help because he richly deserved it. Another man, whose wife had gone away one evening and had neglected to return, was found to have taken care of two children, keeping them fed, clothed, and in school, for upwards of two years. This fact was disclosed when he was taken with typhoid and sent to the hospital by the Board of Health, the care of the children devolving upon the Overseers. While instances such as these are more or less common with mothers, they are so exceedingly rare with fathers as to excite comment.

The tale of want and wretchedness, of privation and suffering might be prolonged to a considerable extent. The Red Cross, Associated Charities, District Nurses and Church Workers, witness scenes right in our midst which the average citizen does not think exists. These organizations render invaluable aid to the Overseer's Department, and are to be encouraged and supplied with funds from the private purse, in order that they may continue their much needed work of benevolence.

But, notwithstanding the foregoing, the conditions in our town have evidently not been so bad during the period of unemployment as in many other industrial centers, where bread lines have been formed and soup-kitchens opened to feed the hungry; nor has the comparatively moderate increase in cost of the care of our poor been such as to create alarm. The Overseers Department has been well organized, has worked harmoniously and industriously for the public good, with the general result that the poor have not suffered nor the taxpayers' dollars been allowed to slip carelessly through their fingers.

The statement that forty cents out of every dollar of State tax is applied to the taking care of those who cannot care for themselves will be an eye-opener to most people. It will serve to show what is the state of society at large, how crippled is its condition. The cost to Ipswich is far below that of the average of the Commonwealth. A recent report of Mayor Peters shows that there has been during the period of unemployment an increase of ninety per cent. in the poor cases of the city of Boston. There has not been an increase of over twenty per cent. in Ipswich.

While it is not practical, nor of great interest to the average reader

of the local annals of a county, to have published a list of the officers that have served with the passing decades, we may in this instance be allowed to insert the names of the men who had charge of the interests of this town in 1920-21. The list includes the following: Selectmen: Eben B. Moulton, chairman, John A. Brown, John H. Cameron; Assessors: John W. Nourse, chairman, George Fall, Richard R. Glazier; Overseers of the Poor: Frank T. Goodhue, chairman, Charles G. Hull, Agent, John G. Sperling; Town Clerk, Charles W. Bamford; Treasurer and Collector, William J. Riley; Town Accountant, Frederick S. Witham; Board of Health, Dr. George E. McArthur, chairman, Aaron Lord, George W. Smith; Cemetery Commissioners: Philip E. Clark, chairman, Ralph K. Whittier, Howard Blake; Town Counsel, Frank E. Raymond; Chief of Police, Edward Leavitt; Engineers of Fire Department, Arthur H. Walton; chief, Edward H. Smith; clerk, Edward M. Poole; Superintendent of Streets, Joseph A. Huckins; Town Auditor, Frederick S. Witham; Moderator, Charles E. Goodhue; Finance Committee: M. Charles Arthur, chairman, George A. Scofield, secretary, Jesse H. Wade, Thomas R. Lord, Fred A. Kimball, George E. Hodgkins, George H. Curtis, Sidney H. Perley.

A postoffice has been in existence in Ipswich since 1775, and the following is a list of the postmasters who have served in the order given: James Foster, Daniel Noyes, Joseph Lord, Isaac Smith, Nathan Jacques, Ammi Smith, J. H. Kendall, Stephen Coburn, John V. Varrell, Joseph L. Ackerman, John H. Cogswell, Luther Wait, George A. Scofield, George P. Smith, Olive Smith, Luther Wait, James H. Lakeman.

This is a second class postoffice with three rural routes extending to the outlying country. The postoffice has been in its present quarters for the last sixteen years, having removed thither from June's Block, Central Square. The office became a free delivery office December 15, 1908. The present office employes include these: John L. Russell, assistant postmaster; William A. Howe, sub-clerk; Harry M. Purinton, Arthur K. Ross, Edward L. Darling, clerks; William J. Barton, Francis N. Bourque, Harry M. Dolan, carriers.

In the early days in New England the Church seemed the object and end of government; the organization of the government and the church were about one and the same thing. Governor Winthrop wrote in his journal, November 26, 1633, that "Mr. Wilson (by leave of the congregation of Boston, whereof he is a pastor), went to Agawam to teach the people of that plantation, because they have no minister." Again he wrote of himself, April 3, 1634: "Went on foot to Agawam, and because the people wanted a minister, spent the Sabbath with them, and exercised by way of prophecy and returned home on the tenth." No church was then organized here from the reading of these journal entries. According to James Cudsworth, 1634, "A plantation was made up this year, Mr. Ward (pastor) and Mr. Parker (teacher)." This

was the ninth church in the Colony, and the third in Essex county. The religious service programme ran thus: The pastor began it with prayer; the teacher then read and expounded a chapter; the ruling elders announced a Psalm, which was sung; the pastor read a sermon, and sometimes followed with an extemporaneous address, frequently consuming a full hour or more; singing followed, then a prayer and the benediction. A similar service was held in the afternoon and especially was the singing very odd. One of the ruling elders would read a single line of the Psalm, then such of the congregation as could sing, rose in different parts of the house and sang it; then other lines were successively read and sung until conclusion of the Psalm. In case the elders were absent the deacons had to perform this duty, hence the expression "deaconing the hymn." Not until about 1790 was the whole stanza read at once, and about three years later the entire hymn was read by the pastor. Singing choirs became common as early as 1663, but this choir had no elevated seats and a gallery until 1781. The rule was a contribution each Sabbath. The magistrates and chief men first walked to the deacon's seat, then the elders and then the congregation. There was also weekly service, usually on Thursday and lasted nearly all day. This was called the "Lecture Day."

The first to come among this people as teacher and pastor was Rev. Thomas Parker. He came in May, 1634, with a colony of about one hundred, who subsequently settled in Newbury.

In 1698 was built the second church of this organization; the builder was Abraham Perkins. It was to be "26 feet stud, 66 feet long and 60 feet wide, with two-thirds gables on every side, with one Teer of gallery round said house; as far as necessary, having five seats in the gallery on every side thereof, with as many windows or lights as the committee or said Perkins can agree for." This house stood on the site of the First Church edifice. These churches all had bells, and in 1702, a clock was purchased for the church.

It is not in keeping with the scope of this chapter to add the long list of pastors who have served these various Ipswich churches. It may be well, however, to give those since older histories have been published, and which are accessible in any library in the county. Since 1885 the pastors of the First Church have been Revs. George H. Scott, 1885-91; Edward Constant, 1892-1910; Frank H. Baker, 1910-13; Paul G. Macy, 1914.

During the pastorate of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers the South Church came from out the First Church. The legislative act which legalized this change was dated May 27, 1747. The new corporation was effected and contained such conditions as follows: The parish was to remain intact, if it took "effectual care for building a new meeting house" on the south side of the river before July 20th, and settled another minister and supported the two churches out of the common fund, as

a joint-stock company—which it did not do, so the new parish was established. The church was formed in July, 1747, by twenty-two members from the First Church. Their first pastor was Rev. John Walley, a graduate of Harvard College. Their meeting house, finished in 1748, was a two-story building forty by sixty feet. In 1819 two stoves were added to the furniture and fixtures of the church. The pastors of this old church have, for the most part, been able men who preached as they believed, though some of the doctrines they taught had to be amended at times with the advance of the years. The sixth pastor was the late Rev. Thomas Franklin Waters, from 1879 to 1909; the next pastor was Rev. Edgar Fletcher Allen, 1912-14, after whom came Rev. Harry Cartledge.

Of Linebrook Parish and Church, the articles of incorporation show that "this parish is centrally located with reference to Topsfield, Boxford, Georgetown, Rowley and Ipswich, and is distant from them respectively, from church to church, from three to four miles. It was originally constituted of the last towns." Much inconvenience was experienced as early as 1738 in attending church at the above places, and thirteen of the freeholders of Ipswich, December 20, 1739, petitioned the First Church to be set off to Topsfield. This petition was denied them, but they were "discharged from all parish rates for the future." They soon began to employ a religious teacher. Again, in 1742, they tried to be set off as a separate parish, but it was also denied them. In 1743 they and the freeholders of Rowley erected a meeting-house, and April, 1744, they all voted to be set off as a district parish. Fifteen Rowley men opposed this move before the General Court, but the plan succeeded, and an act was passed for incorporation of a new parish, dated June 4, 1746. The precinct was bounded on the south by Howlett's Brook and Ipswich river, on the east by Gravelly, Bull and Bachelder's brooks, and on the west by Strait Brook and it was therefore named Linebrook Parish by vote January 27, 1746.

Their first church building was erected in 1747, and the second was built in 1828; the third house of worship was erected in 1848. It was paid for by a stock company of eighty shareholders paying twenty-five dollars per share. At the death of one of the members, John Perley, Esq., who died in 1860, the church was remembered in a will to the amount of $7,000, which was to become a perpetual fund, "the income of which was to be paid to the Orthodox Congregational Society, Linebrook Parish, to the towns of Ipswich and Rowley, for the support of preaching and Sabbath School in said society, annually, while said society has a settled minister."

What was originally the First Baptist Church of Ipswich was formed in February, 1806. The first preacher was Rev. H. Potle. They occupied the former woolen factory which was converted into a house of worship. In 1813 there were sixty-eight communicants. In

1816 a secession took place on account of poor discipline, and the seceders formed themselves into a new church and were incorporated as "The First Baptist Church in Ipswich," June 16, 1817. This church survived only until 1823 and a year or so later the original Baptist church also went down.

The present (1922) Baptist church in Ipswich was reorganized December 7, 1892. The first pastor was Rev. D. B. Gum; he continued until 1895, when came Rev. Edgar Harris, who resigned in 1896, and Rev. W. J. Thompson succeeded. The name Immanuel Baptist Church was given to it. A fine new edifice was provided, the same being dedicated April 3, 1898. The next pastor was Rev. Arthur K. Gordon, who remained until July, 1901, and was succeeded by Rev. William C. Cook, who became ill and resigned in 1902. Rev. W. H. Rogers came next in September, 1902, and remained till October, 1904. Then came Rev. Ilsley Boone, remaining from October to August, 1907; Rev. Reynalds, 1908; Howard B. Smith, 1909 to 1911; then W. C. Sampson, Robert M. De Vault, E. R. Corum, James Watson and Harry Chamberlain.

The Protestant Episcopal Church was organized in 1867, but services had been regularly held since 1861. Rev. Henry Wall was the first rector, and he was succeeded by Rev. Benjamin Rowley Gifford. Since Rev. Atwood's resignation in 1887, the rectors have been as follows: Rev. Robert B. Parker, to June 1, 1892; Rev. Milo Gates to June, 1899, and he was followed by Rev. Reginald Pearce to 1911, who was succeeded by Rev. Robert B. Parker. This church has always accomplished its share in carrying forward religious work in Ipswich and surrounding community. It is known as the Ascension Memorial Protestant Episcopal Church. One of the founders of this church in Ipswich, was Dr. Joseph Edward Bomer, a native of Beverly, born 1819.

A Unitarian Society was formed here in 1830, the several churches contributing to the membership. Services were held in the court house till, at the cost of $3,000, they built a church edifice, which was dedicated October 23, 1833. After about seven years, services were discontinued and the society was formally dissolved. In 1843 the house was sold to the town for a town-house for about two thousand dollars. The pews from this church went into use in the Linebrook church.

It has been well said that the Methodist Episcopal "denomination of Christians arose in England in 1729 and derived their name from the exact regularity of their lives, a very pleasing commentary on their lives and character." In 1741 they divided into two parts, under George Whitefield and John Wesley, the former adopting the view of John Calvin; the latter of Arminius. The followers of Arminius compose the greater body of Methodists in this country and Great Britain. In 1830 the seceders from the Wesleyan Methodists established a government and discipline of their own, and styled themselves the Methodist Protestant Church. This church differs from its parent church only in certain

matters of discipline, particularly those relating to episcopacy and the manner of constituting the General Conference.

Methodism first came into this country with Rev. George Whitefield in 1739, and was an important factor in the deep and extensive revivals that soon after followed. Its power was first felt in Ipswich when that eloquent divine electrified the people from the "Whitefield Pulpit," a rock near the First Church, and "Pulpit Rock" in Linebrook. Methodism as now taught, "was first introduced into New England, in 1789," says Miss Archer, in her excellent sketch of this church, and "in Ipswich in the year 1790, by Rev. Jesse Lee, who was sent by the venerable Bishop Francis Asbury." The sketch relates that the first convert by the preaching of Mr. Lee was the mother of General James Appleton. She fixed the date August 12, 1791, and ever remembered the day with adoring gratitude. No other Methodist minister labored in Ipswich until October, 1821, when Rev. Aaron Wait (1821-26) came. His coming was after this manner: He was passing through the town on Saturday on a business trip and stopped at the "Treadwell Tavern." He was invited to preach the next day and had an audience of highly interested people in the "old woolen factory," the record remarks. Not only one service, but he preached three times that Sunday. He came again in November the same autumn and preached again to large audiences. Soon after he moved his family to Ipswich, but like Paul "coveted no man's silver," for he worked at the shoemaker's trade. Charles Dodge was Mr. Wait's first convert. In the spring of 1822 a class was formed and met at the residence of Aaron Wallace. The class had twenty-two members, eight of whom were from the Baptist church. The first love-feast was held with Captain William Gould, in the Robins house, on High street. In the summer of 1824 a Sunday school was organized, with Charles Dodge as superintendent. The first meeting house was begun in September, 1824, and dedicated the Christmas following. This building was forty by fifty feet in size, with galleries. Its cost was a little less than two thousand dollars. It stood where later stood the residence of Robert Jordan. Within the memory of many now living in Ipswich, the following have served as pastors of the Methodist Episcopal church: Revs. Herrick, 1888-89; James Fallen, 1890-92; George M. Smiley, 1893-95; George F. Durgin, 1896-98; Francis J. McConnell, 1899-1901; Arthur Bonner, 1902-04; Frederick Woods, 1905-07; Alliston B. Gifford, 1908-11; Arthur D. Straud, 1912-15; William J. Kelley, 1916.

The Ipswich church is in a flourishing condition, with excellent Sunday school, modern buildings, and is in earnest in all that is good in religious work.

Without boasting concerning the influence of church workers in Ipswich at the present date, it certainly will be interesting to read what was said of the work of the faithful pastors and church workers there a third of a century ago, by a person well qualified to weigh and record the influence of church life in Ipswich at that time:

The several pastors and assistants have been, almost to a man, liberally educated. They have brought an apparent zeal to their work, and a good conception of their duty therein. They have been watchful, diligent, laborious, prayerful. A good proportion of them have been dignified, trusty, efficient leaders. They have been able to read the signs of the times, to understand the needs of their people, and to utilize circumstances, as well as actual means. They have watched the ripening grain in their respective fields of labor, and gathered their gracious harvests; their doctrines have been a leaven that has permeated the whole mass of the populace; that has endowed the legislator, the justice, the mariner, the mechanic, the manufacturer, the farmer; that has impeded the crime and corrected the erring; that has superinduced a nobler, truer, more earnest and more effective manhood; and has first, last and midst, been our people's enlightenment and guide. Such is our hope of the future.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

## NEWBURY.

The town of Newbury is situated in the extreme northeastern part of Essex county, as well as that of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. It touches the sea coast and is noted for its early and later ship-building operations. In the same part of the county is found both West Newbury and the city of Newburyport. It was named from an English town derived from Burgus or borough, later reduced to "New Bourg" or "New Town" and finally to Newburg; but when it came to be written and rewritten in records, it commenced to be spelled Newbury, possibly from the fact that the letters "y" and "g", when written, are similar in appearance.

Prior to 1634 there resided a Rev. Thomas Parker, who taught a free school in England at New Bourg; he was the only son of a Rev. Robert Parker, of whom it was said by Cotton Mather that "he was one of the greatest scholars in England." Rev. Thomas Parker, the son, came to the shores of New England in the month of May, 1634, with a company numbering about one hundred persons, who first went to Ipswich, then styled Agawam, to locate. After passing the winter in Ipswich, it was discovered that there were so many people there that the company swarmed out to other parts to the eastward. Thus it came about that Rev. Parker and many of his English friends settled at what is now Newbury. For all practical purposes, the date of this settlement may well be fixed as in May, 1635, a year after the party of emigrants arrived from England. They went by water through Plum Island Sound and thence up the river, to which they gave the name of their honored leader. Their landing place was not far from the bridge later constructed, and on the north side of the river. About forty persons made up this colony that first braved the "Wild New England Shore." The list is as follows: Thomas Parker, James Noyes and wife, John Woodbridge, Henry Sewall and servants, James Browne and wife, Francis Plumer and wife, Nich-

olas Easton and wife, John Easton, William Moody and wife and four sons, Anthony Short, Henry Short and wife, John Spencer, Richard Kent, Sr. and wife, Richard Kent, Jr., Stephen Kent and wife, James Kent, Nicholas Noyes, Thomas Browne, Richard Browne, George Brown, Thomas Coleman, Joseph Plumer and Samuel Plumer. Others soon joined this band, including Richard Dummer and John and Richard Pike, also John Emery, and soon after they had settled (probably in June or July, 1635), the first church was organized. Mr. Parker preached his first sermon in the open air, under the shade of a huge oak tree 'more than a century old, that stood a hundred yards below the Rowley bridge of later days.

The first houses clustered about the meeting-house, as was the order of the court in those times, which was a means of family safety. An order read as follows: "No dwelling house shall be built over a half mile from the meeting-house on any new plantation without leave from the court, except mills and farm-houses of such as have their dwellings in town."

The court ordered an election in 1636, at which the following men were chosen as town officers, as they were later styled, but no such system had yet come into general use in New England, yet this was the prime germ from which the present selectmen system originated. The first officers as above referred to were: Edward Woodman, John Woodbridge, Henry Short, Christopher Hussey, Richard Kent, Richard Brown, and Richard Knight. In 1637 occurred the Pequot War, and Newbury furnished eighty men.

The last-named year, Richard Dummer, John Spencer and Nicholas Easton were disarmed by the General Court for holding erroneous theological opinions. Spencer returned to England, Easton removed to Rhode Island, but Richard Dummer remained in Newbury. After Spencer had departed, a mill which he and Dummer had erected was carried on by Dummer, as is shown by the (now) odd worded instrument of agreement:

August 6, 1638. Whereas it is agreed with Mr. Richard Dummer of Newbury, by the persons whose names are underwritten, hereunto subscribed, that in case Mr. Dummer doe make his mill fitt to grynd corne and doe maintaine the same as also doe keep a man to attend grynding of corne, then they, for their part, will send all the corne that they shall have ground, and doe likewise promise that all the rest of the towne (if it lye in their power to promise the same) shall also bring their corne, from tyme to tyme, to be ground at the same mill period. And it is further agreed that (the afore mentioned conditions being observed by Mr. Dummer) there shall not be anyother mill erected within the sayd towne.)

EDWARD WOODMAN,
JOHN KNIGHT,

EDWARD RAWSON,
RICHARD BROWN,
HENRY SHORT.

As far back as when our forefathers lived in New England for the first time, nearly three hundred years ago, the matter of church site and

village site had much of interest in any new community. In 1640 the town of Salisbury was incorporated, and shortly after the town granted to George Carr the island which still bears his name. Carr was appointed ferryman by the court, and thus Newbury, which had been the border town on the east, became connected with the new town, which now enjoyed that distinction. This naturally drew Newbury people away from their first settlement place on the banks of the Parker river, and attracted them nearer to Merrimac. This resulted in the platting of the new town farther to the north, and the removal of the meeting-house to a new site. This new town site was set off January, 1644.

The new century opened with an increasing, though widely scattered, population. The people residing on the borders of Newbury and Rowley erected a meeting-house in 1701-2, and combined the names of the two towns, at first called the parish of "Rowlbury." In 1704 the parish was incorporated as "Byefield Parish." The Dummer and Sewall families did not live in harmony, as had their forefathers, and when they were about to find a name for the new parish, each family wanted its own name. The matter was taken to court, and finally someone asked to have the parish named after his Honor, Judge Byfield. This was readily agreed to, and the good judge generously donated the church a silver communion set, also a bell. The silver tankards were subsequently burned with the church building.

During the Indian and Revolutionary Wars, as well as later struggles, the Military chapter of this part of Massachusetts will show that the Newbury citizens were loyal to their adopted country, the same being true ever since in the descendants to our own day,—to the close of the terrible World War of 1918.

Saw-mills, fulling-mills and flour-mills made up the list of early industries in Newbury; next came the period of tan-yards and rope-walks. After the incorporation of Newburyport and West Newbury, the old industries mostly died out, with a few exceptions; for instance, the ship-building industry, which was transferred to the newly-formed municipalities. In 1794 the first incorporated woolen mill in the State was the factory of Guppy & Armstrong, of Newburyport. Besides the large woolen mills on the river, there were two snuff-mills; near the railroad station was a shoe factory at Byfield, carried on by J. O. Rogers, with a product of a thousand cases per year.

The business connected with ship-building at Newbury was at first carried on at the Parker river. The boats there constructed were doubtless small sloops of a light draught. As early as 1652 mention is made in a pamphlet of "an old building-yard" on Carr's Island, and it shows the launching of numerous boats from here at about that date. Under authority of the government, a report gives the name and tonnage of one hundred and six boats between 1698 to 1851, enrolled at the Newburyport Custom-House, as being one hundred and twenty-

eight. Between 1793 and 1852, the number of boats registered at the Newburyport Custom-House was three hundred and twenty, making a total of various types of vessels constructed in and near Newbury, six hundred and fifty-four. After 1851, when the territory on the river between Newburyport and West Newbury was annexed to Newburyport, the Newbury ship-yards were within the city limits, and shipbuilding in Newbury ceased.

The annals of this town should not fail to give a brief account of at least one individual whose inventive genius has in his career revolutionized many an industry. We refer to Paul Pillsbury, who resided at the old Pillsbury estate at Byfield. Among other articles invented by this gentleman may be named the universally used shoe-peg, which revolutionized the shoe-maker's trade, for prior to that date all work about shoe soles had been accomplished by sewing. He also invented and placed on the market a machine to manufacture shoe-pegs, instead of making by hand as at first. He also made shuttles for the cotton factories. His first invention was a corn-sheller, for which he received a Letters Patent in 1803, this being the first attempt at shelling corn in any other manner than by hand-work. In 1808 he obtained a patent on a bark-mill, the foundation of all types of small mills such as paint-mills, coffee-mills, spice-mills, etc., now in use the world over. The old way of treating bark for tanning vats had hitherto been accomplished by rolling it with a grindstone of huge proportions, the same usually being run by a horse. Other inventions of Mr. Pillsbury included a rotary fire-engine, a seed-sower, churn, a gold-washer and sifter, coffee roaster, coffee-mill, window fastener, bee-hive and other useful articles. It is believed that this inventive genius was from the same family of Pillsbury stock from which descended the Minneapolis Pillsbury family—the great flour-making men and politicians of the West.

It would take a volume to give a detailed account of the various religious societies within this town since its first settlement. All that will be attempted in this connection will be to give some of the more important facts concerning the church life of the town. Coffin's history of Newbury says: "The people having built a ministry-house, a meeting-house which was soon used as a schoolhouse, had a ferry established at Carr's Island, and became an orderly community, and began not only to lay out roads, but as they were rapidly extending their settlement farther north, to take special care of the town's timber."

In 1660 the second meeting-house was built. It was in this building that was enacted an extraordinary exhibition by a former member, Lydia Wardwell, of her naked person during divine service. For this offense she was taken to Salem and sentenced to be whipped and pay court costs. This poor misguided woman, whose maiden name was Perkins, was the wife of Eliakin Wardwell, of Hampton. The strange

act was in a way justified by George Bishop in his publication entitled "New England Judged" as follows:

> His wife Lydia, being a young woman and tender and chaste woman, seeing the wickedness of your priests and rulers to her husband, was not at all offended at the truth, but as your wickedness abounded, so she withdrew and separated from your church at Newbury, of which she was sometimes a member, and being given up to the leading of the Lord, after she had been often sent for to come thither, to give a reason for such a separation, it being at length on her, in the consideration of their miserable condition, who were thus blinded with ignorance and persecution, to go to them, and as a sign of them she went (though it was exceeding hard to her modest and shame-faced disposition) naked amongst them, which put them into such a rage, instead of consideration, they soon laid hands on her, and to the court at Ipswich led her, where without law, they condemned her to be tyed to the fence post of the tavern, where they sat, and there sorely lashed her with twenty or thirty cruel stripes. And this is the discipline of the church of Newbury, in New England, and this is their religion and their usage of the handmaid of the Lord, who, in a great cross to her natural temper, came thus among them, a sign, indeed, significatory enough to them, and suitable to their state, who under the vision of religion were thus blended into cruel persecution.

This singular incident is given today, only to show a wide reform since those far away years in the first century of New England's settlement and today.

Just before 1686 were the famous trials of Caleb Powell and Elizabeth Morse for witchcraft, the two cases being the only ones connected with that strange condition of affairs in New England from Newbury. William Morse, the husband of Elizabeth Morse, was the supposed victim. Powell was acquitted, and Mrs. Morse, after condemnation to death, was finally reprieved.

The Baptist church was formed at Newbury in 1682, with members including these: George Little, Philip Squire, Nathaniel Cheney, William Sayer, Benjamin Morse, Edward Woodman, John Sayer, and Abel Merrill.

To those interested in the church history of this town and its environments, it may be stated that among the various ministers who held a prominent part in the settlement and eventual development of the country, these were included: Rev. Richard Brown, First Parish; Rev. Moses Hale of the Byfield Parish; Rev. Toppan; Rev. Oliver Noble of the Fifth Parish; Rev. Isaac Smith, of Boston; Rev. Elijah Parish and Rev. Moses Parsons, and others whose names have been missed with the flight of time.

The Methodist Episcopal church was formed in Byfield in 1827, by Rev. William French. The first class consisted of these: David Clifford (leader), Simon Pillsbury, James Burrel, Jerusha Burrel, Alice Pillsbury, Eleanor Perry, Amos Pillsbury, Sally Clifford, Hannah England, William W. Perry, Abner Rogers, Betsey Poor. The same year a neat chapel was built near the Great Rock. This was so small, however, and without seats, that the women stood within the building,

some seated on stones which they had brought in from outside, and the men standing on the outside looking in through the open windows. In 1831 a church proper was formed and was a part of the New England Conference. It was styled "The First Parish of The Methodist Episcopal Church for the towns of West Newbury and Newbury." To give a list of the many ministers who served this church so many years is not considered in keeping with this brief church history. Suffice it to say, this church grew and prospered, and has usually been supplied with an average talented minister, down through all the years to the present time.

A society of the Plymouth Brethren was formed here in 1877, as seceders from the Methodist church. It was an English denomination, and never attained any great strength in America.

The present officers in Newbury are inclusive of the following: Selectmen—Richard T. Noyes, chairman; Benjamin Arthur Rogers, Stewart L. Little; Town Clerk, John C. Rolfe; Assessors—Richard T. Noyes, chairman, Benj. Arthur Rogers, Stewart L. Little; Treasurer and Collector, Arthur W. Moody; Auditor, Paul Henry Ilsley; Overseers of the Poor—George Roy Tarbox, John C. Rolfe, Charles S. Rogers; School Committee—Harold W. Pritchard, chairman, Charles S. Holton, John T. Litch, Edward L. Urie; Truant Officer, William N. Sanborn; Constables, William Dole, William N. Sanborn, Edmund S. Rogers, Albert H. Smith; Burial Officer, Benj. P. Rogers; Fence Viewers—Asa Pingree, Elbridge Noyes.

During the last fiscal year the town's reports show the following figures:

| Appropriated. | | Expended. |
|---|---|---|
| $ 4,500.00 | State Tax | $6,010.60 |
| 800.00 | State Highway Tax | 846.20 |
| 3,500.00 | County Tax | 3,389.03 |
| 7,500.00 | Highways | 7,289.59 |
| 18,000.00 | Schools | 19,123.29 |
| 1,800.00 | Town Officers | 1,188.55 |
| 3,500.00 | Snow Paths | 3,712.65 |
| 150.00 | Soldier's Relief | 279.75 |
| 150.00 | Military Aid | 90.00 |
| 2,100.00 | State Aid | 1,704.00 |
| 200.00 | Public Library | 400.00 |
| 1,200.00 | Poor | 1,857.06 |
| 300.00 | Mother's Aid | 460.00 |
| 200.00 | Interest | 470.83 |
| 500.00 | Hospitals | 650.00 |
| 2,000.00 | Incidentals | 2,309.33 |
| 100.00 | Forest Fires | 44.55 |
| 500.00 | Board of Health | 546.41 |
| 650.00 | Moth Work | 3,512.86 |
| 300.00 | Abatements | 373.75 |
| 75.00 | Memorial Day | 75.00 |
| $48,025.00 | Totals | $55,033.45 |

Total number of male polls assessed, 393; Total number of registered voters, 201; Total number of females registered, 139; Total number of male voters, 208; Total number of female voters, 118; Total number of persons assessed on property, 405; Value of assessed personal estate, $325,573.00; Value of assessed real estate, buildings, $732,800.00; Value of assessed real estate, lands, $565,408.00; Total assessed valuation, $1,298,208.00.

The United States Census reports gave the population of this town in 1900 as 1,601; in 1910 it was 1,483; and the 1920 enumeration shows only 1,303. Many of the younger persons have removed, and a goodly number of farmers within the town have for a decade and more been retired citizens in Newburyport, hence the decrease.

Byfield Village is within Newbury, and according to recent statistics it has the following business interests, etc.: Dummer Academy, in South Byfield; Billiard and pool rooms—Orrin B. Tarbox, Central Byfield; Harry L. Leeming, blacksmith; the Byfield Felt Manufactory; grocers, Charles J. Cheney, William P. Pearson; ice dealer, William N. Sanborn; physician, Dr. Gorham D. Rogers; provisions, Rodney M. Hills, Albert H. Woodman; snuff makers, the Byfield Snuff Company; blanket makers, (woolen), the Byfield Felt Company.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

## TOWN OF ROWLEY.

Rowley, a town of Essex county, Massachusetts, was founded in 1639—two hundred and eighty-two years ago. As originally bounded, this town was from Ipswich on the south to Newbury on the north, and from the ocean on the east to the Merrimac river on the west.

Its worthy founders were Rev. Ezekiel Rogers and his company from England. More than thirty years ago, George B. Blodgette, M. A., of this county, wrote concerning Rev. Rogers, in these words:

Ezekiel Rogers was the son of Rev. Richard Rogers, a distinguished Puritan, of Wetherfield, Essex county, England, was bred at Cambridge, where, in 1604, he was a Corpus Christi man when he was graduated as a Bachelor of Arts and of Christ's College in 1608, when graduated as Master of Arts. After leaving the university, he became chaplain in the family of Sir Francis Barrington, of Essex, exercising himself in ministerial duties for about a dozen years. He then was called to a public charge, at Rowley, in Yorkshire, where he continued in great favor for seventeen years, when he was compelled to relinquish his charge—as he tells the story in his will, "For refusing to read that accursed book that allowed sports on God's holy Sabbath, or Lord's Day, I was suspended, and, by it and other sad signs of the times, driven, with many of my hearers, into New England."

The landing was effected at Salem, Massachusetts, in the autumn of 1638, and the new town founded in April, 1639, the Act of Incorporation reading as follows: "The 4th day of the seventh month (September) 1639, Mr. Ezekiel Rogers' plantation shall bee called Rowley."

Mr. Rogers was a man of great note in England for his piety and his ability; while the members of the company he brought with him to Rowley, were called by Governor Winthrop, "Godly men and most of them of good estate."

In the tract set off to Rogers' company several farms had been laid out; these were purchased by the company for £800. The purchase money was contributed by such as were able to pay, and in the platting of house lots all who paid nothing were given one acre and one-half, while those who paid were given lots in proportion to the amount contributed. The distinction became more apparent when the rule of the assignment of rights (called "Gates") in the commons is known.

As a means of reference to those interested today, or in the years to come, in those who first settled the town of Rowley, this list of sixty-nine names constitutes a complete list of the original house-lot owners with acres of land:

George Abbott, 2; William Acy, 2; Thomas Barker, 4; James Barker, 1½; William Bellingham, 4; Matthew Boyes, 2; William Boynton, 1½; John Boynton, 1½; Edmund Bridges, 1½; Sebastian Brigham, 4; Widow Jane Brocklebank, 2; John Burbank, 1½; Edgar Carlton, 3; Hugh Chaplin, 1½; Peter Cooper, 1½; Widow Constance Crosby, 1½; Thomas Dickinson, 1½; John Dresser, 1½; Thomas Elithorp, 1½; Widow Jane Grant, 1½; John Harris, 2; Thomas Harris, 2; William Harris, 2; Robert Haseltine, 2; John Hazeltine, 2; Michael Hopkinson, 1½; Robert Hunter, 2; William Jackson, 1½; John Jarrat, 2; Maximillian Jewett, 2; Joseph Jewett, 2; George Kilbourne, 1½; Francis Lambert, 2; Thomas Leaver, 1½; Thomas Lilforth, 1½; Thomas Mighill, 3; John Miller, 2; Thomas Miller, 1½; Thomas Nelson, 6; John Newmarch, 2; Thomas Palmer, 1½; Francis Parrat, 2; John Remington, 2; Humphrey Reyner, 3; Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, 6; Henry Sandys, (Sands in record) 2; Edward Sawyer, 1½; William Scales, 1½; Widow Margery Shove, 2; Hugh Smith, 1½; John Spofford, 1½; Margaret Stanton, 1; William Stickney, 1½; Thomas Sumner, 1½; Richard Swan, 2; Thomas Tenney, 1½; Richard Thorley, (now Thurlow) 2; John Trumble, 1½; Richard Wicom, 1½; William Wild, 1½.

A London (England) publication in 1654 said of these people and their settlement: "These people being industrious in every way, soon built many homes, to the number of about three-score families and were the first to set up making cloth in this Western World; for which end they built a fulling mill, and caused their little ones to be very diligent in spinning cotton-wool, many of them having been clothiers in England." Governor Winthrop in 1643 wrote of this settlement: "Our supplies from England failing, much men began to look about them, and fell to a manufacture of cotton; whereof, we had a store from Barbadoes, and of hemp and flax; wherein Rowley, to their great commendation, exceeded all other towns." Other histories state that the first fulling-mill in this country was located by John Pearson, near the Nelson grist-mill. It was in 1640 when Thomas Nelson built his saw mill, and in 1643 added a grist-mill.

Other chapters in this work will treat in detail on the part the county of Essex took in all the various wars, including the last great

World War. Let it be said in this connection, that Rowley has ever proven itself patriotic in the times that have tested men's souls. A military company was formed in 1640; in King Philip's War, Captain Lathrop's company was known as the "Flower of Essex." The Revolution, War of 1812, the Mexican, Civil War, Spanish-American and World War have each had men from this little New England town.

From the start, Rowley was both noted for manufacturing as well as for its farming interests. Large numbers of the first to settle here were expert weavers from England, and naturally transplanted the trade to their new home in the New World. As early as 1680, ship-building was carried on to quite an extent at the warehouses and landings of the Stewarts, who preceded the Saunders, who followed this business for more than a century. In 1813, Captain Nathaniel Perley built a ninety-ton vessel on Rowley commons, a mile and a half from the river. It was known as the "Country's Wonder." It was drawn to the river in one day, by one hundred yoke of oxen. While the teamsters stopped for lunch, Captain Perley poured a full barrel of old Jamaica rum into the Saunders well, that all might drink.

Malt-kilns were in existence in Rowley as early in 1645, and numerous tanneries were constructed soon after the first settlement. In 1800, the number of tanneries was nine, and in 1839 about 600 cords of bark for tanning purposes, were brought here by ships.

The advent of the steam railroad in 1840, changed many features of the town. Many oxen were dispensed with and farming was not as profitable as before, but manufacturing began to be the order of the day. Boots and shoes were made by factory methods (as then understood) in 1703 by Abraham Jewett, and he continued until his death twenty-two years later. He was succeeded by others, until in the early eighties the business was in the hands of such firms as the Hendersons, Fosters, Todds, Primes, etc., and at that date the annual output exceeded $200,000. Messrs. Burke, Ellsworth and Boynton were largely engaged in making heels and rands, while inner-soles were being made by Bernard Damon.

One of the land-marks of Rowley is the old Glen Mills, established by Thomas Nelson and purchased in 1820 by N. N. Dummer, Sr., who also introduced carding machines. Since 1856 this plant has been exclusively engaged in making family flour. The power as described in the eighties was that furnished by three turbine water-wheels and a sixty-horse power engine. A 14,000 bushel capacity elevator is near the mill.

From records furnished by the department at Washington and from local assistance, the following list of postmasters for these two post-offices have been carefully compiled with years of appointment. Rowley—James Smith, 1806; Edward Smith, 1825; Frederick Lambert, 1829; Benj. H. Smith, 1835; Oliver Blackinton, 1847; Richard Herbert, 1851; Joseph Johnson, 1853; Oliver Blackinton, 1854; Ezekiel Bailey, 1854; Thomas B. Cressey, 1861; J. S. Todd, 1869; Frank E. Jackson, 1881; Albert E. Bailey, 1886.

The postmasters since 1826 have included these: Benjamin Coleman, 1826; Samuel W. Stickney, 1827; Benjamin Coleman, 1828; Martin Root, 1847; Henry Durant, 1851; George C. Lincoln, 1852; Paul Titcomb, 1853; Samuel S. Moody, 1854; Benj. Pearson, 1862; Harriet L. Moody, 1868; Justin O. Rogers, 1873.

As originally incorporated, Rowley embraced also Bradford (then taking in Groveland) in 1675, Boxford in 1685 and Georgetown in 1838, while the Bradstreet, Hammond and Harris farms were annexed from Ipswich in 1784. Its usual population for many years prior and including 1885 was about 1200, and the latest United States census gives it 1,249 in 1920.

The first church was organized by Rev. Ezekiel Rogers shortly after the town was incorporated, December 3, 1639. Of this, the first minister and stated pastor of the parish, much has been written, but the following taken from the epitaph on his tombstone will suffice in this connection:

Sacred to the memory of Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, first minister of the gospel in Rowley, who emigrated from Britain to this place, with his church and flock, A. D. 1638. He finished his labors and life, January 23, 1660, in his seventieth year.

He was a man of eminent piety, zeal and abilities. His strains of oratory were delightful. Regeneration and union to Jesus Christ by faith were the points upon which he principally insisted; he so remarkably described the feelings,, exercises, motives, and characters of his hearers, that they were ready to exclaim, "who hath told him all this?" With the youth he took great pains, and was a tree of knowledge, laden with fruit, which the children could reach.

He bequeathed a part of his lands to the town of Rowley, for the support of the gospel, which generous benefaction, we (in the first parish) enjoy until the present day; and here gratefully commemorate, by raising this monument to his memory, A. D. 1805.

The bequest just named above appears in his will as follows: "The rest of my estate in lands that are not given unto my wife during her natural life, that is, the land at planting-hill and called Shatswell's ground, and all the rest, be it meadow, fresh or salt or other upland whatever, and one-third part of gates or commonage, I give to the church and town of Rowley." He also made many more liberal contributions to the church and town.

The second minister here was Rev. George Phillips, a graduate of Harvard College, 1650, died April, 1696, the ancestor of many distinguished of his family name in this country. The third minister was Rev. Samuel Shepard, graduate of Harvard 1658. He served faithfully and well until taken from earth, 1678. From records he compiled and left with his parish it appears that the "blue laws" were very blue in those days. It took more than a century to inject much of the broader element of Christianity into these parishes, as we view such matters today. The fourth minister was Rev. Edward Payson, a graduate of Harvard College in 1677, who came here to preach in 1680. He married and had seventeen children. He served well, and the church record says "The

Rev. Edward Payson died August 22, 1732, about ye rising of ye sun in the 76th year of his age, after about a month's languishment and after he had preached ye gospel in Rowley more than 51 years." The fifth minister was Jedidiah Jewett, born 1705, graduated at Harvard College in 1726 and ordained in 1729. The third meeting-house was built under his pastorate. He stated in a record that in 1744 his membership was 208 persons. He died in 1774, and the parish voted to pay his funeral expenses and erect a suitable monument to his memory. The sixth minister was Ebenezer Bradford, the last regular parish minister who remained until released by death, all others having been dismissed. Rev. Bradford died in 1801. Following came these: Revs. Tullar, Tucker, Holbrook, Pike, Lyman, Blake, Joslyn, Bruce; the last-named became pastor of the church at Rowley in 1878, and was dismissed in 1882.

The following was a part of their "Confession of Faith," as late as the eighties:

. . . that God created man upright, that our first parents freely sinned and fell, and that all their posterity are born destitute of holiness, dead in trespasses and sins, and justly exposed to the wrath and curse of God.

. . . that God in His mercy has not left all mankind to perish forever, but of his mere good pleasure, has, from eternity, Elected some to everlasting life; and has determined to deliver them out of a state of sin and misery, and to bring them into a state of salvation by a Redeemer.

. . . that without a change of heart, wrought by the special agency of the Holy Ghost, who is truly God, no one can be an heir of eternal life.

That there will be general resurrection of the righteous and the wicked and a general judgment; at which all the righteous will be received to everlasting happiness,, and the wicked sentenced to misery without end.

As early as 1702 the people residing in the northwestern part of the town of Rowley joined with the inhabitants of Newbury, living near the "Falls", in the erection of a meeting-house in that vicinity and in 1706 became a separate church by themselves. In the eighties it is found that the meeting house was located at Georgetown. It is known as Byfield parish.

In the southwestern portion of the town of Rowley was the church of Linebrook, whose members had united with some from Ipswich and formed a church in November, 1749, with George Leslie as first minister. After the changes of many years the churches of the town have finally been reduced to the one in Ipswich.

Like many another locality in New England, the Universalist faith has ever been quite strong in Essex county, including in the town of Rowley where a parish was organized or incorporated in 1877, and a meeting-house erected. However, no regular pastor was called and no extensive efforts have been made to increase the interest of this denomination.

The Baptist Church was formed in November 16, 1630, with twelve charter members. During that year a building was erected, and it was

still doing service as late as 1890. About 1862 the membership had increased so much that the church was enlarged and beautified. The regular pastors have included these: Rev.s Caleb Clark, 1831-34; Jeremiah Chaplin, 1834-36; Benjamin C. Grafton, 1839-41; Cephas Pasco, 1841-48; Zenas Wildes, 1848-50; Alexander W. Carr, 1851-62; James W. Lathrop, 1862-67; Edwin T. Lyford, 1868-70; Robert G. Farley, 1870-71; Andrew Dunn, 1871-74; Patrick Galeher, 1876-78; John W. Chase, 1879-81; James H. Gannett, 1881-84; Jonathan Tilson, 1884-91; James B. Webber, 1916—; J. J. Fowler, 1917-20; Arthur W. Swift, 1920 and H. Hollingsworth, 1891-93; L. E. Caster, 1894-95; David M. Lockrow, 1895-98; W. B. Crowell, 1898-1901; Frank B. Sleeper, 1902-06; Elias C. Miller, 1907-08; Frederick J. Ward, 1910-13; J. C. Hayes, 1913-14; A. B. Webber, 1916—; J. J. Fowler, 917-20; Arthur W. Swift, 1920 and present pastor. The present membership is 116; attendance at Sunday school is 132. The present edifice is valued at $8,000.

The present industries in Rowley are quite limited, there only being two concerns—a heel factory and a shoe factory, the latter employing about seventy-five people when running full capacity. The ordinary small town retail dealers are here found. With towns and thriving cities on every hand it is not strange that such towns as Rowley should not be any greater than they are.

This is one of Massachusett's oldest town incorporations, it having been incorporated in 1639, and has just published its two hundred and eighty-first annual report. Here one finds the utmost care taken with public records. The present town elective officials are as follows: Town Clerk, John Marshall; Selectmen, Joseph N. Dummer, J. Harris Todd, Charles H. Perley; Assessors, J. Harris Todd, Joseph N. Dummer, Charles H. Perley; Treasurer and Collector, Wilfred P. Adams; School Committee, Samuel F. Knowles, Jr., Mrs. Mabel K. Gordon, William Dummer; Auditor, Arthur W. Peabody; Surveyor of Highways, A. Bennett Boynton; Constables, John A. Savage, Frank L. Cook; Chief of Police, John A. Savage; Librarian, Mrs. Charles H. Perley.

The financial condition of Rowley is indeed most excellent. The assets now amount to $13,415.48, while the liabilities run $13,428.30—liabilities more than assets, $12.92. When one understands that the place is supplied with electric lights (municipal) and has fully up-to-standard highways, good schools, etc., it is remarkable that the town has less than thirteen dollars indebtedness.

## CHAPTER IX.

## TOWN OF MARBLEHEAD.

In the southeastern part of Essex county, Massachusetts, lies the historic and unique peninsula known as Marblehead. It is sixteen miles out from Boston. This township, comprising about 3,700 acres, measures near four miles from northeast to southwest, by from one and a half to two miles in width.

Between the "Neck" and the main land is a fine sheet of water, forming one of the best harbors along the entire Atlantic coast. At the date of landing of the forefathers, the whole of the eastern Massachusetts coast was in possession of a tribe of Indians called Naumkeags, then under rule of the Squaw sachem of Saugus, widow of the great Nanepashemet, who in his day had been a powerful warrior, indeed controlling all other near-by tribes. But war and disease had thinned out the ranks of what had been a very large Indian tribe, just before white men saw these shores for the first time. The great conflict had occurred in 1615. In 1619 the enemy had besieged them, and in this movement chief Nanepashement was killed.

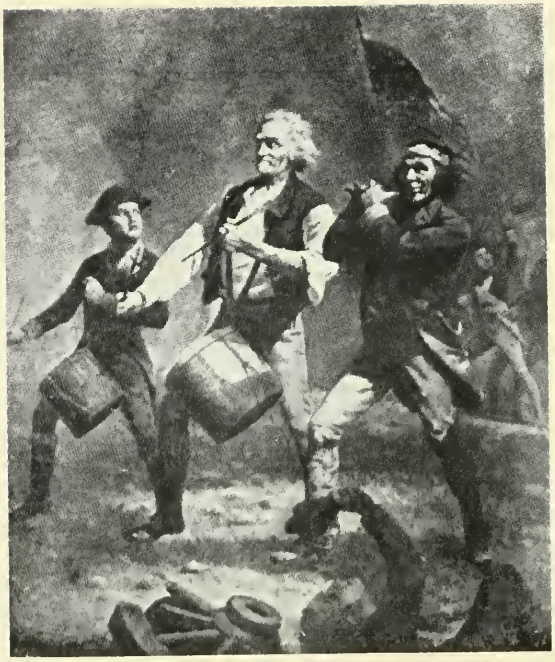
In 1621 a party from the Plymouth Colony, while ranging over this section, came across some of the old Indian forts. Winslow's account reads:

> Having gone three miles we came to a place where corn had been newly gathered, a house pulled down, and the people gone. A mile from hence Nanepashemet, their king, in his life time had resided. His house was not like others; but a scaffold was largely built with poles and planks, some six foot from the ground and a house upon that, being situated on the top of a hill. Not far from hence, in a bottom, we came to a fort built by the deceased king the manner thus: There were poles, some thirty or forty feet long, stuck in the ground as thick as they could be set one by another, and with them they enclosed a ring some thirty or forty feet over. A trench, breast-high, was digged on each side; one way there was to get to it with a bridge. In the midst of this palisade stood the frame of a house wherein, being dead, he lay buried. About a mile hence we came to such another, but seated on the top of a hill. Here Nanepashemet was killed, none dwelling in it since his death.

After the death of this chief, his widow and her sons took charge of the affairs of their tribe. This squaw sachem lived in harmony with the white race, and at last really submitted to their government. Kind and docile in disposition, and generous to the wants of the whites, they in due time became the wards of the settlers. Forsaking the gods of good and evil, whom their fathers had taught them to worship, many were baptized and embraced the Christian religion.

Relics of the villages, graveyards, shell-heaps and Indian fort have been found from time to time, which, were other evidences wanting, are sufficient to prove the fact of this country having long been held by

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS



SPIRIT OF '76
ORIGINAL IN ABBOT HALL, MARBLEHEAD

FORT SEWELL AND HARBOR ENTRANCE, MARBLEHEAD

Indian tribes. Utensils made of stone have been found, among them arrow-heads, spears, etc. The largest shell-heap is near the Pine Grove, on the line of the railroad to Salem. By actual measurement, this contained thirty cords of shells, placed in layers of stone and ashes.

"Small-pox Pasture" at the Harris farm and in fields on Atlantic avenue, excavations have been found, thought to indicate the former location of Indian wigwams. These cellars are always to be found near some reliable supply of water. They are from six to eight feet across, and were originally from two to four feet in depth. The Bessom pasture, near Salem harbor, was most likely the site of an Indian village. Excavations, supposed to have revealed the cellars of wigwams, are to be found everywhere in the vicinity. An examination of this pasture revealed a grave in November, 1874, containing five skeletons, four being those of grown persons, the other that of a child. All but that of the child were in a remarkable state of preservation, one being very large, evidently that of a man. They were all buried on their backs, with their heads to the west, except one, which lay with its head to the east; the legs being drawn up so that the knees nearly touched the chin. Besides the skeletons, a lot of trinkets, an earthen cup, a small bell, two seashells, and a quantity of beads were found in the grave, proving conclusively that the bodies were buried after the white settlers came to America. As late as two hundred years ago, tradition says that Indians dwelt in Marblehead. In the Lower Division Pasture, the location of an Indian stockade is or was thirty years ago, mentioned by some of the older inhabitants. They received their information from aged citizens, then about to depart for their final rest, whose memories fondly cherished the traditions transmitted to them by their fathers.

While there appears to be a dispute as to what particular part of England the first settlers to Marblehead migrated, all agree that they were from that Kingdom, and that they arrived about 1629. They were largely fishermen, rough and ready at any kind of hard service. They came only about four years after Salem was first settled. This township included, at one time, all the territory embraced within present Essex county. In Colonial Records the name Marblehead occurs for the first time in 1633. In September, 1631, Isaac Allerton, having had difficulty with associates in the Plymouth colony, set sail in the "White Angel" for Marblehead, where he established a fishery station. Without going further into details as to just who the first settlers were, where they located and what became of them, it will suffice to state that such settlement was effected in the years from 1629 on, and that usually they were from England.

In 1636 the building of a college was talked of and really projected in Marblehead. At a town meeting held in Salem, in May, 1636, in an order for the division of Marblehead Neck, Mr. Humphreys made application for some land beyond Forest river. Six gentlemen were to

take it under advisement, and "to carefully consider of the premises, lest it should hinder the building of a College, which would mean many men's losse." October following, the Court granted £400 toward the erection of a college. The next year a committee was formed to look to its erection. This consisted of Mr. Humphrey and the Rev. Hugh Peters. The court subsequently ordered the college to be built at Cambridge, then called Newtowne, and to be named "Harvard College," in honor of the Rev. John Harvard, who made a bequest of several hundred pounds towards its erection, and donated his library for the use of the students.

The year 1636 was important to the history of Marblehead. It was in that year that the first ship was built there—a craft of 120 tons burden, and the third ship ever built in the colony. This vessel, known as the "Desire," for more than two years was used in the fishing business. Later, she went to the West Indies, and returning brought a cargo of "salt, cotton, tobacco, and negroes." These are supposed to have been the first slaves ever landed in the Colony. This was a fatal step, one later regretted by all New England times without number, when its result was finally observed, down as late as Lee's surrender to Grant, at the close of the Civil War.

In March, 1648, the town of Salem ordered: "That Marblehead, with the allowance of the General Court, shall be a town, and the bounds to be to the utmost extent of the land which was Mr. Humphries' farme, and soe all the land to the sea." May 2, 1649, the General Court granted the petition of the inhabitants, and the town was duly incorporated, as follows: "Upon the petition of the inhabitants of Marblehead for them to be a town of themselves, Salem having granted them to be a town of themselves, and appointed them the bounds of their town which the Court doth grant."

Shortly after the separation from Salem, a meeting of the inhabitants was held, and the following town officers were chosen, or, as the record expresses it, "These men were chosen for the town's business: Seven men or select men: Moses Maverick, Samuel Daliber, Francis Johnson, Nicholas Merritt, John Peach, senior; John Deverox, John Bartoll."

While this is the first meeting after incorporation, the records do not begin really until December 22, 1648, when it was "Agreed by the towne that all such as are strangers fishing or employed about fish shall pay unto the Towne for their and flake stufe and other conveniences, the sum of ten shillings a year for every man." In 1660 there were only sixteen houses in this township.

With the passing years many changes have been wrought in this town. Improvements have been made, they existed for decades, and then finally went to decay, as new and more modern methods obtained. Better street and road systems came, better architecture and different vocations followed. Coming down to the last annual report of the Board

of Auditors, in 1921, the following were the officers in different departments: Selectmen: Thomas Loham, Jr., chairman; John N. Osborne, William J. Goldthwait, Samuel B. Graves and John G. Stevens; Town Clerk, William T. Litchman; Town Treasurer, Everett Paine; Collector of Taxes, J. Hooper Martin; Assessors: Thomas Swasey, Herbert E. Ballard, Fred B. Litchman; Overseers of the Poor: William J. Goldthwait, chairman; Charles E. Stevens, James E. Gormon, Everett Chapman, Theodore M. Hutchinson; Fire Engineers: John T. Adams, chairman; William H. H. Atkins, Charles A. Goodwin, John T. High, Thomas H. Rhoades; Constable, Andrew M. Stone; Auditors: Fred R. Cooksey, chairman; Emerson S. Clark, William R. Noyes; Surveyor of Highways, E. Frank Chapman; Tree Warden, William H. Stevens; Moderator, Joseph W. Coates; Fence Viewers: William Pierson, Everett C. Beesom; Measurers of Wood and Bark: Walter P. Homan, George Doherty; Inspector of Animals, Everett C. Peach; Sealer of Weights and Measures, Ambrose J. Brown; Harbor Master, Stacey H. Clark; Chief of Police, Fred W. Trasher; Patrolmen: Reuben A. Paine, John H. Collyer, Thomas G. Sweet, Charles E. Taylor, Samuel I. Chapman, B. F. Doliber (2d), George P. Kelley, Fred W. Bailey, Harold L. Woodfin.

Vital statistics in 1920—Marriages recorded, 92; licenses issued, 80; married in Marblehead, 60; licenses outstanding, 5; brides born in Marblehead, 26; grooms born in Marblehead, 15; both born in Marblehead, 19; brides foreign born, 8; grooms, foreign born, 5; both foreign born, 6. The town had an indebtedness at the end of 1920 amounting to $241,000, but at the close of that year, the books show payments amounting to $203,000, as follows: Bonds on water loans, $18,000; schoolhouse loans, $13,000; municipal lights loan, $2,000, and road improvements, $5,000.

The present system of water-works in Marblehead was installed in 1886, and has been extended and improved with the passing years, until now it appears to be adequate to the demands of the municipality. The number of gallons of water pumped in 1920 was 233,000,000; average number of gallons per day, 636,000; average pound of coal per day used 2,636; coal for the year, 965,000. Gallons pumped with one pound of coal, 241.

A recent historical account says that the year 1667 proved disastrous to the people of Marblehead. Owing to the inclemency of the weather during most of the season when fish were plentiful, they were unable to venture out in their boats to any distance, and in several instances those who did so were lost. The court therefore, with considerate sympathy, voted to abate their proposition of the county tax for one year.

Times change, some features grow better, while others change for the worse. The custom of using intoxicating liquors as a beverage, which prevailed in all New England until within a comparatively short time, was pronounced at Marblehead during its early days. No vessel

sailed from its harbors for long or day trips without a good supply of liquors. No boat arrived with its supply of fish without supplying something "to take" for the inner man. Even the functions of all the churches had to be toned up by "spirits."

The first school of this town was opened in 1675, by Edward Humphries, who received £40 yearly for instruction. In 1674 the town had one hundred and fourteen houses, all well filled.

In 1675 the war with the Indians, known as King Philip's War, broke out, and lasted in all fury for three years, only ending with the death of King Philip. The whites were slaughtered in great numbers, and it appeared in 1677 as if the white race was to become extinct in the colony. Two Indians having been brought captives to Marblehead, their fate was thus related by Increase Mather in a letter dated 23d of the fifth month, 1677: "Sabbath night was sennight, the women at Marblehead, as they came out of the meeting-house, fell upon the two Indians that were brought in captives, and in a tumultuous way, very barbarously murdered them. Doubtless if the Indians hear of this, captives among them will be served accordingly."

In 1747, a school for poor children was established by Robert Hooper Jr., who agreed to pay all expenses for salary of a teacher if the town would fit up and keep a suitable school room. This offer was gladly carried out, and thus it was that the poor children of the town had school opportunities. The place then contained about four hundred and fifty residences.

During 1768 nine vessels, with crews, were lost, and the following year fourteen other vessels met with like fate—one hundred and twenty-one men and boys lost their lives. Besides these, many were washed overboard from boats on the homeward trips. A large number of widows and orphans were thus left to care for themselves, or to be kept by the town. These were among the darkest days ever experienced in Marblehead.

Human slavery existed in Marblehead, as well as in other New England towns, at a very early day. In fact, nearly all of the more wealthy families owned one or more negroes. Colonel Lee, that great business factor in colonial days, owned many slaves, whom he employed in the work of loading and unloading his numerous vessels, as fast as they arrived from foreign ports. Slavery was then believed to be the proper and natural condition of the black race, and was fostered and encouraged. Church records disclose the fact that negroes were baptized and received into the church. Slave marriages are also there recorded for all three of the Marblehead churches. Early newspaper files give further evidence of the slave conditions in Marblehead. These notices appeared in the papers in 1724 and as late as 1756:

Ran away from his master, Capt. Richard Trevett, of Marblehead, a Negro man named Pompey, about twenty-two years of age; a Lusty tall fellow. He had on

when he went away a striped home-spun jacket, cotton and Linen shirt, dark colored Kersey breeches, gray yarn stockings, round-toed leather heel shoes and felt Hat.

Note—He deserted his master's service in the Shallop Ann at Plymouth. Whoever shall apprehend the said Runaway and him self safely convey to his said master at Marblehead or to Mr. Francis Miller in Boston, near the Green Dragon, shall have fifty shillings reward and all necessary charges paid.

August 6, 1724.

To be sold by Jacob Fowle Esq., and Mrs. Susannah Palmer, administrators of the estate of John Palmer, late of Marblehead, deceased, a likely Negro man, about twenty-five years old, and a fine Negro boy about fourteen.

Marblehead, October 16, 1750.

Ran away from Capt. John Diamond at Marblehead, on Tuesday, the 11th of September, instant, a Spanish Negro Fellow named "Cuffe" about twenty-five years old; speaks broken English, and can talk Spanish language. He is a tall slim fellow; had on a new felt Hat, striped home-spun Jackett, breeches, New Shoes with square Buckles. Whoever will bring or send the said Negro to Mr. Norwood, Inholder at Lynn shall have two dollars reward and all necessary charges paid. All Masters of vessels and others are cautioned not to conceal or carry off the said Negro, as they would avoid the penalty of the law.

September 29, 1759.

After England had imposed a tax on many articles used by her colonies, including tea shipped from India by England, the people at Marblehead voted that "the use of tea at a time when our inveterate enemies are causing it to be enforced on the American colonies in the most violent methods, even by armed bands, is no less an injury offered to the colonies by all who vend or purchase it than affording assistance to those enemies to raise revenues to pay dragoons who are to enslave us." It was also voted that "this town highly disapproves the vending or use of any India Tea." A tea committee of eleven persons was appointed to warn the people not to sell or use India teas, and it was voted that all that refused to discontinue the sale of the article, being warned by the committee, "should have their names posted at the Town-House and at the several churches, that the town may know their enemies." From that date on, the good citizens of Marblehead defied English authority over them, even ignoring the "British Regulars" stationed at the Neck to intimidate them into submission.

The Revolutionary War followed, and was successfully fought to a finish by the American patriots. For the part borne by Marblehead and other Essex county towns, readers are referred to the military chapters.

After the end of the Revolution, General Washington, having been elected President, made a tour through New England. He visited Marblehead, en route, and greatly inspired the men of the place in their task of rebuilding what had been ruthlessly destroyed by the British in that eight-year conflict on both coast and land. Poverty was in evidence on every hand. At the time of Washington's visit there were four hundred and fifty-nine widows and eight hundred and sixty-five orphans in the town, nearly all having to be supported by the taxpayers. With the severe winter of 1790, the sufferings were indeed fearful, and history says many perished from hunger and exposure.

During 1790 the Methodist Episcopal church was organized at the home of Mr. Prentiss, on Mugford street. This church had only seven charter members, but grew rapidly in the few succeeding years. The Marblehead Academy had now come to be a successful educational institution and was legally incorporated by the legislature in 1792. (See Educational chapter.)

Memorial services were held in Marblehead over the death of President Washington, who died at Mt. Vernon in December, 1799, aged sixty-seven. The day of his funeral was befittingly observed here by the slow tolling of church bells, the firing of minute guns, and general suspension of all business. In the afternoon the Masonic lodge and school children marched to the new meeting-house, and heard the oration by Joseph Story, then a law student.

At the close of the second war with the Mother country, people in the vicinity of Marblehead set to work to retrieve their lost fortunes. There were only forty-eight fishing vessels, eighteen of which were less than fifty tons burden. March 4, 1817, James Monroe of Virginia was made vice-president, and in a few weeks visited this section of New England. He was met at the town's entrance by a military company, and escorted to the "Lee Mansion," and there feasted.

A Sabbath school was organized here in the spring of 1818; this was a union affair, but eleven years later each church had its own separate Sunday school, as today.

In 1824, Marquis Lafayette, on his tour of the United States, visited Marblehead, accompanied by his son, George Washington Lafayette. They too, were received at the "Lee Mansion" above referred to. The well-to-do of the town helped supply silverware for the occasion.

The Columbian Society of Marblehead was organized in 1824 and existed many years as an important factor in the community.

It was also during 1824 that the streets were first named. Prior to that time, all had been known as "lanes"—"Ferry Lane," "Wharf Lane," etc.

Certain it is that Marblehead introduced the manufacture of misses' and children's shoes as early as 1825. Before that period, only heavy boots and shoes for the use of the fishermen were ever produced in Marblehead, with some custom-made shoes for ladies and gentlemen. The first to engage in the real manufacture of shoes here was Ebenezer Martin, who made his own shoes and sold them at retail. His workshop was in the "Old Reynolds" house, on Darling street. He used to carry his goods about in a cart, driving from one town to another, until his stock had been disposed of. Other very early manufacturers in shoes were Thomas Wooldredge, Benjamin Hawkes, Thomas Garney, and Adoniram C. Orne.

Marblehead's first local newspaper was issued March 13, 1830, as the "Marblehead Register," published by Henry Blaney for three years,

when it died for lack of sufficient support. Several others were launched, but these also went down, to rise no more. However, in 1871 the "Marblehead Messenger" was established, and has remained in the ranks of Essex county newspapers. (See Press Chapter.)

The improvements in 1831 included the incorporation of the Grand Bank, with a capital of $100,000, with Joseph Green as its president.

August 30 that year the town petitioned Congress for the erection of a lighthouse at Marblehead on Point Neck. It was duly built, its first keeper being Ezekiel Darling. The same year the Marblehead Seaman's Charitable Society was formed. It was the second humane society ever formed in the town—the Marblehead Female Humane Society, established in 1816, being the only one to organize prior to this. In 1835 the Fire Department was thoroughly organized. The town then owned four fire engines, and there were two privately owned engines.

In 1836 the Universalist Society was organized, at first a private room serving as the worshiping place. The year following, the members erected a commodious church building on Pleasant and Watson streets.

Under President Andrew Jackson's administration, when the surplus money in the United States Treasury was apportioned among the various States, that part belonging to Marblehead town amounted to over $13,000. The town voted this sum to purchase a town farm and erected an alms-house with the money.

Stage coach communication between Marblehead and Boston was first opened in 1768; between Salem and Marblehead it was deferred for twenty-six years. The first railway opened through from Boston was in 1838, through to Salem, when the stage was discontinued, but stages ran four times daily from the depot in Salem to Marblehead. In 1839, however, the branch line of railroad to Marblehead finally discontinued the stage coach for all time.

The year 1839 was the most propitious in the Marblehead fisheries. It was during that year that ninety-eight vessels, only three under fifty tons burden, were employed in the business.

In 1846, September 19, another calamity took place, to fill all Marblehead with sorrow and grief. This was the destruction of ten vessels belonging to the town, off the coast of Newfoundland, when sixty men and boys were lost at sea. Forty-three of the unfortunate seamen were heads of families, and left more than one hundred and fifty children. Calamity succeeded calamity, and finally caused the enterprise, so long kept up, to go down, practically speaking.

In these modern days of strikes and unrest, it may be of interest to note briefly the account of the first strike among the shoe workers in the town. It was at the end of the year 1859 and the beginning of 1860 workers in the shops in Lynn and Marblehead were getting ready for an upheaval over low wages then being allowed them, or so contended at least. In the spring of 1860, nearly every man, woman and child em-

ployed in the two places—Lynn and Marblehead—participated in the movement, and there was a general determination not to submit to reduction in wages. March 2, the strikers made a grand demonstration, being escorted by the fire company and three military companies. Five days later, Lynn had a similar demonstration, when the strikers from Marblehead went over and paraded with the forces at Lynn. March 29, the women paraded about the streets of the town, one woman acting as drummer. After six weeks of bickering, the strikers went back to work, at terms dictated by the shop owners.

In 1839, when the railroad to Salem was opened, manufacturing interests here began to look up. Joseph R. Bassett, then in the prime of his young manhood, established a shoe business. He also aided many other enterprises in Marblehead. For years a twine-factory or "rope-walk," had existed in the field fronting Washington street, while a short distance in the rear was a tan-yard and cordage factory. Bassett bought the field, opened up School street, and otherwise changed the streets of the ancient town of Marblehead. During 1847 Bassett built a steam saw-mill, in which wooden shoe-boxes were made in large quantities. Other enterprising men were operating there along with Mr. Bassett, but he alone is cited as an illustration of what one good business factor may accomplish in a town when so minded and capable.

It should be remembered that the shoes produced in Marblehead during the period just mentioned were all made outside of regular factories. With the introduction of labor-saving machinery, however, the sewing-machine division especially, a new system was ushered in. The McKey sewing machine, for leather work, was introduced in 1859, and that was the beginning of a new era in boot and shoe industries throughout the country.

During the year 1874, the selectmen were formally notified that Mr. Benjamin Abbot, who died in Boston, September, 1872, had bequeathed the residue of his property, after the payment of several other bequests, to the town of Marblehead. The property consisted of United States bonds and other securities, amounting to $103,000. The will of the donor ended as follows: "I have made this provision for the town of Marblehead, because it was my birthplace. And it is my desire that a building shall be erected for the benefit of the inhabitants of said town, but I do not intend to limit the use of the legacy to that purpose or to impose conditions which would prevent the use of it for such other general objects as the citizens of said town may determine upon in their discretion. I desire that my name shall always be attached to said fund." The legacy was accepted by the town, and it was decided to erect a building to be known as "Abbot Hall." In 1877 this building, a brick structure, stone-trimmed, was completed at a cost of $75,000. It is situated on the Common, or Training Field Hill, one of the most elevated points in town, and visible for miles at sea.

The citizens of Marblehead are of that true and patriotic type who always remember their country's flag and its defenders. In the matter of erecting appropriate monuments and memorial markers, there is no more active town in the county. In this connection, only two monuments will be mentioned. One is that at the junction of Pleasant and Essex streets, unveiled May 17, 1876, a hundred years after the capture of the English ship "Hope," by Commander James Mugford of the American vessel "Franklin." This monument is eighteen feet tall, and about five feet square at its base, and is a Hollowell granite shaft. The other monument, standing at the confluence of Mugford and Elm streets, was unveiled July 4, 1876, in memory of the fallen heroes from the town of Marblehead in the Revolution, War of 1812, and Civil War of 1861-65. This is also a fine Hollowell granite shaft, thirty-four feet high, and eight feet square at its base. It contains appropriate tablets.

President Chester A. Arthur paid Marblehead a visit and was received at Abbot Hall in 1882, by nearly two thousand people there assembled. Appropriate memorial services were held in the town over the death of President James A. Garfield, in the autumn of 1881, at which time Vice-President Arthur was sworn in as his successor.

Coming down to the 8th of August, 1885, memorial services were held in honor of Ex-President U. S. Grant, in Abbot Hall. Captain K. V. Martin presided, and an appropriate oration was delivered by Captain Benjamin Pitman. Civil War veterans in the vicinity were out to pay their last respects to the "Silent Soldier", who had suffered so many weary months.

Whatever else may be said of several memorial services over deceased Presidents, as carried out at Marblehead, perhaps none ever affected the people in general as did those for the loved and lamented Abraham Lincoln, who was assassinated in April, 1865. On the day of Mr. Lincoln's funeral in Springfield, Illinois, many of the shoe factories were closed and appropriately draped in emblems of mourning. The church bells were tolled, and services held at the Baptist church, where an address was delivered by Rev. George W. Patch.

The history of Marblehead, up to this point, has treated of its early settlement, its business enterprises, its people, its churches, customs of its people, the population and other features. As a fishing port, this town flourished many decades, and finally went down. Factories then came in, and had their turn at employing the laboring element. The greater portion of all these elements of business, however, have gone out of commission, and Marblehead has come to be more of a summer resort, or place for the well-to-do to retire and enjoy life by the great sea shore, whose eternal waves change not in their restless motion, however men may change in thought, action and deed, with the ebb and flow of the ocean's tide.

Marblehead was visited in 1877, in the month of June, by a very

destructive fire, which destroyed scores of buildings, both business and residence property. Again in December, 1888, the fire fiend set out in all his fury to destroy the town, which had scarcely been rebuilt since its first great fire in 1877. Of the first fire a former county history has this to say:

The most extensive conflagration ever known in the annals of the town took place on the morning of June 25, 1877. At about half past one o'clock, a barn in the rear of the three-story building known as the "Marblehead Hotel", situated on Pleasant street, in the midst of the largest and finest buildings of which the town could boast, was discovered to be on fire. Before assistance could be summoned, the fire had communicated to the hotel, and when the firemen arrived on the scene the building was in flames. Every effort was made to stop the progress of the destructive element, but without avail. The General Glover Engine House, situated directly over the Brick Pond reservoir, was soon in flames, cutting off the supply of water from that source. The fire was now beyond the control of the firemen, and, in spite of their almost superhuman efforts to stop it, spread from building to building with lightning-like rapidity. In a few moments a large shoe manufactory, known as Pope's Block, was on fire, the flames spreading to a barn owned by E. V. Bartlett & Co., from thence to a shoe factory owned and occupied by that firm. The fire now defied all efforts at control. Leaping around the corner of School street, the conflagration extended all the way from Rechabite Building to a shoe factory owned by Nathaniel Glover, thence to a large block owned by Wormsted & Woodfin, and soon the shoe manufactory of William Stevens, a stable owned by Thomas T. Paine and fifteen other buildings, mostly dwelling houses, comprising every building of Sewall street, from the corner of School street to Spring street, were in flames. Extending along the north side of Pleasant street, the fire consumed a building belonging to T. T. Paine; a small dwelling owned by William Humphrey, the beautiful depot erected a few years previously, said at that time to the finest on the line of the Eastern Railroad; a barn and a dwelling house owned by Benjamin G. Hathaway; a boarding house by Henry F. Pitman; a large shoe manufactory owned by Jonathan Brown, the dwelling of William C. Lefavour, and a barn belonging to the estate of the late Doctor H. H. F. Whittemore. On the south side of Pleasant street, every building, save one, was consumed, from a house belonging to the estate of Mrs. Leonora Chapman, nearly opposite the place where the fire originated, to the Mugford Monument, at the junction of Essex and Spring streets. These included a large block owned by Joshua O. Lefavour, a house owned by John H. Brown and occupied by G. W. Forsyth as a boarding house; a large four story building called "Allerton Block"; a shoe factory owned by M. J. Doak, and several dwelling houses. On the southern end of School street, every building was destroyed, including the large building owned by Henry O. Symonds; the frame and material for a new engine house being constructed; a stable of Enoch A. Perkins, the South Congregational Church; a dwelling owned by Edward Glover, and several smaller structures. On Essex street, every building was destroyed including a large shoe factory, belonging to the estate of John H. Wilkins; a small shop used by a marble worker and several dwellings. On Spring street two shoe factories owned by William C. Lefavour and four dwelling houses were destroyed; the only building left standing was the Sewall schoolhouse. On Bassett street, two dwellings together with a barn belonging to Henry F. Pitman, were destroyed, and several other buildings were seriously damaged.

At one time every church in town was on fire, except the Baptist and Roman Catholic. Then it was that strong men trembled, fearing that the town would be destroyed. But their desperation only nerved them to greater efforts, and at length, reinforced by assistance from Salem, Lynn, and other cities, the firemen were suc-

cessful and conquered the fire. But what a scene of devastation met the eye when the morning sun broke forth. Where but a few hours before had been large factories and comfortable homes—monuments of the enterprise and industry of the people—were only stone walls and tottering chimneys. The entire business portion of the town had disappeared in a single night. Seventy-six buildings, with all their contents, representing over a half million dollars' worth of property, had been consumed, only four of the large shoe manufactories were left standing in the town, while ninety families were made homeless, and fifteen hundred men and women were thrown out of employment.

This in brief is the story of the fire of 1877 in Marblehead. Then came the great fire of Christmastide, 1888. This was well written up in the local newspaper, to whose columns the writer of this chapter is indebted for material facts for the following account of it:

At the rear of the large furniture warerooms of D. B. H. Power & Company's plant on Pleasant street, a tongue of fire shot upwards. There was a sound of cracking flames. A terrific explosion was heard as far as Salem; also was heard at Lynn—a deep-mouthed, hollow subterraneous sound. In an instant, nearly everyone in town was on foot, and starting for the street—another explosion was heard from the same quarter, rocking a building from end to end. The plate glass was smashed to small pieces, while flames leaped half way across the street. There was a shout and bystanders ran for their lives. The fire steamer had hardly left the engine house before it was apparent to half the town that another great fire had begun. People looked into one another's faces, panic-stricken, and asked themselves how it was to end.

Streams of water were hardly in action before the Rechabite building was afire; the flames crossed the street, and were already running up the front of the large shoe factory of F. W. and I. M. Munroe. At the same time, the fire reached the vacant building of W. J. Goldthwaite by the Philip Trasher candy factory. Steamer "William Henry Lee" took the position on School street and worked well for twenty minutes, then broke down. Meantime, word was telephoned to Salem, Lynn and Peabody, and just then the shrill whistle rang out a warning cry. The flames spread in all their fury. The fire went down through School street like a heated whirlwind, taking the big brick engine house, Symonds building, Thomas Knowland's residence, etc. The row of buildings beyond the depot went down in rapid succession. Consternation was visible in every countenance, as the work of destruction sped on; no words can describe the scene. People were running about with loads of packages of household goods, laden wagons were racing to and from the fire, some drawn by men. Furniture, wearing apparel, etc., were to be seen scattered all about the streets. People were anxiously enquiring about missing friends, or asking what they should do to keep the wolf from their door in the oncoming winter days (this was Christmas). Women and children in tears were clinging to one another, sorrowfully and frantically. The whole town was lighted up with a strange, unearthly glare, while volumes of smoke and myriads of sparks shot upward toward the heavens. This fire lighted up the whole country around, and was plainly seen from Boston. Horse cars, hacks and private rigs came into town all day and night. Salem, Swampscott, Peabody and Lynn all offered and gave great aid. "When the pale moonlight died away into the rosy hues of the mild December morning, a terrible spectacle met the eyes of the unfortunate people of Marblehead; where but yesterday had been comfortable homes and busy factories was nothing but blackened embers, broken walls and melancholy ruins."

With thousands of dollars expended in Christmas tokens, merry-making was on the minds of both old and young, but all was suddenly

changed to sorrow. This fire was even more disastrous than that of 1877. Not so many buildings, possibly, were destroyed, but a larger financial loss was sustained in the 1888 fire. The "Messenger" remarked on that occasion: "Thank God, things are no worse. We have the Harris factory left, as well as Boynton's, Hooper's, Withum's, Osborne's and Lyon's." These two great fires were just eleven and one half years apart, to a day.

The amounts here noted were the fire losses, and no account has been taken or amount deducted on account of insurance that may have been later collected on such gross losses. The William J. Goldthwait building, near the Brick Pond reservoir, $2,000; groups of buildings belonging to D. B. H. Power Co., $9,000; Rechabite Hall, owned by the Samaritan Tent of Rechabites, $10,000; this was occupied by a boot and shoe store belonging to Benjamin H. Blaney, the loss was $2,500; Miss Kate Collins, millinery, $1,000; Walter R. Arrington, painter, $3,500, and the American Express company; Richard W. Reed's house, $2,500; residence of Mrs. Daniel Braughton, $4,000; dwelling of the Foss estate, $2,500; Stephen C. Church residence, $3,000; factory and residence owned by S. C. Church, $1,000; the building owned by T. W. Paine, the Paine's Express, Laster's Protective Union building and the John Q. J. Frost dining room, $2,900; also the box factory of Cressman & Metcalf, $7,500; two shoe factories by F. W. and I. M. Munroe, $100,000. The Lefavour's block full of tenants all met with heavy losses. The Rialto, owned by N. A. Lindsey, $5,000; Peach Bros.' shoe factory, $16,000; William Stevens, Jr., shoe factory, $10,000; H. O. Symonds' building, $3,500; W. C. Gregary building, and contents, $14,000; the brick engine house, $7,000; Thomas G. Stacey's residence, $2,500; shoe factory of Thomas Appleton, $3,500; another shoe factory by William J. Goldthwait, $15,000; the B. E. Cole shoe factory, $75,000; dwelling houses of William C. Lefavour, together with contents, $40,000. There were many smaller buildings not here listed. It may be said that to this day the effects of that great fire are felt in the town of Marblehead.

Today the commercial interests of Marblehead are almost entirely confined to the summer resort incomes. The shoe business was greatly crippled many years ago by the great fire, and within a few years the shoe factories that were left have been generally closed on account of labor disputes, and are in that condition today, outside of a few small concerns. There are three excellent banking houses (see Banking). The usual number of secret and semi-secret orders are here found.

The United States Custom House for the district of Massachusetts, is located at No. 61 Pleasant street. There are a number of places where antiques of almost every conceivable kind can be purchased—not less than seven such places are open in the summer months. Boating, apartment houses and boarding places, are very numerous in the town.

The Directory of 1920 for Marblehead, gave the shoe factories as follows: Chadwick Shoe Company, Finch Brothers, H. Humphrey & Sons, Edward P. Martin, Paine Shoe Company, Parker Shoe Company, Rice & Hutchins, Schribman Shoe Company, John G. Stevens and Wright Brothers. A glue manufactory is conducted by James Sullivan & Son. The only newspaper in the town is the "Messenger" (see Press Chapter). Boat builders in 1920 were William H. Chamberlain, James E. Graves and George C. Pinkham.

A Congregational church was organized in 1684, Rev. Cheever being ordained its regular pastor. He had, however, been preaching here sixteen years. Communicants had increased to fifty-four, and they were in the habit of worshiping in Salem for baptisms and sacraments. July 16, 1684, was kept as a sacred fete, observing the blessing of God on the undertaking, the exercises being conducted by Rev. Mr. Hall, of Beverly. The ordination of Mr. Cheever took place August 13 in the presence of the deputy Governor, five of the assistants, twenty elders and a large concourse of people.

In 1714, Rev. Cheever having become very old and quite infirm, his church voted to settle a younger minister with him as an assistant. The one chosen was John Barnard of Boston, although Edward Holyoke was also an applicant for the position, and lost by only a small majority in the town's vote. This caused trouble, and the church was split asunder, following which the town granted permission to form another church of the disaffected members. A charter was finally obtained of the General Court. The contest was a bitter one between the two factions. April, 1716, the new meeting-house having been erected, the "Second Congregational Church of Marblehead" was organized, and Mr. Holyoke was ordained as its pastor. To show the conditions that obtained in the town when Rev. Barnard came, the writer takes the liberty of extracting from that minister's autobiography as follows:

> When I first came (1714) there were two companies of poor, smoke-dried, rude, ill-clothed men, trained to no military discipline but that of "Whipping the Snake" as it was called. There was not so much as one proper carpenter, nor mason, nor tailor, nor butcher in the town, nor any market worth naming; but they had their houses built by country-workmen, and their clothes made out of town, and supplied themselves with beef and pork from Boston, which drained the town of its money. And what above all, I would remark, there was not so much as one foreign trading vessel belonging to the town, nor for several years after I came into it. Though no town had greater advantages in their hands. The people contented themselves to be slaves that digged in the mines, and left the merchants of Boston, Salem and Europe, to carry away the gains, by which means the town was always dismally poor in circumstances, involved in debt to the merchants more than they were worth; nor could I find twenty families in it that upon the best examination could stand upon their own legs; and they were generally as rude swearing, drunken and fighting a crew as they were poor.

Through the influence of Minister Barnard, the people were finally induced to send their own fish to market, Joseph Sweet being the first

to thus engage in the enterprise. He fitted out a small schooner, which he sent to the Barbadoes with a cargo of fish to European markets. Thus it will be observed that the early ministry had more on hand in the line of duty than to prepare sermons and deliver the same. They had the good of their membership, in a material way at heart, and gave most excellent advice to them.

Time went on and changes came to the town and its several churches. In May, 1737, Rev. Edward Holyoke, pastor of the Second Congregational church, was chosen by the board of overseers of Harvard College to fill the vacancy caused by the death of President Wadsworth.

In 1858 a number of the communicants in the First Congregational Church withdrew from that body, and organized the "Third Congregational Church." The new society erected a church building in 1860, known as the "South Church." It stood at the corner of Essex and School streets. In the sweeping conflagration of 1877, this church was destroyed, after which the church membership concluded to unite with the First Church again.

During 1714 an Episcopal church was organized and a house of worship erected. The funds were raised by thirty-three gentlemen, who pledged themselves in sums ranging from a few shillings to more, making in all one hundred and seventy-five pounds. The remainder was to be made up by several captains of vessels in sums varying from two to twelve pounds each. The frame and all articles for construction were brought from England. The first rector was Rev. William Shaw, who arrived and took charge of the parish July 20, 1715. Thus was established Marblehead's first Episcopal church.

The following is an account given of the Second Congregational Church (Unitarian) by Roads, in his "History and Traditions of Marblehead":

> The organization of this church was occasioned by a controversy in the First Congregational Church concerning the settlement of a colleague to the Rev. Samuel Cheever. In December, 1714, the First Church voted to call the Rev. John Barnard, and on the 5th of February, 1715, one hundred and twenty-four persons, who favored the settlement of the Rev. Edward Holyoke, withdrew from the society, and pledged themselves in an agreement to contribute the necessary funds for the erection of a "New Meeting House." The edifice was completed during the latter part of the year, and on the 25th of April, 1716, the Second Congregational Church was organized, with twenty-seven members.
>
> Mr. Holyoke resigned in1737 to become president of Harvard College. Between 1737 and 1811 the following were pastors: Rev. Simon Bradstreet, Rev. Isaac Story, Rev. Hezekiah May. The succeeding pastor was the Rev. John Bartlett, who was ordained May 22, 1811. The pastorate of Mr. Bartlett was probably the most eventful of any in the entire history of this church. During the great religious excitement caused by the Channing movement in the Congregational churches of New England, Mr. Bartlett announced his belief in the doctrines of Unitarianism as preached by Mr. Channing and his followers. A majority of the communicants supported Mr. Bartlett in his teachings, and the church has ever since been Unitarian. During the year 1832, the old house of worship was torn down and a new church edifice was erected.

Mr. Bartlett died in 1849, and the same year the Rev. Benjamin Huntoon became pastor. He was followed by Rev. Samuel R. Calthrop, Rev. James Henry Wiggin, Rev. William B. Buxton, Rev. Benjamin H. Bailey, Rev. James K. Applebee, Rev. John B. Barnhill, Rev Henry C. McDougall, Rev. Albert Walkley, Rev. Alfred D. K. Shurtleff.

In October, 1910, the church building burned to the ground, and the next year the present church edifice was built. Services are being held every Sunday, with the pulpit occupied by a regular supply, and the Sunday school and parish activities are in charge of a paid parish worker. There are now ninety-six members in this church, and a Sunday school attendance of sixty-five; Mrs. Merrill E. Shaw is superintendent.

The first church building was erected in 1715, was torn down and in 1832, another was built and that burned in 1910; the third church was erected in 1911, is of wooden material and is valued at $32,000, and the land connected therewith is valued at $2,600.

The following on the Church Star-of-the-Sea is furnished by Rev. M. J. Sullivan:

Though there had been Roman Catholics in Marblehead for many years, there was no attempt to have a celebration of the mass in town until the year 1851. During that year the Reverend Thomas Shehan, pastor of St. James Church, Salem, visited the town and celebrated mass in the house of Mr. Dennis Donovan, on the corner of Prospect and Commercial streets, now owned by John E. Martin. Father Shehan afterwards came to Marblehead twice a year to administer Holy Communion, services being held alternately at the houses of Mr. Donovan and that of Mr. John Mahoney on Glover Square.

With the exceptions of these visits of Father Shehan there were no services of the Roman Catholic Church in Marblehead until the year 1854, when Anderson's Hall on Pleasant street, on the site of the present Evans Park, was engaged and mass was celebrated there on the second and third Sundays of every month. In 1857 services were held at the town hall, and during that year about $1,000 was raised by subscription for the erection of a church edifice. A lot of land on Prospect street, at the junction of Prospect and Rowland streets, was bought as a site for the building. In 1859 a small church was built and services were regularly maintained under the superintendence of Father Shehan, who officiated himself or procured the services of other priests.

In November, 1865, Father Shehan gave notice that he was appointed to the church of another parish in Boston and requested the people to make an effort before he left them to pay any indebtedness which they owed on the Church building, which they did. From that time the parish was in charge of the Rev. Charles Rainoni, who was living at that time in Danvers and who celebrated a mass in Danvers and one at Marblehead on each Sunday thereafter, and in 1872 he took up his permanent residence at Marblehead and became the first regular resident parish priest in charge of the church. In 1872 a new church edifice was erected on Gregory street, where now stands the present

rectory, and on the 8th day of July of the same year it was burned to the ground before there had been any religious ceremonies performed therein. The old church continued to be used and the services were held there as usual. A short time after the destruction of the new church, the present house and rectory was erected on the same site for the use of the pastor.

Father Rainoni died in January, 1875, and was succeeded by the Rev. Daniel S. Healey. During the pastorate of Father Healey the old church was entirely remodelled and built to its present lines. In Jancalf, who remained as pastor until the spring of 1886, when he was succeeded by the Rev. William Shinnick. Father Shinnick remained pastor up to the time of his death in 1912. During his pastorate he had as curates Rev. John J. Griffin, now pastor at Winthrop, Rev. uary, 1882, Father Healey was succeeded by the Rev. Theodore A. Met-Thomas McManus, Rev. John I. Lane, and Rev. Henry K Lyons, now at St. Augustine's, South Boston.

Father Shinnick was succeeded by the Rev. James Gilday, who took charge of the parish in the early summer of 1912, and remained in charge up to his death on May 29, 1920. During his pastorate, Rev. John F. Monaghan and Rev. Ambrose D. Walter, the present curate, served as curates. The present pastor, the Rev. Michael J. Sullivan, was appointed in 1921.

The old part of the present cemetery was acquired in 1868, and consisted of about three acres. The adjoining land, consisting of about seven and one-half acres, was acquired for additional cemetery purposes during the pastorate of Father Gilday. The present total membership, men, women and children, of this Catholic church is one thousand. The Parochial school has a membership of about two hundred and fifty. The value of the church edifice and property is $50,000.

---

## CHAPTER X.

## THE TOWN OF SALISBURY.

Among the earliest settlements in New England, Salisbury ranks among the first. Eighteen years after the landing of the Pilgrim Fathers, in 1638, and ten years after the settlement at Salem, what was styled a "plantation" was established on the north side of the Merrimac. A strip of territory extended from the Merrimac river north a distance of almost ten miles, including also within its scope what is now the town of Seabrook, a portion of Hampton and Kingston, all three in New Hampshire, the Haverhill line on its western border and its eastern boundary the Atlantic Ocean. The first settlement was very near the ocean, where the original land grants were made, and later become known as the East

Parish. At first this collection of settlers named their community Colchester, but the General Court in 1640 changed the name to Seabury, by which name it was first incorporated as a town. A goodly number of the immigrants in this town came from Seabury, England, among this number Rev. William Worcester. Historian Coffin says "The early settlers of this town were men fitted by education to adorn any civil station."

Early in its history Salisbury was made a shire-town, and continued from 1643 to 1649. But it was also the court-town of another county than Essex—that of Norfolk, comprising the New Hampshire plantations of Exeter, Hampton, Portsmouth and Dover, then (1643) united to Massachusetts, and the town lost its court. A court house was erected in East Parish. In the jail at this point many a culprit was fastened in the stocks as a punishment. Much difficulty was experienced in fixing the State line between New Hampshire and Massachusetts, and the legislatures of the two states, as well as the courts, had much to do to bring about the present boundary lines. South Hampton and Seabrook were finally given to New Hampshire, after which peace was declared.

The original grantees of Merrimac plantation were Simeon Bradstreet, Daniel Dennison, Christopher Batt, Samuel Windley, Samuel Dudley and John Sanders. In the spring of 1639, the records show that the grantors agreed that each settler should have two pieces of meadow land and a certain amount of planting land, according to wealth of the grantees—four acres to every one hundred pounds. This was evidently a movement to get wealthy men to occupy the lands, more than from any benevolent spirit. The grant to the Rev. William Worcester shows that he possessed no small amount of wealth, and he was given a large number of acres of meadow and upland in different localities. Some of these "great planting plots" were west of the Powow river.

The first burying ground was laid out on the Beach road, and it is mentioned as joining the house lot of Richard Wells, a wealthy settler.

Without entering into details of dates and localities, the names of some of the early comers to this place here follow: Thomas Macy, Thomas Bradbury, John Hodges, Willis Barnes, William Hook, George Carr.

At a meeting held February 5, 1640, by the freemen, a large number of grants were made and the price of labor during the summer months was fixed at twenty pence per day, while carpenters were to have two pence per day more than common laborers. (Note the change in sentiment in the year of Our Lord, 1921, on the labor question). The price of lumber was also fixed by the town, as was the price for milk at three and a half pence per quart for new milk, and one pence for skimmed milk, ale measure, while gilt-edged butter brought six pence a pound.

Among the most active and valuable settlers of the town was Major Robert Pike, who not many years since was immortalized by the "Quaker Poet" Whittier; he was born in Longford, in 1616, and came to Newbury

with his father, John Pike, who died in 1654. He was admitted as a freeman in 1637, was representative in 1648, and for six years more; he was a lieutenant and finally a major; in 1689 he became a member of the committee of safety, and one of the first council under William and Mary in 1692. He died in 1796, aged ninety-two years. To him was attributed the action of defending the "Quakers" who were sentenced to be whipped by a justice in Dover on the way to Salisbury, and declared that no such act would be inflicted on them in the town, hence the poem by J. G. Whittier just mentioned.

In 1655 the first bridge was thrown across the Merrimac river—a floating bridge, or pontoon, between Carr's Island and Newbury, at the old ferry. It was only five feet wide, rails on either side, was two hundred and seventy feet long, and was built by George Carr, who then owned the island. For his services he was liberally rewarded with land grants within the town, mostly for footmen and small stock.

Passing over many scores of years, let the reader now think of being in this part of New England one, two or three generations ago. It is found that the ancestor of the great Daniel Webster came from here. His mother was born in Salisbury, her maiden name being Abigail Eastman, who married Colonel Ebenezer Webster, father of Daniel Webster, noted among the statesmen of America. The famous Cushing family descended from Rev. Caleb Cushing, so well known to readers of history. He was born in Salisbury. Nathaniel Currier held a commission under King George III; but when the Revolutionary struggle commenced, he threw up his commission and joined the patriots; elected to "Congress at Watertown" in 1773, he died in 1775.

Salisbury is another one of the towns of Essex county that has been content to remain a quiet, home-like place, where order and good manners have ever marked its history, but where no great commercial enterprises have ever been fostrd and developed. In 1900 the United States census returns gave the population as 1,558; in 1910 the same authority placed it at 1,658, and in 1920 at 1,701.

Structures something after the manner of block-houses were erected at three points in this township—in Congress street, another near Rabbit Farm, and the third in Seabrook road. This was in 1675, and they were built, for a protection against the Indians, who had shown signs of an uprising.

In 1773 Salisbury was visited by an exceptional wind storm, equal in many ways to modern tornadoes or cyclones. A minister at the time made this entry in his journal: "This tempest was preceded by heavy rain and great darkness. It first appeared on the Merrimac river and rolled up the water on the banks, and threatened to swallow up the affraighted inhabitants. From the river, inland, it covered three quarters of a mile, and extended to the sea. The tempest continued for three minutes, and wrecked and destroyed one hundred buildings in the town. Yet through the great and marvelous mercy of God, who ruleth in the

storm, no life was lost or bone broken on the Salisbury side, where the most damage was done."

March 13, 1774, the town voted that "Thanks be given to the respectable body of merchants in Boston and other towns for their truly generous non-importation agreement, and for their prudent and vigorous endeavors in this critical time to save their country. That we will not ourselves drink any foreign teas and endeavor (sickness excepted), that none shall be drinked in our houses, till the duty is taken off, and the Revinu acts are repealed." In 1772 the freeholders and other inhabitants voted and unanimously resolved:

First—That the most essential rights of mankind are—Life, Liberty and Property.

Second—That the only end and design of government is to secure these.

Third—That gross invasions have been made upon these our rights, by the British administration, till our grievances and oppressions are become intolerable.

Fourth—That our representative be instructed to use all his influence in the House, that all proper measures may be taken to obtain a redress of these grievances.

Fifth—That if this fails of effect, this town is ready to unite with the other towns in this government, and with all the other British government in this Continent, in all lawful measures which, on joint consultation, shall be judged necessary to save our sinking State and to obtain redress of our grievances.

Sixth—That a copy of these resolutions be transmitted by the town clerk to the gentlemen of the Committee of Communication and Correspondence in Boston, thanking them for their prudent and timely care of the public good."

No accurate account of the postoffice at Salisbury is now obtainable. The following have served as postmasters since about 1885: P. H. Moulton, eleven years in office; D. W. Bennett, three months; F. A. Chapin, A. B. Coffin, about ten years in office; P. H. Moulton, three years. The present postmaster at Newburyport is postmaster over the Salisbury station, as the postoffice in Salisbury is now known. This has existed twelve years. D. H. Moulton is now clerk in the Salisbury station. There is one rural delivery out from Salisbury, the same being about twenty-five miles long.

The safe of this office has been blown up three times in the last thirty years, but no large loss was ever sustained. In 1914 the office was entered at night time by unknown parties, who when observed by the chief of police attempted to escape, and in order to do so shot and killed the police officer, a Mr. Heath, who left a family.

But little business is transacted in Salisbury, as it is too near the larger place of Newburyport across the river. However, there are a few stores, the postoffice sub-station, and a few shops, one shoe factory employing about thirty-five workmen, and another like factory being constructed. Dr. J. S. Spaulding is the practicing physician.

In the spring of 1919 a plan was put forth (and in September the same year completed) for the erection of a handsome tablet attached

to a huge boulder, on the town common, bearing the names of the seventy-eight soldiers who went from Salisbury and vicinity to serve in the late World War.

The present (1921) town officers (elective) are as follows: Town Clerk, William H. Greenleaf (has served twenty-seven years already); Selectmen: George E. Dow (chairman), Everett R. George, Harold F. Congdon; Assessors: John A. Stevens, William H. Evans, Robert B. Currier; Park Commissioners: Arlington H. Chapin, Edmund M. Bartlett, Edward W. Pike. The Constable, Treasurer and Tax Collector is Samuel W. Weare; Chief of Police, Fred H. Tapin; Highway Surveyor, E. Earle Sawyer; School Physician, Dr. Jacob F. Spaulding; Forest Warden, Charles J. Penniman; Trustees (Hilton Fund): John F. Smith and Frank A. Sanborn.

December 31, 1920, the books of this town show the following exhibits: Credits—Cash in treasurer's hands, $10,866.05; Uncollectable taxes, year 1917, $9.30; year, 1918, $100.00; year, 1919, $976.70; year, 1920, $33,103.56; Due from Commonwealth on Main street, $2,694.06; Due from County Essex, Main street, $2,694.07; Due from State Treasurer, $744.00; Due from account income tax, $426.00; Due from account temporary aid, $114.84; Due from Essex county dog tax, $132.86; Total, $51,861.44.

Debits—Twenty-seven new school building notes, $27,000.00; Four Central avenue loans, $8,000.00; Two Salisbury Square notes, $4,000.00; Anticipation notes, $35,000.00; Total, $74,000.00.

The Public Library is in a flourishing condition. Last year almost twelve thousand books were given out to readers. The dog tax of $400 is used in part for library support.

The Salisbury Parish Church was in advance of the town's incorporation by a year or two, and was founded in 1639. It now has a membership of two hundred, and a Sunday school of two hundred and thirty-two pupils. Mrs. F. L. Pettengill is present superintendent.

This was the eighteenth church organized in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. Its first pastor was Rev. William Worcester, who settled at the date of organization as pastor and remained till death in 1662. The second pastor was John Wheelwright, who died in 1679. The third minister was Rev. James Alling, a native of Boston settled in 1687, died in 1696. The fourth pastor was Rev. Caleb Cushing, who died in 1752, aged eighty years. The fifth pastor was Rev. Edmund Noyes, settled in 1751, died 1809, aged eighty-one years. More recent pastors have been as follows: J. F. Spalding, 1885-86; L. P. Cansey, 1887-89; J. D. Folsom, 1890-93; William R. Webster, 1894-96; C. W. Taylor, 1897-1900; George A. McLucas, 1901-04; Irving C. Brown, 1905-07; W. J. Atkinson, 1908-09; Roscoe Sanderson, 1910-14; H. F. Quimby, 1915-16; Wm. O. W.Reynolds, commissioned Chaplain First Lieut. U. S. A. October, 1917; O. S. Steele from December 1917 to April, 1918; Roger Albright came next

and the present pastor took charge of the church in October, 1920, and —Rev. Elmer F. Newell.

A wooden chapel was erected in 1885, costing about $1,600. John T. Brown of Newburyport gave the town a fine church clock in 1887. There is a neat chapel at Salisbury Beach, with Dr. J. F. Spalding as its pastor. The subjoined account of this old church has been furnished for this history by a resident of Salisbury, and it contains many interesting facts concerning the old organization, hence is here inserted:

The old Parish Church was organized about 1639, and about 1796 Jesse Lee and others so appealed to the people they desired Methodist Episcopal pastors, but opposition came to the new faith as it was called. From 1798 to 1833 the Methodists had a church here as part of a Circuit. Then there were many Baptists and it was thought in 1833 best to unite into one Parish, and a new church was erected in 1834, the same building still in use is a good model of the old time New England church edifice.

As long as the Methodists outnumber and outvote at the yearly meetings, which has been and is still the case, the ministers of course will be of the Methodist faith. Hence it is found that since 1833, all ministers have been sent here by the Methodist Conferences. They have suited the general community and hence are still retained. It is said to be the only Parish in the world the pastor of which is a Methodist minister.

In 1833 a great revival was had in this church under Dr. Roscoe Sanderson and Rev. John Beradhead. The present pastor, Rev. Newell, with others, has organized a local Y. M. C. A., and has about a hundred men and boys enrolled. Physical instruction, education, social and religious activities are being greatly appreciated in the community. With the exception of Hope Chapel at the beach, this is the only church in Salisbury of the Protestant faith; two hundred and fifty-seven families are in one way or another connected with this church."

What was known as West Parish of Salisbury, or Rocky Hill church, was built in 1716. Rev. Joseph Parsons was the first settled minister; he was installed in 1718. At the age of sixty-nine years, Rev. Parsons died in 1739, after having served as minister in Salisbury for twenty-one years. Almost three hundred members were added to his church in his time.

Following the last-named pastor, came Rev. Samuel Webster, who was ordained 1741; he served almost fifty-five years, and died at Salisbury, in 1796, aged seventy-eight years. The third pastor was Rev. Andrew Beattie, ordained 1797, died 1801. His remains are resting alongside his fellow minister, Joseph Parsons, in Rocky Hill church-yard. The fourth pastor was Rev. William Balch, who had been a chaplain in the United States army. He was ordained in 1802 and dismissed in 1816. Politics then were running at fever heat, and he took sides with one faction in his congregation. As a result, he was finally allowed to "step down and out." The council that tried him preserved the following memento, the contents of which might have had somewhat to do with his dismissal:

The West Parish in Salisbury, to David M. Leavitt, Dr.: To brandy and rum as per bill, $9.20; four turkeys, $4.60; eight chickens, $2.00; five pounds loaf sugar 37c

per pound, $1.85; sixteen pounds bacon, $2.00; thirty-eight pounds beef, $2.82; three pounds currants, 40c; six pounds brown sugar and half pound tea, $2.00; butter, cheese, horse-keeping, potatoes, lodgings, etc., $10.00; time attending on Council, $10.00; journey to Exeter and Hampton Falls, $1.50; total, $46.37.

Various ministers supplied this pulpit between 1816 and 1835 for a longer or shorter period. During that time many "signed off," as it was termed under the Religious Freedom Act, and worshiped with other churches. Among others of note who filled the pulpit in Salisbury in those times may be recalled Rev. Thomas C. Upham, later a professor in Bowdoin College. Revs. Turner, Bowles, Harris and Thomas Rich came next in line. Rev. Benjamin Sawyer of the old Sandy Hill Amesbury Church then came, serving in 1835-36 and 1837. After 1841 he gave his entire time to this church until his death in 1871, when he had reached the age of eighty-eight years. All the churches found in the town in the late eighties, as well perhaps at this date, consisting of five denominations, may be classed as having their origin in the old Rocky Hill Parish.

The Christian Baptist Society was the first to separate from the old original church in Salisbury. This commenced about 1827, when a few members withdrew and held services in the loft over Oliver Osgood's warehouse, on the wharf, at the Point. Very soon a meeting-house had to be erected, as the membership increased very rapidly. Another society was formed in 1835, composed of people from Rocky Hill and others from Sandy Hill churches of Amesbury. They also built a church on the western extremity of the Point, and there formed a Congregational church Society, with the name of the Union Evangelical Society of Amesbury and Salisbury. This grew to become a strong church and society, whose influence was sent forth far and near.

The First Baptist Church was formed as a branch of the Brentwood Baptist Church, in September, 1821. Ministers came now and then (no regular pastors) for a number of years, but they were depised by some and treated even with less tolerance than were the Quakers. The first recognized preacher was Rev. Samuel Shepard, born in East Parish. The first to move in the matter of organizing this church were Moses Chase, Barnard Currier and David Currier. Some of these Baptist ministers, as well as the laymen, were fearless in their conduct and actions toward other denominations. Sometimes they were arrested, but they simply opened the Bible in the face of the constables, and that usually settled it.

---

## CHAPTER XI.

## TOWN OF WENHAM

Wenham of today has a poulation of 1,090, according to the recent United States census returns. The first mention in record of Wenham

was in 1637. The second mention of the place was in 1638, when it is shown that Hugh Peters preached a sermon "on a small conical hill, between the highway and the lake." He preached from the text found in John 3—23: "Enon, near Salim, for there was much water there." This settlement was then called Enon, and Peters was the minister at Salem, a part of which town was then Wenham. The reader will observe the spelling, as it appears in the Scriptures.

The Killam family have long carried the tradition that the first to locate in what is now Wenham were three immigrants, who were an early Fiske settler and Austin Killam and Richard Goldsmith. The settlement must have been effected about 1635. It was at first known as Salem Village as well as Enon. It was incorporated as a distinct town, May 10, 1643, in recorded words as follows: "It is ordered that Enon shalbee called Wennam. Wennam is granted to bee a towne, & hath liberty to send a deputy." It is supposed that the name was taken, in part, from two parishes near Ipswich, England, possibly from which locality many of the first settlers hailed.

Sidney Perley's history of this town says: "The people of Wenham obtained a deed of their territory from the Indians, bearing date December 10, 1700. The aborigines who claimed a title to the soil were Samuel English, Joseph English and John Umpee, heirs of Masconnomet, the late Sagamore of Agawam. The Indians were paid for their interest in the lands, four pounds and sixteen shillings. The early settlers were forbidden to sell arms and ammunition to the savages."

The following is a list of the first to make settlement in Wenham, between 1635 and 1700, as shown by records now in existence. The years of these settlements will be omitted, as it is sufficient to know that certain families arrived here before 1700: John Abby, Mr. Auditor, John Badger, John Barr, Joseph Batchelder, John Beaman, John Berry, John Bette, Goodman Bibber, Richard Brabrook, Edmund Bridges, John Browne, George Byam, John Carpenter, John Clarke, Richard Coy, Robert Cue, John Dennis, Richard Dodge, E. Dubldee, John Edward, Rice Edwards, James Ellis, Daniel Epps, John Fairfield, John Fiske, Phineas Fiske, Wm. Fiske, Samuel Foster, Joseph Fowler, James Friend, Wm. Geare, Joseph Gerrish, Richard Goldsmith, Charles Gott, Robt. Gowen, Joseph Hacker, Henry Haggett, Robert Hawes, Jo Herrick, Robert Hibbert, Thomas Hobbs, Mr. Hubbard, Wm. Hulitt, Isaac Hull, John Hunkin, Richard Hutton, Alice Jones, William Jones, Edward Kemp, Austin Killam, Richard Kimball, John Knowlton, Wm. Knowlton, Mordecai Larcom, John Leach, Robert Mackcliffin, A. Maxey, James Moulton, Antipas Newman, Abner Ordway, Edmund Patch, John Perkins, Richard Pettingell, John Poland, Samuel Porter, Esdras Reade, Nicholas Rich, Theophilus Rix, John Rogers, Wm. Sawyer, John Severett, John Shepley, Samuel Smith, John Soolard, Mr. Sparrowhawk, Edward Spaulding, Robert Symonds, Peter Tompson, Francis Urselton, Edward Waldron,

Joshua Wallice, Jeremiah Watts, Phillip Welsh, Thomas White, Edward Whittington, Wm. Williams, Ezekiel Woodward, Christopher Young.

The remains of the dead of the first few settlers were buried in the same cemetery grounds that have been in use so many decades down to the present time. The records first mention this cemetery in 1681, and tradition, quite well founded, states that a gravestone was discovered in this burial place, bearing the date of 1642. This old cemetery was probably a portion of the Rev. Mr. Fiske's farm. It has been several times enlarged. John Severett appears of record to have been the first grave-digger. Rev. David O. Allen in his will left $500 as a fund to help keep up the grounds. Another burying place was in the western part of the town—the Fairfield burying ground. Dodge's Row Cemetery in Beverly, a part of which lies within Wenham, has been in use for over one hundred and eighty years.

A postoffice was established in Wenham in 1809, with Thomas Barnes as postmaster. He was appointed April 21, 1809. The subjoined is a list of all postmasters serving in the town from 1812 to 1921: Uzziel Dodge, appointed in 1812; John Thorn Dodge, 1818; Ezra Lummus, 1830; Adoniram J. Dodge, 1837; John A. Putnam, 1846; Benjamin C. Putnam, 1857; Nathaniel S. Gould, 1862; Elisha P. Chapman, 1866; William W. Fowler, 1867; Henry Hobbs, 1870; John W. Curtis, 1878; Andrew D. Trowt, 1880; Miss Kate M. Kavanagh, 1885; Fred P. Stanton, 1886; Andrew D. Trowt, April, 1897; William P. Porter, September 10, 1912.

The office has been kept in many buildings during its more than a century of existence. First opened in the old tavern, the former residence of Rev. Joseph Gerrish, it remained there until 1830, when it was moved to the brick tavern of Postmaster Lummus; in 1837 Postmaster Dodge removed it to his wagon shop, where it continued until 1846, when John A. Putnam, postmaster, removed it to his store. When Mr. Hobbs took the office in 1870, for the first six months it was kept in his harness-shop, then moved to Union block, where it remained for many years; since 1912 it has been located in the Porter building. This is a fourth class postoffice and it transacted a business in 1920 of $1,426.52.

The old turnpike from Boston to Ipswich ran through Wenham, and this necessitated several taverns, or inns, for the traveling public. In 1833 the steam cars began to run through the center of the town over the Eastern railroad, as then called. It was finished as far east as Ipswich that year. The Newburyport and Wakefield branch of the Boston & Maine railroad passes across the western end of the town, but there is no station point there for this road. The last-named railway was constructed in 1853. May 26, 1886, street cars were first run from Gloucester, crossing in Beverly to the Soldiers' Monument in Wenham. The same season the line was extended to various points, including the Camp Grounds at Asbury Grove. Ever since then steam and street car

thoroughfares have kept the town in touch with the busy nearby towns and cities.

The records show that forty years ago Wenham had a population of 871; in the same report, it is shown that the town then had 293 rateable polls, and 270 legal voters, only ten of whom were naturalized. The number of dwellings then was one hundred and ninety, all frame save one, which was constructed of brick. In 1900 Wenham had a population of only 847; in 1910 it was 1,010 and the 1920 U. S. census gave it 1,090.

Wenham was first incorporated in 1643, about eight years after the pioneer settlement was effected. Various buildings were occupied by the town officials until 1854, when a Town Hall was erected, under supervision of the following persons: John Porter, C. A. Killam, A. Dodge, F. Hadley, J. Cook, Benjamin C. Putnam and Moses Mildram. Its size was thirty-five by fifty feet, two stories high, with a basement. Here were rooms of all descriptions—school rooms, selectmen's rooms and various ante-rooms, as well as accommodations for the fire department, which had been established about 1820. A fire company was organized in 1835 with twenty-five members. Another company was organized in 1849. A new engine was purchased and named "Enon, No. 1"; this cost $900. The new fire company had about forty-five members, and was presented with a silken banner and a silver trumpet by the ladies of the town. Another company was formed in March, 1887, with Otis C. Brewer as foreman. From the date last named to the present, the town has had its modern appliances and equipments for fighting fire, with also its well-trained volunteer fire company.

The present town officers, all elective, are as follows: Moderator, Horace E. Durgin; Town Clerk, Roscoe B. Batchelder; Selectmen. Charles H. McQueeny (chairman), Arthur D. Prince; Clerk, Chester S. Cook; Assessors, Arthur D. Prince, Ralph M. Smith and G. W. Patch; Town Treasurer, Horace E. Durgin; Tax Collector, James E. Kavanaugh; Auditor, W. Arthur Trowt; School Committee, Herbert W. Porter, Carl I. Aylward, Frank H. Tarr; Constables, J. L. Cole, T. J. Luxton, Frank A. Corning; Trustees of Public Library, Benjamin H. Conant, Ruth H. Prince, Adeline P. Cole, Frank H. Tarr, Harvey R. Williams and Anna M. Davis.

The business interests of the town and the size of the place were more or less influenced by the large emigration from town in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. It will be recalled that many of the persons who formerly resided in Wenham left for Maine and became pioneers in that State. Vermont and New Hampshire also drew many from these parts. Again the Great West claimed its colony from Wenham and nearby vicinity. It was in 1787 that the first settlement was effected in Ohio, at Marietta, on the Ohio river. This colony was headed by Dr. Manasseh Cutler, of Hamilton, who made the entire journey to Ohio—then a part of the Northwest Territory—in an ark-like wagon,

covered with black canvas. But Wenham had enough left to build up a town of some importance, even after it had aided in building up some of the sister States in New England and helped to populate the far, illimitable and ever-changing West, at least by its Ohio colony. It is not intended in this chapter to go far into details concerning the business and various firms of the town, simply to outline some of the more important lines of industry and trade. We here draw from Sidney Perley's "History of Wenham" for a few paragraphs in his volume:

The history of its old style taverns, if it could be correctly written, would be delightful to read. From its earliest days the town had its public houses. March 1643-44, William Fiske received authority to keep a tavern from the General Court, as follows: "Willi Fiske is appointed & allowed to keepe an ordinary at Wennam." By the same authority: "Willi Fiske, of Wennam, hath liberty to sell wine." Mr. Fiske died in 1654 and was succeeded by Phineas Fiske, who kept an ordinary at Wenham, and the record shows that he was "allowed to draw wine there for this yeare ensuing." It will be remembered that no one could start a hotel or inn in those days in New England without first getting permit from the authorities. The records are cumbered with such affairs. One notice reads as follows: March 18, 1684, the General Court licensed John Fiske, "a sore wounded soldier of the late Indian War, to keep a public-house of entertainment." In nearly all of these inn permits there was also a permit to sell liquor. Among the jolly landlords of early years in Wenham must be named Ezra Lummus, postmaster, blacksmith and tavern-keeper. He ran a tavern about ten years from 1827 on, in the brick house he built for the purpose. He was a Free Mason, and his sign consisted of his name, "E. Lummus, 1827." There was also added to the sign the picture of a square and compass. Other hotels included the "Green House" at the end of the Commons, by William H. Bryant, which business was wiped out by the fire of April, 1869. The Enon House was opened by its proprietor Stephen Currier in 1886.

Of mills, it may be said that the water power here has never been but a feeble stream with slight fall, hence not sufficient to propel heavy machinery. However, as early as 1653 a mill was built, probably by Goodman Hawes, on the farm later occupied by David Pingree. In 1682, John Dodge had a saw mill. In 1691 there was a saw mill near Lord's Hill, and John Porter and James Friend had liberty to "flow the brook." In 1700 there was another saw mill where John Leach then resided. The first grist mill was that built as early as 1686. In 1713 Josiah Dodge's corn mill was situated near the ford. In 1699, Ensign Porter was granted timber for a small malt mill, to be set on the brook near his house.

The first blacksmith was Abraham Martin, who was granted two acres of land within the town, providing he should set up a shop and remain at least a term of seven years. Other early blacksmiths were Robert Symonds, Josiah Bridges, Daniel Herrick, Pelatiah Brown, Benjamin Young, Ezra Lummus, John J. Senter, George A. Lummus, Uzziel Dodge, Jebez Richards, Daniel Bradbury, 1840 who in 1882 sold to Charles F. Dudley. Since then the several smiths have been well known to this generation and need no special mention in this connection.

At various periods tanning has been an important industry in Wen-

ham. In 1707 the town granted to Daniel MacClaflin sixty square rods of common land, on condition that he engage in the tanning business. In 1708 he had liberty granted him to dam up the brook; and in 1721 the land was given him free from condition. Samuel Gott carried on the tanning business for forty years from 1725, on land later owned by Michael Sullivan. Not many years ago the sink in the land marked the numerous tan-vats he used so long. His was the largest tanning establishment in Essex county. A later tanner was a Mr. Flint, who operated here during the days of the Civil War. In 1884 a kindred business was established by Patch & Gould, makers of morocco; they rebuilt larger in 1886 and added steam power.

The ice business has long been a very extensive industry in Wenham. Charles W. Lander of Salem, purchased of the town the land on which stands the famous hill where Hugh Peters preached his sermon, and leveled it off and there erected large ice houses and connected them by a spur with the Eastern railroad tracks. This business was started in 1843, and in 1850 the plant was sold to Addison Gage & Co., who continued until 1882, and then went out of business. About 25,000 tons of the purest ice to be seen in the world was taken from the lake. Later ice was cut from the Beverly shore of the same lake.

Boots and shoes were made here by different persons and firms for many years. Amos Gould engaged in this business between 1834 and 1875, the work being carried on at his house. Other manufacturers of this line included Edward Perkins, Abraham Patch, John P. Rust, Dr. Nathan A. Jones, Daniel J. Foster, and some others. George W. Peabody made heavy brogans at West Wenham from 1846 to 1862. Later shoe factories were operated by Samuel K. Evans, Albert R. Fiske, John Meldram, James H. Moulton, the last named having quarters in the old Dempsey blacksmith shop, and then in Union block to 1882.

In 1855 it is said that in Wenham 4,200 pairs of boots and 25,000 pairs of shoes were made by forty-six males and twenty females. Gradually the shoe business drifted to Lynn, and other sections of New England. Today the town boasts not of the industry, but is quite content to relate pleasing accounts of the former importance of the shoe business in town. The surrounding country is a most excellent farming section, and this is now carried on after the most modern and intensive methods. Every item is made to count and yield a reasonable profit.

Besides those mentioned in various sections of this work as having been men of celebrity in some one or more role in life's conflict, the names of the following must not be overlooked in the annals of Essex county: Hon. Timothy Pickering was long a resident of Wenham; was very fond of agriculture, and was the first president of the Essex County Agricultural Society. After a life of more than four score and four years, having been a general in the Revolution, judge of the Court of

Common Pleas, and of the Maritime Court, Postmaster General of the United States, Secretary of War, Secretary of State of the United States, Member of Congress and United States Senator, he died in Salem, 1829. Rev. Moses Fiske (1642-1708) graduated at Harvard College, was a clergyman at Quincy, Massachusetts. Hon. William Fairfield (1662-1742), was speaker in 1741, in the House of Representatives for Massachusetts. Rev. Phineas Fiske (1682-1749) graduated at Yale College, was a tutor in that college, and pastor of a church at Haddam, Connecticut. He also was an eminent physician. Dr. Tyler Porter (1735-1811) was a physician, and patriot in the Revolution. Dr. Josiah Fairfield (1735-1811) was a physician in Pepperell Borough, Maine. Hon. Daniel Killam 1751-1841), a graduate of Harvard College, and a member of both the upper and lower houses of the legislature and of the Governor's council; and an apothecary in Newburyport. The Rev. John Kimball (1761-1824), a graduate of Harvard College, later a talented clergyman in New Hampshire. Dr. Benjamin Jones Porter (1763-1847), a surgeon in the Revolutionary War; physician in Scarboro', Westbrook and Portland, Maine; fellow and Treasurer of Bowdoin College; and a Councillor and State Senator. Henry Porter (1809-1851) was the inventor of Porter's burning fluid and a nurse lamp. Rev. Francis Elliott Cleaves (1816-1883) was a Baptist clergyman at East Sanbornton, New Hampshire, and other New England places. Rev. John Henry Dodge (1828-1863) graduated at Amherst College in 1856 and from Andover Theological Seminary, 1859; was a missionary to West Africa. Edward Kimball (1835) graduated at Amherst College, was president of the Boston Board of Trade, and a merchant in Boston. Rev. Isaac Francis Porter (1839-) graduated at Madison University, and became a Unitarian clergyman at Chicopee, Massachusetts. Arthur Kemble, M. D. (1838), graduate at Boston Medical College, was assistant surgeon in the Civil War on the ship "Gemsbok," and later practiced in Salem. Dr. John Franklin Robinson (1863), graduate at the Harvard Medical school; he became a surgeon at Manchester, New Hampshire.

It is generally believed that for the first few years the religious element in and near Wenham worshiped at Salem. Mention has been made of the sermon delivered on the hill at Wenham Lake by Hugh Peters, successor to Rev. Roger Williams, pastor of the First Church in Salem. It may be added that Rev. Peters returned to England about 1642, became a famous preacher, was made a chaplain by Cromwell; became "mixed up," as we say today, in politics, and was supposed to have been guilty of assisting in the death of Charles I., and was publicly beheaded therefor on Tower Hill, after the Restoration.

The church record made by Rev. John Higginson, Salem minister, says: "There are divers passages set down about three villages to go out of ye brethren of Salem church, considered of in several church meetings, for several years together, the first of which was 1639, Aug-

ust 24th. Mr. Downing and some others were with him for the village of Danvers; other brethren for a village at ye pond (Wenham); and others for one at Jeffrey's Creek (Manchester)."

It is certain that in 1641 a small church building was erected and Rev. John Fiske, who had assisted Hugh Peters at Salem, settled about that date in Wenham. In 1650 a bell was added to this church. A church was duly organized and Rev. Fiske ordained minister, October, 1644. Things went well until 1655, when the pastor and many of his flock removed to Chelmsford, where he became pastor. Being both minister and a physician, he was greatly missed in Wenham. He was always referred to by early settlers and writers as a man of great character and wonderfully good as a neighbor and citizen. Being a nonconformist, he had to come to America from England in disguise, bringing with him servants, husbandry and carpenter tools sufficient to support his family for three years, including their provisions.

Succeeding Rev. Fiske in the First Church was Rev. Antipas Newman; a new meeting-house was built in 1663. It stood in the square near the present Soldiers' Monument. He remained pastor until his death in 1672 and was followed as minister by Rev. Joseph Gerrish. In 1688 a new meeting-house was built on the site of the old one. Rev. Gerrish served for forty-six years and was gathered to his fathers, dying of apoplexy.

The fourth minister here was Rev. Robert Ward, of Charlestown, who served until called by death ten years later. The fifth pastor was Rev. John Warren, ordained 1733; a graduate of Harvard College. He aided in the famous revivals held in 1740; he died, aged forty-four years, in 1749. A church building had been started before his death, to take the place of the older one. The records show that at this "church raising" the town authorities appointed a committee to look well to the apportionments made by the Town, as follows: Six gallons of rum, eight pounds of sugar, two barrels of cider, two barrels of beer, one hundred pounds of bread, one hundred weight of legs of pork, and forty pounds of cheese. The committee was instructed to see that it should "do in the prudentist way thay can for the end aforesaid."

The next minister was Rev. Joseph Swain, ordained October, 1750; a graduate of Harvard College, he served in the French and Indian war as chaplain and died in 1792, aged seventy years. His pastorate lasted forty-two years. The seventh minister was Rev. Adoniram Judson, of Malden; a graduate of Yale College; resigned in 1799, leaving on account of the smallness of his salary. He became a Baptist in religious faith, and it was his son who became the first Missionary to Burmah. Rev. Rufus Anderson was the next minister; he came in 1804 and remained until 1814, when he died. The ninth pastor was Rev. John Smith, of Salem, New Hampshire, installed 1817. He was finally made a Doctor of Divinity by Dartmouth. He died in 1831. Ebenezer Peck

Sperry was Rev. Smith's successor. He was born in New Haven, Connecticut, 1785. He resigned as pastor here in 1819, and died in Ohio, where he preached many years. In his term as pastor was formed America's first Sunday school, it is said by church history.

The eleventh pastor of this church was Rev. Daniel Mansfield, who was ordained in 1837; he was born in Lynnfield; graduated at Amherst College and Andover Theological Seminary. A new church was built under his administration; also a parsonage. He died, greatly lamented, in 1847, aged thirty-nine years. The church erected a handsome monument over his grave. Rev. Jeremiah Taylor, D. D., succeeded Rev. Mansfield as pastor; in 1856 he resigned and moved to another part of New England. The thirteenth minister was Rev. John Smith Sewall, D. D., who remained eight years and in 1867 was dismissed, to take a position in Bowdoin College. The next pastor was Rev. William R. Joyslin, who only preached one year, and was followed by Rev. Will Converse Wood, who served six years. He was a writer of ability and the author of "Five Problems of State and Religion." Next came Rev. Samuel W. Clarke, who was pastor one year, and was dismissed. He was followed by Rev. Alexander C. Childs in 1880, and he in turn by Rev. John C. Mitchell in 1884, who later was asked to resign on account of his liberal teachings. In September, 1887, Rev. George Masters Woodwell was ordained pastor, and since then the pastors have been as follows: Revs. Arthur N. Ward appointed October 3, 1891; Morris H. Turk, May 1, 1898; Walter S. Eaton, July, 1904; Frederick M. Cutler, May 1, 1912; Timothy Currier Craig, January 1, 1918, and still (1921) pastor. This church now has a total membership of eighty-one and a Sunday school of an average of ninety-nine, under the superintendency of Deacon Albert A. Tracy.

The Baptist Church of Wenham was organized in Beverly in 1801, and the Wenham Baptists worshiped there for twenty-five years. In 1826 there was a great Baptist revival in Wenham. This increased the membership, and a meeting-house was erected, costing $2,000, while a bell was added to the tower. The church was organized March 23, 1831 with twenty-five members, all coming from the Baptist church at Beverly. The first minister was Rev. Charles Miller, a native of Scotland. He was succeeded by Rev. Henry Archibald, who continued pastor until 1837. Next came Rev. Joel Kenney, who was dismissed in 1840. The church was without a minister for about one year, when Rev. George W. Patch was made pastor, but he remained only two years. Then came Rev. Josiah Keely, a native of England. He was pastor for nine years and he died during the Civil war. Rev. Isaac Woodbury was the next pastor, and he was followed by Rev. Thomas Wormsley, ordained 1856. On the night of November 6, 1859, the church edifice was burned, but friends of the congregation built a new one the next year. Rev. Wormsley's successor was Rev. Abner D. Gorham, who commenced

January 1st, 1863, and was still pastor after a full quarter of a century in 1887. Since then the pastors have included these: Revs. F. W. Klein, 1892-95; J. W. Illsley, 1895-97; T. Clarkson Russell, 1897-1902; E. Laurens Hamilton, 1903-04; Frank Parker, 1904-19; Rial Benjamin, 1919 to date.

The present membership is eighty-two, and there is a Sunday school with about fifty pupils. The present church was erected in 1860 at a cost of $4,000; present value of the building is $10,000.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

## TOWN OF MANCHESTER.

It is known that the territory now called Essex county, when the white race first set foot on these shores, was occupied by the Agawams, a tribe of the Algonquins. These people were described by Gosnold, who it is believed touched Cape Ann in 1602, as "a people tall of stature, broad and grym visaged; their eye brows painted white."

There is evidence that the Aborigines of this part of New England had been greatly diminished in numbers just before the date of the landing of the Europeans. It seems from the records there had been a three year plague which swept over this part of the East and took away a greater part of the Indian people. Just what the nature of this disease was is not known, but certain it is that tens of thousands were swept from the section now known as New England. Men, also women and children, were taken, so it has been said by Hutchinson, in such vast numbers that from a fighting force of thirty thousand red men warriors there were only three hundred men left. The proud spirit of the red man was also broken by this fearful calamity. The Sagamore or chief here was named Masconnomet, who had for his chief camping grounds lands where Ipswich stands today. This Indian chief was not unfriendly to the whites, and as a result there were no bloody battles between the two races in this locality as there were in other parts of New England. As has been well said by one writer in recent years: "No colonists were waylaid and shot in ambush; no glare of burning dwellings, no savage war-whoop, terrified the infant settlement. The new comers planted and builded, went to church in safety, as well as to mill."

These lands were possessed peaceably or by the payment of a small sum of money given the Indians. Final payment for the lands was not made however until 1700, when the town paid the grandsons of old Masconnomet three pounds nineteen shillings for their right and title to the entire township. The "Memorial History of Boston" states that it was not until a half century after the occupation of Boston peninsula that the citizens troubled themselves to obtain a deed from the grandson of Chickataubut. This was in 1708.

Manchester is one of the lesser towns of Essex county; its length on the coast is about four and one-half miles, and its width about two and three-quarters miles, containing about five thousand acres of land. Its soil is rocky and its surface very uneven, especially so at the coast. Without any high hills, its appearance is indeed picturesque, much of the domain being well wooded, with fertile fields here and there interspersed. In many places the green fields and heavily wooded districts approach almost if not quite down to the ocean's edge. The shore line is composed of rugged cliffs and boulders, Eagle Head being one of beauty and prominence. Several small islands such as Kettle, Crow, Graves, Great and Little Ram, and House, lie but a short distance from the shore. Among the natural curiosities may be mentioned "Singing Beach," and "Agassiz Rock," the latter a boulder on the east side of the Essex road, of great dimensions. There is also a much greater boulder in the valley to the north. The "Agassiz Rock" is indeed quite celebrated.

The climate here is quite changeable, but the summer and autumn weather is delightful. Not much farming is carried on, on account of the small tracts of suitable land. The people live largely on such pursuits as cabinet-making and fishing, while the summer population brings in money and spends it freely. There are some small manufacturing plants in this place, but generally speaking the people depend largely on the summer tourists and the industries already named.

In 1836 it was written in the "Essex Memorial," page 162: "Manchester woods are celebrated for producing the magnolia; it is a low tree, with deep green leaves, and is seldom found at any other place in this region; the flowers are white, and possess a delicious fragrance; the scent is so powerful that a small grove of them will perfume the air for miles."

Conant's colony was established at Cape Anne in 1624, but for various reasons was not highly successful and was finally abandoned, save by a few of the more stable and resolute people of the company. This movement resulted in the settlement at Manchester.

In the month of March, 1629, Charles I, "By the grace of God, Kinge of England, Scotland, Fraunce, and Ireland, Defender of the Fayth, etc.," granted a charter to the "Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in Newe-England." This charter granted:

To the Councell established at Plymouth, in the county of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of Newe England in America, and to their successors and Assignes forever, all that parte of America, lyeing and being in Bredth from forty degrees of Northerly Latitude from the Equinoctiall Lyne, to Forty-eight Degrees of the saide Northerly Latitude inclusively, and in Length, of and within all the Breadth of aforesaid, throughout the Main lands from Sea to Sea, together also with all Firme lands, Soyles, Grounds, Havens, Portes, Rivers, Waters, Fishing, Mynes, and Mynerals, as well Royall Mynes of Gould and Silver, as other Mynes and Mynerals, Precious Stones, Quarries, and all and singular other Commodities, Juris diccons, Royalties, Privileges, Franchesies, and Prehemynences, both

within the said Tract of Land upon the Mayne, and also within the Islandes and Seas adjoining.

In April three ships sailed for Massachusetts Bay with supplies and a number of "Planters." The "Talbott," one of the ships, was probably the first that ever entered Massachusetts harbor, dropping anchor here June 27, 1629. Rev. Francis Higginson, one of the ministers sent out by the company to superintend the spiritual affairs of the settlement, wrote in his journal: "June 27, 1629—Saturday evening we had a westerly wind, which brought us, between five and six o'clock, to a fyne and sweet harbor, seven miles from the head of Cape Ann (in this harbor twentie ships may lie and easily ride therein), where there was an island, whither 4 of our men went with a boat, and brought back strawberries, gooseberries, and sweet single roases. Monday 29th as we passed along to Naim Keake it was wonderful to behold so many islands replenished with thick wood and high trees, and many fayere green pastures."

The government by agents residing in England proved unsatisfactory, and the following October the government and patent were transferred to New England, and John Winthrop, the "Founder of Massachusetts," was chosen governor. He sailed in the "Arbella," a vessel of about four hundred tons, and six other ships, with three hundred settlers, for Salem. On June 11, 1630, the "Arbella" seems to have come to anchor nearly opposite Gales Point.

Governor Dudley, writing about a year later than Winthrop's report, sums up the resources of the colonists in these words: "Materials to build, fewell to burn, ground to plant, sees and rivers to ffish in, a pure ayer to breathe in, good water to drinke till wine or beare can be made, which together with the cowes, hogges, and goats, brought hither allready may suffice for food, for as for foule and venison, they are danties here as well as in England." Nearly all the settlers were "freemen," and as such had rights in the common lands. Later these were styled "Proprietors." About 1692 an act was passed for the "Regulating of Townships, Choice of Township Officers, and Setting forth their Powers." It appears of record, however, that the Proprietors of Manchester did not organize under this Act until August 26, 1718. From that date on, their records appeared in what was known as the "Commissioner's Records."

The first settlers landed, it is supposed by many writers, at Kettle Cove in either 1626 or 1627. The original house may have been erected on the estate of T. Jefferson Coolidge, Esq., by John Kettle. The earliest frame house was built by William Allen, no doubt. The early records show land descriptions as follows—homely but plain. "A black burtch, pitch-pine, grate hemlock, white oke, Litle black oke tree, a stump of fower mapls, wortle bush, bunch of oalders, a white pritty big pine tree, and standing upon a grate high Rock which is almost to the Admiration of them that doe behold it."

As early as 1640, when there were but sixty-three people in all residing at "Jeffrys Creeke" the people "jointly and humbly" petitioned the court to grant them power to erect a village." This was granted, and in 1645 the name of the place was changed to Manchester, the exact date being June 18.

The following list of names of places within the borders of the town was compiled in 1836 by Dr. Leach. Most of them date back to the earliest times:

Hills—Image, Moses, Eagle, Bennett's, Millstone, Jacks, Shingle Place, Town, Flagstaff, Great Powder House, Waterman's Rocks's.

Plains—Briery or Bushie Poplar.

Meadows—Fresh Meadow, Cranberry, Beaver Dam, Cold Spring.

Swamps—Cedar, Millett's.

Marshes—Norman's, Bishop's, Cheever's, Barberry.

Creeks—Jeffreys, Chubbs, Days.

Coves—Kettle, Black, Lobster, Pebble, Pitts.

Points—Pickworth, Gale's, Smith's, Goldsmith's, Masters, Glasses, Bishop's, Cheever's, Tuck's.

Necks—Great or Old, Norton's.

Brooks—Wolf Trap, Clay, Cheever's, Saw Mill, Foster's Mill.

Beaches—Neck, Graves, Gray's, Black Cove, Lobster Cove.

Islands—Great and Little Crow, Kettle, Egg, Ram Great and Little, Howes, Chubbs, Friends or Island Wharf.

Springs—Cold, North Yarmouth, Kettle Cove, Newport, Plains, Row, Great Neck, Smith's Farm, Town Landing, Great Pasture, Norton's Neck, Nicholas Commons, Graves.

Landings—Smith's, Marsters, Black Cove, Church Lane, Town Landing, Kettle Cove, Whitehead Landing.

Bridges—Jabez, near Bears House, Jones below Captain Knight's, Town Bridge, Centre built 1828, Chubbs, built 1835.

The records of the town show no formal Act of Incorporation. This, however, was not an uncommon thing in the early history of the commonwealth. Before 1655 "the Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay" made grants to land companies and individuals for towns and plantations, usually annexing certain conditions to their grants; such as "that certain number of settlers or families should within a stated time build and settle upon the same; or that the gospel should be regularly preached, or a church gathered upon the granted premises". (See "History of Groton, Mass.")

The first book of Town Records, from 1645 to 1658, is unfortunately lost; this gap cannot be supplied in any manner by writers of today. The town meeting of February 25, 1657, is the first of which we have any record. The town meeting has usually been looked upon as a unit of the democratic form of governmnet. Away back in the fifth century, in the tiny district of Sleswick, appears to have originated this custom. Here in New England the town meeting has been of much value as an educational force. The annual meeting was always opened by prayer; in later decades this custom was not in use, but in 1895, by a vote of the

annual meeting at the suggestion of Moderator Henry T. Bingham, the practice was again taken up in Manchester. These town meetings were the town itself acting in both legislative and executive capacity. The "select men" were simply the town's agents. The town meeting shares with the church and the common school the honor of shaping the affairs in civic and social life in New England. Of all the town meetings, perhaps the "March Meeting" has long been known as the most important in shaping the destinies of the town and county government. So far, no form of government has shown itself superior to the town government system now known in New England.

In volume VII. of the "New England Genealogical Register" appeared in 1853 the following:

We whose names are subscribed belonging to the church and the towne of Salem (being straitened in our accommodations, soe we are not ably comfortably to subsist, having advised and taken counsell about our present state and condition, it being Judged full and free liberty being granted us to remove, and noe place being soe convenient, for our easye remove all as Jefferyes Creeke lying soe neare us and most of us having some small quantity of ground allotted to us there already) doe therefore Jointly and Humbly request the Honbl Court to give us power to erect a village there, and to allow us Such Inlargement thereabouts as it is not granted to anyother plantation thus leaving our request to your wisdomes Consideration, With our Prayers for a blessing from heaven on your psons and proceedings we rest.

Your Humble Petitioners: William Walton, John Black, William Allen, Samuel Archard, George Norton, William Dixy, John Sibley, ames Standish, John Ffriend, John Pickwith, John Gally, Ben. Parmenter, Robert Allen, Jon Norman, Edmond Grover, Pascoe Ffoote, William Bennett.

1640—14th—3mo.

The petition is granted and referred to Mr. John Winthrop and Mr. Symond Bradstreet to settle the bounds.

The place was duly incorporated, and has run well its course until the present date. The elective officers of Manchester town in 1921 were: Selectmen and overseers of the poor: Samuel L. Wheaton, George R. Dean, William W. Hoare; moderator: Raymond C. Allen; town clerk: Lyman W. Floyd; treasurer and collector: Edwin P. Stanley; assessors: Edward S. Knight, Leonard W. Carter, Frank G. Cheever; school committee: Raymond C. Allen, Percy A. Wheaton, Robert T. Glendenning; tree warden, Everett O. Smithers: constables: Louis O. Lations, Leonard Andrews and Joseph P. Leary; pound keeper, Alfred Whalen; chairman cemetery trustees, Duncan T. Beaton; chairman of library committee, Robert T. Glendenning; park commissioner, Jeffrey S. Reed, chairman.

The Manchester Library sprang from the old Manchester Lyceum Association, established in 1830. It became a library of the public in 1871, since which time it has grown rapidly and is duly appreciated by all good, intelligent citizens. The present beautiful Library and Grand Army of the Republic Post Hall was donated largely by Hon. Thomas J.

Coolidge at a cost of many thousand dollars, and is still the pride of the town. It was dedicated October 13, 1887.

From all that can be learned, Manchester was settled largely by people from the eastern shires of England, from which locality came so many stalwart, noble pioneers to the New World. These were largely from the middle walks of life—such as the Winslows, Carvers, the Brewsters, the Winthrops and Endicotts, and came mostly from the liberty-loving weavers of Flanders who had fled to England a century before on account of persecutions. They were of the best stock of English Puritanism. It may be added in passing, that they were not like Governor Berkley of Virginia, who thanked God "that there are no free schools, nor printing." They were men who prized and were willing to pay well for all educational institutions.

"The Third Parliament of Charles, King of England, hardly dissolved itself when 'conclusions' for the establishment of a great colony on the other side of the Atlantic were circulating among gentry and traders, and descriptions of the new country of Massachusetts were talked over in every Puritan home," says Historian Green. In 1637 King Charles sought by royal proclamation to prevent men of wealth from emigrating to New England, but if this had any effect at all, it was in fact to send or allow to come to Massachusetts a more common and far more desirable class of Englishmen. Naturally, at first the development was quite slow, but in time the heavy forests began to disappear and farming and shipbuilding commenced to take high rank in the New World, by reason of those who invaded this part of New England. Churches and schools kept pace with all else in this colony, hence the great educational and religious schools of today.

Public morals were from the first of a high standard here. The slave trade was prohibited; even cruelty to animals was considered a civil offense. No person could be sent to prison for debt, save in cases of fraud. One writer who was far from being a friend of this form of government, declared "profane swearing, drunkenness, and beggars are but rare in the compass of this patent." There were rigid laws against lying, as well as against stealing; meeting with corrupt company; tippling in ordinaries; and against disobedience to parents, and the court even tried to regulate courtship. The law was felt and usually obeyed to almost the letter. These people who first settled on the "wild New England shores" cared little for patents of nobility or ecclesiastical preferment. They were simply nobles by the right of an earlier creation and priests by the imposition of a mightier hand. They looked with contempt upon the claims of long descent. Perhaps there is no finer eulogy on the Pilgrim Fathers than was given by the Boston "Daily Advertiser" in its issue of December 22, 1894, which reads thus:

> They believed that the invisible things of this world are greater than the things that are seen. They believed that Eternity is of more consequence than Time. They

believed that he who should lose his own soul to gain the whole world would make a bad bargain. They believed that plain living is none too dear a price to pay for the privilege of high thinking. They believed that he to whom any precious and pregnant truth has been revealed must utter it, or else stand condemned of high treason at the judgment bar of the King of Heaven. They believed that a true church may be instituted by the voluntary act of a body of Christian disciples organizing themselves into a communion, and a lawful state by the consent and cooperation of self-governing citizens. They believed these things practically as well as theoretically. They had the courage of their convictions. They dared to do. They feared nothing else as much as sin, and they counted no other shame so great as recreancy to their loftiest ideals. They said what they meant and meant what they said. For truth, as they saw it, for duty as it was revealed to them, they braved the stormy, lonely ocean, and endured poverty and exile, hunger, cold and death, a savage wilderness peopled by savage men. In thus believing, they set an unsurpassed example of faith. In thus choosing the better part, as between flesh and spirit, they made a like choice easier for all coming generations of the children of men in all the earth.

Here as well as in the settlement of any new country, it is next to impossible to describe what the pioneer had to endure in order to get his start in a wild wilderness and forest land hard by the great Atlantic. The winters were severe, the soil was rock-bound, and all means of communication with the outside world were hedged up as yet by forest and bridgeless streams. True, the needs of the people were quite simple, and at times readily supplied. The woods furnished ample game. The sea gave forth of its stock of fine fishes, and wild fruits and berries were plentiful in season, as was the fine growth of vegetables produced. All household and farm implements were necessarily of the most crude design. Settles stood in the fireplace, box-beds occupied one end of the kitchen, great logs blazed on the irons, a huge crane hung in the spacious chimney; a noon-mark served the purpose of a time piece. Books were not common then; the Bible, the angel of the home, came with every immigrant to these shores and was studied. Learning, however, was little prized, many of the chief men of the town being unable to write their own names, yet no worse than it was in Rhode Island, where five out of the thirteen original settlers had to make their cross or mark in making the contract under which Providence was to be governed.

One of the evidences of civilized life has always been the trail, and later the wagon road. Here the first road is said to have wended its way along the sea-beach as a sort of natural highway. Later on, cart roads were made by removing the stones where not too large, and going around them when of too great proportions. The people usually thought it wise to travel over a high hill rather than go around it, though the distance was usually about the same between given points. Toil did not weary these people, for they had read Bunyan, who pictured the way to the City Celestial as very rough and dangerous, and these people believed what had been written by that noted Christian philosopher; as Whittier said

"Heaven was so vast, and earth so small,
And man was nothing, since God was all."

Not until about 1690 is there any mention of a "slay"; carriages appeared a little earlier. "Chairs," two wheeled vehicles without a top, and chaises, were among the first type of carriages next to the cart and farm wagon. Nearly all general travel was on horseback, by use of a pillion and saddle, until near the close of the seventeenth century; in fact the roads would not permit of any other rig, save in the limits of Boston.

John Knight erected a house about 1690 at the "Cove," and it stood until September, 1890, two hundred years, when it was taken down. This residence was eighteen by twenty-seven feet in size, and was of a solid frame hewed from the native oak so plentiful here then. The first century of settlement but little attention was paid to the heating of houses. The huge fireplaces consumed their forty to seventy cords of excellent wood annually, but for all that, ink and all liquids were hard to keep from freezing. It was no uncommon thing for a minister to have donated to him by his parish as much as "sixty cords of good wood" for the season round. In 1675 the number of population and size and number of residences were in no sense in proportion, for records show that the average family had a membership of nine and two-tenths to the household. In view of the present day theories concerning germs and the hundred and one diseases in which they are supposed to daily be engaged in fierce battle array, it seems hardly possible that such small houses could successfully rear to manhood and womanhood such large families, but such seems to have been the case. Game and salted meats, with rye and Indian bread, with drinks of cider and milk, made up the early diet of these people, who attained a great age as a rule. From them came real empire builders, as history will confirm. The taxes imposed or voted upon themselves were frequently high. These were largely for land that had a certain "rate" assessed against it annually, then came the "support of the Gospill menestery," which was ever present and must be met. Fines were rigidly enforced for "Swyne found without the yoke"; provisions were made for the schoolmaster, for "seaviers of high wayes" and "fence vewers," as well as for seating the "meeting-house."

While no records are extant concerning the loss of men and wealth in the Indian wars in which this county and town took part, yet it is well known that blood left its stain, and that among the "flower of Essex" in Captain Lothrop's company the following Manchester men were slain: Samuel Pickworth, John Allen, Joshua Carter, John Bennett. In the French and Indian war the Essex regiment consisted of thirteen companies of footmen and one of cavalry. Soldiers then received six shillings per week, and were allowed five shillings for "dyet."

More than a half century had passed when the King of England annulled the charter of the colonies in 1685, and sent Sir Edmund Andros

to govern both New England and New York, but he proved too arbitrary to suit the people and they rose in revolution in 1689 and deposed and sent to prison Andros, and reestablished the coloniel form of government. In this, Manchester took her ever loyal part and aided Boston in its uprising. After these changes and after the settlement of Indian affairs, this part of New England began to again grow and prosper.

The first store was opened in the town in the house of John Proctor, of recent years on Sea street. The first tavern was built "for the entertainment of man and beast," on North street. A new church was built in 1691 and the second school house was constructed about that time. A tide-mill was erected as early as 1644, "upon the river near the meeting-house." This was a rough log structure. In 1705 a small mill was built upon the site of the old "Baker Mill", on Brushie plain. About 1700 the "Cove" had come to be the largest precinct in the town.

LIST OF EARLY SETTLERS SHOWING DATE OF SETTLEMENT

1626.
William Allen
Richard Norman,
John Norman,
William Jeffrey.

1629.
John Black.

1636.
Robert Leach,
Samuel Archer,
Sergeant Wolf,
John More,
George Norton,
John Sibley.

1637.
John Pickworth,
John Gally,
William Bennet,
Pasco Foote,
Thomas Chubbs.

1640.
John Friend,
William Walton.
James Standish,
Benjamin Parmiter,
Robert Allen,
Edmond Grover,
Ralph Smith.

1650.
Henry Lee,
William Everton,
—— Graves,
Joseph Pickworth,
Nich Vincent,
John Kettle,
Robert Knight.

1651.
Robert Isabell,
Nathaniel Marsterson,
Richard Norman.

1654.
Thomas Millett.

1660.
Moses Maverick,
Samuel Allen,
John Blackleeche.

1662.
—— Pitts.
John Elithope.

1664.
John Crowell.

1665.
John West.

1666.
Richard Glass,
Rev. John Winborn.

1667.
Thomas Bishop,
Jenkins Williams.

1668.
Oneciphorus Allen.

1670.
William Hooper,
Nich. Woodberry.

1674.
Ambrose Gale,
Commit Marston,
Elodius Raynolds,
John Mason,
James Pittman.

1680.
John Lee, Samuel Lee,
Isaac Whitcher,
John Gardner,
Robert Leach,
John Marston,
Thomas Tewkesbury,
Thomas Ross,
Samuel Allen,
Manassa Marston,
Walter Parmiter,
James Rivers.

1684.
Wiliam Hosham,
John Foster,
Mark Tucker,
John Knowlton,
Emanuel Day,
Elisha Reynolds,
Jo Woodberry,
James Pittman,
Robert Knight, Sr.
Eph. Jones,
John Allen,
Aaron Bennett,
Felix Monroe.

1687.
John Norton,
William Allen,
Thomas Ayhairse,
Eliab Littlefield,
Richard Leatherer,
John Bishop,
Samuel Crowell,
Rev. John Everleth,
Rev. John Emerson,
John Burt,
Jonas Smith.

It has been remarked that "to worship God and catch fish" was what brought many of the first settlers to these immediate shores. The catching and curing fish such as were found plentiful in the great Atlantic at this point, furnished the country with its greatest industry for many years. An excellent market was found for this product in both the West Indies and in the countries of Europe. The fisheries are still a wonderful source of wealth in Massachusetts even down to the present time. For a few decades this industry was not so great, but of recent times it has come to be very large and profitable. In the Fish Commissioner's report of twenty-five years ago for the United States, the following was found, and a similar source would today add much to the magnitude of this industry: "There are nearly 200,000 directly engaged in the United States Fisheries, with a total tonnage of 176,783 tons and an investment of $58,000,000. The United States' annual harvest of the seas amounts to $45,000,000. We have 38,000 deep-sea fishermen, 17,000 of whom hail from Massachusetts. Gloucester alone has a fishing fleet of more than 400 vessels, of 30,000 tons burden, manned by in excess of 6,000 men."

Again, this industry of the seas was always encouraged by the General Court. In 1639 it was ordered that all vessels engaged in such business should not be taxed, and their men should be exempt from military duty. John Adams said: "Cod-fish are to us what wool was to England and tobacco to Virginia, the great staple with which the power of our wealth was based."

As early as 1670, England became quite jealous over our New England fisheries, as will be seen by this: "New England is the most prejudicial plantation to this Kingdom of all American plantations. His Majesty has none so apt for the building of shipping as New England, nor any so qualified for the breeding of seamen, not only by reason of the natural industry of that people, but principally by reason of their cod and mackerel fisheries, and in my poor opinion there is nothing more prejudicial and in prospect more dangerous, than the increase of shipping in colonies and plantations."

England's restrictive policy in the Act of Parliament in 1775, forbidding Americans from taking fish in Canadian waters, along with a few others, hastened on the Revolutionary struggle. A high authority on the War of 1812-14 with England says: "I regard it as strictly true that without fishermen we could hardly have managed a frigate or captured one. From the beginning of that war to its end, the fishermen were in almost every national or private armed ship that carried our flag. It is believed today by those best posted in early-day struggles with the Mother country that it is doubtful whether we would now be a nation had not Colonel Glover with his Essex county fishermen twice saved Washington's army."

The fishing industry was at its best in the early part of the nine-

teenth century. In fact, let it be said that it never fully recovered from the effects of the War of 1812, which drove our shipping from the ocean and left it to decay and rot in creeks and coves. The assessors' books for 1808 show that Captain Ezekiel Leach owned the "Jane", fifty-four tons, and the "Active", ninety-nine tons; Tyler Parsons owned one-third of the "Enterprise", ninety-nine tons; Benjamin and Samuel Foster owned a schooner of sixty tons; Major Henry Story owned the "Three Brothers", seventy-four tons. Ebenezer Tappan owned the sloop "Primrose," twenty-nine tons, and the schooner "Nancy", sixty-eight tons; the last named was the ship run ashore at Mingos Beach and fired by the British in 1813. Captain Abiel Burgess owned and commanded the "Alonzo," of one hundred and thirty tons; he also owned a half-interest in the ship "Hannibal."

From 1825-30 the fishing business greatly declined, and few vessels were built for the trade. In 1835 the fishing and coasting business of the town of Manchester employed about 1,200 tons. In 1836 there were one hundred and fifty men employed in the fisheries, with seven fish yards, and ten houses for storage. In 1845 there were thirteen vessels in the cod and mackerel fisheries, and the value of the catch was placed at $21,000.

The next great industry in which the people of this town engaged was that of cabinet-making. Shipbuilding ceased, shipping rotted down, while the buzz of saws and whirl of rapidly turning wood lathes frightened the sea-gulls from the shore line. The industry of more than two centuries has given way, and now but little of actual importance in the line of fisheries can be found on the shores of this part of Massachusetts.

Before passing from this subject it may be of interest to read the following paragraphs from Lamson's "History of Manchester" (1895):

Among the interesting log books used in those days by fishermen may still be seen that of Captain Benjamin Hilton, with passages as here follows: The names of the vessels mentioned are "Breattany", "Lucy", "Salley", "Louisay", "Patty' "Corr" and "Darbey." The voyages seem to have been in general, remarkably uneventful, "smoothe winds" and "Smal brezes" predominating. The log is methodically kept, noting each hour the knots run, the course, the wind, laititude and longitude, the departure and meridian, with remarks, etc. The pages usually have a running head-line, as "A Log of our intended Passage, by God's assistance on the good schooner "Patty", or "A Journell of vige Continnered att sea." One of the books contains on the fly-leaf the inscriptions: "Benjamin Hilton His Book Bought in Salam In the Year of our Lord 1762, the Price 13 shillens old tenner." "Benjamin Hilton His Book the Lord gave him grace therein to Look and wen the bells Do for him towl the Lord have marcey one his soul. Benjamin Hilton his hand and pean and if the Peen had been better I Wood mended everey Latter."

The following will give an idea of the daily "remarks": "Sunday the 2d of June 1765 this twenty-four hours we have hed fresh brese of wind to the westward and southward att 3 p. m. Hour main touping lift gav way and att 6 a. m. Saw 3 toupsail vessels bound for the eastward and att 10 a. m. Saw 2 more Bound to the Eastword and we have Cloudey weather and Rain."

Following the fishery industry, which held sway here for almost two centuries, came the cabinet-making business. During the period long after the settlement, the household furniture was largely brought from the Old World and little attempt was made to produce the needful articles of furniture needed in the homes of New England. It was about the year of our National Independence when furniture began to be made in this part of the country. It is believed that the first manufacturer was Moses Dodge, in 1775. This business was handed down from father to son, and at present is still in the family name. In 1895 the business was being carried on by his great-grandsons, John M. and Charles C. Dodge. While most of the early cabinet-makers have long since been forgotten, they made an interesting record while they existed. Among the very first to engage in the business was Ebenezer Tappan, in 1761, son of Rev. Benjamin Tappan, a soldier of the Revolution, who had learned his trade in Portland, then known as Falmouth.

The production of veneers for furniture and musical instruments later became a large industry at Manchester. Much mahogany was worked up for expensive furniture facings. John Perry Allen was foremost in this line for many decades. He had the first veneering saw-mill, in 1825, and he managed to cut from a four-inch mahogany plank sixty fine strips of veneers. This mill produced the larger part of all veneering used in the piano factories of the country. As the United States settled up more generally, factories were established for the manufacture of furniture, and the larger centers began to monopolize the trade. However, as late as 1870 a copy of the Boston "Cabinet Maker" contained the following item concerning the Manchester factories:

The class of work that is made in Manchester today, is without doubt as fine as any work turned out in the United States, and it is retailed in the warehouses of the most fashionable dealers in the country. The styles are good and the work thorough and reliable. Were it the custom to put the maker's name on furniture, as it is on watches, fire arms, silver-ware, and most other goods, these modest manufacturers doing business in the same small routine way for the past forty or fifty years, would have an enviable reputation, wherever, in this country, handsome and serviceable furniture is appreciated.

From statistics found among the records of the Secretary of the Commonwealth, in 1838 it is found that articles were manufactured in Manchester as follows:

Boots, 425 pairs; shoes, 2,750 pairs; value of boots and shoes, $4,473. Males employed, 11; females, 4.

Tannery, 1; hides tanned, 2,000; value of leather tanned and curried, $5,500; hands employed, 3; capital invested, $7,000.

Manufactories of chairs and cabinet ware, 12; value of chairs and cabinet ware, $84,500; hands employed, 120.

Palm-leaf hats manufactured, 3,000; value $300.

Vessels built in the five preceding years, 4; tonnage of same, 190; value $4,500; hands employed in shipbuilding, 4.

Vessels employed in the cod and mackerel fisheries, 14; tonnage of same, 500;

codfish caught, 5,400 quintals; value, $11,200; mackerel caught, 200 barrels; value, $1,600; salt used in the cod and mackerel fishery, 4,000 bushels; hands employed, 65; capital invested, $12,300.

Ships' wheels manufactured, 25; value, $800; hands employed, 1.

In 1865 the cabinet business gave employment to 160 men, and the working capital was in excess of $60,000. The amount of manufactured goods was $92,625. There were also four sawing mills and planing mills, turning out $13,000 worth of work. The number of barrels and casks made was 32,600, valued at $10,600. The number of hides tanned was 5,000, of the value of $20,000. Boots and shoes were made to the value of $12,000. Strawberries were raised to the value of $3,300. There were forty horses in town, and thirty-four oxen.

It may be said that today the cabinet-making industry is but a faint memory to any present resident. It has long since gone to larger and western city centers. A list of the chief cabinet-makers of Manchester includes the following persons and firms, some of whom also operated and owned mills as well as furniture factories: Moses Dodge, Ebenezer Tappan, Larkin Woodberry, Eben Tappan, Long & Danforth, Kelham & Fitz, Henry F. Lee, Isaac Allen, Jerry Danforth, S. O. Boardman, John Perry Allen, Smith & Low, Cyrus Dodge, Luther and Henry Bingham, John C. Long & Co. (H. P. & S. P. Allen), Samuel Parsons, Allen & Ames, Albert E. Low, Isaac S. Day, William Hoyt, John C. Webb, Severance & Jewett, William Johnson, C. B. Hoyt, Warren C. Vane, Felker & Cheever, Hanson, Morgan and Co., E. S. Vennard, William E. Wheaton, Charles Lee, John C. Peabody, Isaac Ayers, Crombie & Morgan, Rufus Stanley, William Decker, Watson & Co., Taylor & Co., Rust & Marshall, John M. and Charles C. Dodge, Samuel L. Wheaton.

After first making a suitable shelter in which to live, to plan and execute for the immediate living of the family, then the duty of the pioneer here was to see that in case of death a suitable burying place was provided in the neighborhood, or at times on the land of the settler. Traditions locates the first graveyard in Manchester near the present library building; this was possibly a private cemetery. The next Silent City was located on the road from the Cove to the Magnolia railway station. So aged is this burying place that no record book refers to it. Yet it is certain that many of the first settlers here fell into that dreamless sleep that we call death, and that there their mortal remains have long years ago mingled with the earth. The first recorded cemetery was that of 1668 (some authorities say 1653) and refers to the present cemetery at the corner of Washington and Summer streets; it was fenced in 1701.

Another cemetery, a small plot of ground, is the Union Cemetery at the east side of School street, established in 1845 as a stock association. In 1888 it was taken over by the town, and a monument is now to be seen there erected to the honor of Rev. Oliver A. Taylor, an early minister.

Rosedale Cemetery, the most attractive of any in Manchester today,

was originally owned by a private corporation, dated 1854, but in 1888 was wisely transferred to the town and accepted with Union Cemetery as a sacred trust. In 1888-90 further extension had to be made in order to provide ample room for the departed dead. Here one finds Memorial Lot—a square plot set apart for the use of Grand Army of the Republic Post. The present generation is taking much better care of their burying places than did their forefathers, but there may be a good reason for it—today we have more time and means with which to decorate the graves and otherwise show respect for our departed friends.

From the best obtainable evidence the first store of Manchester was kept in the house of Joseph Proctor, on Sea street. A woman of great energy and business ability seems to have been proprietor of this pioneer store. This person was later known as the wife of Colonel Eleazar Crafts, who was a Revolutionary soldier.

Ebenezer Tappan embarked in merchandising soon after the Revolutionary War, in the building now owned by the heirs of the Andrew Brown family. Mr. Tappan continued forty years, and was doubtless the first merchant to refuse to handle ardent spirits in his store as a beverage. Other early merchants were: Captain John Knight, on the north of Saw Mill brook; Mrs. Abby H. Trask, who dealt in her residence many years and finally died with her merchandise about her; a large number of young women were employed by her. About 1835, Captain John Hooper kept a store at the Cove, and this was a famous resort of the militia on their training days. Other merchants of the long-ago included Mrs. Hooper Allen in Summer street; Deacon D. L. Bingham, at his house; Israel F. Tappan, who also made clocks and "fixed" watches; Captain Tyler Parsons, Isaac S. West, F. B. Rust, John Little, G. W. Marble, S. S. Colby, Larkin W. Story, John Prince, A. W. Smith, John Evans and Henry Knight, Miss Mary A. Baker; these were all in business at Manchester previous to 1880.

Today the retail business is carried on by people possessing modern ideas and who keep fully abreast with the times in the selection and handling of first class merchandise. It is not the aim of this work to go into details or give a directory of present-day business factors.

A postoffice was established in Manchester in 1803, under Deacon Delucena L. Bingham, who served as postmaster until his death in 1837. Mail then came from Boston three times each week, by stage coach. Before then, mail came up occasionally by a sloop. The office receipts in 1803 were $7.00. In 1820 there were but two newspapers taken at Manchester. William Dodge was appointed postmaster in 1837, and served until 1845; he owned a tavern, and between the two occupations made a fair living, his wife assisting him in both. The next postmaster was Colonel Jefferd M. Decker, a military man, who in the early days of the Civil War took an active part in that struggle. The next in line to hold the postmastership was George F. Allen, 1849, under whose ad-

ministration the postage rates on first class matter was forty cents on letters to the Pacific coast; five cents under one hundred miles, ten cents over. Postage to European countries, twenty-four cents. The next postmaster at Manchester was John Prince, from 1853 to 1865, when Julius R. Rabardy, a native of France and an old Civil War veteran, was appointed and kept the office until 1885, and was succeeded by William J. Johnson, who in 1890 was followed by Jeffrey T. Stanley. Charles H. Danforth succeeded Stanley in 1895, served until relieved by Samuel L. Wheaton, and he by the present postmaster, Frank A. Foster, commissioned by President Woodrow Wilson, March 2, 1915. A fire in 1906 destroyed the postoffice building and a small amount of government supplies.

For almost two hundred and fifty years Manchester was without any adequate system of water works or fire protection. Not until 1892 did this place do away with the street and private cistern and well system, depended upon so long. That year the water works were completed, and since then the almost if not quite inexhaustible supply of excellent water has made life worth the living in Manchester. The original cost of this water-work system was about $160,000. In passing it is well to state that recent reports from the United States Census Bureau sent out especially for this work, show the population in the town of Manchester to be 2,466.

About the only manufacturing industry of Manchester today is the old and well known furniture factory of the Dodge family, who have been in such industry a century or more. There is a limited amount of yacht-building here also, but nothing of great note.

It should be remembered that in Massachusetts for a long period of time the parish and town were practically one. The church was the institution around which all else centered, and was supposed to develop through. Maintenance of the gospel was uppermost in the minds of those who first came to these shores, because of the right to worship God as directed by their own conscience. While it is not the province of this work to give a complete history of any certain church, much less all of those organized from time to time within Manchester, brief accounts will be given of the first organizations, the buildings and pastors at various times, to the present period.

According to tradition, the first public meeting for religious purposes was held under a tree on "Gale's Point," but as to whom the preacher was there now appears to be no record. Dr. E. W. Leach many years ago had a scrap of yellow paper giving in the handwriting of Rev. Ames Cheever the names of the early ministers of Manchester; this record is dated November 20, 1726. The list is as follows: Messrs. Ginners, Smith, Stow, Dunnum, Millett, Hathorne, Jones, Winborn, Hubbard, Emerson, Goodhue, Eveleth and Webster. But little is known of these ministers—some it is certain served as supplies only for a short

time. In those times, even as at the present, men and ministers included, were not all perfect, for it has been written of Ralph Smith, an early minister in the Manchester parish, "the colonists were warned against him, and were told to not suffer him to remain 'unless he be comfortable to the government.' "

Another minister who did not find life here a continual round of pleasure was Rev. John Winborn, who arrived in 1667 and in 1686 the town voted "that he forthwith provide himself and family with some other place." In 1689 Rev. John Everleth was invited to preach as a candidate, and was soon called to preach at a salary of £23 per year.

Perhaps the earliest place in which the now almost universal custom of raising funds by envelope collection, was in Manchester, where in 1690 it was voted that a contribution be taken up each Sabbath for the minister, in addition to his salary; the gifts to be wrapped in a paper, with the name of the contributor upon it. Rev. Everleth continued until 1695 and was succeeded by Rev. John Emerson, whose pastorate was quite short. From 1698 to 1715 the minister at Manchester was Rev. Nicholas Webster.

The Manchester church was not regularly organized until November 7, 1716. Rev. Ames Cheever, a grandson of the well-known Ezekiel Cheever, was ordained minister here October 4, 1716. Up to 1677 the members of this church had belonged at Salem, then gathered at Beverly, where they remained until they were dismissed to form a church of their own. The members thus withdrawing to form a new society were inclusive of these: John Sibley and wife, John Lee, Robert Leach, Samuel Stone, Samuel Lee, John Knowlton and children (John, Joseph and Abigail), Benjamin Allen, Joseph Allen and wife, Jabez Baker and wife, Josiah Littlefield, Jonathan Allen. In fact, with the coming of Rev. Cheever began the real history of this church. He served faithfully and well until January, 1743, a period of twenty-seven years. Not many years since, his supposed grave was marked by a proper tombstone by his descendants.

Rev. Benjamin Tappan became pastor in 1744, receiving the sum of one hundred and forty-eight ounces of silver or its equivalent per year. This also included his fuel delivered, though not so fully stated in the contract. Following Rev. Tappan came (for a brief season) Rev. Blake of Worcester, until September, 1791, when Rev. Ariel Parish was made pastor and served until his death, at an early age, in 1794. It is said of him: "He was cut off in the morning of life, and the tears of many watered his grave."

Other ministers here were: Revs. Abraham Randall, James Thurston, Samuel M. Emerson, of Williams College, at $450 a year and fourteen cords of wood "at the house"; he was installed in 1821 and served till his health failed and he resigned, being succeeded by Rev. Oliver A. Taylor, installed in 1839. After his death came his brother, Rev. Rufus

Taylor, who was installed in 1852. A split occurred in the church which was not fully united until 1869. After Rev. Taylor, came Rev. George E. Freeman in 1858 and was dismissed in 1862. Next came Rev. Edward P. Tenney, continuing until 1867; he left the ministry and entered literary work. In 1869 came as minister Rev. George L. Gleason, who served until 1881. In more recent years the ministers have been more frequent in their coming and going from Manchester. In 1882 came Rev. D. O. Clark; in 1886, Rev. Daniel Marvin, down to 1892. He was succeeded by Rev. J. P. Ashley for about six months, then came Rev. Samuel Reid, and next was Rev. Francis A. Fate, installed in November, 1894. From this date on down to the present the ministers have been: Revs. Walter Ashley, 1898-1904; Rev. C. Arthur Lincoln, 1905-07; Rev. Louis H. Ruge, 1907-12; Rev. Charles A. Hatch, 1913-16; Rev. Frederic W. Manning, 1917 and still pastor in 1921.

At the present (1921) the records of this church show there is a total membership of 171; and an average of 135 in the Sunday school, of which the present superintendent is Pastor Frederic W. Manning. The frame edifice built in 1809 still serves the congregation well.

As to the church above treated upon, and now known as the Orthodox Congregational Church of Manchester, Massachusetts, a booklet put out a few years since gives the subjoined historic church facts: Manchester settled as Jeffrey's Creek, 1636; incorporated as Manchester, 1645; church organized with twenty members, 1716; Sunday school organized, 1810; meeting-houses built in 1656, 1695, 1719, 1809; parsonages built in 1685, 1699, 1745, 1803, 1811, 1853; chapel built in 1858; weekly offering system started in 1690; pews for negroes, 1737; Methodists forbidden to worship in church, 1795; total abstinence enjoined on members, 1833; individual ownership of pews relinquished in 1846; separation of parish from town, 1847; parish incorporated, 1847; division of church and new one formed, 1857; churches reunited, 1869; individual communion cups first used, 1901; new covenant and by-laws adopted, 1902; bells provided for church, in 1695,1755, 1843; clocks installed, 1792, 1846; organs installed, 1847, 1889; first stoves used, 1821; furnace heat, 1867; revivals of note in this church, 1727, 1737, 1757, 1763, 1797, 1809, 1827, 1839, 1888, 1897.

The names of those who for many years served this church as its deacons should not be overlooked by the reader. They included such men as Benjamin Allen, Samuel Lee, Benjamin Lee, Jonathan Herrick, John Tewksbury, John Allen, Albert E. Low, Henry Knight, D. L. Bingham, Nathan Allen, Andrew Brown, Enoch Allen, John Price, John Fowler, Oliver Roberts, Daniel Leach, and F. A. P. Killam.

Without going into detail concerning the church edifices occupied by this Manchester church, it may be said that they have had good average houses of worship, beginning with the meeting-house erected in 1656, enlarged in 1691, though not paid for until 1695; another house

was provided in 1720, being used until 1809. This church was followed by the one built in 1809 at a cost of $8,500. With numerous improvements and modern-idea changes, this edifice, so well constructed, has withstood the storms of all the years to the present (1921) and bids fair to be in use another half century.

It was not until 1821, that the above church was possessed of any artificial means of warming it. Then came the "foot-stove," says one writer. This proved unsatisfactory, and it was decided to try a cast-iron box-stove, even against great and stubborn opposition on the part of many churchgoers, who questioned the religious propriety of having a comfortable and well warmed church building. Minister Tappan has left on record an amusing incident connected with the use of the above named box-stove: "The first cold Sunday after it had been placed in position, the people all went to meeting fully prepared to watch the result of the experiment. Many felt it uncomfortably warm; and two young women were so overcome by the 'baked air' they fainted, and were taken to the vestibule where the atmosphere was of a better quality. But the next day it was learned, the wood for the stove had not been received, and no fire had been made; this proved a fatal blow to the opposition, and but little was said upon the subject afterwards."

Various publications and church records afford the writer the data necessary for this history of the Baptist church. Between 1631 and 1635 Roger Williams, "teacher," later "minister" of the First Baptist Church in Salem, en route to preach to the few fishermen living along the shores and back in the woods, arrived as the first to sow the seed of the Baptist doctrine in this part of the county. This reads like an accurate historical statement, but as a matter of fact it is simply conjecture, for there is no real record to show that these statements are any more than tradition, yet seem quite plausable.

While from time to time, it is likely that there were those of the Baptist faith residing in Manchester, yet it was not until 1842 that Elder Elam Burnham, of Essex, began to hold meetings in the old Public Library building on School street. Great stress was laid on the theory of the Second Advent of Christ. A number were baptized by this man Burnham, and on April 10, 1843, thirteen men and women were baptized by him and by them a church organization was effected. Fifty-seven others soon united, and the organization was styled the Christian Church instead of Baptist. A building was provided in 1844 by this church. Following the founder, Rev. Burnham, came Rev. O. J. Waite, from 1844 to 1848. Then came Rev. P. R. Russell, under whose pastorate the church became a regular Baptist church, the date being February, 1850, when it was recognized by the council called for that purpose. He wrote against materialism and universalism, and was counted a strong man in debate, though not especially gifted as a scholar or fine orator. In 1851 he was succeeded by Rev. G. W. Davis, who gave way to Rev. G.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

JOHN ESTHER ART GALLERY, ABBOT ACADEMY, ANDOVER

F. Danforth, who labored from 1853 to 1856. Indeed, this good man was one of the beatitudes of the community. The next pastor was Rev. C. W. Reading, who was followed by Revs. Hatch, Miller, Swett and Holt, the last named serving until the coming of that talented man, Rev. D. F. Lamson, whose pastorate commenced in 1884 and continued until he was succeeded by Rev. Briggs, and he in a short time by Rev. George W. Schurman in 1903; next came Rev. Edward H. Brewster, 1903-08; Rev. T. L. Frost, 1911-18; Rev. H. E. Levoy, 1918, and still serving acceptably and well. The present membership of this church is 190, and of the Sunday school 181. The superintendent is Abbott Foster. The church building was remodeled in 1910, and today the entire church property is valued at $29,000.

The brief account of the Episcopal church is found in the language of Dr. Lamson in his "History of Manchester" in 1895, in words as follows: A little west of the Masconomo House, on the road to Lobster Cove, stands Emanuel Church. It is on land owned by Russell Sturgis, who was largely responsible for its being built. It is especially designed for the use of summer residents, and is therefore only open during the "season," when it receives within its walls more wealth and fashion and culture than are found often in churches of much larger size. It is viewed, however, rather as an exotic by some of the permanent residents. About the same condition exists today.

The Roman Catholics built their church here in 1873. It was a small, though very neat structure, sufficient for the needs of so floating a congregation. It was formed as a part of St. Mary Star of the Sea, Beverly.

The Town Hall has been the meeting place for the few meetings held by the Universalist denomination at this point. The society has not been perfected at this writing, nor made very strong in church activities.

The Unitarians in the summer of 1895, erected a building used for their services on Masconomo street. This was largely provided by some of the summer residents. The present finds about the same condition. Services are held in the summer season when members are present on account of the summer vacation periods and at summer resorts near by.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

## TOWN OF ANDOVER.

The true date of settlement at Andover is and probably ever will be an uncertainty in history. There are so many conflicting theories that the writer of this chapter will not undertake to make a positive statement concerning it. However, it is quite safe to conclude from such records of church and state as are at command, that the original set-

tlers came in about 1642 or 1643; for on May 10, 1643, an order was passed by the General Court for a division of the whole plantation into four shires. Cochichawicke is mentioned as one of the eight towns comprising the shire of Essex. Very soon after its settlement, its name was changed to Andover, at the request, likely, of the immigrants, who had came from Andover, Hants county, England. John Woodbridge, of Newbury, later the first minister in Andover, purchased from the Indians the land included in this township. Cutshamache, the Sagamore of Massachusetts, was the chief with whom the bargain was made, and the price paid was six pounds and a coat. This purchase and preceding grant were confirmed by the General Court in 1646, when the town was incorporated with its present name. However, as late as 1648, it was always spelled in print and public records as "Andiver", and was originally bounded by the Merrimac, Rowley, Salem, Woburn and Cambridge. In 1829 Andover extended its northern border along the Merrimac river for nearly eleven miles.

At what is now known as North Andover in North Parish was effected the first settlement of this town. Many years ago, the Rev. Charles Smith wrote on this settlement as follows:

> The grantees, or proprietors, for convenience, mutual protection, social intercourse and to enjoy the better their religious worship and teaching, settled near each other, around their meeting house, on "home-lots", containing from four to ten acres each, according to wealth and importance of the occupant To the owner of a home lot was assigned meadow, tillage and wood-land in the remote parts of the town. The allotment was in proportion to the size and value of the village lot. These outlying farms were gradually built upon and lived upon by their owners. But not for many years was such occupancy common. For a long time living away from the village was discouraged; and on one occasion, the town went so far as to forbid any inhabitant's building a dwelling-house in any part of the town other than that which had been set apart for such houses, except by express leave of the town. The penalty for a disregard of this order was a fine of twenty shillings a month for the time the disobedient person should live in such prohibited place. But as the population increased, and the roads became passable, and danger from hostile Indians was largely diminished, people removed to their farms in the present South and West Parishes.

The records of the earliest settlers are scant. In them is to be found a list of what purports to be the original proprietors, which reads as follows: Mr. Bradstreet, John Stevens, Edmund Faulkner, Henry Jacques, John Lovejoy, Andrew Allen, John Osgood, Nicholas Holt, Robert Barnard, John Aslett, Thomas Poor, Andrew Foster, Joseph Parker, Benj. Woodbridge, Daniel Poor, Richard Blake, George Abbot, Thomas Chandler, Richard Barker, John Frye, Nathan Parker, Wm. Ballard, John Russ.

It should be remembered that the original proprietors and settlers took up for their personal property only a small portion of the land, holding in common the remainder, and in reserve for future settlers, with a liberal allotment for the church and its ministry.

At the beginning of the eighteenth century the church building, or meeting-house, as then called, became too small, and not fully up to the times, and the membership desired better quarters. Hence it was voted, in 1705, "to build a new meeting-house as sufficient and convenient for the whole town as may be." May, 1707, it was again voted "to build a meeting-house for ye inhabitants of Andover of these following dimensions, viz: of sixty foot long, and forty foot wide and a twenty foot studd, and with a flatt roofe." When the question of a location on which to build came to a vote, the decision favored the South Precinct. It was but natural that those residing in the North Parish should rebel at their meeting-house being transferred to the South Parish. A long drawnout battle was fought at town meetings and in General Court deliberations over petitions and counter-petitions, but the result was that the General Court decided to divide the territory into two precincts. The locating of a church building was then considered of much greater importance to the masses than is the location of a county seat and court house building in these later days. After much pulling and hauling, with no little bitterness, the two parishes or precincts were set off and legally given bounds and a provision for a meeting-house in each.

In 1692, as appears from an old tax-list, the majority of inhabitants were at the North End of the town. In 1708, when the question as to the location of a meeting-house (new one) came up, a majority of the voters were found to be at the South End. For fully fifty years the North Parish contained the meeting-house, the minister and the principal citizens. The North Parish was especially distinguished as being the home of Simon Bradstreet, who was governor of Massachusetts Bay Province for thirteen years, and whose family were looked up to by the community. For the present, the reader will turn his attention to the history of South Parish—the Andover of today—which was then but an outlying section of the township. A small part of the lands had been allotted to the first settlers. The larger part, held in common, was used for pasturage and wood-land. Those who owned farms four or five miles out worked at a great disadvantage, on account of Indian scares, bad roads, etc. With the passage of years, things changed, and these outlying farms were much utilized by their owners. South Parish became a noted agricultural section of the county, and its people were looked upon as a class of hardy, God-fearing settlers.

Andover had less actual trouble with Indian raiders than many of the other towns in the county; there was only one attack in which life was lost among the settlers. This occurred on April 18, 1676, the invaders being a band of the allies of King Philip. The raid might have ended differently had not a scout, named Ephriam Stevens, discovered that a band of Indians were crossing the Merrimac river. He hastily notified the settlement, and the men working in the fields took refuge in the garrison-house, and thus were all saved. This house was oc-

cupied by George Abbot, and was but a few rods to the south of South Church of a later date. Unfortunately, two sons of George Abbot did not get word in time to make the garrison-house. The elder, nineteen years of age, was killed by the Indians. His brother, only thirteen years of age, was taken captive, but after four months was returned by a friendly old squaw. A few men from the South Precinct lost their lives, while engaged in keeping the Indians away from the settlement, during the various wars with the whites, but not a large number suffered such a fate.

As early as 1673 encouragements were given to such as would locate in Andover in some manufacturing enterprise. The town voted to "grant to Edward Whittington and Walter Wright five acres of land for encouragement of erecting a fulling mill, which they promised to set about the next spring." In 1675 "liberty was granted a tanner that he shall be allowed by the town to make use of what bark is needful for his works in town, provided he fell no trees that are fit for building or mill timber." In 1682 "liberty was granted to any man that the town or the committee shall choose to set up a saw mill, fulling mill and grist mill upon Shawshin river, near Rogers brook, to take up twenty acres of land adjoining said place and to enjoy the same forever, with the privilege of a townsman."

In 1688 "it was voted that the twenty acres of land shall be improved by Joseph and John Ballard and their heirs, so long as they shall keep up a grist mill, fulling mill, etc. In the same year, it was voted "to encourage setting up iron works." The iron works mentioned were necessarily small affairs, but served well for the time being. Not until 1775 did manufacturing take on goodly proportions. In the winter of 1775-76, Mr. Phillips built a powder house on the Shawshin river. This was built as a pressing necessity, to make powder for the Continental army, but it chanced to be both good for its original object and very profitable to its owner. After the war had ended, the mill still continued to operate until 1796. In October of the year just mentioned, an explosion took place, and two men were killed. Later, the proprietor of the powder mill converted it into a paper mill; when there was no demand for large bills of powder, then it was that he produced paper. Soon Mr. Houghton, a devout Quaker from England, who had but recently failed in the paper business in the Mother Country, settled in Andover, and became a partner with Mr. Phillips. The two shared equally in the profits, one finding the capital, the other managing the affairs of the enterprise. After many years, paper-making was given up and the plant was sold and converted into the Marland Manufacturing Company, of which Abraham Marland was the sole founder. This enterprise was one of the leading factors in the town for many years.

Another great industry founded and successfully operated in Andover for many years was the Smith & Dove Manufacturing Company's

plant. This was started in the autumn of 1834, for the purpose of making chalk-line from cotton, by use of a patented machine invented by Mr. Dove. Before it was in operation, however, the plans were changed by taking in as his partner John Smith, who wanted to make flax-thread; so they went to Scotland and secured specifications for the necessary mills. Here they made ships cords, sewing flax-threads, shoe-threads, etc. The only competitors in America were the merchants from Europe. At first, there was a prejudice against home-made threads, but after eight years, the company could not begin to fill its orders and was compelled to increase its capacity. In 1843, the company purchased the Abbot woolen mills. Finally, after eventful, useful careers, the two founders passed from earth's shining circles, and the business passed on to their heirs by whom it was run for many years longer.

Among other useful and profitable industries in Andover may be named the Ballard Vale Manufacturing Company, incorporated in 1836. John Marland was the enterprising president of the concern. Some Boston capitalists and a number of business men from Andover made up the stockholders. At first flannel making was the aim and sole object of this mill. Had the managers "let well enough alone," all might have gone well; but they reached out all over the country, and sought to raise silk-worms and weave silk; also to make various fine woolen goods. With all these things on hand, they failed, and the stockholders were heavy losers. The factory ultimately fell into the creditors' hands, and the treasurer, J. Putnam Bradlee, took it over, reorganized it, and went ahead with flannel making successfully.

The Craighead & Kintz Manufacturing Company succeeded to the old plant erected and operated by a Boston corporation, called the Whipple File and Steel Company. It manufactured files and fine steels. Misfortune befell its business endeavors, and it finally collapsed. Craighead & Kintz started, in 1883, the manufacture of brass and bronze goods. In 1887 nearly three hundred men were employed in these shops. Over one hundred thousand dollars a year was the output in the eighties. With time, these factories have changed, merged with others, or gone out of business entirely.

The Tyer Rubber Company was incorporated in February, 1876. It used the old Boston & Maine railroad shops for headquarters. This concern made a diagonal rubber cloth used in the making of overshoes and arctics. Henry George Tyer, founder, invented many rubber goods in his day. He was born in England in 1812, came to America in 1840, and first settled in New Jersey, where he identified himself with the rubber trade. He came to Essex county in 1856. It was he who first discovered the art of producing white rubber articles. Another of his inventions was the "Campo-shoe." For his inventions he never received royalty in proportion to the value of his discoveries, though for some of them he was well paid. He died at his residence in Andover in 1882,

and was buried in the cemetery of Christ Church, of which he was a devout member.

The industries of Andover today are limited to about the following manufacturing plants, all doing a prosperous business in their line of production: J. W. Barnard & Son, boots and shoes; Frank H. Hardy, brush makers; Ballardvale Milling Company, makers of flannel goods; W. C. Donald & Company, manufacturers of lampblack; the American Woolen Mills, the Osgood Mills, the Stevens Mills and the Sutton Mills. There are also two saw mills, one owned by Albert P. Couch, the other by Louis J. Kibbee.

Andover always having been a noted school and college town, it naturally comes in for its share of excellent public libraries. The public library sprang from the old "Social Library" in a very early day—about 1770. It distributed books for at least seventy years, when these were sold at auction, and scarcely a home in the vicinity today but has one or more of the books formerly in this collection. One of the rigid rules found in the records concerning the 1770 library, just named, reads thus: "For the future no person shall be admitted a member whose place of residence from the North Meeting-House in Andover exceeds ten miles. Each member shall pay not less than four dollars cash before becoming a member."

The present imposing Memorial Hall Library was erected in 1872-3, and dedicated at a cost of $40,000. It was founded by John and Peter Smith, but John Dove was also a liberal contributor. The December, 1920, report of the librarian sets forth these facts: "Our circulation during this last year has been the largest in the history of the library. At the Memorial Hall 37,542 books were issued, an increase over 1919 of 1,937 volumes. At Ballardvale 6,445 were issued, an increase of 139 during the year. This makes a total of 44,398 books borrowed for home use in 1920, which is a large circulation for a town the size of Andover. In 1919, 42,322 volumes were borrowed."

Andover is now a second-class postoffice, with two free delivery rural routes extending into the surrounding country; the routes average about twenty-three miles each. There are also five city mail carriers. The last fiscal year's postal business amounted to $38,200. The postoffice has been in its present location since 1918. Connected with this office is a station office at the village of Shawsheen. This was established as a branch office July 1, 1920, and is kept in a leased building.

Since President Grover Cleveland's administration, the postmasters at this postoffice have been William G. Goldsmith, four years; Abraham Marland, four years, under President Harrison; William G. Goldsmith served again four years until the election of President William McKinley in 1896. Arthur Bliss then became postmaster, and served sixteen years, being succeeded May 1, 1914, by the present postmaster, John H. McDonald.

In 1920-21 the following list of officers were serving the municipality of Andover, which was originally incorporated May 6, 1646—two hundred and seventy-five years ago: Selectmen: Walter S. Donald, Charles Bowman, Andrew McTernen; Assessors: Walter S. Donald, Charles Bowman and Andrew McTernen; Town Clerk, George A. Higgins; Tax Collector, William B. Cheever; Town Treasurer, George A. Higgins; Superintendent of Schools, Henry C. Sanborn; Superintendent of Water Department, Frank L. Cole; Chief of Fire Department, Charles F. Emerson; Chief of Police, Frank M. Smith; Constables: George W. Mears, Frank M. Smith and Thomas F. Dailey; Tree Warden, Edward H. Berry; Moderator of Town Meetings, Alfred L. Ripley; Finance Committee: Henry A. Bodwell, Edward V. French, Chester W. Holland, George Abbot, George B. Frost, J. Harry Campion, William B. Corliss.

The schedule of town property according to the last report amounts to $1,301,285.78. The assessors' last report shows the following: Number of polls assessed, 2,323; personal and real estate holdings, $10,086,766; poll tax, $9,705; tax on personal estate, $50,043; tax on real estate, $197,085.04; rate of taxation per $1,000, $24.50.

Number of horses assessed, 497; cows, 903; sheep, 107; neat cattle, 227; swine, 229; fowls, 11,485; dwellings, 1,787; acres of land, 17,816.

By reason of the three great educational institutions located at Andover for so many years—the Theological Seminary, Abbot's Academy and Phillips Academy for girls—the very atmosphere surrounding the place, figuratively speaking, seems charged with the elements of education, intelligence and refinement not known in the ordinary town of any section of the country.

As one of the oldest towns in the United States, Andover enjoys universal distinction. Its name has always been coupled with famous historical events. Andover's famous school, Phillips Academy, was founded in 1770 by Samuel Phillips, and was the first incorporated academy in the country. This institution has been greatly aided in its growth by the generous benefactions of the Phillips family, to whose efforts can be attributed much of its great success. The late Bishop Phillips Brooks was a direct descendant of this illustrious family.

Andover is justly proud of its Theological Seminary, and of such men as Professor Calvin E. Stowe and Professor Austin Phelps, who were among its presidents. Thousands upon thousands of young men have been graduated from this Seminary to go out into the world as professionals, in the role of ministers, lawyers, physicians and journalists.

Abbot Academy, the first school exclusively for girls in this section of the country, was opened in 1829, through the efforts and bequests of Madam Sarah Abbot.

Simon Bradstreet, well known as magistrate, ambassador, and governor of Massachusetts, was one of the founders and residents of An-

dover, and his wife Anne is famous as the first poetess in America. Their descendants, such men as Oliver Wendell Holmes, Wendell Phillips and R. H. Dana, have all earned wide renown, hence Andover can be justly proud of her sons.

In the language of another, it may be said: "Among the things which alone would make Andover famous are the facts that here Harriet Beecher Stowe, authoress of "Uncle Tom's Cabin", made her home for several years, and her house is still standing and known as the Stowe House. The house still stands, also, in which in February, 1832, Samuel F. Smith, then a student at Andover Theological Seminary, wrote the song that was destined to become our national hymn, 'America.' "

Among the interesting objects in Andover pointed out today to the visitor from distant parts of the world is, first: The "Old Oak of Andover," in the rear of the Seminary building. It has been estimated that at least four thousand students in the last century have been seated or have walked beneath its branches. "Then hail to the oak, the brave old oak, when a hundred years are gone."

"Phillips Inn," or the old "Stowe House", built in 1828, of solid stone, still adorns the lot directly opposite the stone chapel of the old Theological Seminary. It is a two-story structure (the original part) and was constructed as a carpenter shop and gymnasium for the seminary. It passed into the hands of Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe in 1853, and in one of its ground floor rooms she wrote and revised her "Uncle Tom's Cabin" before it was published in book form, it first appearing as a serial. It was also in this building that this celebrated American authoress wrote most of the "Key to Uncle Tom's Cabin," as well as the interesting and thrilling work entitled "Dred, or Curse Entailed." In 1887 this house was opened as a hotel, and was known as the Mansion House, and so continued until 1902, when the name was changed to "Phillips Inn." It is still conducted for the benefit of visitors, summer boarders and tourists.

Another historic object is here found in what is styled "Rabbit Rock," an early resort for the students who were fitting themselves for the missionary service in foreign lands. Here the young men used to assemble in a secluded spot, and converse and hold prayer service. The citizens and alumni of the Seminary years ago placed a fine memorial tablet attached to a giant granite boulder, and this is a perpetual memorial to that noble band of young students possessed of the missionary spirit. It was here that the "Iowa Band," comprising seven young Congregational ministers, who banded themselves together, used to meet and lay plans for establishing Congregational churches in the West. Later they all settled in Iowa, and there formed the early churches of this faith.

Among the illustrious dead whose mortal remains rest in a small burying ground plot near the Seminary should be mentioned Professor

STOWE HOUSE, WHERE "UNCLE TOM'S CABIN" WAS WRITTEN

YORK
BRARY
LENOX
FOUNDATIONS

Calvin Stowe and his wife, Harriet Beecher Stowe; an infant, and their son, who was drowned. This sacred spot is marked only by a plain Scotch granite tombstone with an ornamental cross at its top; but it may be suggested that Harriet Beecher Stowe's greater monument was in her written words, and her achievements as an abolitionist worker and authoress.

Near the edge of this cemetery is to be seen a modest marble tombstone marking the resting place of Samuel Harvey Taylor, born 1807, died 1871, while teaching his Bible class. He was at the head of Phillips Academy from 1829 to 1871, during which period there were upwards of six thousand pupils under his faithful care. He was among the foremost earlier American educators in his chosen field.

In conclusion, it may be said that here one sees the home of Dr. Smith, author of "America;" the Abbot house, oldest in Andover, built in 1690; Elizabeth Stuart Phelps Ward's residence, the old Latin Commons of Phillips Academy, the Elm Arch, Memorial Hall and Public Library, Rabbit's Pond, and the Golf Club grounds.

South Parish of Andover originally embraced the present town of North Andover and all of Lawrence lying south of the Merrimac river. As has been shown, the first settlement was effected at what is now the old center of North Andover. Here the house of worship was erected; here the minister resided, as well as a majority of the voters. In another chapter, an account is traced of the bickerings between the two church and town factions in settling the matter of a church site, which at last was determined by the General Court. The meeting house was built and occupied for the first time in January, 1710; £100 were raised to meet the cost of the structure. "Young men and maiden had liberty to build seats round in the galleries on their own charge."

The first minister called was Rev. Samuel Philips, a graduate of Harvard College. October 17, 1711, this church was fully organized, with a charter membership numbering thirty-four, as follows: George Abbot, Dorcas Abbot, John Abbot, Sarah Abbot, Nehemiah Abbot, Abigail Abbot, Rebecca Ballard, Hannah Ballard, Hannah Bigsby, Anne Blanchard, William Chandler, Sarah Chandler, Thomas Chandler, Mary Chandler, Francis Dane, Hannah Dane, Mary Russell, Ralph Farnham, Sarah Farnham, William Foster, Hannah Holt, Elizabeth Johnson, William Johnson, George Johnson, Mary Johnson, Wm. Lovejoy, Mary Lovejoy, Mary Lovejoy, Christ. Osgood, Sam Philips, Sarah Preston, John Russ, Deborah Russ, Mary Russell and Phoebe Russell.

The earliest deacons were John Abbot and William Lovejoy. The ministry of the beloved pastor continued for almost sixty years, terminating in his eighty-second year. The date of his death was June 5, 1771, and his successor was Rev. Jonathan French.

The second house of worship occupied by this society, subsequently erected in 1733-34, was to be "built after the same fashion as the old,

only larger." This building was opened for public worship in May, 1734. The seating of the house always caused much trouble in New England in those early times. In this case a committee was appointed to "dignify seats and pews according to their judgement, having respect for money and age." This plan lasted twenty-three years, after which it was forever abandoned. The reader will doubtless be interested in the following description of this church, written by Hon. Josiah Quincy in a letter to Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, while he was a student in Phillips Academy:

It was surrounded by horse-blocks innumerable with a disproportionate number of sheds; for the pillion was the ladies' delight, and alone or in pairs, with their husbands or fathers, they seldom fail to come trooping to their devotions. The church itself was a shingled mass, lofty, and, I should think, containing twice the area of its successor. This, however, may be the exaggeration of my boyish fancy, but it had three lofty stories, with three galleries in the interior, always densely filled with apparently pious zeal and earnest listeners. In the left hand gallery sat the ladies, in the right the gentlemen, in the midst of whom and in front sat the tything man, with his white pole three or four cubits in length, the emblem of his dignity and power, and in his right hand a short hazelrod, which, ever and anon, in the midst of the sermon, to the awakening and alarm of the whole congregation, he would, with the whole force of his arm, bring down with a ringing slap on the front of the gallery, shaking it, at the same time with a terrific menace at two or three frightened urchins, who were whispering or playing in a corner. In a square box in front of the pulpit sat the deacons, one of whom had pen, ink and paper, and was carefully taking the heads of the preacher's discourse, preparing documentary evidence, either that the sermon was old, or its doctrines new, or consonant with the orthodox platform. In the front gallery sat Precenter Ames, or Eames, with a pitch-pipe, the token of his authority, with which, as soon as the first line of the Psalm was read, he gave the note to the choir of both sexes—twenty or thirty of each—following the deacon, reading line by line, in an ecstacy of harmony which none but the lovers of music realized. And a mighty congregation seemed to realize their felicity, for they joined the choir with a will, realizing or exemplifying the happiness of which they sung. Upon the whole, it was an exciting scene, elevating and solemnizing the mind, by the multitude that took part in it.

The windows of the vast building were of diamond-shaped glass panes, of rhomboid form, in length about three or four inches, in breadth about two or three. Opening like doors outward, these windows were loose and shackling. In the winter, when the north wind shook the vast building with unmistakable power, their rattling was a match, and sometimes an over-match, for the voice of the clergyman, while the pious females in the pews, sitting, for the most part, on hard benches, with small muffs, and their feet only comforted with small stoves, or stockings over shoes, or heated bricks, had much ado through their sufferings to keep their attention fixed, or the text in memory, and register the infinitesimal heads into which it was divided.

Returning to the various pastors of this church, it may be stated that Rev. French remained as pastor until called by death in 1809, covering a period of thirty-six years and ten months. During this time was fought the Revolutionary War, with all its attending sorrows and anxiety. After Rev. French's death, the church had no pastor for about

three years. A new church was dedicated December 7, 1788. The next pastor was Rev. Justin Edwards, who remained from 1812 to 1816, during which time the West Parish was set off, and then he became its pastor. In 1827 Milton Badger became the pastor, and he served about eight years, when he was dismissed and made secretary of the American Home Missionary Society. During his administration as minister here, the Methodists and Baptists first held public worship in the town. The Methodists drew off a few church members and a much larger number of taxpayers. The Baptist church organized in 1832, and that took some strength from the Congregational church. Next came Rev. Lorenzo L. Longstroth, for two years, and he was succeeded by the Rev. John Taylor from 1839 to 1852; next was Rev. George Mooar, 1855 to 1861; Rev. Charles Smith, 1861-77; James H. Laird, May, 1877-84; John J. Baird, 1884 to 1893; Rev. Frank R. Shipman, 1893 to February 25, 1914, when Rev. E. Victor Bigelow was installed pastor. The present membership of the church is 578, and the Sunday school has an enrollment of 550 pupils and teachers. Eugene M. Weeks is superintendent.

The West Parish Congregational church was organized in 1826, and as incorporated comprised a membership of one hundred and seventy persons. The members were largely farmers. The charter members included nineteen men and thirty-four women. The present membership is one hundred and ninety-four, with a Sunday school of sixty enrolled; Herbert Merrick is superintendent. A stone church building was constructed in 1826, the same having a wooden spire. With improvements, the same building is in use today. The pastors have included Revs. Samuel Cram Jackson, 1827-50; Charles H. Pierce, 1850-55; James H. Merrill, 1856-79; Austin H. Burr, 1880-85; Frederick Green, 1885, succeeded by Rev. Robert A. McFadden, George O. Andrews, J. Edgar Park, Dean A. Walker and the present pastor, Rev. Newman Matthews.

The origin of the Free Christian Church is memorable in the history of Andover. Its occasion was the protest of its founders against slavery and intemperance. Their earnest souls rebelled against the indifference and the apologetic attitude prevalent in the community toward these great evils of the times. They favored active efforts to oppose slavery and the use of intoxicating liquors and wanted greater freedom of utterance and action than the existing churches gave.

Meetings held in private houses for the discussion of these subjects led to the organization of a parish on November 24, 1845, and of a church on May 7, 1846. The forty-four Christians who formed the church adopted a simple creed and covenant, and took the name of the Free Christian Church of Andover,—"Free", because they recognized the equal rights of persons of whatever race or color; and "Christian" because of their acceptance of the fundamental teachings of Christ, without sectarian bias. Several of the founders came from the Methodist church, which was then disbanding. More came from the two

Congregational churches, and a few took Christian vows upon themselves for the first time. They excluded from their fellowship "persons who manufacture, sell or use intoxicating drinks as a beverage, slave-holders and apologists for slavery, as not practically honoring Christ." It required strong convictions, Christian courage and self-sacrifice to take a step involving the disapproval of the other churches and such financial and religious responsibilities; but it was taken prayerfully, deliberately and heartily, and the results justified it. The church took on vigorous life at once, has ever since been a positive force for good, and has a present membership (May 1, 1921) of six hundred and five.

Its first pastors all studied at Oberlin, Ohio, and felt the evangelistic influence of that institution and of Rev. Charles E. Finney. For ten years the church retained its independent relation to other churches, and then came the fellowship with the Congregational churches of the Andover Association, with which it is still connected. It rented an unoccupied Universalist meeting-house of the town until 1850, when through the generosity of one of its members it came into possession of the unused Methodist house of worship. This was removed from Main street to Railroad street near the station, where, beautified and enlarged, it was the home of the new organization for fifty-eight years. Many of the students of the Theological Seminary gave valuable assistance in the Sunday school in the last half of the nineteenth century and enjoyed the hospitality of the near-by parsonage, which was built in 1855.

The increasing needs of the church having made a new location advisable, the entire property was sold to the Boston & Maine railroad company in 1907 and a new location on Elm street, near the town square, was purchased, upon which a new brick meeting-house was dedicated September 19, 1908, well equipped with all modern conveniences for church work. It is of colonial style, to suit the traditions of a town with Andover's history, and its architects were McKim, Mead & White, New York City. At the annual meeting of January 21, 1920, the church voted to become incorporated, and new by-laws and covenant were adopted with the National Council creed of 1913.

In the seventy-four years of its existence it has had eleven pastors with terms as follows: Elijah C. Winchester, 1846-48; Sherlock Bristol, 1848-49; William B. Brown, 1850-55; Caleb E. Fisher, 1855-59; Stephen C. Leonard, 1859-65; James P. Lane, 1866-70; Edwin S. Williams, 1870-72; G. Frederick Wright, 1872-81; F. Barrows Makepeace, 1881-88; Frederick A. Wilson, 1882-1920; Arthur S. Wheelock, 1920—, pastor at present time.

Not many years after the establishing of the manufacturing business in Ballard Vale, a desire for church privileges arose. Accordingly, March 18, 1850, a number of residents met and formed the Ballard Vale Union Society for the Support of Public Worship. It was called the Union Society, because its members represented several religious sects.

The services were held in the old schoolhouse. At the first services, Professor Park officiated, and after that theological students from the Seminary conducted the services until September, 1850, when Rev. Henry S. Green began his work here, which continued nearly thirty years and ended only with his removal to his reward above, June 11, 1880.

December 31, 1854, a council convened at the home of Mr. Green and organized the Union Congregational Church. The following were the original members: Henry S. Green, Mary P. A. Green, Matthew Chandler, Dorcas Chandler, Lydia Goldsmith, Ellen Morrison, Mary Holmes, Mary McGinty, Zoa Mann, Mary A. Winning, and Jerusha J. Crane. All but two of these came from the South Church, Andover. In 1876, on account of the inconveniences of meeting in the school house, the present church building was erected. Mr. Green generously donated the lot of land on which the church stands, and at his death bequeathed his residence on Marland street to the church as a parsonage. This was subsequently sold and the present convenient parsonage adjoining the church was erected in 1890. The church organ was purchased during the pastorate of Rev. Edwin Smith, chiefly through his energetic efforts.

The church has had ten pastors, the present pastorate being the longest since that of Rev. Green. Three young men have entered the ministry from this church, viz: Rev. Hiram H. Appleman, Rev. Sherman Goodwin, and Rev. Arthur M. Shattuck. Since its organization, 374 persons have been connected with the church. The present membership is 158. The pastors have been in the following order: Revs. Henry S. Green, 1855-80; J. W. Savage, 1881-82; H. S. Harrison, 1883; Samuel Bowker, 1884-88; Gardner S. Butler, 1888-91; Emel B. Bray, 1891-92; J. C. C. Evans, 1893-96; Arthur L. Golder, 1896-98; Edwin Smith, 1899-1903; Augustus H. Fuller, 1904-1921, and still serving as pastor.

Christ Church, Episcopal, of Andover, was organized in 1835, the work being started by twenty-three families which left the Congregational church in Andover. There are now 400 members, communicants. The Sunday school has an attendance of 137, with W. D. Yates as its superintendent. The present edifice was erected in 1886, as was also the Parish house, the two properties being valued now at $150,000. The material is brick and stone, the main edifice being solid stone. The original church burned on the site of the present parish house. This church is a memorial built by John Byers of Andover, in memory of his father and mother, James and Mary Smith Byers.

The following have served as pastors: Revs. Samuel Fuller, D.D., 1837-43; Henry Waterman, 1845-59; Samuel Fuller, D.D., 1849-59; Benjamin B. Babbitt, 1860-68; James Thomson, 1869-74; Maholm Douglass, D.D., 1875-84; Leverette Bradley, 1884-88; Frederick Palmer, D.D., 1888-1913; Charles Henry, 1914—.

The Universalist Church was organized in the autumn of 1838, or rather a society was then formed, and a little later a church organization was perfected. From 1846 on, for several years, services were entirely suspended in this church. During twenty-five years there was regular preaching usually. The records show that the object and doctrine of the church and society was "the promotion of truth and morality among its members, and also the world at large, and as the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ is calculated above all truth to inspire the heart with the emotions of benevolence and virtue, this society shall deem it one of its main objects to support the preaching of the Gospel according to the Societies ability, and to aid in spreading a knowledge of it among men." Regular ministers were located in this church to the number of seven, during its entire history, and these included Rev. Varnum Lincoln.

St. Augustine Roman Catholic Church of Andover was formed in 1852 by the Augustine Fathers of Lawrence. The first pastor was Rev. Fr. James O'Donnell, and in succession came Revs. Edward Mullen, O. S.A.; Michael F. Gallagher, O.S.A.; Ambrose A. McMullen, O.S.A.; and J. J. Ryan, who came in the fall of 1887. Since that date the congregation has been cared for by various priests.

At present this town has churches as follows: The Congregational; the South Congregational; the West Congregational; the Baptist, organized, 1832; Christ Episcopal; Free Christian (Congregational), organized in 1846; St. Augustine, Roman Catholic; St. Joseph, Roman Catholic; Union Congregational, organized in 1855, and the Methodist Episcopal.

Before passing, it may be stated that for more than one hundred and twenty-five years there were no other church organizations in the South Precinct of Andover, save the South and West churches mentioned in this chapter. In 1829 the Methodists commenced to hold services in the Bank Hall, and five years later erected a church building. In 1840 the church was dissolved and the edifice was sold to those who formed the "Free Church." In 1851, at Ballard Vale, a Methodist meeting house was erected and a large class formed. The Baptists organized in 1832, and two years later erected a church, but in 1857, after fifteen years' hard struggle, the church society disbanded.

Shawsheen Village is a suburb of Andover and is a recently established place of beauty and modern improvements, few in the country being so fully up-to-date in their improvements. It was the outgrowth of the enterprise of the American Woolen Mills Company, which has for years erected and rented or sold to its steady employes suitable residences. Catching the inspiration from this idea, the president of the company, William M. Wood, laid out a new town or village site between Andover and Lawrence, and named it for the stream, Shawsheen Village, which is the outstanding real estate development of the decade,

and one of the most unique as well as most beautiful villages in the Commonwealth. Starting with a little cross-road town of a few houses, Mr. Wood has created a model community—homes, stores, postoffice, a model laundry; even "ye village inn," tennis courts, and a bowling green have been produced. The most interesting fact is that Mr. Woods' vision has materialized successfully, rather than meeting the fate of so many Utopian dreams of community development. Shawsheen Village is contented and prosperous, steadily growing and achieving, providing an ideal location both for employees of the American Woolen Company and to others desiring to make this modern and model community their home. The street car system passes directly through the village.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## TOWN OF TOPSFIELD

The town of Topsfield, originally a part of Ipswich and Salem, was called by the Indians Shenewemedy, and here lived one of the Agawam tribes. The first English-speaking people called it at first New Meadows, probably from its beautiful virgin tract of meadow lands.

The first notice of Topsfield is contained in an order of the General Court, dated in 1639. By this order certain lands lying near the Ipswich river were granted for a village to the inhabitants of Salem; and the Ipswich people maintained preaching there for two years before they had liberty to take up grants of land in the settlement. Most of the early settlers lived on the north side of the river. At the south the meadows stretched far away; some of the land was soon under cultivation, but the greater part was covered by the famous "Salem Woods," when Topsfield had been settled only a few years. It was on October 18, 1648, that the court declared that "the village of the newe meadows at Ipswich is named Toppsfield." It doubtless took its name from a small parish in Essexshire, England. The population increased, more houses were built until the settlement became a good sized community, in consequence of which the General Court granted it a town charter, as shown by the following: "At the third session of the general court, held in Boston, October 18, 1650. In answer to a request of Zacheus Gould and William Howard, in behalfe of Topsfield, the Court doth grant that Topsfield shall from hence forth be a towne & have power within themselves to order all civil affayres, as other townes have."

The early records of this town were unfortunately lost, but later records show that in 1681 "Ensigne Howlett, Francis Paybodye and John Redington" were chosen selectmen. Lieutenant Francis Peabody was town clerk until 1682, and was followed by John Gould.

Upon the payment of £3 in money, Samuel English, a grandson of the old Indian chief, Masconnomet, gave a quit-claim deed for the land

on which the town stands, the date of such purchase being 1701. Although the town was incorporated in 1650, its true boundaries, as now understood, were not fixed satisfactorily until about 1726.

As early as 1635 the English residents commenced to come into this part of Essex county. The very first settlers were Allan Perley, an emigrant from England, and the ancestor of the long line of Perleys, so well known here since; William Towne, an emigrant from Bristol, England; Alexander Knight; Zaccheus Gould, ancestor of all the American Goulds; John Wildes, John Readington, George Bunker; Lieutenant Francis Peabody, an emigrant from England, and ancestor of the American family of Peabody; Daniel Clark, William Howard, and others, whose names have been lost with the flight of almost three hundred years.

Between 1660 and 1700 there came for permanent settlement to this town the subjoined list of persons: Thomas Averill, William Averill, Thomas Baker, Francis Bates, Benj. Bixby, Daniel Bourman, Michael Bowden, John Bradstreet, Edmund Bridges, Thomas Browning, George Bunker, Isaac Burton, Anthony Carroll, Daniel Clark, Isaac Cummings, John Curtis, John Davis, Timothy Day, John Death, Thos. Dorman, Michael Dwinnell, Isaac Estey, Z. Endicott, William Evans, John French, Z. Gould, George Hadley, Thomas Hobbs, John Hobson, John Hovey, John How, Wm. Howard, Samuel Howlett, John Kenney, Alexander Knight, John Lane, Jonathan Look, William Nichols, Francis Peabody, T. Perkins, Allan Perley (1635), Wm. Pritchett, Abraham Redington, J. Redington, John Robinson, Walter Roper, Peter Shumway, Robt. Smith, Matthew Stanley, Wm. Towne, Luke Wakling, James Waters, Philip Welch, John Wildes, Josiah Wood and Nathaniel Wood.

In 1683 came a demand to surrender the charter of Topsfield, from the edict of Charles II. Christmas Day of that year, however, the town voted: "We do hereby declare that we utterly decline to yield, either to the resignation of the charter, or to anything that shall be equivalent thereunto, whereby the foundation thereof shall be weakened." King James sent to this country Sir Edmund Andros to act as a governor, but his reign was "short and sweet"; for the colonists soon ordered him to go back to Europe, and forever remain there. This was in 1689.

In 1692 appeared in Topsfield the delusion of witchcraft. In fact, it originated not over five miles from this town. Mrs. Nourse, who was executed at Salem Village, and Mrs. Howe of Ipswich, were sisters, and natives of Topsfield; another sister, who married Isaac Estey, lived in Topsfield, and another woman, Sarah Wildes, were executed by hanging for the crime which they never committed. Mrs. Wildes was hanged July 19, and Mrs. Estey on September 22, 1692. Abigail Hobbs was sentenced to die, but was finally pardoned, when the court "had its eyes opened" to its gross injustice and folly.

He who travels over the territory of Topsfield today can form but a

faint idea of how its topography and its roads appeared in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. Road making was the principal business of the town. People slowly progressed from the foot-path to the bridle-path, then to the cart-ways and the carriage roads of today. The twentieth century finds the highways suitable for the finest automobile and ponderous freight truck.

The oldest cemetery in Topsfield is that near the old residence of Samuel Todd. The church once stood in the east corner, and the burying ground originated from the introduction of an ancient English custom of burying the dead around or beneath the churches. The oldest gravestone standing in 1895 was that of Captain Thomas Baker, who died in 1718, aged eighty-one years. The first gravedigger was John Hobson, chosen by the town March, 1676, to "dig graves for such as shall require him." The fee allowed him for such services was "three shilins sixten for ol graves abov for foot long and thre for ol under." About 1838 what was then styled the new part of the cemetery was first improved and used. This is situated in the southern part of the town.

As a means of punishment in Topsfield, even as late as 1757, stocks were used. The record shows that in December, 1720, the town "allowed to John Wilds for making the Town's Stock and for finding ye Irons and Lock and bringing them to the meeting house and for setting up sd stocks one pound, four shillings."

Until 1822, paupers were "boarded out," as was the old custom of caring for the unfortunate poor of a community. During that year the old Dodge farm was purchased by the town for $3,500 and an almshouse was $6.00 per thousand dollars.

The population of the town has naturally changed with the passing years. In January, 1777, there were seven negro males in Topsfield above the age of seven years. In 1885 the town contained a population of 1,041; in 1900 there were 1,030; in 1910 it was 1,174; and the present United States census bureau gives the population at only 900. The Danvers and Newburyport branch of the Boston & Maine railroad runs through this town, the same having been completed in 1853. The taxable property in the town in 1887 was $1,380,000. The rate of taxation was $6.00 per the thousand dollars worth.

A Town Hall was built in 1873 at an expense of $13,000. The public library is maintained within this structure. It was looked upon at date of construction as among the finest buildings of its kind in all this region.

The medical profession—one we most appreciate when we are ill—has been well represented in Topsfield as the decades have come and gone. Without much doubt, the earliest doctor here was Michael Dwinnell, whose grandfather was a French Huguenot. He settled here in 1668; Dr. Dwinnell was born in Topsfield, and practiced till his death in the middle of the eighteenth century. Richard Dexter of Malden

practiced here from 1740 on till his death in 1783. Other physicians of the town were Drs. Joseph Bradstreet, born in 1727; Nehemiah Cleaveland; John Merriam; Jeremiah Stone, Joseph Cummings, Royal Augustus Merriam, born in 1786, died in 1864 of heart trouble; Charles P. French; David Choate, a native of Essex, came in 1854; Justin Allen began his practice here in the autumn of 1857. The physicians who are now practicing medicine in Topsfield are Dr. John L. Jenkins and Dr. Byron Sanborn.

Topsfield has always taken an interest in local libraries. In 1794, a proprietors' library was established here by several of the leading men of the town. It had two hundred volumes. It existed until 1875, when the Public Library was thrown open to the general public, the old one being merged with the new. The present library is of marked importance to those residing in and near the town. The Educational chapter will dwell upon what was known as the Topsfield Academy, established in 1828.

Primarily, the wealth of this town has ever consisted of its excellent agricultural features, but in addition to these it has accumulated much wealth by its factories, mills, etc. In 1648 iron and copper mining was carried on to some extent, though never very profitably. Governor Endicott owned a large tract of land, on which he discovered copper. Three attempts at making this mine a paying proposition have all failed. Bog iron was found by the first settlers, in the low and swampy portions of the town, and for a time it was successfully mined and used. In June, 1681, the town took over the right to dig this iron, and thus controlled the output. When better and richer iron deposits were discovered in the country, this product was not utilized further.

The first (at least very early) hotel in Topsfield was erected on a lot which later became the site of the shoe factory of John Bailey. Prior to 1780 the Clark family carried on the hotel for many years. The Topsfield House was built in 1807, for a store and tavern. The earliest village blacksmith was Samuel Howlett, who set up his forge in 1658 and continued for many years. Lieutenant Francis Peabody built the first mill in 1672. In 1835 Topsfield supported three good country groceries.

Among the merchants once doing a thriving business for so small a town may be recalled Messrs. J. Bailey Poor, Samuel Adams, Frederick and Nathaniel Perley, William B. Kimball, Andrew Gould, Benjamin P. Edwards, A. B. Richardson, Thomas Leach. Today the business interests are all that could naturally be looked for in a town of its size and character.

The postal business is carried on by Postmaster B. F. Edwards, who also conducts the drug store of the town. He has been postmaster since 1885, a very long period. This is a third-class postoffice, with one rural free delivery extending out into the surrounding country.

The town is noted, especially of later years, for its beautiful "Commons," with its well-kept lawn, its well preserved town building, and its unique soldiers' monument and bronze figure surmounting the solid granite base. This memorial was presented to the town by the late Dr. Allen, who practiced medicine in Topsfield for more than forty years. The churches are of the Congregational and Methodist denominations, both of which are treated in the Church chapter. The lodges of Topsfield include the Odd Fellows, Ancient Order of United Workmen, and the Grange. (See Lodge chapter).

Topsfield was incorporated as a town two hundred and seventy-one years ago. Had all the record books been preserved, what a story it would make in this, the twentieth century. Suffice it to say that the town has been cared for up to the standard of other communities within the "Kingdom of Essex."

The 1919-20 town officers were as follows: Town Clerk, William A. Perkins; Town Treasurer, W. Pittman Gould; Selectmen: William B. Poor, Franklin Balch and Elbridge H. Gilford; Assessors: Franklin Balch, William B. Poor, Charles J. Peabody; School Committee: Thomas L. Jenkins, Charles R. Wait, J. Duncan Phillips; Constable, John L. Fiske; Accountant, Arthur U. Hutchings; Collector of Taxes, John L. Fiske; Forest Warden, Wayland E. Burnham; Inspector of Animals, Charles J. Peabody; Public Weigher, William A. Long.

On the 16th and 17th of August, 1900, the citizens of Topsfield celebrated the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the founding of their town. Despite the torrents of rain that fell throughout the previous night and a part of the most interesting hours of the daytime, the program was carried out, and the thousand or more guests from abroad enjoyed the occasion immensely. The committee organized with the choice of George Francis Dow as chairman, with Alphonso T. Merrill as secretary, at the town meeting of March 5, 1900 (note the early date of commencing plans) and reported the following program as one suitable to be carried out on the dates above given:

1—That the celebration be held during the month of August.

2—That an historical sermon be delivered in the Congregational church on the Sunday next preceding the day of the celebration.

3—That bonfires be lighted on the hills at eight o'clock on the evening preceding the day of the anniversary.

4—That the church and school bells be rung at sunrise.

5—That a military, civic and trades procession be one of the features of the day.

6—That historical and literary exercises be held on the Centre School grounds.

7—That dinner be served in a tent located on the Common, and short speeches be delivered, interspersed with music. Dinner tickets to be provided for invited guests, and sold to others at one dollar each.

8—That athletic games and sports be held on the Common, beginning at two o'clock p. m.

9—That a band concert be given on the Commons at four o'clock p. m. and at 8 o'clock p. m.

10—That a reception or ball be given in the Town Hall in the evening.

11—That the town appropriate the sum of $500, and that an additional amount be raised by subscription.

The report was accepted and adopted by the town, the committee being instructed to increase its membership to twenty-five, by nominating fifteen others, and to report its doings at an adjourned town meeting. The sum of $600 was also appropriated to meet the expenses.

The hard rain of that period greatly "dampened" the interest, but before the two days' celebration had ended, as many as five thousand people enjoyed the anniversary exercises. The parades and beautiful "floats", as well as the display of fireworks the last evening, were scenes long to be recalled by those present. The "Salem News", August 18, 1900, gave a graphic account of this anniversary, the last paragraphs containing the following:

The fireworks given on the Common in the evening were witnessed by nearly three thousand persons. They were beautiful in effect, one of the set-pieces being "Two Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of Topsfield." This was in different colors made by the chemicals in the fireworks. There were a number of set-pieces, but the last one, which said "Good Night," was perhaps the finest of all. The display lasted over an hour, and closed the day's celebration. Taken as a whole, the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary celebration of New Meadows, or Topsfield, will go down into history as a splendid success and a great credit to all who had anything to do with it.

Among those who made set addresses on this occasion were: Senator Henry Cabot Lodge, Hon. John J. Bates, Hon. David M. Little, Charles J. Peabody, George A. Schofield, Hon. Robert S. Rantoul, Rev. Francis A. Poole, Captain John G. B. Adams, Albert A. Conant, John W. Perkins, Hon. Augustus P. Gardner, Hon. William H. Moody, Hon. George Von L. Meyer, General Francis H. Appleton and Edwin O. Foster. The historic sermon preached in the Congregational church the Sabbath before the anniversary was delivered by Rev. A. W. Moore, of Lynn.

Within the last few years, numerous summer residents have come to Topsfield, to pass the heated term, in one of the most health-giving, quiet villages within the Commonwealth. In 1920 the old Meredith place, southwest of the village, a tract containing two hundred acres, was purchased by a wealthy family, who spend their summer and early autumn on the charming hillside overlooking the valley in which Topsfield is situated. The owner of this place has made excellent improvements, including a model cow barn. He is interested in fancy blooded cattle, and is preparing for a more extensive business in this line. He has running water and electric lights throughout house and barns.

T. Emerson Proctor, in the eastern part of the town, has for twenty odd years owned a large tract of land, and at one time made many valuable improvements. There are seventeen houses on this piece of land,

occupied mostly by families in his employ. The money spent by the two men in question has been very large.

At the corner of High street and the Boston-Newburyport turnpike, to the southeast of the village proper and half way up the hill, is an old and well-preserved house. It stands on part of the ground formerly occupied by the old stage station and hotel, where thousands of pioneers hereabouts used to stop. Here the stage-coaches, with four and six horses, used to roll along, and made known their coming by sounding a large tin horn. This property is now owned by the Rev. Gleason family, Mrs. Gleason's parents having conducted and owned the hotel. Rev. George L. Gleason, now eighty-six years of age, has been a Congregational minister in Topsfield and Haverhill for many years. He may be termed "a model of contentment," as will be observed by reading one of his recent poems, written April 6, 1921. This poem has been extensively copied in church and secular newspapers:

As I review the years long passed,
The best of all has been the last.
Not that my childhood days were sad,
Or any part of life was bad;
But, like a spring among the hills—
Creating dancing, rippling rills—
Deepening and broadening as it goes,
Until into the sea it flows;
The tributes all along its course
But clarify and give it force.
Friendships and books have borne their part,
Enlarged my mind, possessed my heart;
Life's cares and toils, its hardships, too,
All pass alike in glad review.
Its path has brightened all the way,
And reached at last the full-orbed day.
Like rivers broadening as they flow,
Deep falls and cascades soon outgrow;
Thus down life's placid stream I float,
My Master, Captain of the boat.
And, as I to the haven near,
Released from care, without a fear,
Along the shore I see the lights,
Hear music, foretaste of delights.
E'er long I'll join the song of praise,
Which I have practiced all my days.

No sooner had the first settlement been effected than preaching began. Certainly as early as 1641 the Rev. William Knight commenced to preach the Gospel to the little handful of pioneers. He was a resident of Ipswich, but preached in Topsfield until his death, in 1655. Following him came Rev. William Perkins, who in 1633 was associated with John Winthrop, Jr., in the settlement of Ipswich; he was among the most accomplished persons within the town. In 1663 the parish church was formed and Rev. Thomas Gilbert chosen as its settled minister. He

was a Scotchman; his course here was not very tranquil, for in 1666 he was charged with sedition, and in 1670 with intemperance; he was finally ejected from the church, and died in Charlestown in 1673. Rev. Jeremiah Hobert was the next minister; he came from Hingham, Massachusetts, and was ordained in 1672; he graduated at Harvard in 1650; he, too, was "human", and was dismissed for unbecoming conduct.

In 1682 a pulpit was erected in the church edifice, and Rev. Joseph Capen began his ministry in Topsfield. His salary was fixed at £65—twenty in silver and forty-five in pounds of pork and beef—per year, with parsonage free. What was styled a "Minister's Farm" was also in use by this young parish. Rev. Capen preached here forty-three years, and was followed by Rev. John Emerson, of Charleston, who was pastor until 1774. Next came Rev. Daniel Beck for four years, and he was succeeded by Rev. Asahel Huntington, followed by Revs. James Frisby McEwen, Anson McCloud, Edward P. Tenney, James Hill Fitts, and Charles Washington Luck, of Marion, Massachusetts, who was ordained here in June, 1887. Since then the pastors have been: Revs. Lundon S. Crawford, 1883-86; Charles W. Luck, 1887-90; Albert E. Bradstreet, 1891-94; Francis A. Poole, 1895-99; Herbert J. Wyckoff, 1900-03; William G. Poore, 1903-08; Benjamin A. Dumm, 1908-13; Arthur H. Gilmore, 1914-1919; Charles E. Reeves, 1919, and at present pastor.

The total membership is now one hundred and thirty-five; Sunday school has a membership of fifty. The present church was erected in 1842 at a cost of $12,000. This church is legally styled The Congregational Parish. It is thoroughly Congregational in its church policy.

Early in the summer of 1830, Charles Dodge and Ezra Glazier held Methodist meetings in Ipswich, where they resided, also in Topsfield, in the barn of Captain John Adams. The first regular minister sent here for the Methodist church was Rev. William Nanseman, who came in September, 1830. During all these intervening years Methodism has flourished in a more or less degree. At first there were fifteen charter members; a house in which to worship was built in the autumn of 1831; it was forty feet square and cost $600. It was removed in 1840 by means of fifty yoke of oxen and suitable wheels, to a lot donated by Mr. Phillips. A parsonage was erected in 1850, costing $700. This church was incorporated into a society under the laws of the State, approved by the Governor, in April, 1847. The church is still doing its own special denominational work, and is in a prosperous condition.

## CHAPTER XV.

## TOWN OF AMESBURY.

The manner of compelling settlement in the early days in New England was not after present-day rules and regulations. The town or

county or state has little to do with the organizations of such subdivisions of a county as this, but it was different in the seventeenth century.

Four years after the settlement at Salisbury was effected, the eye of the pioneers caught a vision of a new town to be, across the river, the beautiful Powow, which seemed to the interested ones to have been created expressly for a natural boundary line between two civil towns. Actuated by these views, they proceeded as early as 1642 to carry out their plans, as will be observed by the following: "Ordered yer shall thirty families remove to the west side of ye Powwas river." At a meeting held ten days later, the time in which the order should be carried into effect was fixed, "before the first of the third month in the yeare 1645."

This order included nearly one-half of the families in Salisbury. But it was found very difficult, if not impossible, to enforce the order, and the removal was very much delayed and partially defeated by the reluctance of the people in quitting their homes to plunge still deeper into the unbroken forest which covered hill and valley in the western territory. Other orders soon followed, calculated to encourage the new settlement by the grant of certain privileges. January 15, 1644, it was "ordered, that those persons that go up to live upon the west side of the Powwas river shall have the sole feeding on that side for the yeare ensuing, and power to make order about fences." Again, in February the same year, this privilege was confirmed and a further inducement given by reducing the taxes to one-half of the rate in the old town. These favorable conditions finally induced a small colony to remove their families to the new territory.

It is now impossible to give the reader any comprehensive idea of the first boundary lines of this township. It is certain, however, that it included all territory west of the Powow river which Salisbury then owned. Its limits included Newton, New Hampshire. Haverhill formed the boundary on the west. The Merrimac and Powow rivers and Kimball's Pond constitute the chief bodies of water in this town. The undulating land—the hills and little valleys—gave a most captivating natural landscape, as one viewed the then "green, glad solitude" of this country. The western portion is especially hilly, while the principal plains are Sandy, Martin and Buttonwood in the East Parish, and the Pond Plain in the western part of the town. The majestic Merrimac river on the south is upwards of a half mile in width. The soil is unusually good for this part of the country, after so many years of cultivation. Mill sites and excellent water-power were found in numerous parts of the town.

The homesteads left by the first comers to Amesbury were sold at different times, commencing in 1647. Not until 1654 were there enough families and freeholders in this new settlement to undertake to form a

new town. Only eighteen legal voters were then within the territory selected. The "Articles of Agreement" of this town were signed May 1, 1654, by the following named, which gives a good idea of who the first settlers of the town were: Joseph Moyce, Thomas Bradbury, Samuel Winsley, George Goldwyer, William Buswell, Edward French, William Allin, Samuel Felloes, Thomas Carter, John Rolfe, John Eaton, Isaac Buswell, William Osgood, John Stevens, Henry Browne, Roger Eastman, and Richard North on the part of the old town, and Anthony Colby, George Martin, John Hoyt, Philip Challis, Jaret Handon, Richard Currier, John Weed, Thomas Macy, Edward Cottle, William Barnes, Thomas Barnard, and Valentine Rowell, on the part of the new town.

The "Articles" above referred to as having been signed by the citizens of both the old and new town covered these general points: Article 1 related to the boundaries and disposition of the common lands. By Article 7 the people of the new town were to contribute to the support of the ministry in the old town until they obtained a settled minister in their own town. Article 8 provided that question of separation should be as follows: "Last of all, it is fully concluded and agreed upon by the inhabitants of each towne that the said townes, upon the assignment of the aforesaid articles of agreement, shall be absolutely dismist of themselves and have no further to meddle with the affairs of each other in any towne matters whatsoever, forever."

Among other interesting paragraphs found in the Town Books are these: Staves at that time were an important article among the colonies, and they readily sold in the West Indies for goods needed here; the commoners claimed fifty of every thousand made from trees cut on the common lands. The old saw-mill also paid tribute to the new town for one-fourth of what was owned here. In 1656 it was found that a second saw-mill was needed, and Richard Currier and Thomas Macy were authorized to build one on the west side of the Powow, with the privilege of using all the timber on the common, not included in the grant to the old mill, "except oak and the right of the people to make canoes." For this privilege they were to pay the town £6 per annum for ten years, in boards at current prices. The prices for sawing were all regulated by the town. As money was then very scarce, the sawing was done upon shares, the mill being allowed one-half.

All was not serene in the churches of that day either, as will be seen by the following from records extant:

Joseph Peasly will not keep silent, but continues to preach, although fined and threatened by the authorities for doing what his conscience told him was his duty. And the new town people would hear him, notwithstanding his preaching "was very weak and unfit." A compromise was finally made, which it was hoped would satisfy the new town and settle the matter, which was becoming very troublesome.

The old town consented that Mr. Worcester preach at the new town, every fourth Sunday. This plan was approved by the General Court, which graciously respited one-half of the fines till the next session. But still Peasly preached, defied the

orders of court and the wishes of Mr. Worcester's church. The General Court assumed a threatening attitude, and forbade his "preaching anymore in this jurisdiction till he give full satisfaction to this court for what have been past." This was ominous of his fate, if he disregarded the order, and very likely he quit preaching. The conflict soon ended by the death of Peasly in 1660.

When this town was incorporated no name was given to it—possibly on account of forgetfulness, but very early that year the name was fixed as follows: "At the same meetin the Towen have named this Towen Amesbury." This name was confirmed by the Court in 1668, but the name was slightly changed to "Emesbury." In 1675 the records show the business of this town to have been farming, fishing, making staves and building vessels. These enterprises also called forth such tradesmen as blacksmiths, tailors, carpenters, weavers, etc. River and harbor fishing came next to farming in importance. The raising of sheep and cattle was in no wise neglected. Small grains were grown in abundance, and fine orchards are mentioned within ten years from the first settlement. Potatoes are not found in the inventories until about 1730.

From 1676 to 1700, possibly later, the Indian scares were too frequent to be pleasing. On several occasions persons were killed by the Indians, but no general Indian uprisings occurred in this settlement.

In 1708 it is found of record that Benjamin Eastman asked permission to build a fulling-mill just below the mill-bridge, on the Powow river, and also to take the water underground across the road to drive the mill. This request was granted, and this is the earliest fulling-mill of which there is any account in this vicinity. In 1706 the first rate to pay for schooling was made, thus placing educational matters on an upward grade.

Other business industries of those early years included the iron works industry. In 1710, Colonel John March, John Barnard, Joseph Brown and Jarvis Ring petitioned for leave to build iron-works on the Powow river, without being taxed, which was readily assented to by the town. The works were built and kept in operation many years. This plant, together with the saw and grist mills, the fulling-mill and stave factories made Amesbury quite a bustling little hamlet. The iron ore was simply "bog-iron" from the bottom of ponds and lakes, which had to be raked to the shore and carted to the melting place. Kingston, however, was the place from which most of the supply of iron came. Most of this iron (a poor grade) was worked up into ship's anchors, boat cranks, saw-mill cranks, spindles for turning the burrs in grist-mills, cart-tires, and fire-dogs.

1810—Ship-building was revived, and carpenters were busy in all the yards. There were built on the river that year twenty-one ships, thirteen brigs and one schooner, with seven other vessels of different sizes. The Nail Factory Company bought of Deacon David Tuxbury half an acre at the pond's mouth, to control flowage of the pond.

June 13—War was declared against Great Britain. This was the War of 1812-14 and was not popular in Amesbury, yet soldiers were recruited in case they were needed.

1818—The Iron and Nail Company was now in full operation, and it was believed that the company was not paying the amount of taxes they should, and an investigation was ordered.

1822—The Amesbury Flannel Manufacturing Company incorporated; capital $200,000.

1829—The first steamer on the Merrimac made trial trip this year.

1832—This year an attempt was made to raise sunflowers and from the seed produce oil. Works were built and farmers induced to raise sunflowers, but it was a failure and the buildings were turned into a tannery.

1836—Powow River Bank was incorporated; capital $100,000. It was this year also in which the poet, John Greenleaf Whittier, removed from his native town of Haverhill to Amesbury.

1852—This season occurred a strike at the Salisbury Mills over the owners not allowing the operatives the old custom of taking a few moments off for a lunch in the forenoon. The town sided with the men and appropriated $2,000 to help provide for the operatives. However, the mill owners won out by importing foreigners to take the place of home mill operatives.

1862—These were Civil War days, and there was a great demand for woolen goods, causing the Salisbury Mills greatly to enlarge their works by removing the old nail factory and erecting a large factory on the spot. At the day of dedication there were many soldiers present, and no such gathering had ever assembled in the town before.

1863—The Amesbury Hat Company was organized this year. The enterprise was highly prosperous. Later this became a branch of the Merrimac Hat Company. A year later the Horton Hat Company was incorporated. A National Bank was established at West Amesbury, with a capital of $50,000.

1864—A charter was granted to build a horse railroad from Newburyport to Amesbury; capital $120,000. The road was constructed and was of great benefit to the community.

1870—The population of the town this year (Federal census), 5,581.

Coming down to the eighties, about 1887, it has been discovered by the writer of this chapter that one of Amesbury's greatest business lines was that of manufacturing carriages. This business commenced in 1800 in a small way, but grew to large proportions, until, in the eighties, thirty firms were engaged in carriage-making within the town. The largest number of carriages built by any one firm in 1886 was 2,500, while another firm produced almost as many.

The first postoffice was established here in 1820, and the postmasters

who have served faithfully and well from that date to now include the following: Captain Jonathan Morrill, Jacob Carter, Philip Osgood, John Walsh, Daniel Blaisdell, under President Tyler; David Bagley, under President Pierce; David Batchelder, under President Lincoln; W. H. B. Currier, J. T. Clarkson, in 1873 and held until 1881, when J. T .Goodrich was appointed, serving until the election of Grover Cleveland in 1884, when Hiram Foot was made postmaster; since then the following have served: Benjamin L. Fifield, Daniel W. Davis, James H. O'Toole, Cyrus W. Rowell, William A. Murphy, Timothy E. Lynes and present postmaster—John McGrath, commissioned July 28, 1919. The last fiscal year's business in this postoffice was $48,242. The Amesbury postoffice was burned on March 18, 1899 and the government erected a handsome structure of its own in 1906 at an expense of $50,000. Its location is at the corner of Main and Aubin streets. There are now two rural free delivery routes extending out from this place. Aggregate length, twenty-seven miles.

Among other commercial interests of Amesbury at this date may be named the three banking houses—the Amesbury Co-Operative Bank, the Powow River National Bank, and the Provident Institution. (See Banking). The newspaper press is represented ably by the "Amesbury Daily News." In the industrial line are the shoe factories of A. J. Anderson, the Nichols Shoe Company and Henry C. Rowe; the Baker Foundry and Machine Company (incorporated); the Merrial Hat Company, incorporated in 1856; the Metalite Company (incorporated); the Murphy Aluminum and Bronze Foundry Co. (incorporated).

The greatest, far-reaching and best commercial and industrial factors of the city are its numerous automobile body manufactories, as herein listed: The Amesbury Body Company; Biddle & Smart Company; Briggs Carriage Company; Currier-Cameron Company; Hinkley & Baxter; Hollander & Morrill; Thomas W. Lane; Miller Brothers; Reardon's Top Shop; Shield's Carriage Company; Unit Manufacturing Company; and the Walker-Wells Company. Recently a unique factory has been installed, which makes large quantities of peanut butter. This is operated by Frank M. Hoyt.

Amesbury was founded two hundred and fifty-two years ago. Much of historic interest has already been given in short paragraphs on the town in its infant days. At present it may be stated that few towns in the great Massachusetts commonwealth have better improvements that are kept up in any better manner. The balance sheet January 1, 1921, shows net bonded indebtedness of $388,000.00. This debt is for fire, sewer, highway, school and water loans. The resources and liabilities of the town are $198,499.55. The Trust Funds account stand as follows: Trust funds (cash and securities), $49,287.98. The items are as follows: Library Funds, $32,967.34; Park funds, $2,000; Poor children's fund, $2,000; Fountain fund, $34.29; Cemetery funds, $12,286.35.

The town officers (elective) for 1921 are as follows: Moderator, George E. Hodge; Town Clerk, George C. Dearborn; Selectmen and Overseers of the Poor: James W. Clark, Charles R. Scott and Joseph O. Donnell; Assessors: George C. Dearborn, James E. Doran, Richard Feeley; Collector of Taxes, J. William Gale; Treasurer, Earl M. Nelson; Board of Health: Samuel L. Porter, Daniel G. Dame, Otis P. Mudge; School Committee: Brainard G. Pillsbury, Gilbert N. West, Robert C. Patten, John A. Wilson, Jr., Ralph N. Good, Guy E. Nickerson. The Tree Warden and Moth Superintendent is Joseph Merrill. Park Commissioners: Charles H. Tucker, Bernard J. Manning, William H. Graves; Superintendent of Streets, John D. Brown; Chief of Police, William S. Rogers; Fish and Game Warden, George O. Barton; Meat, Milk and Provision Inspector, James L. Stewart; Police Matron, Nora Conway.

The population of Amesbury in 1900 was, according to the U. S. census returns, 9,473; in 1910 it was 9,894 and by the last Federal census—that of 1920—it was 10,036. Property valuations in 1920 were: Personal estate, resident, $7,800,000; real estate, resident, $5,700,000; personal estate, non-resident, $149,000; real estate, non-resident, $447,000; Merrimac Valley Power Company, real estate, $886,000; 686 shares of Powow River National Bank, resident, $85,750; Total, $10,169,000. Valuation of real estate, 1920, $7,793,064. Tax rate in 1920 was $26.20 on every thousand dollars.

Chamber of Commerce—What was known as the Amesbury Board of Trade in 1913 published the subjoined article concerning the town. The organization at that time claimed a membership of three hundred from a total population of ten thousand—the largest per capita Board of Trade in New England:

> The town is up with most progressive towns, with the headquarters of a large agricultural society, who does good work of an educational kind, and whose large buildings are devoted to the same in the form of fall fairs and lectures. The town is also favored with the best municipal water plant in the State and a good gas plant, also electric, heat and power company, who are co-operative workers with the Local Board of Trade, inducing new industries to locate in Amesbury; and with this in view, we are able to offer power as low as the large cities.
>
> The present conditions of our manufacturers are prosperous and the largest firms have secured their business for 1914 far in excess of any previous year, manufacturing fifteen hundred pairs of shoes daily. The total manufactured product will come near the five million dollar mark, which means the local mechanics are to have a dividend for their labors of approximately $1,500,000 to spend in living expenses with local merchants and deposit the balance in the savings bank, which already has $3,000,000 of their thrift safely deposited.
>
> The moral end of the town is now a factor in our advance, and we have churches of nearly all denominations, who work unitedly for the spiritual and moral welfare of the town, which is today free from open saloons or places of questionable character. In addition to these are banded together business and professional men who are active in the maintenance of the best conditions possible for the welfare of the younger and rising generation.

Since 1913 the Chamber of Commerce has accomplished much

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

POST OFFICE, AMESBURY

towards building up the town. It has aided in securing all needful internal improvements and has succeeded also in securing numerous factories and other profitable commercial enterprises. From facts furnished the writer by the present (1921) secretary of the Chamber of Commerce, Frank F. Perry, the present-day organization has accomplished certain things herein named, viz:

The present organization of the business men of Amesbury dates from the Board of Trade, which had its birth at a public meeting held at the town hall, November 28, 1911. At this meeting Robert Briggs was elected secretary, and for some years was the chief factor in the active work of the Board of Trade. In April, 1912, the organization was active, and it was voted to pay the moving expenses of McLoud & Anderson. That firm has proved to be a permanent and profitable industry for the town, and is now the oldest and largest shoe factory in operation. In October the organization was still active in attracting new industries to Amesbury. It was voted to pay Finnerty & Cossaboom $500 for moving expenses.

Notable among the new industries which were established in Amesbury through the co-operation of the Board of Trade during this period was the G. W. J. Murphy Company. The firm was already doing a prosperous business in Merrimac, when Secretary Briggs advanced a proposition to the firm to establish a modern plant in Amesbury, where the business could be carried on under conditions which were equal to the best in the state. The buildings of the Hume Carriage Company and those formerly occupied by the George W. Osgood carriage factory were acquired. Building to and remodeling these structures, with the addition of a large new building, resulted in one of the finest brick plants of the kind in New England.

The Board of Trade through a holding company acquired a large factory on Carriage Hill, and this was afterwards sold to Henry C. Rich, who carried on a successful business in the manufacture of shoes for some years. This work concluded, the Board of Trade soon became inoperative because of lack of interest, and possibly also by reason of the overshadowing importance to the community of the prosecution of the World War. When business depression overtook the industrial and commercial life of the country, the merchants of Amesbury felt the need of community effort to revive business. In the fall of 1920, Frank F. Perry was therefore called upon to organize a Merchants' Sale Carnival, and this proved to be so successful that an organization was formed, with Frank F. Perry as secretary-manager, under the name of the Amesbury Chamber of Commerce, dating its birth from January 1, 1921. The new organization gave unremitting attention to the securing of work for the unemployed, which in the winter of 1920-21 were in the majority. In this they were successful, and later secured the Littlefield Heel Company, which moved from Haverhill, also a branch factory of the E. R.

Smith Company, of Boston, manufacturers of clothing, which at once gave employment to a large number of idle men and women.

Monthly meetings during the winter months formed a definite part of the activities of the organization. The January meeting indorsed the daylight saving proposition and proposed an act to enforce penalties against stealing fruits and vegetables from farms. While the reclamation of the salt marsh was looked upon with favor, it was thought too much of a proposition for the Chamber to undertake at that time. The February meeting was addressed by George H. Moulton on salesmanship and by Principal Forrest Brown on the Commercial course at the High School. At the March meeting the school problem was lucidly explained by Superintendent of Schools L. Thomas Hopkins, and the large number who attended testified they had not before heard the question explained so helpfully. The directors of the Chamber of Commerce presented to the Fibreboard Company the advantages of Amesbury over Brockton for their factory, and during the summer of 1921 steps were taken to move this business from that city to Amesbury.

The Amesbury Chamber of Commerce is affiliated with the Massachusetts State Chamber of Commerce and the Essex County Associated Boards of Trade, and in a vigorous and effective manner is working to the great advantage of the people of the community. The 1921 officers of this Chamber of Commerce are as follows: President, E. J. Graves; Vice-president, Colin Camerone; Treasurer, B. F. McLean; Secretary, Frank F. Perry.

Industries—Among the motor-car body builders in Amesbury is the firm incorporated as Hollander & Morrill in the rear of No. 17 Main street, which was organized in 1909 by George H. Hollander and Gayden W. Morrill. At present this concern employs about one hundred workmen. The product of the plant is chiefly sold in New York city, and it is annually increasing. The motive power used is electricity. About fifty per cent. of the workmen here are foreign-born, while the annual output is near the half million mark. The officers of this company are George H. Hollander, president and general manager, and Gayden W. Morrill, treasurer and salesman.

One of the first local carriage manufacturers to take up the manufacture of automobile bodies was the Shields Carriage Company, which began carriage making in 1887. The business was founded by John H. Shields. At the present time twelve workmen are employed in this plant, and it is said that all twelve are American born. The machinery needed is electric-propelled, and the shops are located on Carriage Hill. The superiority of the goods here made finds ready sale throughout Massachusetts. The present officers are George E. Collins, J. Woodbury Currier and Nathaniel W. Currier.

The Biddle & Smart Company, with offices at No. 6 Chestnut street, with shops situated in the vicinity of Railroad avenue, has a plant estab-

lished in 1870 as Cadieu & Biddle. From 1874 on it was known as W. E. Biddle & Company, and from 1880, as Biddle-Smart Company. The Biddle-Smart corporation was organized in 1895. The original partners of Biddle, Smart & Co., William E. Biddle, W. W. Smart, M. D. F. Steere, are all deceased at this time. The business of the company is now the manufacture of aluminum automobile bodies. From 750 to 1,500 men are employed, who are now being paid about twenty per cent. less than a year ago, on account of a general decline in prices in the world's markets. In 1876 the company met with loss by a fire in its plant. The present production of these shops is disposed of almost entirely to the Hudson Motor Car Company, Detroit, Michigan. The works of this extensive plant are all propelled by electric power, generated by its own central power station and through purchase by contract from a local power company. The pay-roll in these shops is over $20,000 weekly; 650 men now are employed in the various departments. The annual business is about $3,000,000. About seventy per cent. of the workmen employed are American born. With a single exception, the Biddle & Smart Company has the largest capacity of building and completely finishing highest grade bodies of any concern in the world. The production is of custom quality in quantity. To gain anywhere near a good understanding of the size of these works, one must needs visit the same. The floor-space is immense! The reader is reminded, if inquiry is made in Amesbury about this company and its earlier enterprises, that it was established in 1870 as a carriage factory—bodies, gears, wheels and all complete. Building after building was added to the plant, until nine were to be seen in all. In one year alone, this concern shipped four thousand carriages. The sales ran to three-quarters of a million dollars, and they furnished employment to almost if not quite three hundred men. When the automobile came into fashion, the buggy trade naturally declined; but having changed the extensive carriage works over to a plant for making parts of automobiles, the business was in no wise injured, but rather enhanced.

The Thomas W. Lane Carriage Factory has long been a factor in the business enterprises of Amesbury. It was established in 1874. "Sterling Quality" being his slogan or trade-mark, he has ever lived up to its meaning in the production of his carriages and buggies. When many others abandoned carriages and took up the manufacture of automobiles, Mr. Lane remained in the original trade, and bought out several of the other carriage firms in his city. He patented a cross-spring, by which he increased his sales from three hundred to six hundred carriages a year.

The plant of the Bailey Electric Automobile, owned by the S. R. Bailey & Co., incorporated, is another enterprise that has turned out its thousands of electric propelled automobiles. Another well-patronized factory is the Amesbury Lamp and Plating Company. It makes electric

dome lights, top lamps, step-lamps, inverted dash-lamps, etc. The senior member of this company is William J. Bird, who was long a maker of carriage lamps, before the automobile was invented.

The birthplace of the electric-lighted and electric-started automobile was in the shops of Gray & Davis (incorporated) at Amesbury The business increased, on account of improvements made by these genius light-makers, until in 1913 they had branch plants in a half dozen large cities in this country. A head office is kept open in Boston. This was the first plant erected in the world for the exclusive manufacture of automobile lamps. The invention brought out in this factory, by which a successful "electric-starter" for automobiles was made, has revolutionized this part of the modern auto, the world 'round.

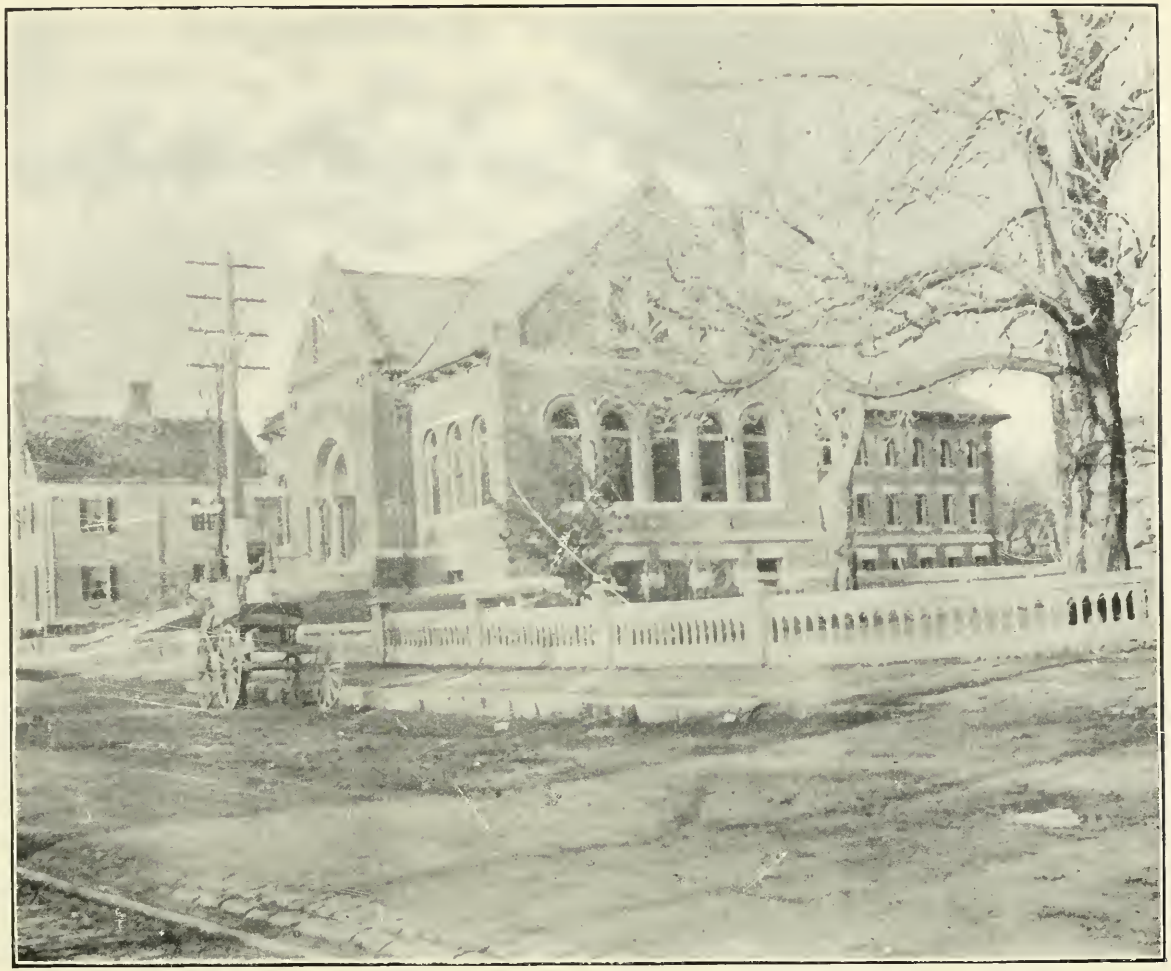
As long ago as 1913 one of the largest manufacturers of closed bodies in the white, in New England, was that of the Walker-Wells Company of Amesbury, incorporated that year with officers as follows: Harlan P. Wells, president; George Walker, vice-president; James H. Walker, treasurer; Henry Miller, secretary. The company was formed in 1911, and succeeded the Amesbury branch of the Walker Carriage Company.

The most "ancient" of all industries in Amesbury is the plant of the Merrimac Hat Company, still in existence. The manufacture of hats in Amesbury dates back to the settlement of the town, for one of the seventeen original proprietors of the place was a hatter. In 1767 the town granted a location for the first hat factory on "the Ferry road next to Powow river." For many years business was conducted there; in fact, at no time has the hatter's business gone down at that point. The present recent year business dates back to 1838, when Isaac Martin began in the house basement of the residence of Albert Gale, near the Powow bridge. Later he moved to a building on the wharf near by, in 1853. Abner L. Bailey became interested in the business and after continuing it some time under the title of the Merrimac Hat Company, a new company was formed, called the Amesbury Hat Company. The town landing near Powow River bridge was bought and thereon was built a large hat factory. In 1864 Alfred Bailey organized the Horton Hat Company, which began operations, continued until July, 1866, then sold to the Merrimac Company. Additions were made to the Horton Hat Company from time to time, it ever being looked upon as one of the town's best industries. In recent years a better set of buildings have been provided, and tens of thousands of dollars have been paid to those employed in the hat-making business. Here are made misses', ladies' and children's wool hats and ladies' and children's straw hats. The officers of this company for many years have been Messrs. H. V. Barrett of Boston, president; George W. Emerson, treasurer; William H. Hastings, general manager.

Public Library—Early in the nineteenth century, about 1827, the

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS



PUBLIC LIBRARY, AMESBURY

following named persons formed an association, secured a room over Mr. Allen's store on Market Square, and purchased two hundred books. Jonathan Williams, Edward Allen, James C., Nathaniel and Cyrus Currier, Ezekiel Enos, Thomas and Samuel J. Brown, Seth and Thomas J. Clark, Hiram Collins, T. P. Morrell, Jona Barnard, Daniel Blaisdell, William and Nathan Swett, Daniel Long, and John Herbert. The membership paid one dollar or more per year for the up-keep of the library, which was kept intact until some time in the forties, when the books were distributed among different families. It was not until 1856 that any attempt was made to organize a permanent library. A meeting was held, when letters were read from Joshua Aubin, of Newburyport, a former agent of the old Salisbury Mills Company, in which he stated that Gardner Brewer of Boston had placed in his hands between seven and eight hundred books to form the nucleus of a library for the benefit of the operatives employed at the village mills in Amesbury and Salisbury. The citizens much interested in this matter included the following: John G. Whittier, the gifted "Quaker Poet"; Rev. B. P. Byram, Benjamin Evans, William C. Binney, Philip Osgood, John Hume, Henry Taylor, John Kimball, Stephen Woodman, William H. B. Currier, William and Edward Allen, Charles M. Leonard and Francis Brown, Dr. Thomas Sparhawk, James W. Briggs, Robert W. Patten, William Carruthers, O. S. Bayley, and a few other citizens of the town. The books were kept at various places until the Salisbury Milling Company erected a building in 1865 on Friend street, the lower part being given over to library purposes and the upper story to the Odd Fellows' use.

In 1872 the association was incorporated under Massachusetts laws, with these officers: William C. Binney, president; Philip Osgood, vice-president; William Allen, treasurer; James H. Davis, secretary. Mr. Davis, who had previously served, was appointed librarian. In March, 1889, the city of Amesbury took over the library under provisions of the statutes of the commonwealth. The corporation voted to give $200 per year towards the library, the same to come out of the dog fund. Later, Jonathan Wadleigh left by his will $500 to the library, and Widow Fowler left a bequest of $5,000. A brother and sister, Isaac and Mary A. Barnard, natives of Amesbury, and personal friends of the poet Whittier, gave to the library, at their decease, the former in 1890 and the latter in 1897, funds to the amount of $30,000. Finally the old Ordway property on Main street was purchased at $5,500 and there the present spacious and well-appointed library building was erected. It was built at a cost of $20,650, being dedicated by the trustees in December, 1901. Later the town voted to appropriate $3,000 for additional book-stacks and other fittings. The first meeting in the new building was held by the board, April 23, 1902. This structure, an ornament to the city, was constructed of gray brick, with Indiana limestone and granite. There is ample stack room for forty thousand volumes. The interior is finished

in quartered oak. The Whittier Home Association donated a handsome clock in the reading room as a befitting memorial to the beloved poet. Ten years ago this library boasted of having nearly 18,000 volumes on its shelves. It is a thoroughly up-to-date public library, the same having been made possible only by the forethought and persistent labors of the early promoters, who gave both time and money to bring about the desired end. It means much to the sprightly city, and speaks of a high moral, intellectual standard in the community. The late reports state that there are now 19,220 books on the shelves; magazines, 2,461; number of books issued in 1920 was 53,000. Many daily, weekly and monthly papers are here on file. The present trustees of the library are James H. Walker, Augustus N. Parry, J. Warren Huntington, William W. Hawkes, Alfred C. Webster, J. Albert Davis, Edward A. Brown, Albert G. Willey. The librarian is Alice C. Follansbee.

Amesbury is noted among other things in that it was the home of one of America's most celebrated poets—John Greenleaf Whittier. At the age of twenty-eight years he purchased the cottage on Friend street that was his home the remainder of his life. From his infancy he accompanied his parents, who were devout Quakers in religious faith, from their home in East Haverhill, when they came to worship at the Friends' meeting-house in Amesbury. Three years before making his home in Amesbury, Mr. Whittier was engaged in anti-slavery work, and was an editor in New York and Philadelphia, as well as of "The Villager" in his home town. During his residence in Amesbury he wrote four hundred and twenty-two of his more than five hundred poems. He was an ardent worker for the political party that best tended to liberate the slaves. He was a candidate for congress from this district when it was Free-Soil in sentiment. The landscape scenery in and around Amesbury gave him an inspiration by which he was enabled to pen many of his finest poems. He donated scores of valuable volumes to the Amesbury Library, and was influential in securing the splendid legacy of the Barnards for this institution. This beloved "Quaker Poet" died September 7, 1892, the funeral services taking place in the garden at the rear of the Whittier Home. He was buried in the family plot at Union Cemetery. Peace to his ashes!

Churches—Thirty-five years ago the directors gave the following on the church organizations of Amesbury at that date: "There are eleven churches and societies in this town, viz: Baptist, Episcopal, Catholic, Friends, Free Baptists, Methodist, Universalist, Christian Baptist. The most ancient of these societies is the Friends', organized in a house built in 1705. From that date they have always had a house of worship on this street, which was very properly named for their order, "Friend street." The society at Rocky Hill was organized in 1714, as the Second Parish in Salisbury, and the present church built in 1785. Most of the other churches have been erected and the societies organized within the last century."

Town records give such paragraphs on churches as follows: "In 1831 a Congregational church was organized at the Mills, Eleazer A. Johnson being chosen clerk. In 1836 a Universalist church was formed at West Amesbury and a building erected. St. James Church was consecrated in 1836, and Rev. Henry M. Davis was then selected a stated supply for one year. April, 1845, the Universalist church was incorporated. This society purchased the old Episcopal church building and engaged Rev. Strickland. A new church building was dedicated in 1846. In 1849 the Free Baptist Church on Friend street was completed. In 1866, at the close of the Civil War, the Catholic people built at the Mills, the structure being dedicated August 26, 1866. In 1867 a Baptist church was organized at West Amesbury, April 5."

From certain information blanks sent out to various churches by the compiler of this work, and from old records and histories, the subjoined articles on the churches of Amesbury have been gleaned:

St. James Episcopal Church was a church society here as early as 1740, but the regular church as known today was formed or reorganized in 1833. It now has a membership of 350, with a Sunday school of sixty-three attendance. A rectory was built in 1887, and the present beautiful edifice was erected in 1900 at an expense of $22,000. The total property of the church is not far from $30,000. Since 1885 the rectors have been in the following order: Revs. Henry Wood, 1885-88; Edward F. Hill, 1889-91; Frederick E. Cooper, 1891-93; George M. Griffith, 1893-95; Charles N. Norris, 1896-97; Robert LeBlanc Lynch, 1898-1908; Arthur L. Fenderson, 1909-11; Louis A. Parsons, 1912-14; Frank M. Rathborn, 1914-18; Robert Le Blanc Lynch, 1918, and still rector.

The Friends' Society is that to which John G. Whittier, the poet, belonged, and where he and his parents long worshiped. The "meeting" was established in 1702 and has continued through the multiplied years until now. Its total membership today is about seventy-three souls. There is no minister at present. Charles H. Jones and wife Elizabeth were ministers in this society for many years. There are other Friends' churches in Essex county, at Salem, Lawrence and Lynn.

The Universalist church was organized in 1843, and had seven pastors before it became decadent during the days of the Civil War. It was reorganized by Rev. Nathan R. Wright. The first church was on Friend street. The society purchased Washington Hall in 1871, and this was used for a place in which to worship until the present brick building was constructed in 1904, during the pastorate of Rev. Francis W. Gibbs. The present total membership is eighty-six, and the Sunday school enrollment is about forty-five pupils, with Mr. Gilbert West as its superintendent. Mrs. Louise Holt was the reorganizer of the Sunday school. The pastors of this church have included the following since 1870: Revs. W. R. Wright, 1870-74; B. L. Bennett, 1874-77; Albert C. White, 1880-81; Anson Titus, 1884-87; Albert C. White, 1888-91; J. H.

Little, 1892-94; F. W. Gibbs, 1895-1906; Rufus H. Dix, 1907-09; T. H. Saunders, 1910-12; R. C. Leonard, 1917-18; Barton Watson, 1918, and still pastor.

Since 1885 the ministers serving the Methodist Episcopal Church at this point were Revs. J. C. Felt, C. W. Dockerel, James Cairus, D. E. Miller, L. D. Bragg, H. D. Deets, M. C. Pendexter, F. K. Gamble, R. J. Elliott, C. F. Parsons, I. H. Reed, Mathew L. Simpson, present pastor. The present membership is 181; that of the Sunday school is about 200 pupils; the superintendent is Edwin J. Graves. In 1887-8 a church building was erected; the main building is of wood, while the vestry part is of brick. The historical record books show that in 1847 Rev. W. Huntly was appointed to Amesbury. In 1850 the First Methodist Church was built. Rev. Charles C. Burr was pastor in 1850-51. The first building erected as a church was burned April, 1887. The second church was built 1887-88. This building stands on Main street, opposite the Public Library.

The Congregational denomination is old at Amesbury. One society was formed "At the Mills" in 1831, with Jonathan A. Sargent and George Perkins as first deacons, the first clerk and founder being E. A. Johnson, who served faithfully and well for forty years. December 6, 1881, the Congregational church at the Mills celebrated its fiftieth anniversary. The first clerk and first pastor were present on this interesting historic occasion. The history of this church extends back a great length of time, and, of course, has involved many changes in its membership and general work. The church has come down through the years of history-making in the United States, and is still one of the institutions calculated to uplift the community in which it is supported.

What is now styled the Main Street Congregational Church of Amesbury is an old church organization, but no sketch of it has been furnished the compiler of this work. It has a good membership, and is a popular church.

The Baptist church of West Amesbury was organized April 5, 1867. Rev. E. M. Bartlett was installed pastor in October, 1872. The church is still numbered among the religious influences of the place.

The Sacred Heart is a French Catholic church, situated on Friend street. It was organized in 1903, and now has a total membership of 553 families and is made up of 1,798 souls. Rev. J. B. Bassiere served from 1903 to 1913, and Rev. J. H. Cotei has officiated from 1913 to the present date. Soon after the organization of the church a rectory and parochial school were provided. The number of pupils in the school is 195 boys and 206 girls, total 401; number of teachers employed, 8. This church and auxiliary school care especially for the French-speaking people of Amesbury and immediate vicinity.

Star-of-the-Sea Catholic Church is situated at Salisbury Beach, and was built by Rev. Father Nilan, now Bishop of Hartford. It was completed in 1896, the opening being July 4th of that year. It is es-

pecially designed to give summer tourists and beach visitors of the Catholic faith an opportunity to worship. It is usually open from July until October of each season. The building is a frame structure, with a seating capacity of about 700.

As has been well said by J. H. O'Neil, Esq., in writing on Amesbury Catholicity: "No earthly record discloses the identity of the first soul to bear the faith to the district now embraced by the Parish of Saint Joseph. Who that venturesome pioneer was, and when he came, are matters of conjecture, rather than certainty. He may have come before the opening of the eighteenth century, for as early as 1792 there were Catholics in small numbers at Newburyport, which from the very beginning was the center of religious interest towards which the Catholics of Amesbury and Salisbury turned. It is told that Father Perron, a French priest, passed through this section about 1650, but he must have found it a barren region from a Catholic view-point." To quote Mr. O'Neil:

> The visit of Bishop Cheverus to Newburyport in 1808 was a notable event in the early history of this territory. On that visit he officiated at several ceremonies and visited the few Catholic families of the town. It is not unlikely that Father Matignon also stopped there on his trips on horseback from Boston as far as Portsmouth, ministering to the struggling bands of Catholics here and there.
>
> In 1827 Bishop Fenwick made an Episcopal visit and said mass on a spot not far from the present court house. If during these years there were any Catholics in Amesbury or Salisbury, they undoubtedly joined in the services at Newburyport, as did their brethren in larger numbers later.
>
> In the first half of the decade of 1830 to 1840, there is record of a Catholic family in Amesbury. There were Irish immigrants long before, as early as 1803, and some of them, at least, were unquestionably of the household of the faith, but the first clear evidence of Catholics in the town seems to come in the year 1834. In 1840 there were several families, and in the next ten years they increased steadily. The new-comers were practically all from Ireland. They had come to work out their destiny in a new land. Of earthly possessions they had but little, but they came fortified with steady bodies and determined souls, and above all with a faith that knew no yielding.

The first priest came to Newburyport in the early forties, and was followed by Father Lennon, who became pastor at Newburyport in 1848, and for many years was in charge of the members of this faith at Amesbury as well. To the church at Newburyport the pioneers were wont to go on Sundays and holidays to perform their religious duties. Thus these devout souls trudged their way five miles and back to Newburyport to attend mass. Occasionally mass was offered at the house of William Daley in Amesbury, one of the first settlers. It is very likely that the first mass within the confines of the parish was said at his house on Dondero's Court, and some of the older people still recall attending mass and receiving Holy Communion from the hand of the priest on the doorstep, the house being too small for all to enter.

More Catholics moved into the town, and there arose an ardent be-

lief that regular services should be held in some way at this point. This began about 1859, when the Catholics of the town petitioned Father Lennon for this privilege, and with their petition went a liberal offering. The list of names which were attached to the petition just mentioned numbered more than one hundred and fifty, the signers pledging themselves to raise the sum of $9,250 to be used towards erecting a church in Amesbury. Father Lennon, of course, granted such a petition as this, and plans were made for services in Washington Hall on Market street. Easter Sunday, April 24, 1859, was observed at that place by the Catholics in such numbers that they excited the admiration of their fellow townsmen. An important event took place here June 22, 1862, when Father William Daley, the first priest to be ordained from this district, at whose house the faithful formerly gathered, sang his first mass.

On the site of the present church of St. Joseph, the foundations of the first church were laid—modest and simple was the first edifice compared to the handsome present-day structure, yet it was the largest and most expensive building of its kind at that time in Amesbury. Its cost was $15,000. It was ninety-eight feet long and fifty feet wide, and contained one hundred and sixteen pews. It was dedicated August 26, 1866, and so great was the throng that not nearly all could gain entrance to the building. It was estimated that not less than two thousand persons were present. This edifice served well its purpose until the present structure was erected, of which mention is made later on. In September, 1867, property was bought on Pleasant street for a parochial residence, for Amesbury was no longer a mission of Newburyport, but a parish by itself. The first pastor was Rev. John Brady, who three years before had been ordained in Ireland. He was enthusiastic over the project of building a church edifice large enough to accommodate his growing congregation. Much of the mason work on the foundation was performed by his parishioners at eventide, after having ended their own daily toil. All worked with one end in view and succeeded well in their undertakings. Ground was first broken in 1872, and the completed edifice was dedicated May 7, 1876, by Archbishop Williams. It is still one of the finest church buildings in this section of New England. The grounds, the convent and school, each and all are monuments to the faithfulness and liberality with which this people have sacrificed to bring about these laudable ends.

In 1885 the doors were first opened to the fine parochial school of this parish, and with the school came also the convent to furnish a home for the Sisters of St. Joseph. The parochial residence was the last of the dignified group of parish buildings to be erected. When this was completed, the work of building by Father Brady was about done. He had been assisted in his labors during a part of these years by Revs. M. J. McCall, 1873-76; David J. Herlihy from 1881 to 1884; by Rev. Francis X. Burke, from 1884 to 1893.

The second regular pastor was Rev. John J. Nilan, then assistant pastor at St. James church, Boston. He began at once to improve the property by purchasing the old Sparhawk place, and demolished the old buildings thereon. New altars in the main church were provided, the same being of chaste Italian marble, beautifully designed and executed with great skill. When free of all debts, this fine edifice was consecrated to God. This occurred April 28, 1901, and the honor of consecration fell to Bishop Brady, who had erected the building thirty years before. Bishop Brady after a wonderful career passed from earth's shining circle, January 6, 1910. His body lay in state in the Amesbury church, which he had built so many years before, was watched over throughout the night, and the following day was laid to rest in St. Joseph's Cemetery.

In June, 1910, Rev. Denis F. Lee, then pastor of St. Agnes church, Reading, became the third pastor in Amesbury. His assistant was Rev. Howland J. Harkins, who succeeded the faithful assistant, Rev. William J. Reardon. Father Harkins died and was succeeded by Rev. Stephen J. O'Brien, a son of the parish. During the late World War, Father O'Brien volunteered as chaplain in the army in 1918, and was succeeded by Rev. John W. Spencer, Rev. McCool and Rev. Tuscher. This parish has had only three pastors in all its history, the third and present one being Father Denis F. Lee, under whose management the church buildings have been much improved, while the spiritual church has been made stronger in the hearts of his membership.

In closing, it is well to note that a golden jubilee of this church was commemorated October 28-31, 1917—fifty years of eventful church life. It will long be remembered by people in and near the city of Amesbury.

There are but few if any churches in the whole country where so many priests have been members of a church in a town no larger than Amesbury, and have received training and gone forth as priests. The number is seventeen; of that number ten were living in 1917. Their names follow: Rev. William Daley, deceased; Rev. Joseph H. Gallagher, deceased; Rev. M. F. Higgins, deceased; Rev. Timothy Whalen, St. Ann's Hospital, Baltimore, Md.; Rev. P. A. Lynch, O. S. A., Immaculate Conception, Hoosick Falls; Rev. Patrick Carr, deceased; Rev. James H. O'Neill, LL.D., Sacred Heart, Boston; Rev. Thomas Moylan, deceased; Rev. Martin Cavanaugh, deceased; Rev. Thomas A. Walsh, Our Lady of Grace, Chelsea, Mass.; Rev. James R. Nulty, St. Mary's, Dedham, Mass.; Rev. James Doran, St. Michael's, Hudson, Mass.; Rev. Michael J. Manning, St. Anne's, Somerville, Mass.; Rev. John M. Burke, Sacred Heart, Boston; Rev. Michael J. Kenny, St. Joseph's, Avoca, Wis.; Rev. Stephen J. O'Brien, St. Joseph's, Amesbury, Mass.; Rev. John J. McGrath, St. Mary's Cathedral, Trenton, N. J.

Twelve members of the Amesbury parish have consecrated their lives to the cause of religion. The names of these devoted women can-

not be given here, but the church record says "they will shine amongst those 'who instruct many unto justice.'"

## CHAPTER XVI.

## TOWN OF BOXFORD.

In the beginning, what is now the town of Boxford comprised a large part of western Rowley. About 1750 there were several villages in Rowley, viz: Rowley, Rowley Village, and Rowley Village by the Merrimac; the first of these is still Rowley; the last is Bradford, and Rowley Village was given the name of Boxford.

The first settler in the present town of Boxford was Abraham Redington, who arrived certainly as early as 1645, being an emigrant from England. He located near the Hotel Redington, in the East Parish Village. Before a score of years had passed, there was a goodly settlement here. Writers usually place the following-named as having been pioneer settlers at some date in the seventeenth century: Robert Andrews, from England, 1656; John Cummings, in 1658; Robert Stiles, of Yorkshire, England, 1659; Joseph Bixby, from Ipswich, 1660; Robert Eames, from England, in 1660; William Foster, from Ipswich, 1661; Robert Smith, 1661; Zaccheus Curtis, from Gloucester, 1661; John Peabody, from Topsfield, 1663; Samuel Symonds, 1663; Daniel Black, a Scotchman, about 1665; Moses Tyler, from Andover, 1666; John Kimball, from Wenham, about 1666; Joseph Peabody, from Topsfield, about 1671; Samuel Buswell, from Salisbury, 1674; George Blake, from Gloucester, about 1675; Daniel Wood, about 1675; John Perley, 1683; Thomas Perley, from Rowley, about 1684; Thomas Hazen, from Rowley, 1684; William Peabody, from Topsfield, 1684; Timothy Dorman, from Topsfield, 1688; Joseph Hale, from Newbury, about 1691; Luke Hovey, from Topsfield, 1699; and Ebenezer Sherwin, about 1699.

When the place was incorporated, August 12, 1685, its name was changed from Rowley Village to Boxford, after Boxford, England. At that date the settlement consisted of about forty families. The town then embraced a part of present towns of Groveland and Middleton.

Boxford escaped Indian troubles such as other frontier towns endured, and its only connection with that race was when certain heirs of the old sachem of the Agawams, Masconomet, laid claim to this soil. They met at the house of Thomas Perley in January, 1701, and a quit-claim deed was obtained from them upon the payment of some refreshments in the nature of "rum and vittels", together with the paltry sum of £9 in money.

Boxford did not escape the witchcraft delusion, for in a former reliable history of this part of Massachusetts the following is found: The

witchcraft delusion visited the settlement, and one of the wives and mothers of the town was condemned to pay the death penalty. The convicted woman was Rebecca, wife of Robert Eames. She was in a house near Gallows' Hill in Salem, when Rev. George Burroughs was executed, August 19, 1692, "and the woman of the house" felt a pin stuck into her foot, as she said. Mrs. Eames was accused of doing it, and convicted of witchcraft, but was later reprieved, having lain in jail over seven months. She survived until May 8, 1721, when she died, aged eighty-two years.

Topsfield was used as a burying place by this settlement until the incorporation of the town. The oldest burying ground in Boxford is near the residence of Walter French, well known to settlers of these parts not over a third of a century ago. The oldest stone erected there bears the date of 1714. The next cemetery, that near the old Barnes place, and the oldest in West Parish, began to be used about 1800. In 1807 the cemetery near the First Church was platted, and the later one in West Parish in 1838.

A population table compiled at various periods for this town would be almost a curiosity to behold, so many changes have been made in the territory. In 1765 it contained 851 souls; in 1860 it had a population of 1,020; the State census in 1885 gave Boxford 840, and at present it has a population of only 588. More than a century ago there were several negroes in Boxford, and one named Neptune served as a brave soldier in the War for Independence.

"The Moral Society of Boxford and Topsfield," established in 1815, had a wonderfully good effect on the community as against Sabbath breaking, profanity and intemperance, with kindred vices.

The Boston & Maine railroad line runs through this town, the same having been constructed in 1853. Thirty-five years ago the taxable property of the town was valued at $650,000. The first medical doctor to take up his practice here was Dr. David Wood, a native of the town, born 1677, died 1744. (See Medical chapter.)

The history of Boxford was written and published by Sidney Perley, in 1880, in a beautiful four hundred page book. The bi-centennial anniversary services were held here in August, 1885, at the First Church.

The first public house or tavern in the town was kept by William Foster from 1687 on for a number of years. Others who have presided over inns or hotels of later dates include Solomon Dodge, 1754; Lieutenant Asa Merrill, 1788; Phineas Cole, 1800; Captain Josiah Batchelder, 1840; Elisha G. Bunker, in 1836; John Brown, in 1837; the hotel Redington was opened by Daniel S. Gillis about 1885, and it was the only public house in Boxford then.

Every town in the county has its own particular industries and retail business houses, as well as professional interests, and of course Boxford comes in for its share of all. While it must here be stated

that this is an agricultural more than a manufacturing district, and has so been noted for nearly three hundred years, the fact of possessing such rapid running mill-power streams has also made it the home of numerous factories which have hummed and whirled with the passing of the years.

The Peabody saw and grist mill, constructed about 1695 by old William Peabody, was the first attempt to harness the waters of the town for milling purposes. This milling plant existed until 1845. Another saw mill was erected in 1710 by Thomas Hazen, Jacob Perley and Dr. David Wood. It went to final ruin and decay about Civil War days. Shoe pegs were also made in large quantities at the last named saw mill up to about 1863. Other mills were the Howe saw and grist mills, established in 1710, by Messrs. Kimball, Dorman and Samuel Fisk. About 1795 a grist mill was built by Asa Foster. The Day mill, the Richard Pearl mill, 1740, was changed to a saw and box-mill, about 1848, and three years later was burned. Herrick's saw mills were established in 1760 by John Hale. Captain Porter erected his mill in 1836, and added a grist mill to the saw mill part in 1839.

Possibly very few present-day residents of Essex county know that once the iron industry was carried on with considerable success in this town, but such is the fact. The first business, aside from that of farming, was that of the iron works of Henry Leonard, established 1669. The capital was at first £1000 sterling. The site of these ancient works is just in the rear of the Andrews mills of a later date. These works were run until about 1685.

In 1770 iron smelting works were established by Samuel Bodwell and Thomas Newman, and there they continued to smelt iron until 1805. The Diamond Match factory later utilized the site for its works. But long prior to its use for that industry, there were plants for making cotton goods, then a grist mill; there were also produced at that point a large number of wooden trays, bowls, etc. In 1867 the entire property was sold to Byam & Carlton, makers of matches, and five years later the plant was taken over by the great Diamond Match Company. Eighteen hundred tons of timber were there cut into matches annually for many years.

The shoe industry has also touched Boxford to a good degree. As early as 1837 the estimated value of shoes made here was $52,975. Among the men thus engaged were Samuel Fowler, Marion Gould, John Hale, and Edward Howe & Son. The last mentioned were the only survivors in this line in 1887.

The business interests of this town, including West Boxford and East Boxford (at the depot), are now limited to a few small stores and shops. The churches, of course, are still there, and in a flourishing condition for a country town. There are two small but valuable public libraries—one in West Boxford, the other in Boxford proper. The dog-tax collected annually goes into the library fund for these libraries.

There is also a saw mill, near the depot at East Boxford. While at present there is not much doing in this industry, many millions of feet of native lumber have been cut at this mill in years gone by. A woodyard is also run in connection with this mill, and here hundreds of cords of slabs are sold annually for fuel to the surrounding country.

There are postoffices at Boxford, East Boxford and West Boxford. The two latter have only been established a few years, while Boxford proper has been serving the people of the town since an early date. Since President Cleveland's first administration in about 1885, the office has been kept by Postmasters F. A. Howe, H. L. Cole and the present postmaster, Charles A. Bixby, whose commission dates July 3, 1908. This is a fourth-class office.

The town officers for Boxford in 1920-21 were as follows: Town Clerk, John W. Parkhurst, term expires in 1923; Selectmen: Harry L. Cole, Charles Perley, and Charles F. Austin; Assessors, same as Selectmen; Treasurer, William K. Cole; Collector of Taxes, Charles M. Moulton; Town Accountant, Rev. Emery L. Bradford; Committee on School Funds: William K. Cole, William B. Howe and John W. Parkhurst; Constables: David Mighill, Alvard P. Lyon; Forest Warden, Clarence E. Brown.

December 31, 1920, the following was shown by the town assessors' book and town records: Real estate valuation, April 1, 1920, $376,585; Real estate buildings, $434,708; Personal estate, $176,514. Number of polls assessed, 166; Persons assessed on polls only, 40; Residents assessed on property, 219; Non-residents assessed on property, 189; Corporations and others (resident or non-resident), 22; Dwellings, 279; Acres of land, 14,269; Horses, 153; Cows, 381; Neat cattle, 99; Sheep, 182; Swine, 48; Fowl, 3,898; Value of fowl, $7,753.

Boxford has had within its borders at least three churches and parishes. The First Church parish house was commenced in 1699; it was thirty by thirty-four feet in size, and eighteen feet high. Rev. Thomas Symmes was the first pastor; he preached his first sermon in Boxford, April 27, 1701; salary £16 in money, thirty-five cords of wood, a parsonage, with ten acres of land. There are now 122 members, and a Sunday school with an attendance of about 35 pupils. The present edifice was erected in 1837, and is valued at $10,000. The following have served as pastors since 1886: Revs. R. R. Kendall, until 1891; Emery L. Bradford, 1892 to 1902; Laird W. Snell, 1902-04; Walter B. Williams, 1904-09; E. A. Roys, 1909-13; E. L. Bradford, June, 1913, to present time —summer of 1921.

The Second Congregational Church of Boxford was formed at West Boxford in 1736. The present edifice was erected in 1843, costing $5,000. The pipe organ was installed in 1895, at a cost of $1,500; new heating plant placed in church in 1919, costing $1,000; and in 1875 the parsonage was provided at an expense of $6,000. The church has endowment

funds as follows: Invested in bonds, $24,000; John Tyler Fund, $1,000; Ephraim Foster Church Fund, $1,000; Emmeline Gardner Fund, $500; Alonzo J. Henley Fund, $1,000; Ephraim Foster Second Fund, $2,000. Total, $28,500.

The church has been served by pastors since 1885 as follows: Revs. Charles L. Hubbard, 1885 to 1905; F. Arthur Sanborn, 1906-11; William Taylor, 1912-13; Owen James, 1914-15; Edward D. Disbrow, 1916-21. The present membership is 70; present attendance at Sunday school, 75. The Sunday school is under charge of Superintendent Eugene A. Bascom. Rev. Cushing (son of Rev. Caleb Cushing) was ordained as the first pastor of this church.

The Third Parish in Boxford was an off-shoot of the old First Church. It was incorporated as the Third Congregational Society, April 19, 1824. No regular church organization was ever perfected, but services were held for ten years. The last services were held in 1834. In 1826 they had a membership of almost one hundred. The preaching was quite liberal, far from the old Congregational doctrine.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## TOWN OF MIDDLETON.

From records and notes written up in the eighties by David Stiles, and from present-day interviews, the following facts have been gathered and carefully compiled into a sketch of the history of Middleton. Mr. Stiles begins his sketch with this paragraph:

> This town is about five miles long from north to south, and about three miles wide, bounded north by Andover and North Andover, on the west by North Reading, south by Danvers and east by Topsfield and Boxford. The larger part of the town is on the left bank of Ipswich river, which runs from southwest to northeast. Another stream is Beech Brook, named from the original beech trees along its banks. Its rise is in Andover, and its mouth is near the old box mill of J. B. Thomas, into the Ipswich river. Middleton Pond is the largest body of water in this town. The town has hills and valleys and there are many productive farms. In population the village has greatly increased in fifty years, but the country districts have gone back. This town was settled sixty-eight years before the act of its incorporation.

In 1639 the town site was one unbroken wilderness, except one Indian plantation near the great pond. Richard Bellingham's grant, dated November 5, 1639, says: "In it is a pond (Wilkins Pond) and an Indian planation." This grant contained seven hundred acres. At this and another Indian plantation have been found numerous Indian relics, such as stone implements for domestic and war purposes.

William Nichols was the first settler to invade this section of Essex county; the date of his coming was 1651; he located near the later William Peabody's, then New Meadows, from which came two of the first

church officers. Bray Wilkins, a native of Wales, came among the very first. He was an enterprising man, and for many years operated as a licensed boatman on Neponset river, and charged a penny a passenger. Later he engaged in the iron business at Lynn. In 1859, with his brother-in-law, John Gingle, he laid out Bellingham, comprising seven hundred acres, paying therefore £250 in money and a ton of bar iron. It now seems strange that in the deed for this property, its original owner had inserted that in case mineral was ever found on this tract, the heirs were to receive ten pounds more per year.

On the Dennison tract of land was discovered iron ore, and a mill was erected on the site of what later was known as the knife factory. An iron puddling mill in the Fuller family of this town remained in that family in company with the Cave family for generations. The families of Fuller and Wilkins increased rapidly and others came in for actual settlement, so that in 1692 the town had about three hundred population.

Before the incorporation of this town, which was sixty-eight years after Wilkins bought Bellingham's claim, several incidents happened in the town's history which are mentioned at other places within this work. The lands of Wilkins and those owning under him were in 1661 annexed to Salem Village, which gives the long and peculiar-shaped boundaries of the place. It was in this neighborhood that the delusion of witchcraft began. The little settlement became greatly disturbed over this matter, and one man of no little note was selected as a victim and hanged on the spot still known as Gallows Hill, Salem. This refers to the unfortunate John Willard, an account of whose execution will be found in the article on Witchcraft.

The first church was formed here in October, 1729, with fifty-two members. The first settled minister was Rev. Andrew Peters. Daniel Towne was the first schoolmaster. Of those who formed the first church in Middleton, twenty-five came from Salem Village, nine from Topsfield, and eleven from Boxfield.

The ordination of a minister, which was for life, was a great event in those days. From all the towns around, says one writer, "they flocked to Middleton for a feast; all doors were open, and tables loaded with the best of good things, and it was not an uncommon thing for individuals to boast that they had called at every house on the way home, and took something to eat or drink at each, and in some cases they rested on the way till their stomachs were relieved of its unwonted burden." As nearly as can be ascertained, the ordination took place on November 26, 1729. Mr. Peters was then twenty-nine years of age. He remained twenty-seven years. He was a devoted minister, and the church prospered under his ministry. He died October 6, 1756, aged fifty-five years.

It is said that Mr. Peters had a negro servant who drove his master's cows to pasture up by the pond, and that at that time the road went round by the old Timothy Fuller house. Fuller was rather a lawless

man, and often loved to bother people, especially those whom he could intimidate. The negro complained to his master of these insults, and forthwith Mr. Peters undertook to drive the cows, and he found the hectorer of his negro and expostulated with him, but without satisfaction. Then Mr. Peters took off his coat and laid it upon a stump, saying, "lay there, divinity, while I whip a rascal," and gave him a sound thrashing. At another time, when looking after his cattle near Wills Hill, he entered the hut of Old Wills, the Indian (the last of his race in town), and his squaw asked him to stay to dinner with her. He first asked her what she had; she answered, "Skunk." Well, he thought he would not stop then, but would perhaps some other time. Not long after he found himself under the cover of her tent or shanty, and, knowing that he loved eels, she had prepared a most tempting dish, which he did not decline, and ate heartily; after which the old cunning squaw came to his side and said, "you say you no eat skunk, but you eat rattlesnake," and so he had, but without any harm, as all Indians know they are good eating.

The first town clerk was Edward Putnam, son of the first deacon in Salem village. The first selectmen in Middleton were Thomas Fuller, Thomas Robinson, John Nichols, Samuel Symonds and Edward Putnam. Soon after the incorporation of this town it was fined for not maintaining a public school.

The early records of Middleton show these singular and in places interesting entries:

1749—Ezra Putnam was given leave to cut a window in the back part of his pew on his own charge and cost.

1759—To see if the town will vote to have Mr. Nathaniel Peabody's rates abated; that is to say, what he was rated for his negro servant.

1771—Voted to give liberty to sundre persons belonging in towne to set in our schoolhouse on Sundays between meetings.

1775—Captain Archealus Fuller was chosen to represent the town in the Provincial Congress to be holden at Cambridge Feb. ye first day, 1775.

1781—Voted to raise nineteen hundred pounds in old Continental money to procure beef now called for by the General Court. (A week's board in Continental money cost $105, while in gold it could have been had for $2. Such was the depletion of currency in the days of our forefathers).

1806—The Essex Turnpike was constructed through the town during this year; toll-gates were placed at each end of the town, per order of the common laws then in force.

Concerning Captain Fuller, the following is vouched for by fairly authentic tradition: Mr. Fuller was at work on his land. near where the old road crosses the turn-pike at Danvers Centre, and went into an ordinary (tavern), and called for a drink of cider. Mrs. Smith said, "You rock the cradle, while I draw the cider." When she returned, Fuller asked for the gift of the child; this request was granted, provided he would wait till she was eighteen years old. True to his promise, he appeared at the expiration of the time, and took her to Middleton and exhibited her before his forty slaves, which he then owned, little and

great, and in all conditions, and said, "You are mistress of them all." "What can I do with such a black, dirty-looking company?" The answer came quick as lightning, "Get one nigger to lick another." These slaves were domiciled in a house later owned by George Currier, which was built in 1710. Fuller lived in the gambrel-roofed house standing near the burying ground. "We have no reason to doubt this statement," says a local resident, "for the dates on their grave-stones show the disparity of their ages." Captain Fuller served in the Revolutionary struggle, as will be observed in reading the military chapters of this History.

In 1817 all the poor of the town were put up at auction at the annual meeting in March, and struck off to the lowest bidder, none of whom received over $1.50 per week. Some of the most feeble, who were nearly helpless, were bid in by their relatives at seventy-five cents per week, rather than have them go into the hands of unfeeling strangers. However, this was the custom in all towns where there was no poor-house. A century ago there were a smaller number of poor people here than before or since; also, more independent farmers according to the population. The lands had not begun to be exhausted; flocks and herds were large, and everywhere these families were distinguished, not only by their social accomplishments, but by their dress and daily deportment, from the poor and unfortunate.

As Lynn became a larger trading center and took to manufacturing, many of the people removed from other parts of the county to that city, and some found their way from Middleton and Lynnfield to Lynn and Salem, thus reducing the rural population.

In 1835 a shoe-making establishment was opened in Middleton by Francis P. Merriam. In 1887 the business was still carried on there by Merriam & Tyler; they usually employed a hundred workmen. A knife factory was also established by S. A. Cummings on the site of the old iron works. Major-General Daniel Dennison, of Ipswich, started this industry about 1665. In the seventies the box-making business was established by J. B. Thomas. Immediately after the close of the Civil War there were a half dozen or more small shoe factories in this town and a number of business houses. The Essex railroad was opened up for travl in 1848. Saw-mills, grist-mills, carding-mills, etc., were all to be seen in operation in this town at an early day in its history, some of which continued to operate till recent times.

A postoffice was established in Middleton about 1834 and has continued ever since.

The population of Middleton in 1900 was 839; in 1910 it was 1,129 and the United States Census for 1920 gives it 1,195.

In the summer of 1921 the business interests in the village of Middleton were inconsiderable. There is one good practicing physician—Dr. C. A. Pratt. There are a few small stores, a good hotel, well patronized in summer season, especially by summer tourists. The Public

Library was erected in 1891, of stone and brick; it was the bequest of a resident, Charles L. Flint, and is known as Flint's Library. The only church organization is now known as the Union Church, but formerly was of the Congregational denomination. The present pastor is Rev. H. A. G. Abbe. The two lodges represented here are the Grange, and Red Men of America, both of which assemble in the town hall.

The Public Librarian's report shows volumes in library, January 1, 1921, to be 8,355; added by purchase in the year, 85; total volumes added in year, 134; circulation of books in year 1920, 7,544.

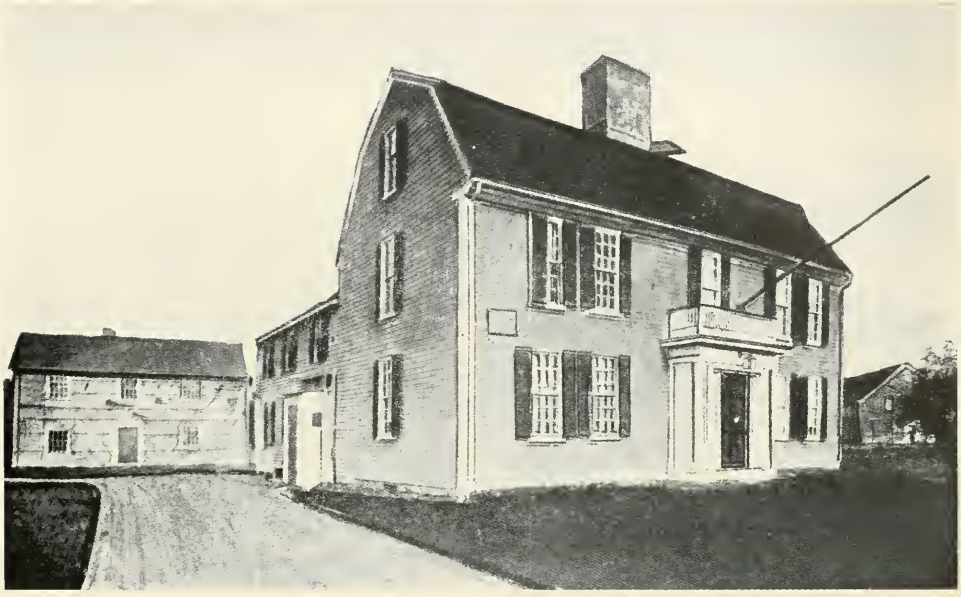
The 1920-21 town officers included the following: Moderator, F. W. Giles; Town Clerk, William Cannavan; Treasurer, Harry H. Bradstreet; Selectmen: Hazel K. Richardson, Maurice E. Tyler, Wayne A. Giles; Overseers of the Poor, B. T. McGlauflin, Maurice E. Tyler, J. Allen Atwood; Assessors: Maurice E. Tyler, B. Frank Phillips, Lyman Wilkins; School Committee: George E. Gifford, Arthur E. Curtis, Miss Ruth Hastings; Highway Surveyor, Herbert J. Currier; Tax Collector, Henry A. Young; Tree Warden, B. T. McGlauflin; Constable, Will A. Russell; Auditor, Frank B. Tyler; Town Accountant, Harley M. Tyler; Forest Fire Warden, Thomas M. Robinson; Chief of Fire Department, Oscar Sheldon; Superintendent of Burials, J. Allen Atwood; Janitor of Town Hall, Henry A. Young; Manager Electric Light Plant, Maurice E. Tyler; Inspector of Animals and Slaughtering, Lyman S. Wilkins.

---

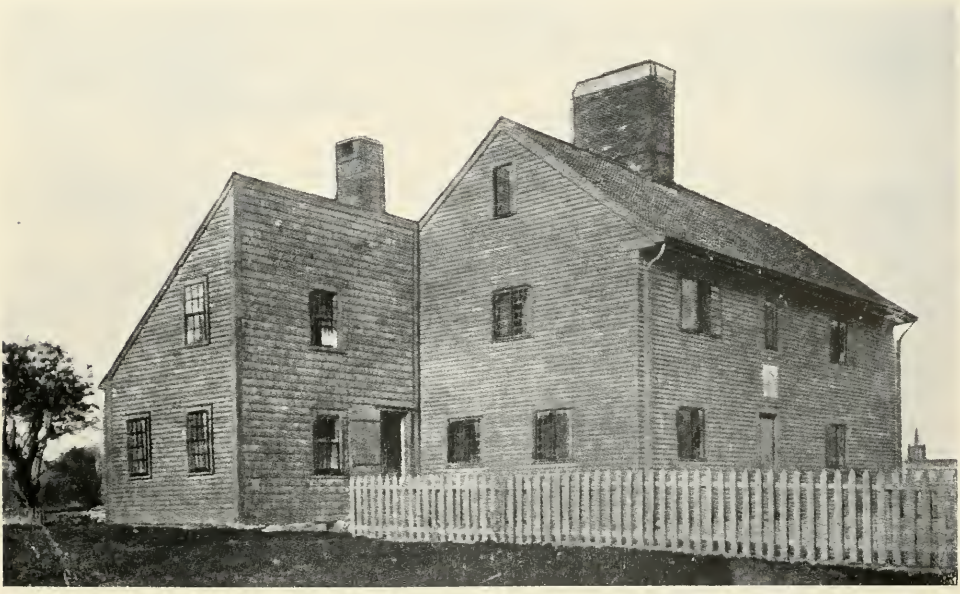
## CHAPTER XVIII.

## THE TOWN OF DANVERS.

From old records, and from the authentic writings of Mr. Alden P. White, it is learned that Governor John Endicott was the pioneer of Danvers. As he sailed from Cape Ann by the rocky hills of the North Shore and brought the "Abigail" to anchor off the few cabins of the old planters, near Collin's Cove, he looked out upon a landscape where in the midst of dense forests he was in a few years to settle and call it his home. Endicott landed at Salem in September, 1628, and about four years later his company under their charter claimed absolute right to all lands therein conveyed. This charter was dated July 3, 1632. Very soon Governor Endicott commenced to clear up his plantation. He had a large number of competent men, and within one year he had seven thousand palisades cut, and ground was broken for raising Indian corn. The grant soon took the name of "Orchard Farm." Here he raised large numbers of fruit trees. Fifteen years later he traded five hundred fruit trees for a two hundred and fifty acre tract of land to Captain Trask. For some years his only neighbors were the howling wolves and the Indians; until his men had made roads, all travel had to be made by boats.



BIRTHPLACE OF GEN. ISRAEL PUTNAM, DANVERS



REBECCA NURSE HOUSE, DANVERS

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

The river makes up from the ocean to Danversport, where it divides there much as one's three fingers might illustrate. These streams are known as Water's, Crane's and Porter's. The Orchard farm comprised the peninsula between Water's and Crane; that between Crane and Porter's, where now stands the village of Danversport, was granted at the same time with the Orchard farm to the Rev. Samuel Skelton, a minister of Salem.

On the old estate of Captain William Hathorne, soldier, lawyer, judge and legislator, stands the Danvers Lunatic Hospital—a dozen great buildings in one, and whose roofs and pinnacles with central tower can be seen for miles around, and served many a year as a landmark for the tempest-tossed fishing fleets far out from the harbor.

The three illustrious families of Putnams were of the pioneer band of what is now Danvers. John, the American ancestor, came from England when well along in years. He had three sons—Thomas, near Hathorne's Hill; Nathaniel, near the mill-pond; John, at Oak Knoll.

No history of Danvers will be complete without a full account of the part which it took in the settlement of the Northwest Territory. The earliest wagon train, under command of Captain Haffield White, a Danvers man, started on its long journey from here. General Rufus Putnam, Washington's friend, a famous engineer of the Revolution, presided in the convention at Boston, March 1, 1786, at which the Ohio Company was formed, and April 7, 1788, he laid out at Marietta the first permanent settlement in Ohio. Major Ezra Putnam, his cousin, also a grandson of Deacon Edward, was another of the Ohio pioneers. Nearer home, another descendant of Deacon Edward, Oliver Putnam, honored the family name by establishing at Newburyport the Putnam Free School.

Danvers became a separate municipality January 25, 1752. For a number of years the people of this section had desired to become independent of Salem, both as the Village and the Middle Parish. The full text of the Incorporation Act is as follows:

Anno Regni Regis Georgii Secundi &c, Vicessimo Quinto.

An act for erecting the village parish and middle Parish so called, in the town of Salem, into a distinct and separate district by the name of Danvers.

Whereas, the town of Salem is very large and the inhabitants of the village and middle parishes so called within ye same (many of them at least) live att a great Distance from that part of Salem where the Public affairs of the Town are transacted and also from the Grammar Schools which is kept in ye sd first parish.

And whereas, most of the inhabitants of the first sd Parish are either merchants, traders or mechanicks and those of ye sd village and middle parishes are chiefly husbandmen, by means whereof many disputes & difficulties have Arrissen and May hereafter arise in the management of their public Affairs Together & Especially touching ye Apportioning, the Publick Taxes For preventing of which Inconveniences for the future.

Be it Enacted by the Lieutenant Governor Council and House of Representatives, That that part of ye sd town of Salem which now constitutes the village and Middle

parishes in sd Town according to their boundaries and the inhabitants therein be Erected into a separate and distinct District by the name of Danvers, and that said inhabitants shall do the duties that are Required and Enjoyned on other towns, and Enjoy all the powers, privileges and Immunities that Towns, in this province by Law enjoy, except that of chuesing and sending one or more Representatives to Represent them att ye Genll Assembly etc.

Jany 25, 1752.

A "District" then was really the same as a "Town," except that its citizens had no Representatives in the Legislature.

The name Danvers is still a disputed question. It may have been so called for D'Anvers, an English family, of French origin, however. There is only one other town of this name in America—that in McLean county, Illinois, which was named for the Massachusetts town.

After two years from organization, the boundary lines between this and adjoining towns were surveyed. This with other things made the citizens of the proposed town more anxious than ever before to become a real town, so February 3, 1775, they passed a vote "that in the minds of the inhabitants that the said District be erected into a separate Town Ship, & that said Daniel Epes, Junr., Esq., be and is hereby desired and impowered to prefer a petition to the Great and General Court and to use his Endeavours to get the same affected." However, the matter was deferred by the parent town of Salem until June 9, 1757. The population was then about 2,000 souls. In 1776 it had 2,284; in 1820 it was 3,646; in 1840 it was 5,030; in 1880 it was 6,600; while it now has 11,108.

In 1794 maps and corrected surveys were ordered made by the selectmen of the town, but nothing materialized along this line until the next year, when the work was so poorly done that sixteen years later three lawyers—Northend, Abbott and Proctor—were directed to make a complete survey for the correction of former plats.

Commencing in 1816 and continuing a half century, it was the custom in Danvers for her people to be reminded of the dinner hour and of bedtime by the ringing of the church bells. This cost the taxpayers $25 per year for each church in the town of Danvers. In 1784 there were only twenty-three persons able to own or "ride in chaises" in the town of Danvers.

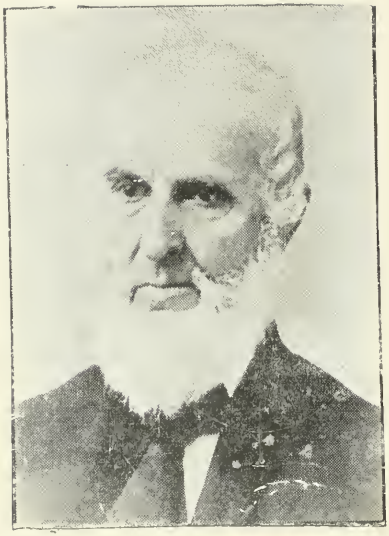
In 1815 the following resolutions were passed at the town meeting relative to vaccination for small-pox, etc.:

Resolved, That this town entertains a high opinion of Vaccination and considers it (when skilfully conducted) a sure and certain substitute for Small Pox.

Resolved, That this Meeting deems it the indispensable duty of a community to make use of the means that Divine Providence has given us to guard against every impending evil to which we are exposed, especially those which involve the health or the Lives of the Inhabitants. [This was very soon after the discovery had been made by Jenner, of the effectiveness of vaccination].

There were a few slaves owned in Danvers before slavery was abolished in Massachusetts. At the time Danvers was separated from Sa-

THE NEW YOR
PUBLIC LIBR
ASTOR, LENO
TILDEN FOUND



JOHN G. WHITTIER

"OAK KNOLL," DANVERS, LAST HOME OF THE QUAKER POET

lem, there were twenty-five such chattels, sixteen of whom were women. Among interesting documents along this subject, still carefully preserved, is the following:

Danvers, April 19, 1766.

Rec'd of Mr. Jeremiah Page Fifty-eight pounds thirteen shillings and four pence lawful money and a Negro woman called Dinah which is in full for a Negro girl called Combo and a Negro girl called Cate and a Negro child called Deliverance or Dill, which I now sell and Deliver to ye said Jeremiah Page.

JOHN TAPLEY.

Witnesses: Jona Bancroft, Ezek Marsh.

The great anti-slavery advocate, William Lloyd Garrison, a native of Essex county, Massachusetts, had many followers in and near Danvers. With the birth of the Republican party in 1856, Danvers voters promptly wheeled into line. Out of a total vote of 1,382 cast in 1856, 1076 were cast for the Republican candidates. In 1860, John G. Whittier (poet) received 564 votes to 125 for S. Endicott Peabody, of Salem, for presidential elector. Later votes were as follows: 1868—U. S. Grant, Republican, 720; Horatio Seymour, Dem., 204. 1872—U. S. Grant, Republican, 545; Horace Greeley, Dem., 195. 1876—R. B. Hayes, Republican, 701; S. J. Tilden, Dem., 335. 1880—Gen. James A. Garfield, Republican, 637; W. S. Hancock, Dem., 295. 1884—James G. Blaine, Republican, 565; Grover Cleveland, Dem., 276.

June 16, 1852, Danvers being one hundred years old, celebrated the event with much interest. A procession wended its way for a mile and a half. The town raised nearly a thousand dollars to entertain visiting guests. The greatest entertainment was showing off the fire-engines "Ocean" and "Eagle." Speeches and toasts were a part of the long programme, and the two hundred page booklet now filed in many homes in Danvers, gives an account of the "Centennial."

The town records show that there were two old offices that are not now known to the taxpayers of these later generations. Under the Act of February 13, 1789, any town might "give liberty for swine to go at large during the whole or a part of the year," provided they were yoked throughout the spring and summer, and "constantly ringed in the nose," the legal yoke to be "the full depth of the swines neck, above the neck, and half as much below the neck, and the soal, or bottom of the yoke full three times as long as the breadth or thickness of the swines." To see that this law was properly enforced, officers known as "hogreeves" were regularly elected until 1827.

In 1752, Daniel Rea was commissioned "to take care of ye laws Relating to ye Preservation of Deer be observed." "Deer reeves" were chosen from 1765 to 1797. The last to hold such position were Eleazer Putnam and Timothy Fuller.

The town officers of Danvers in 1920-21 were as follows: Moderator, A. Preston Chase; Town Clerk, Julius Peale; Collector, A. Preston

Chase; Town Treasurer, A. Preston Chase; Selectmen: W. Arthur Webb, David S. Brown, and J. Ellis Nightingale; Assessors: John T. Carroll, Henry G. Hathorne, Benj. S. Newhall; Town Counsel, Harry E. Jackson; Auditor, Frank L. Winslow; Overseers of the Poor: James O. Perry, E. Beecher Williams, J. Fred Hussey; Superintendent of Streets, Josiah B. Brown; Pound-keeper, Michael H. Burns; Superintendent of Schools, Harrie J. Phipps; Chief of Police, Timothy J. Connors; Inspector of Animals, Charles S. Moore, D.V.S.; Tree Warden, Thomas E. Tinsley; Forest Fire Warden, Michael H. Barry; Burial Agent, Isaac E. Frye; and numerous appointive officers and committees.

In 1900 the population of Danvers was 8,542; in 1910 it was 9,407 and the last Federal census gives it as 11,108. The present lodges included these—Masons, Odd Fellows, Knights of Pythias, Knights of Columbus, Ancient Order of United Workmen. The present churches, which are treated in a general chapter for the county of Essex, include these: Maple Street Congregational Church, Roman Catholic church, Methodist Episcopal church, Baptist church and the Episcopal.

The present industries are confined to the Marsh Consolidated Electric Lamp Factory and the following shoe factory plants: Clapp & Tapley, Ideal Baby Shoe Company, Marston & Tapley (incorporated), Herbert A. Miller and John P. Nangle. There are two other manufacturing plants, the Massachusetts Iron & Steel Company's plant and the Standard Crayon Company's.

At a very early day in the history of Danvers, there were several large brick-making plants, with plenty of good clay at hand to supply the people with brick, but for some reason few took advantage of this nature's best building material, and constructed most of their houses from lumber. The same is true today—nearly all the houses are frame.

The water-works at Danvers were installed in 1876, and have been enlarged and extended in keeping with the growth of the town.

The Danvers Board of Trade was organized in 1916, and has been doing much for the business interests of the place ever since.

The Danvers Historical Society was organized July 29, 1889, and meets monthly in its home headquarters in the old Page residence. Its officers in 1921 were as follows: President, Charles H. Preston; Vice-Presidents: George B. Sears, Lester H. Couch; Secretary, Harriet S. Tapley; Assistant Secretary, Alice F. Hammond; Treasurer, Annie G. Perley; Collector, Mrs. H. Freeman Kimball; Curator, Captain Henry N. Comey; Assistant Curator, Mrs. George W. Towne; Librarian, Lawrence W. Jenkins; Historian, Andrew Nichols; Executive Committee: Walter A. Tapley, George W. Emerson, Loring B. Goodale, Olive F. Flint, Annie W. Hammond; Publication Committee: Andrew Nichols, Harriet S. Tapley, Charles H. Preston. The membership of this society is upwards of five hundred, and the annual dues are one dollar. The Page residence, in which the headquarters of the society are kept, is

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

PEABODY INSTITUTE, DANVERS

ST. JOHN'S SCHOOL, ADMINISTRATION BUILDING, DANVERS

among the very first good frame buildings erected in Danvers, and was constructed back in the eighteenth century. It has been occupied all these years by members of the Page family, and the custodian of the premises is a granddaughter of the original owner and builder. Herein are collected many ancient relics, papers, furniture, etc.

The Danvers Home for The Aged was established here in June, 1903. Peabody Institute was founded by that great philanthropist, George Peabody, and was incorporated by the Massachusetts Legislature in March, 1882. A public library connected with this institution was founded as early as 1866, and has many rare and valuable volumes.

From a very early date Danvers has been known throughout the Union by its prolific growth of "Danvers Early Red" onions, making it as widely known among gardeners as the Wethersfield section of Connecticut is by its wonderful growth of onions. The soil seems peculiarly adapted for the growth of excellent vegetables, including the onion.

The famous Endicott pear tree at Danvers, which was set out by Governor John Endicott in 1631, is still bearing its annual crop of pears, although it is now two hundred and ninety years old. It was planted by Governor Endicott in a sheltered spot near the Danvers river. Once it was surrounded by other pear trees, but all have long since decayed. An Endicott, seventy-five years ago, sending fruit from this pioneer tree, said to a friend that this tree had outlived ten English monarchs. Since the statement was written, two more British Sovereigns—Queen Victoria and King Edward VII—have reigned and died, and the old tree at Danvers continues to bear fruit. It receives loving care and is accounted priceless by the Endicott family as well as by all who see it. In its vicinity camped General Gage's British army, and General Washington, Abraham Lincoln and Daniel Webster are among the giants of American history who have visited it and eaten of its fruit. A substantial fence now protects it, save from the touch of the severe elements. This pear tree is now in possession of the ninth generation in ancestral line from Governor Endicott.

Church History—The following is by the Rev. A. V. House:

Since the comprehensive history of Essex County was issued in 1888, events in connection with the churches of Danvers have been largely of a routine nature. The former history, from the hand of Judge Alden Perley White, gave a full account of the different ecclesiastical organizations down to about the time when the work appeared, relating the story with fine appreciation and insight. Anyone interested in the early church history of Danvers is referred to that source of information.

It would be a labor of love to enter into those chapters of earlier history for the setting of the picture of these later times. To two of the churches, the First and the Baptist, and, in lesser degree, the Universalist, there have been granted length of days and long life. Their history is replete with the interest and significance attaching to the beginning and gradual moulding of community life. But all this we must turn aside from, however reluctantly, and give ourselves in the main to

a review of the brief period since the former publication. If it must be said that this later span has been characterized by few features of dramatic interest or of unusual departure from the steady progress of institutional life, perhaps that fact of itself reveals a condition honorable and praiseworthy. The churches of Danvers are a well-established element in the life of the town. They are thriving and successful, and their very steadiness of effort and progress is an indication of normality and health.

Approximately the territory now embraced within the limits of Danvers was originally known as Salem Village, being included within the confines of Salem, the mother town. What was in effect a church was instituted in 1672 in the section of Salem Village which later under the town organization came to be designated as Danvers Centre, (now Danvers Highlands). The people of Salem Village had their own meeting house and resident minister, though, owing to the disinclination of the mother church in Salem to part with so large a portion of her numbers, the separate church organization was not formed till 1689. Church life in Danvers, however, properly dates from 1672, when the congregation was gathered and preaching begun. The church later organized is now incorporated as The First Church of Danvers.

The First Church of Danvers—At the time of the former writing, the pastor of the First Church was Rev. Charles Baker Rice, D.D. Dr. Rice was settled as pastor September 2, 1863. During his administration the church observed the two-hundredth anniversary of the beginning of preaching in Salem Village. At the time of that notable celebration, October, 1872, the church was worshiping in a beautiful meeting house of colonial type erected in 1839. This house, shortly after having been remodelled at considerable expense, was totally destroyed by fire, January 28, 1890. Steps were immediately taken to rebuild. While plans were in progress, after worshiping for a time in the Methodist Episcopal Church in Tapleyville Sunday afternoons, the use of that house having been graciously offered by the sister organization, a temporary building was erected on Hobart street, just east of the parsonage. This was called the Tabernacle, and was the scene of hearty and hopeful church activity until the completion of the new permanent building. This building, the present meeting-house, was dedicated September 2, 1891; the cost for building and furnishing was about $25,000. The house is finely appointed and affords excellent facilities for worship, Sunday school and social work.

Dr. Rice resigned in 1894 to become secretary of the Massachusetts Board of Pastoral Supply. His pastorate closed September 2 of that year, exactly thirty-one years from the date of his installation. His was the last of the old-time long pastorates, those preceding being the pastorates of Joseph Green, Peter Clark, Benjamin Wadsworth and Milton Parker Braman. The average term of these five, consecutive from 1698 to 1894, was thirty-seven and two-fifth years. The ministry of Dr. Rice was on the same high level as those of his distinguished predecessors, and his memory is cherished in the parish and throughout the town.

The pastors since Dr. Rice have been: Curtis M. Geer, Jan. 31, 1895—April 8, 1897; Harry C. Adams, Sept. 22, 1897—Oct. 3, 1909; Charles S. Bodwell, March 10, 1910—Sept. 28, 1913. Albert V. House, the present pastor, began work October 1, 1914, and was formally installed December 10, of the same year.

The membership reported January 1, 1921, was as follows: Church, 195; Sunday school, 181; Young Peoples' Society of Christian Endeavor, 35; Ladies' Benevolent Society, 80; Men's Club, 65.

The Men's Club is a social organization among the men of the community and is not organically connected with the church. It was projected, however, as an outcome of the interest of the church in the social life of the neighborhood, and conducts its work in sympathy with the parent institution.

The Sunday School of the First Church was one of the first to be organized in this country. It observed its centennial on Sunday, November 17, 1918. At the morning service of the church an historical address was given by Deacon George William French, and on the following Tuesday evening the event was further commemorated with addresses by both present and old-time members, and the reading of letters from absent ones.

Of recent years, the old double organization of church and society or parish has been abolished. The institution is now incorporated as the First Church of Danvers, Congregational.

The field of the church, territorially speaking, has inevitably narrowed as time has gone by. At the beginning she had all of Salem Village to draw upon. Worshipers came from as far as Will's Hill, now Middleton Square, and Phelp's Mill in West Peabody. In a day when churchgoing was well-night universal, the house was filled from Sabbath to Sabbath. For over one hundred years the church stood alone in this wide region. With the institution of Baptist and Universalist work and the founding of the Middleton church, she began to suffer loss, though the plentitude of her strength was such as to make that loss almost negligible. Far down into the nineteenth century her life was maintained in its original dignity and impressiveness. As late as the day of Dr. Braman, who closed his pastorate in 1861, the meeting-house at "the Centre" was on each recurring Sunday the mecca for thronging hundreds.

But since then, the organization of other churches, needed where they are placed, has materially reduced the territory she serves. Modern methods of transportation have also turned to other churches many who in former days were of her constituency. But, in spite of all this, she feels that her future is ahead of her. Her people of today cherish the memory of the great personages, ministers and laymen, who have adorned her history and dwell lovingly upon her sacred traditions. Yet their look is a forward look. They steadfastly hope that "the best is yet to be." In the old days a citadel of Puritan thought and later, having a name as conservative, the church today, as always, "loves the light," and is endeavoring to adjust herself to the demands of the new times.

Recognizing the requirements for a broader outlook and effort than in the past, yet not abating her emphasis upon the things of the spirit, she is striving to maintain and perpetuate her old prestige and influence. Her formal confession of faith, the so-called "Kansas City Platform" set forth by the Congregational National Council in 1913, is designed to afford standing ground for any true Christian, and the church has coupled with this confession the following minute, composed and suggested by the pastor, Rev. A. V. House: "While we adopt as our own this statement as comprehending the essentials of our faith, we do not regard it as a finality in revelation or impose a creedal test for

membership in the church. We welcome to our fellowship all who, as disciples of Jesus, strive to know and do the will of God."

The two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of "the beginning of preaching in Salem Village" will occur in 1922. Committees have already been appointed to plan for its proper observance.

The Baptist Church—Second only in point of age to the First Church and boasting more than a century and a quarter of organized life, is the Baptist Church at Danversport. As in the case of the First Church, a congregation was gathered and stated preaching enjoyed some years previous to the formal organization of the church. As far back as November 12, 1781, a society was formed for the prosecution of Baptist work. The movement which led to this consummation was largely the result of labor by Rev. Benjamin Foster. Mr. Foster, a brother of General Gideon Foster, was born in Danvers in 1750. While a student in Yale he espoused Baptist views, and after graduation was ordained as a Baptist minister. While engaged in pastoral service elsewhere, he preached as occasion permitted in his home town. Gradually a company devoted to Baptist principles was formed. When in course of time a measure of strength had been attained such as to warrant regularly organized work, a society was constituted, as before mentioned. The people felt the need of a settled minister and naturally turned to Benjamin Foster, and he became their acting pastor in 1782. The first meeting house was occupied the year following. Mr. Foster continued his relation to the little company in Danvers until his call in 1788 to the pastorate of the First Baptist Church of New York. For a time after his departure there was no resident minister. Rev. Thomas Green, who was the next to settle in that capacity, took up the work in April, 1793, and on Tuesday, July 16 of that year, the formal organization of the church was effected, Mr. Green being chosen the first pastor. The territory covered by the church included Salem, Beverly, Wenham and Middleton, the churches of the first three named having since been set off from its membership.

Mention should be made, even at the risk of delving too deeply in old-time matters, of Rev. Jeremiah Chaplin. He came to the pastorate a youth of twenty-six, in May, 1802, and prolonged his stay sixteen years. He was a man of great ability and scholarship, and distinguished his pastorate by establishing a school for the training of young men looking to the ministry, said to have been the first Baptist school of its kind in America. After the manner of the olden times, the parson was the whole faculty of instruction. Dr. Chaplin had at one time as many as fourteen students pursuing their work under him, a responsibility which he cheerfully carried in addition to the burden of his pastoral duties. He relinquished his office in 1818 to accept the presidency of Waterville College, Maine, later known as Colby University.

Within the period of our supposed purview we begin with Rev. Gideon Cole, who served from July 1, 1884, to September 30, 1888. Since his day the list of ministers is as follows: April 1, 1889—Jan. 4, 1898, Charles H. Holbrook; July 1, 1898—Oct. 1, 1903, Charles S. Nightingale; Nov. 1, 1903—Jan. 27, 1907, Charles H. Wheeler; May 1, 1907—Nov. 1, 1911, Edwin A. Herring; May 1, 1912—Oct. 1, 1912, Edmund H. Cochrane; March 23, 1913—1917, Frederick J. Ward; Sept. 1, 1917, to present, Walter G. Thomas.

From this list of names one stands out with special distinction. Rev. Charles H. Holbrook had been pastor for five years, 1865-1870. So

successful and beloved was he that he was recalled and began his second term in the pastoral office, April 1, 1889. During this second period, the centennial of the church was observed, 1893. Mr. Holbrook was the historian of the occasion, and gathered up the history of Baptist work in Danvers in an accurate and comprehensive way. His address has been preserved and will be cherished as a repository of trustworthy and valuable information. He was still wearing the robes of office when death took him, October 1, 1903. Under that date is the following minute in the church book: "Today news flew over the town that our beloved pastor, Mr. Holbrook, had passed away. A good man has gone, and one greatly beloved by his church and people. We need the grace of God to say 'Thy will be done'."

Recent years have seen the passing of two laymen who had wrought nobly and long, for the church and Kingdom. Deacon William A. Jacobs, who had held a number of different offices over many years, died May 27, 1914. He had been deacon almost thirty-four years, and a member since 1868. Deacon Charles H. Whipple, his companion in labor, passed away December 2, 1916. He united with the church in 1850 and had been deacon over sixty years. "They were lovely and pleasant in their lives, and in their death they were not divided."

Under the present pastor, Rev. Walter G. Thomas, great progress has been made. The meeting-house has been repaired and remodeled at heavy expense and a fine Hastings organ installed. An impressive feature of the service when the new organ was formally dedicated was the presence of Miss N. Charlotte Porter, whose father, Captain Benjamin Porter, gave the old organ, now displaced, in the year 1848. Miss Porter was seventeen years old at that time. She had been baptized in the church the year previous. She became the organist and continued so for many years. The old instrument having well served its day and generation, Miss Porter gladly and sympathetically participated in the consecration of the new. The pastor called attention to her presence and paid an appropriate tribute for her long and devoted service.

The Baptist Church has during its long history had no serious dissension within its ranks, and now, with a membership of two hundred and twenty, is harmonious and hopeful. Changes of population incident to the establishment of modern industrial plants in the section of the town neighboring to the church have been great. The stream of American and Protestant life flows less full than formerly, yet the church faces the future with consecration and courage. The difficulties serve only to call out in the people their reserves of faith and power and to stimulate in their hearts the challenging query—"Who knoweth whether thou art come to the Kingdom for such a time as this."

**The Universalist Church**—The story of the beginning of the Universalist Church in Danvers is the story of the liberal movement in Christian thought in the last of the eighteenth and the first of the nineteenth centuries. The hand of Calvinism lay heavy upon many in the churches. Men were exercising new freedom in the interpretation of the Gospel. Elements long neglected in Divine Revelation were claiming attention and demanding to be considered in the formulation of Christian doctrine. Under the impulse of John Murray and Hosea Ballou, a strong revolt was in progress against the prevailing idea of a limited atonement by Christ. The first Universalists were Calvinists, and claimed to be the only consistent Calvinists. Accepting the historic teaching of the Puritan church that Christ died for "the elect," they asserted

scriptural basis for their doctrine of universal salvation by the contention that all are of "the elect," for, said they, "does not the New Testament declare that 'Christ died for all?'" The arguments both pro and con do not possess their original force to the mind of the present day. Now men approach such questions on the broad ground of the necessary implications of divine love, without resort to proof texts, but for the times with which we are dealing, the considerations adduced had strong validity. They were times of earnestness in religious quest, and of quickened thought as to the real teaching and intent of Scripture. Danvers of course had her contingent of revolters against the extremes of Calvinistic teaching. Among them was Captain Edmund Putnam. He had led his company to Lexington on the morning of April 19, '75, was a member of the influential Putnam family, and a deacon in the First Church. Taking issue with the thoughts then finding utterance in this and the majority of churches, he resigned his deaconship in the First Church, which he had held for twenty-three years, and, with a few of his neighbors of kindred mind and spirit, gave himself to the propagation of Universalist doctrine. The Universalist Church of Danvers is the outgrowth of this effort. Deacon Putnam did not live to see the church actually organized. He died in 1810, at the age of eighty-five years.

A partial church organization was formed April 22, 1815, and that is regarded as the birthday of the church. A more formal organization was effected in 1829. The first settled minister we have record of is Rev. F. O. Hudson, who was pastor 1831-1832. Since 1885 the succession has been as follows: W. S. Williams, 1885-86; C. B. Lynn, 1887-90; W. H. Trickey, 1891-97; Edson Reifsnider, 1898-1903; E. M. Grant, 1903-11; W. E. Wright, 1912-15; George A. Mark, 1916-17; Ernest M. W. Smith, 1917-19.

The longest pastorate in the history of the church was that of Rev. J. P. Putnam, 1849-1864. Mr. Putnam was a man of great talent. He was for many years an active and valuable member of the school board, and served the town two years in the General Court. Rev. G. J. Sanger, after a ministry of six years, 1869-1875, removed to Essex, but later returned and for many years made his home in the town. He was a man of inclusive spirit and had many friends in other communions. The close of a century of church life was fittingly marked April 18, 1915. In 1919, as a result of the modern trend toward unity and co-operation, the church, without surrendering its identity, entered into a federation with the Unitarian Church of Danvers. The joint organization is known as the Community Church, and will be treated under that head.

Maple Street Congregational Church—Maple Street Church is the direct offspring of the First Church, and willingly confesses its lineage. Its list of charter members records the names of forty-two persons, all but two of whom had been members of the First Church and were dismissed by that body to aid in inaugurating the new enterprise. Distance from the mother church and the increase of population at the Plains, indicating the need of more immediate religious ministration, were the factors leading to the inception of the venture. The church has grown coincidently with the town, and has long held the primacy in wealth and numbers among Protestant religious societies in Danvers.

Unlike the First Church, Maple Street has had no life incumbency on the part of any of its pastors, yet two of them extended their services over somewhat lengthy periods. Rev. James Fletcher covered in his

ministry the time from 1849 to 1864, fifteen years in all; and Rev. Edward C. Ewing gave sixteen years of loyal and effective work to the ministry of this church. Mr. Ewing was the minister at Maple Street at the time when this article takes up the thread of her history. He was installed November 1, 1883, and ended his labors November 1, 1899, a term of exactly sixteen years, and the longest in the record of the church. The work of Mr. Ewing was of a strongly religious nature and bore remarkable fruitage in accessions to membership and the spiritual tone of the church life. Partly as a result of his devoted labors and partly due to special revival services under the guidance of a visiting evangelist during the year 1895, ninety-nine persons united with the church, seventy-six of them on confession of faith.

A conspicuous feature in the life of the church is its interest in missions. It contributes generously to the support of all denominational missionary agencies, both home and foreign, and since 1902 has contributed to the maintenance of Rev. E. C. Fairbank in India, as its representative under the American Board.

Maple Street Church, situated as it is at the center of population, has always assumed its full measure of responsibility for civic conditions. Under two of its recent pastors, Rev. Robert A. MacFadden and Rev. F. W. Merrick, D.D., it has been notably active in behalf of the larger interests of community life.

Pastors during the period covered by this narrative have been: Edward C. Ewing, 1883-99; Chauncey J. Hawkins, 1900-02; Robert A. MacFadden, 1902-09; Melville A. Shafer, 1910-13; Frank W. Merrick, 1915-21. During Dr. Merrick's administration November 30, 1919, the church observed its seventy-fifth anniversary with an elaborate program of addresses. Dr. Merrick resigned nearly in 1921 to become executive secretary of the Indiana Federation of Churches, and at this writing Maple Street is without a pastor.

The membership is about 490. The Sunday School, including Home Department and Cradle Roll, has a list of 635 names. The Men's Club also is in a very flourishing condition. With a good plant and enterprising people the promise for future usefulness is great.

Annunciation Church, Roman Catholic—Danvers, as the rest of New England, had, from the first, citizens of Irish blood. After the famine in Ireland in 1849 her Irish population, as also that of New England, was largely increased. Naturally at about that time Roman Catholic work would have its origin. Rev. Thomas H. Shahan, then pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception in Salem, held the first service at the house of Edward McKeigue, 305 Maple street, November 1, 1854. Shortly afterward regular services began. The first resident pastor was Rev. Charles Rainoni, who was appointed in 1865. From the first the parish has extended its bounds beyond the confines of Danvers, including the nearby towns of Middleton and Topsfield in its field of labor. Moreover, the increase of Catholic population in the town has been marked, the original company of Irish being supplemented by many hundreds of other races cherishing the Catholic faith, so that now the parish is the strongest numerically in Danvers.

Rev. Thomas E. Power was appointed to the Danvers parish in April, 1885, and continued his labors here till 1902, a period of seventeen years. He was succeeded by Rev. H. A. Sullivan, who had been long connected with the Cathedral of the Holy Cross in Boston. Father Sullivan delivered a notable patriotic sermon before his people at the

time of the celebration of the 150th anniversary of the town, June 15, 1902. His appreciation of the opportunities of American freedom was profound and he finely set forth the meaning of Danvers history as related to the larger principles of American life.

Father Sullivan died in 1914, and was succeeded by Rev. Francis W. Maley. Father Maley labored here only two years, but in that time made a distinct impression upon the whole community as a man of broad sympathies and a practical Christian worker. He gave great care to the Sunday School and the welfare of his parishioners living at a distance from the house of worship. He went to Topsfield every Sunday and celebrated mass in Grange Hall, and "had plans for a church there which would have been a delight to him and a comfort to the parishioners." As a result of the great Salem fire in 1914, a number of French families made their home in Danvers. These were added to the parish during Father Maley's stay. In November, 1915, Father Maley was transferred to Boston, and Rev. Daniel F. Horgan succeeded him. Father Horgan is now pastor. A number of assistants have served the parish. Father Power was aided by Rev. Michael F. Crowley and Rev. Joseph O'Connor. Father O'Connor sustained the same office to Father Sullivan for a time, and gave way to Rev. Michael J. Sullivan, a brother of the pastor. Father Maley first had as assistant, Rev. Elphege J. Cloutier. Father Cloutier died of influenza in 1918 and was succeeded by Rev. George H. Chaput, who is still assisting Father Horgan in the work of the parish.

Calvary Episcopal Church—The Episcopal Church in Danvers dates back to the decade 1840-1850. It grew out of the religious needs of a number of English families who came to Danvers about that time and found work in the carpet factory at Tapleyville. They had been accustomed in their old home to the services of the Church of England, and felt the need here of similar religious privilege. Joined by a number from the Provinces and others "who were devoted to the doctrines and rites of the church," they formed a church organization April 14, 1858. A building was erected at the corner of Holten and Cherry streets, the cornerstone being laid May 11, 1859.

Our period opens during the rectorship of Rev. George Walker. He became pastor in 1877, joining with his work here the rectorship of St. Paul's, Peabody, where he resided. A parish house was built in 1886, during his ministry. Mr. Walker resigned in 1888 and was succeeded by Rev. A. W. Griffin in April of that year. Mr. Griffin served the church until May, 1890, when his condition of health forced him to relinquish his duties. Mr. Griffin's successor was Rev. J. W. Hyde, who began his work in June, 1890. It was during Mr. Hyde's term of service that a large and finely appointed rectory was built. This was done "in anticipation, and with her consent, of a bequest by Mrs. Daniel J. Preston, who was one of the most active of the founders and sustainers of the parish. She died in October, 1894, and the rectory stands as a memorial of her."

Rev. William R. Hudgell succeeded Mr. Hyde in 1899, and resigned in 1904. Under Mr. Hudgell a boy choir was organized, and the church remodeled. A chancel window, a memorial to Mr. and Mrs. Daniel J. Preston, was placed at this time. Rev. Marcus Carroll was rector from December 18, 1904, to 1908. He was followed by Rev. Henry Winkley in March, 1908. Mr. Winkley continued as pastor till his death in February, 1918. Mr. Winkley was a man of genial temperament and fine

scholarship, untiring in his parish labors, and interested in the concerns of the town as a whole. He has left a fragrant memory. The present rector is Rev. Nathan Matthews, who began his labors in October, 1918. Under his ministry the parish-house has been enlarged at a cost of upwards of $3,000, and the work of the church stimulated in all departments. Calvary Church is claiming year by year a larger place for itself in the life of the community.

The Unitarian Church—Unitarianism had its rise in the movement of revolt against the severities of Calvinism which culminated in the early nineteenth century. It grounded its protest against the teaching of the Puritan church, not so much upon differences of Scriptural interpretation as upon philosophical distinctions. Its view of the fundamental nature of God and man made at the time a sharp differentiation between Unitarian thought and that of the older Congregational churches. The liberal departure led to the formation of many Unitarian churches in New England in the first quarter of the century named.

The Danvers church was, however, a little later in its beginning. The first Unitarian service held in the town was in August, 1865. The place was the Town Hall and the preacher, Rev. A. P. Putnam. Plans for regular worship were formed and carried into effect, the pulpit being supplied by different ministers till the organization of the church in 1867. At that time Rev. Leonard J. Livermore began the effective ministry which closed with his death in 1886. The ministers of our period have been: Rev. J. C. Mitchell, 1889; Rev. Eugene DeNormandie, 1890-97; Rev. Kenneth C. Evans, 1897-1902; Rev. John H. Holmes, 1902-04; Rev. Samuel Louis Elberfield, Supply; Rev. William H. Barker, 1906-08; Rev. Edward Brereau, 1908-11; Rev. Edward H. Cotton, 1911-21.

Rev. Mr. Holmes, cited above, supplied the pulpit while attending Harvard Divinity School. He is now one of the most eminent clergymen in New York City and a writer of note. The pastor longest in service was Rev. Mr. Cotton. In his ten years he labored effectively for both church and community at large. It was largely through his effort and influence that the Community Church, a federation of the Unitarian and Universalist churches, was brought about in 1919. Mr. Cotton served as pastor of the joint organization for two years, when he resigned to become associate editor of the Christian Register.

The church has been favored in having the uninterrupted service of one man as clerk from its beginning to the present day, Mr. Andrew Nichols. In 1917 the society presented to Mr. Nichols a loving cup with the following inscription: "Presented to Andrew Nichols by the Unitarian Congregational Church for his efficient services in the clerkship of the parish from 1866 to 1917."

The rest of the story will be found under the head, Community Church.

The Methodist Episcopal Church—Previous to the organization of the Methodist Church in Tapleyville there had been for some time neighborhood religious services in Lincoln Hall. These were of such a character as to give rise to the question of the desirability of forming a church. The way was opened for servants of the Methodist denomination to investigate conditions and see if there were warrant for such an endeavor. As an outcome, the first service under Methodist auspices was held in September, 1871, the sermon being preached by Rev. Albert Gould, pastor of the M. E. Church in Peabody.

Rev. Elias Hodge, at the time a student in theology, became per-

manent supply, taking up his duties December 24, 1871. A Sunday school had been organized the month before, with seventeen members. Mr. Hodge was made formal pastor and covered in his service the years 1872—1875. The meeting-house was dedicated March 27, 1873.

A natural starting point for the later history is the coming of Rev. William M. Ayres as pastor in 1883. Mr. Ayres served the three years customary in the M. E. Church at that time, and in later years has made his home in Danvers. During this period of residence he has been a faithful servant of the Tapleyville Church in the character of a layman, assuming the functions of a minister only when his help is specially needed. Mr. Ayers is universally honored in the town. His bow abides in strength, and today at the age of eighty-eight years it can almost be said of him that "his eye is not dim nor his natural force abated." Some years ago the church made him pastor-emeritus

Pastors since Mr. Ayres have been: C. W. Merrill, 1886-87; J. H. Thompson, 1888-90; L. W. Adams, 1891-93; W. F. Lawford, 1894-96; H. C. Paine, 1897-98; H. B. King, 1899-1900; George Sanderson, 1901-03; W. M. Cassidy, 1904-08; N. B. Fisk, 1909-10; E. J. Curnick, 1911-16; Jonathan Cartmill, 1917 to present.

A good organ was installed in 1891, largely through the efforts of the late A. W. Horne, who was chorister for a number of years. During the pastorate of Rev. W. F. Lawford, in 1896, there was a fitting observance of the twenty-fifth anniversary. A parsonage was built in 1898, on a lot given by Mr. Gilbert Augustus Tapley. Rev. Mr. King was the first occupant. The present pastor, Rev. Jonathan Cartmill is a valiant worker and under him the church has made great strides. The membership is two hundred and seventeen. All departments are flourishing.

The Seventh Day Adventist Church—There is nothing to add to the facts already set forth as regards the Adventist Church. The church was organized in 1877, and a chapel was built in 1878. The people are doing a faithful work with small numbers and equipment. The membership is around forty. There is no pastor. A Sabbath school is maintained and the people are content to go on their quiet way.

The Community Church—The institution known as the Community Church is, as indicated in the story of the constituent bodies, a federation of the Universalist and Unitarian Churches in Danvers. It is the direct outgrowth of the demand arising out of the World War for co-operation in church work, and registers an advance toward the unity all pray for. Rev. Edward H. Cotton, the Unitarian pastor, was influential in bringing about the federation, though he found many in both bodies willing to respond to his leadership and help in promoting the object. The union is one for work and worship only, and each church preserves its "corporate rights and individuality." The federation was formed in 1919, Rev. Mr. Cotton being the first pastor. On his resignation in 1921, Rev. John H. Hayes became the minister.

The experiment is regarded with great interest, and up to the present time has worked with success. There is an encouraging prospect that this, one of the pioneer endeavors in joining churches of different sectarian interests and associations, will prove permanently effective.

Comment on the Community Church affords opportunity for a word as regards the "esprit de corps" of the churches of Danvers. Their spirit is one of harmony and co-operation. Ill feeling seems not to exist. They recognize their common office as servants of the Kingdom and stewards of the mysteries of God. They join forces in community

work, as witnessed by the fact of the Danvers Federation of Churches, while each accords to all others the freedom of Christ to do their spiritual work in their own way. If it can truly be said that "the past at least is secure," there is ground, in this catholicity of spirit, for the belief that that security extends to the future as well.

Danversport is a village and railway station within the town of Danvers. Besides the previous mention made of its situation, etc., it should be recorded that the pioneer shipbuilder here was Timothy Stephens, of Newbury. Presently a number of young men came down from the North, worked with Stephens, learned his trade, and permanently established themselves in business at this point.

For nearly half a century after the building of the first mill on the Crane river, a tide-power on the other two rivers remained unutilized. "About 1798 Nathan Read (says a work on the early history of Danvers) enters into the history of Danvers. He was a graduate of Harvard, 1781, a tutor there of Harrison Gray Otis and John Quincy Adams, and afterwards studied medicine and kept an apothecary store in Salem. There he married, in 1790, Elizabeth Jaffrey, and built the house in which the historian Prescott was born, on the present site of Plummer Hall. Among the achievements of his inventive mind was the first machine for cutting nails. He purchased the water-power on the Waters river, and with associates erected the Salem and Danvers Iron Works. At the same time he bought part of Governor Endicott's old Orchard farm, and on a sightly eminence overlooking the river built a mansion, which, after the successive ownership of Captain Crowningshield, Captain Benjamin Porter and the heirs of the latter, still retains much of its original stateliness. When the company was incorporated, March 4, 1800, Nathan Read is described of Danvers. There were also seventeen others of Salem. The corporation was authorized to hold $30,000 of real and $300,000 of personal property, and reference is made in the act to the date of the original partnership, May 5, 1796."

In the mill-pond in front of his residence, Read experimented by applying steam to paddles of a small boat, before Robert Fulton made his larger and now well-known experiments in steamboating on the Hudson river. Mr. Read was the first man to apply to the government for a patent, and himself framed the first patent law. He represented the district in Congress in 1800-03, as a Federalist.

Old newspapers show in their files (still well-preserved) certain arrivals of vessels at the "Port of Danvers" as late as during the summer of 1848. From April 1 to November 30, 1848, there were 172 arrivals, including 58 cargoes of lumber, 31 wood and bark; 43 flour and grain, 17 lime, 3 molasses, 2 of salt, 4 of coal, 12 in ballast. There were 17 vessels loaded for other ports, two cargoes being sent to the coast of Africa. It is said that the first cargo of coal ever landed here was owned by Parker Brown, but nearly as early was the shipment of J. W. Ropes in August, 1849.

As the years went by, ship-building and shipping interests became less and less, until today the place is of no considerable consequence. The business of present Danversport is that of any ordinary small village along the New England coast, the railway and a few small factories constituting the bulk of commerce. Like numerous other Essex county villages and towns, the history-making periods of the place are quite far remote. With the expansion of many large cities nearby, with the change in ocean shipping, etc., the general changes wrought by transportation, all tend to lessen the interest and development of the smaller places.

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

## THE TOWN OF LYNNFIELD.

For more than a hundred and fifty years what is now known as Lynnfield was an outpost of Lynn. March 13, 1638, "Lynn was granted six miles into the country," and a survey was ordered, to "see if it bee fit for another plantation or no." It was long called Lynn End, and occupied chiefly by farmers. In 1712 it was first set off as a parish. A church was provided in 1715 and five years later a minister was settled. In 1782 the parish became a separate district and in 1814 the district was incorporated as a town. From what can be seen in church records, it appears that many of the earliest settlers were from Lynn, and included such names as Aborn, Bancroft, Gowing, Mansfield, Newhall and Wellman. The natural scenery here is indeed beautiful—especially in spring and autumn time.

Among the ponds or lakelets within the town is Lynnfield, or sometimes called "Humphrey's Pond." In the eighties it was surveyed and the report showed it to contain two hundred and ten acres, a portion extending into Peabody. It was in this pond in August, 1850, that ladies on a picnic from Lynn (mostly) were out three hundred yards from shore, on a rude flat-bottomed boat, when a few women moved to the opposite side of the craft, which unbalanced the boat and it was suddenly upset, with the sad result that thirteen of the ladies were drowned, there being twenty-five on the boat at the time.

The main branch of the Ipswich river flows along the northern border of Lynnwood, while Saugus, Hawkes and other brooks and springs help make up the water-supply for the city of Lynn.

From various sources, including the records of the General Court, the following history has been secured concerning "fires in the woods". During her whole history Lynnfield has periodically been subjected to extensive forest fires. Down into the eighties such fires occurred and the result was great loss in the way of standing, as well as down timber and vast amounts of cord wood. In November, 1646, the General Court

passed this order concerning "Kinlinge fires in wuds": "Whosoever shall kindle any fires in ye woods, before ye 10th day of ye first mo (March) or after ye last day of the weeke, or Lords Day, shall pay all damages yt any pson shall loose thereby, & halfe so much to ye comon treasury." At the same time the General Court generously allowed the use of "tobacko," under certain restrictions, saying, "it shall be lawful for any man yt is on his journey (remote from any house five miles) to take tobacco so that thereby hee sets not ye woods on fire to ye damage of any man." During the decades just prior to and after the Civil War, many forests in this town were on fire and both standing and cut down timber was burned.

It was David Hewes, a native of this town, who had the honor of driving the "golden spike" connecting the two divisions of the Union and Pacific railroads on May 10, 1869. He was a contractor on that great highway.

Total valuation of property in this town in 1886 was $446,000. Rate of taxation, nine dollars per thousand. Number of farms, 55; number tons hay raised, 970; gallons of milk, 142,000; pounds of butter, 5,222; dozens of eggs, 18,400; bushels of potatoes, 4,000; acres Indian corn, 45; total value of all products, $54,415. Lynnfield has had a population at various periods as follows: In 1820 it had 596; in 1850, 1,723; in 1870, it was 818; in 1900 it had 1,888; in 1910 it had 911; in 1920, according to U. S. returns, it was 1,165.

In 1658, Joseph Newhall, the first of the settlers in Lynnfield, was born in Lynn. 1719, December 17, Northern Lights observed for first time; people greatly alarmed. 1749, a hot summer, multitudes of grasshoppers. 1775, April 19, Battle of Lexington; Daniel Townsend of Lynnfield killed. 1804, snow fell in July. 1806, Newburyport and Boston turnpike completed; cost half a million dollars. 1833, in the autumn there was a great shower of meteors; at one time during a certain day not less than two hundred and fifty thousand of these metors were visible above the horizon in Boston. 1854, railroad opened up through Lynnfield Center in October. 1861, Lynnfield furnished sixty soldiers to the Civil War. There was a military encampment, with drill grounds in South Village.

The first church of Lynnfield was formed August, 1720, though the people had used a meeting-house five years before. For many years the people went to Lynn to attend church, until they became strong enough to build for themselves and to support a minister. Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk was the first minister, his salary being fixed at £70 per year. He was born in Cambridge and graduated at Harvard College.

The Orthodox Evangelical Society at Center Village, beginning in 1833, is a Trinitarian Congregational Church, formed in 1832. The South Village Congregational Trinitarian was formed in 1849. The

Methodist society was formed in 1816, and a house of worship erected in 1823. There are now two churches in the town, one at the village of Lynnfield, a Congregational society, with Rev. Francis George as pastor, and a Congregational at Lynnfield Center. The Episcopal denomination holds services regularly in Lynnfield Center, occupying the Congregational church building.

At Lynnfield there is a garage and a grocery store at present. The postmaster is Arthur Elliott. At Lynnfield Center the postmaster is Edward E. Russell. The practicing physician is Dr. Franklin W. Freeman. Here one finds today a lively railroad station point, two general dealers, two notion dealers, and a number of near-by summer resorts, well patronized during the heated term of each year.

Lynnfield became a district in 1782, a town in 1814. It has kept pace with other towns in Essex county with passing years, in its improvements and financial disbursements, making the funds go as far as possible.

The 1920 assessments for this town were as follows: Number of residents assessed on property, 383; non-residents assessed, 219; polls assessed, 343; valuation of assessed estate, $252,785; valuation of real estate, $1,723,233; valuation of property assessed, $1,976,018; tax on personal estate, $6,446.02; tax on real estate, $43,942.44; tax on polls at $5.00, $1,715.00; tax rate per $1,000, $25.50; horses assessed, 101; cows, 249; swine, 116; sheep, 10; neat cattle, 6; fowl, 2,407; dwelling houses, 457; acres land, 6,039.

Treasurer's Financial Report (1920)—Treasury warrants paid, $107,181; school balance, $412; interest on cemetery fund, 40c; on deposit Wakefield Trust Company, $1,725.88; total taxes collected in years 1917-18-19-20, $109,320.45.

Registration, Licenses, Etc.—Number of males registered, 385; number females registered, 241; population, 1920 census, 1,165.

The present Town Officials are: Selectmen and Overseers of the Poor—Albert P. Mansfield (chairman), Frank C. Newhall, Carl H. Russell; Town Clerk, Oscar E. Phillips; Town Treasurer, Franklin W. Freeman; Tax Collector, Franklin W. Freeman; Assessors, Henry W. Hodgdon, E. H. Gerry, George H. Bancroft; Trustees of Public Library, George E. Lambert, Jr., E. E. Gerry, Andrew Mansfield; Park Commissioners, Edward Q. Moulton, Sidney Richards and Harry B. Nesbitt; Cemetery Commissioners, Seth H. Russell, Willis E. Peabody, B. M. Parker; Constables for one year: Albert G. Tedford, John M. Temple; Tree Warden, Lyman H. Twiss; Town Counsel, Rutherford E. Smith; Town Accountant, Oscar E. Phillips. The Finance Committee for the past year was made up as follows: Harry B. Nesbitt, John Ward, Lewis F. Allen, William Walden and Andrew Mansfield.

In this, my portion of the Lynnfield section of this history, I have tried to accentuate the high lights and awaken new interest in the truly

remarkable story of Lynnfield, formerly Lynn End. Keeping its village characteristics of the best type, it is yet a sharer in, and a contributor to, the life of the larger towns and cities which surround it. Its pupils have made noble records in the schools of Andover, Salem, Peabody, Wakefield, Lynn. The educational privileges of Boston have been eagerly sought by Lynnfield groups.

Little space can be given in a work of this kind to prehistoric matters. But it should be stated that Phillips Andover has a collection of Essex county Indian relics that teachers are learning to appreciate more and more enthusiastically. Also, in the Harrison Gray Otis House, Boston, headquarters of the Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities, William Wallace Taylor, formerly field man for the Department of Archæology, under Professor Warren K. Moorehead, Andover College, has placed a collection. Working in Lynnfield, in the interests of the Preservation Society, recently, Mr. Taylor came upon interesting Indian village and camp sites. We can but touch upon the matter, but we have named the sources of fuller information.

In the meadow at the rear of the Dr. Franklin W. Freeman estate, an Indian camp was located, on what is known as Partridge Island. An elementary beach was found. Triangular war-arrowheads showed that preparation for hostilities was necessary. When hunting arrow-heads only are found, the conjecture is a reasonable one that local tribes were friendly. Depredations from the north were probably the facts of the story. Mr. Taylor located other Indian sites in Lynnfield, and the pestles and other implements found are in the museum at the Harrison Gray Otis House, Boston.

Mr. B. P. Verne, formerly of Lynnfield, now of Reading, exhibited an Indian millstone for grinding corn, which he found on his estate in this town, at the Antique Display in the Public Library building, given in connection with the town's celebration of its centennial anniversary in 1914.

This celebration was planned for and given on an extensive scale. It was not only a celebration of the date when Lynn End became a separate township, but, as well, a recognition of the two hundredth anniversary of the building of the old meeting-house on the green in 1714. This celebration, the religious part of which was held in the old church on June 13th and the civic portion on June 17th, was so fully reported in the "Daily Evening Item," Lynn, of the 15th, 16th, 17th and 18th of June, 1914, that references to this source of information would supply one with almost any fact of previous or contemporary history of Lynnfield. Each speaker and each participant did his utmost to emphasize in picturesque terms the interesting history of the town. This was true of the floats in the parade, where, largely through the talent and work of Sidney B. Mansfield (a sketch of whom appears in this volume) "Townsend's Kitchen," old school days, old-time industries, etc., were delightfully represented.

During many years there was one church, the Congregational, holding services in the old church on the green. A Unitarian flock detached itself and held gatherings there between the years 1816 and 1894. The Congregationalists dedicated the present church building in 1832, and it has been the one church center for a long period, in reality supplying the place of a community church and numbering amongst its members men and women who have taken their letters from Baptist, Methodist, and other churches, where they had been communicants in former homes.

The church in Lynnfield, which was begun as a mission interest connected with the church at the Center, sharing the services of the pastor at the Center, has now its own resident pastors and an up-to-date church edifice. The present pastors are Rev. Francis D. George and Rev. H. Lincoln McKenzie.

At the Center, the Episcopalians have formed a mission which is fostered by the Emmanuel Episcopal Church, Wakefield, and is called St. Paul's Mission. The rector is Rev. William E. Love. There are about thirty communicants. The date of formation is March, 1918. The one church building suffices for all. In the recent renovation and remodelling, the needs of the Episcopalians were considered. Mr. and Mrs. C. O. Blood, formerly of Lynn, rendered great service in this artistically completed work. They, with the other members of the committee, worship with the Congregational flock. John Ward and others of the Episcopal mission showed great interest and gave substantial aid, so that the result is excellent, and all use the edifice in harmony. Both congregations, as one, welcomed Bishop Babcock at a recent confirmation.

At Lynnfield, the Catholic mission, which has been holding services since August 15, 1920, when mass was said for the first time by Rev. F. J. Halloran of Wakefield, has a congregation of approximately one hundred and fifty members. Ground was broken for the new chapel August 15, 1921, five days after the purchase of the land. Members of the two religious flocks aid each other in social functions. On September 13, 1920, a very successful and generally enjoyed lawn fete was held at Wardhurst in aid of the work. The mission was established by St. Joseph's Catholic Church, Wakefield.

The story of the hero of old Lynn End, Daniel Townsend, is told fully in the Wellman history. It is further related that the night before the Battle of Lexington neighbors and friends gathered in the Townsend kitchen, bringing all the old pewter they could contribute, equipped with bullet-moulds, to run bullets for the needs of occasion. One of these moulds is in the possession of the Perkins family and can be seen at the old Perkins homestead, on Chestnut street.

Daniel Townsend's marriage took him, with Zerviah, his bride, to the home near the shore of what is now Pilling's Pond. Previous to his marriage, it is doubtless the fact that the young man lived with his family, and they occupied the west end of what has always been known as

the Townsend-Sweetser house, on the Wakefield road. This house is the most interesting one in the town, because it has been kept very largely as it was built. Tradition says that it had its double walls for Indian protection. It has a gambrel roof, and an entry and staircase of oak, an ancient cupboard, and interesting fireplaces. Here died the sister and nephew of Charlotte Cushman, who visited these relatives as frequently as she was able to do so. To the centennial of 1876 were sent from this house the silver shoebuckles of Samuel Adams, the patriot.

The great-grandchildren of Daniel Townsend, George Townsend and Mary Richardson, were united in marriage, and bore two children, girls, of whom one died in early childhood. The other, Harriet, married Richard Hewes and bore two children, Carrie Amelia and Frank. The daughter, Carrie, became Mrs. Laselle. She with her family lived for many years in Lynn, and she died there, on Marianna street, some years ago. Of the thirteen children of Mr. and Mrs. Laselle, six are living, as far as has been learned. In the possession of members of this family are the table linen and the silver table spoons marked "Z. T." which belonged to Zerviah Townsend, wife of the hero. A chapter of the C. A. R. is named in honor of Daniel Townsend, and a group of the young people came to Lynnfield to hold exercises in the old church and to visit the grave of the hero, at the time of the formation of the chapter.

The occupants of the other part of the old house under consideration were John and Betsey Sweetser. Everybody seems to have known and loved "Aunt Betsey." She was a very remarkable maker of dolls, and a most interesting specimen of her handicraft of this heart-winning variety can be seen in the aforementioned Harrison Gray Otis House, Boston. Catherine Sweetser, daughter of John and Betsey, married Captain John Perkins, and went to live at the Perkins homestead, where her grandson resides. He and his wife cherish certain of the possessions of Betsey Sweetser and her daughter.

Mansfield is one of the oldest and most honored names. So many of the old family names are disappearing, it is cause for rejoicing that we have promise of the continuance of this worthy stock. The present chairman of the board of selectmen is Albert P. Mansfield; and his wife, Martha D. Mansfield, is secretary of the school committee. There has never been a time when there was not a Mansfield serving the town. The late Andrew Mansfield was sent to the legislature. This is not genealogy, but history, therefore we must content ourselves with the mention of one more Mansfield item. Everybody who came to the centennial celebration was interested to see and call the attention of the children to the exhibit arranged on the wall of the library. It included, with other Mansfield accoutrements, the sworn worn by Major Andrew Mansfield at the laying of the cornerstone of the Bunker Hill Monument on June 17, 1825.

Newhall is an old Lynnfield name. A mayor of Lynn, Hon. Asa Tarbell Newhall, has been supplied from this family. General Josiah Newhall was one of a group interested in founding the Massachusetts Horticultural Society, and references to this fact, with resolutions adopted concerning his work, may be seen in the archives of the society. This Josiah Newhall was the first representative from Lynnfield. He served in the War of 1812, and was chairman of the school board for twenty-two years. At the age of eighty-six he died at Lynnfield, December 26, 1879. Other members of the family have achieved prominence. Road construction has been in the hands of capable members of the family for long periods. Frank C. Newhall is at the present time secretary of the board of selectmen and forest warden.

A well-known Lynnfield name is Coney. The Coney homestead is on Lowell street. Two representatives of the family are living in Lynnfield —J. Winslow Perkins, and Miss Kate E. Coney, of Lynnfield and West Roxbury, a teacher in the Boston schools and an authority on ferns and flora. Miss Coney also gives informal travel-talks before women's organizations. The father of the late Jeremiah Coney served in the War of 1812, on "Old Ironsides." John Coney was Paul Revere's instructor in craftsmanship.

Russell is another name that has figured in Lynnfield annals for generations. The telephone exchange is located in the home of Mrs. S. Russell, widow of Francis P. Russell, for many years merchant and postmaster. The present postmaster is Edward A. Russell, who is also a member of the school committee. Mr. Henry C. Russell was, with his brother, the late William G. Russell, owner of a provision market on Portland street, Boston. Mr. Russell is now interested in real estate activities in Malden and Lynnfield Center. The winter home of the family is in Malden, but Mr. Russell is in Lynnfield Center during the summers, and identifies himself with many interests, especially in matters musical. Carl H. Russell is a member of the board of selectmen and commander of the Legion Post. The father of Seth H. Russell, whose residence is at "Willow Castle", the estate on which still flourishes the more than century-old willow, was one of the "town fathers" for a number of years and served on the school board at the time of Horace Mann, of whom he related reminiscences. This Enoch Russell was sent to the Legislature for a term of years. Mrs. Seth H. Russell, Hattie F., has been in charge of the primary department of the Sunday school of the Congregational church for thirty years. Mrs. Russell was a teacher in the public schools of Essex county. Their daughter Marian is making a name for herself in educational fields.

Bancroft is an old Lynnfield name. In 1711 a meeting held at Captain Bancroft's resulted in the building of the old church on the green in 1714. Members of the family have served the town and the church in many capacities. Mr. George H. Bancroft has been active in town af-

fairs, especially as trustee of the public library. Mr. and Mrs. Bancroft cater to many visitors as well as residents, through "Ye Village Tea Room" and the provision store at Pillings Pond. J. Lawrence Bancroft, brother of George, is a member of the firm of Perkins & Bancroft, of Melrose.

Herrick is an old name with us, and the Deacon Herrick estate is a very interesting place to visit, especially as the ancient fireplaces can be seen in both the larger and the smaller house, the latter occupied by Mr. and Mrs. Gilbert Herrick. Deacon Herrick was a member of the school board for many years. Traditions are loved and preserved and hospitality has always been abundant in this home. Miss Clara M. Herrick, daughter of the house, is head nurse in one of Boston's best known institutions. Miss Herrick is a graduate of the Lynn Hospital.

The Cox family has furnished members who have served the town in different capacities. Besides the old house, there are several others occupied by sons of the family with their families. The locality is always known as Cox's Corner. Mrs. Clarissa Cox was a remarkable woman who lived to the age of 101 and a few months, spending three-fourths of her life in this locality.

The Danforth homestead and acres of verdant farmland have delighted the eye of many comers for generations, situated, as they are, so near the station. John Danforth was station master during a long period, also serving the town as selectman for years. His son, the late John Morton Danforth, was known throughout Essex county, both as county commissioner and in connection with the County Argicultural Society, which he served as secretary and in other capacities. This Mr. J. M. Danforth was sent to the legislature from Lynnfield.

The old Joseph Henfield place, bought and occupied by B. H. Robidou, of Lynn, with his family, as a summer residence, is said to be the oldest house in town. The Perkins homestead is one of the older houses. The original deed of the land, written on vellum, is dated 1695, and is signed by Governor Phipps, the "witchcraft governor" of Boston. A very small house which sufficed for the first couple, John and his wife, formerly Anna Hutchinson of Danvers, has been enlarged and altered by each succeeding generation of the family. A partial restoration to the features of other days revealed a number of interesting arrangements, and corroborated certain traditions. This house is still occupied by a Perkins family descendant.

The Hart house on Chestnut street is one of the older homes. It is still occupied by members of the Hart family. An interesting feature of this house are the portholes in the western outer wall, where members of the family watched for danger in the time of Indian attacks. A heavily-wooded section, much of which is still the same, lay in that direction. Clapboards have been put over these apertures, but the bulge of the wall shows plainly their location. A garden stile and quaint gates

between the house and gardens accentuate most attractively the English origin of this family There was a still older homestead on the "acres and acres" of Hart orchard and woodland beyond Lowell street. It was from this family that Hon. Thomas N. Hart went forth into the world and became a mayor of Boston.

Possibly the one native son of Lynnfield who made the greatest name for himself in the outside world was David Hewes, Esq. In several localities in California announcement is made through the megaphone of the sight-seeing automobile, that David Hewes came from the East to start work in California, with no money, a wheelbarrow and a Chinaman, and became known as the maker of San Francisco, a great railroad man, and a multi-millionaire. The story of this remarkable son of Lynnfield is fully told in the "Hewes Genealogy." It was he who gave the gold spike used at the ceremony at Promontory Point, Utah, 80 miles west of Ogden and 804 miles east of San Francisco, when in the presence of 1,000 notable guests the railroad across the continent was completed, and the news flashed from the golden spike, by electricity, to all the great centers, where crowds awaited the moment. In 1879, President and Mrs. Hayes were the guests of Mr. and Mrs. David Hewes at their home in Oakland, Cal. David Hewes, with the second Mrs. Hewes, attended the golden wedding of Mr. Gladstone. Several libraries and art collections were presented by Mr. Hewes to public institutions. Like an inspiring romance reads the story of this courageous, Christian man. At the time of Lynnfield's centennial, Mr. Hewes sent several telegrams and a check for two hundred dollars. James Hewes, father of the present John Hewes, was elected to the convention that revised the constitution; he also represented Lynnfield in the legislature for a term of years.

Deacon William Roundy, father of the present William and George —of whom further mention is made elsewhere in this history—was sent to the legislature in 1872 and was one of the committee sent to view and accept for the State the Hoosac Tunnel. Deacon Roundy was also the town's treasurer for fourteen years, and was a truly-beloved citizen, a public benefactor.

Rutherford E. Smith is one of the town's most prominent present-day citizens. Mr. Smith is a Boston lawyer; he is in the city winters, but he returns to the fine old home on Lowell street, with his family, each summer. The celebrated Pocohontas spring is on the Smith estate. Mr. Smith is town counsel, and is usually elected moderator of town meetings. He was chairman of the general committee at the time of the Centennial.

"Wardhurst" is known far and wide as the home of the O'Donnells. This beautiful estate has many times been placed at the disposal of the townspeople. Functions held there have augmented funds being collected for worthy causes. It was there the "Welcome Home" celebration was held for the "boys," veterans of the World War. As most

people know, John T. O'Donnell is the famous "Hap Ward," and his cordial wife is Lucy Daly, one of the celebrated Daly sisters.

Elvira Leveroni is well known in Lynnfield, and she has identified herself with many town activities most generously. Since her sister, Mrs. DeMasellis, still resides here, Madame Leveroni comes, when she is able to do so, to the home at Lynnfield Center. Recently at the Pearson home she gave to a group of friends and neighbors a rare treat, singing to the accompaniment of her own records.

Mrs. Annie Laurie Heiser was a Lynnfield girl, Miss Brown. Now the wife of John Heiser, the composer, she is prominent in musical circles in Somerville and Boston. Mrs. Heiser, too, has been heard in Lynnfield, in benefits, on many occasions. Henry K. Oliver, composer of the old hymn tune, "Federal Street," lived in Lynnfield on Chestnut street, at one time. George T. Angell and his family lived for many years in the Bryant house at the Center. The handbag and the unusual cane he used for years during his residence here have been placed by Lynnfield friends in the Harrison Gray Otis House museum, Boston.

A tablet placed at the entrance of the old burying ground informs the comer that the grave of Daniel Townsend is within the yard, also that of Martin Herrick, the teacher-physician living in Lynn End, at that time. The name of this Martin Herrick is famous, because he rode from this direction, as Revere from the other, to warn the people of the movement of the British.

Lynnfield has sent many teachers of excellent calibre forth into the world. At one time, nine women of the profession travelled together on certain trains. At present, Lynnfield has one teacher in the English high school in Boston, Miss Hastings; four teachers of manual training in Boston schools—Mr. Parker, Miss Coney, Miss Lyons, Harlan Peabody; one teacher in Olivet College, Michigan, Miss Nelson; a teacher of Spanish and French in Wareham, Massachusetts, Miss Marian Russell; a teacher in the Walden Commercial School, Miss Katherine Ross; a teacher of Spanish in a high school of Washington, D. C., Miss Mildred Hutchinson, who recently spent two years teaching in Madrid, Spain; Mrs. Florence Howe, teacher in Tracy School, Lynn; Edna Ramsdell, Lynn; Jessie Lynch, Peabody. Mr. Henry W. Pelton, whose residence at the south part of the town is one of the groups of fine estates on the main street, is part owner and principal of Burdett Business College, Lynn.

Mrs. George E. Lambert is a well known writer of verse, under the pen name Hannah Wheeler Pingree. Mrs. Muriel Russell has written some charming verse, published from time to time in the "Daily Evening Item," Lynn. Miss Mabel Emery has been connected with several New York publications; she is the author of the Underwood and Underwood travel series. Miss Gertrude Emery was for many years librarian in Lynn, serving in the juvenile department of the Lynn Public Library.

Edwin L. Thurston, formerly a Lynnfield boy, is prominent in musical circles in Boston, teacher and composer. Mr. Thurston belongs to the Henfield family, whose homestead, still standing, is said to be the oldest house in town. Mrs. Annie P. Hutchinson is the retiring regent of the Faneuil Hall Chapter of the D. A. R. Annie Stevens Perkins was connected regularly with "Normal Instructor," a New York educational publication, for many years. Benjamin Downing, at one time a musician in Lynnfield, made his later home in Cincinnati, Ohio, and became an organist in that city

Henry P. Emerson, a former Lynnfield boy, came from Buffalo, New York, to participate in the Lynnfield Centennial, difficult as it was to leave in June, with people wondering where one could possibly find their superintendent of schools. That his presence and his message were appreciated was evident. Nathan Mortimer Hawkes of Lynn, well known as statesman and historian, another native of Lynnfield, came with his truly-prized greetings to the centennial observance. Cyrus Wakefield, for whom the town of Wakefield was named, married Captain Bancroft's daughter, and took her from her Lynnfield home to the Wakefield residence. This edifice was used as a headquarters for Red Cross and other war activities, recently. Rev. Jacob Hood, for years connected with musical work and festivities in Salem and Marblehead, married Sophia Needham, who was born at the old Needham place on Lynnfield Hill. The couple came to Lynnfield to complete a beautiful life in a beautiful way. Their portraits have hung in the chapel of the Congregational church for years.

Bishop Birney, formerly Dean of Theology at Boston University, now Bishop of Shanghai, China, has had his summer home on Chestnut street for several years and has occupied the pulpit of the Lynnfield Center Church on a number of occasions, always welcomed with love and pride by those whom he said he was glad to call "neighbors." The "Boston Traveler" announced the natal day of the Bishop, Sunday, September 11. Miss Martha Sheldon, who has a home with her sister, nearly opposite the town hall, was a teacher in the Morton Lane School for Girls, Maulmain, Burmah, for many years. Dr. John Perkins of Middle street, Boston, now Hanover, numbered among his patients members of "the first families" of the city, in the period just preceding the War of the Revolution. He died at the old homestead on Chestnut street. His manuscript books are preserved. Starr Parsons, former city solicitor of Lynn, was an honor student at Harvard as a Lynnfield young man. Rev. Francis D. George, pastor at the Center Congregational Church, was stationed near Calcutta, India, for several years. Special opportunity to make the acquaintance of members of diplomatic circles enabled him to enlarge upon the usual experiences of a missionary resident. The late Charles K. Bradford, a long-time dweller at Lynnfield, near the "Turnpike," was an inventor of note. Shoe machinery parts and a very im-

portant sewing-machine device are among his better known achievements. This Mr. Bradford was in direct line from Governor Bradford. Mr. William Walden, formerly of Lynn, has brought the standard of musical activity in Lynnfield Center forward. Under his leadership the chorus at the centennial celebration did excellent work. Afield, Mr. Walden is known as the inventor of a patented material used in automobile upholstering. He is the composer of an alto and tenor duet, sacred selection, published by the Oliver Ditson Company, and other music.

Gas has just been introduced into the town from Lynn, and housekeepers are rejoicing. It was interesting to watch the trench-digger, that would have been overseas if the war had not most mercifully ended. At the rate of three feet a minute, it walked through the town, and pipes were laid in a very short space of time. The cheery veterans of the World War who operated the machinery won hearts as they co-operated, one with one leg missing, the other minus an arm.

Electricity has been used in both street and house lighting for a number of years, and most houses have running water, some families depending upon mills, others having installed engines. The majority of families own or have frequent use of automobiles. It is not at all uncommon to see airplanes flying above the town, as it lies beneath two air routes, one toward the shore, one inland, the route between Boston and Lowell. Each portion of the town has railroad accommodation, supplemented by auto-bus routes. The bus line between Lynnfield Center and Wakefield is privately controlled. At Lynnfield, the citizens got together and outlined effective plans for a community bus, which connects that end of the town with Lynn and with Wakefield, including the Montrose section, also Saugus.

School transportation is provided for. Excellent conditions prevail in matters educational, the teaching force being of the best, with special teachers from outside in several branches. Medical supervision was introduced in 1908. Dr. Franklin W. Freeman, who came to make his home in Lynnfield Center after retiring from a large practice in West Newton, is school physician.

Telephone service is fairly adequate. There is promise of improvement, made a necessity because of an increasing list of subscribers. Since February 9, 1895, Lynnfield Center has had telephone communication with the outside world, using the North Reading central, at first but now listed under an exchange of its own. Lynnfield subscribers at the south part of the town are listed under Lynn.

A considerable length of the Atlantic Highway lies within the limits of the town. We are quite accustomed to the traffic policeman. We shall use the new name, but in our hearts we shall remember it is the storied old Newburyport Turnpike, after all. The town has efficient fire protection, a well organized chemical company in each precinct, in charge of up-to-date apparatus.

The town has an excellent public library, which was opened July 22, 1892. Miss Elizabeth W. Green has been librarian from the opening. Her assistant is Mrs. Gertrude A. Chipman, who has charge of the branch library at Lynnfield. Through the legacy of Mrs. Adelia Perkins Clough and the State Commission, a card catalogue has been established. The sets of pictures loaned from the Woman's Educational Association, the magazines at the reading room, and reference books, are used and appreciated by many, especially the young students.

The Lynnfield Center League has made for advancement and through special committees has been able to secure gains in railroad, telephone, and other service from outside. It is an organization composed of both men and women; its gatherings are held at the town hall. It was organized in 1908, largely through the efforts of Rev. Halah H. Loud, resident pastor at the time, George C. Frolich and Rutherford E. Smith. Civic, social and literary departments give scope for varied activity and interest. Entertainments of the highest order have been given, directed by Mrs. Nelson B. Todd, a graduate of Emerson College, and before her marriage a teacher of dramatics in Pennsylvania. Mrs. George Roundy and others have given time and talent in social functions. Mrs. Fred W. Northrup has shown cheerful ability as organizer of working forces in special lines. The meetings of the literary department have been of a high order. Albert S. Moulton has given of his rare talent in Shakespearian interpretations, and others who have helped to make these gatherings profitable and enjoyable are Mr. and Mrs. Nelson Todd, Mr. and Mrs. George Lambert, Mr. and Mrs. Ernest Clark, Mr. and Mrs. D. F. Parker, Mrs. Seth Russell, Mrs. Annie P. Hutchinson, Miss Bertha Butman. The present officers of the League are D. F. Parker, president; Rev. Francis D. George and Mrs. Charles E. Davis, vice-presidents; John Ward, treasurer; William F. Russell, secretary.

The Men's Club at the Center is a flourishing organization, which includes in its membership practically every man in the village. The business of the club is handled by a general committee, of which Charles O. Blood is chairman. This club has recently purchased an athletic field for the use of the young people of the town.

The old camp ground near Suntaug Lake had its stories in the War of 1861 to 1865. And it has had its stories during the World War. The Wellman history records the names of the soldiers who enlisted at the earlier date, many of the younger boys thrilled by the presence of the military headquarters in their midst. The names of the streets are given. "In camp at Lynnfield," so recently repeated, again brought the town into the limelight in the World War. A chapter could be written here if there were space. Moving-picture records preserved some of the camp events.

A large section of the Bay State Rifle Range, known during the

war, as Camp Plunkett, lies within the town boundaries. Visitors remark, "it's like a continual Fourth of July celebration." It was not that during war days. Lynnfield Center knew by the meets when something of special importance was forward. There was little to be said, but much to be held in mind and heart. Activities at the Range were frequently shown in the theatres, in Pathe News reels.

A chapter about Inn Days should some day be written. Everywhere is the inn at Suntaug known. Other such hostelries in the town, notably the old Sun Tavern, have been so intimately connected with history in the large that collected facts and tales would be welcomed, not only in Lynnfield, but also in the world outside. Lynnfield has an increasing summer population. This is true of each end of the town. At Pillings Pond, about one hundred camps are located. There is a canoe livery at "Shoreside," the attractive refreshment center, but many residents own their own craft, of different types.

The Civil War record of Lynnfield is told in the Wellman history. In the northern section of the town, nearly every family sent its young men to the front. Only two veterans of the Civil War remain with us in Lynnfield—Edward Q. Moulton and Thomas Edward Brown. Lynnfield veterans have been affiliated with H. M. Warren Post 12, Wakefield.

On the first page of the annual town report for 1919 is printed the list of those from Lynnfield who served in the Army and Navy of the United States during the World War, sixty-four in number. Under the caption "In Memoriam" are placed these names: Lieutenant Willard J. Freeman, Benjamin L. Mitchell, John F. Lammers. Impressive services, attended by a great number of loving townspeople, have been held over the bodies, brought from overseas. On Memorial Day, 1921, exercises were held on the green at the unveiling of a memorial tablet placed in a great boulder. Dr. Freeman and John Ward were the committee in charge of the work. Rev. Francis D. George's address was considered by all most eloquent. A duplicate tablet will be placed in the new public library building at the south precinct, Lynnfield.

Lynnfield Post 131 of the American Legion was formed in the fall of 1919. Carl Hazen Russell has been its commander since its formation.

During the war a little paper called "Lynnfield Center Town Topics" was gotten out, chiefly through the efforts of Dexter F. Parker. It was intended for "the boys," and addresses were published in order to encourage letter-writing. Four items gleaned will show the scope of this sheet and they are good history, also, date October 11, 1918: " 'Tody' Pearson has completed the course at Princeton and was at home for ten days, returning to Princeton Monday. 'Puss' Cox has been assigned to duty on Auto Aeroplane guns. Henry Richards is to receive a commission as Ensign, Oct. 12; he has already made one cruise to France. Lieutenant Harry B. Freeman, of the Aviation Corps, is

reported missing, his plane having been seen to fall behind the German lines."

The Lynnfield Center Red Cross was a live wire during the war period. D. F. Parker was chairman; Mrs. George E. Lambert, secretary. Treasurer Nelson B. Todd bore an active and efficient part. Miss Elizabeth W. Green and Miss Sarah Herrick were in charge of the garment making. Miss Margaret McCarthy, in charge of food conservation and the women's Liberty Loan drive, gave invaluable aid. A committee of young women co-operated efficiently,—Miss Katherine Ross, Mrs. Gladys Russell, Mrs. Lou Russell, Miss Gladys Richards, Miss Bertha Barnjum, Miss Alice Bartlett, Miss Jane Bartlett, Miss Anna Blanchard. Mrs. John M. Harnden and Mrs. Richard Campbell were in charge of the surgical dressings department. Sale of war savings stamps was encouraged, the teachers aiding materially.

Lynnfield, the south precinct of the town, was remarkably well organized for war work. Henry W. Pelton was chairman of the Red Cross and Liberty Loan drives. A committee of about twenty men assisted, and large amounts were raised. Over the top in each Red Cross and each Liberty Loan drive, this precinct made a remarkable record in two of the Liberty Loan drives, when it oversubscribed the full town allotment. Another record accomplishment was that of the Sunday morning when, in two hours, more than $350 was subscribed for sufferers in the Halifax disaster. At the time of the Lynn War Chest drive, an average of $10 per capita was raised, in this precinct, numbering about 500 persons. One gift, which was truly an offering, will always be remembered, and it was typical of the spirit of generosity which prevails. The women were organized for work under the very efficient leadership of Mrs. Lucy Pillsbury. Miss May Elder, Mrs. Elizabeth Gerry, Mrs. Mary Mansfield were in charge of the surgical dressings department.

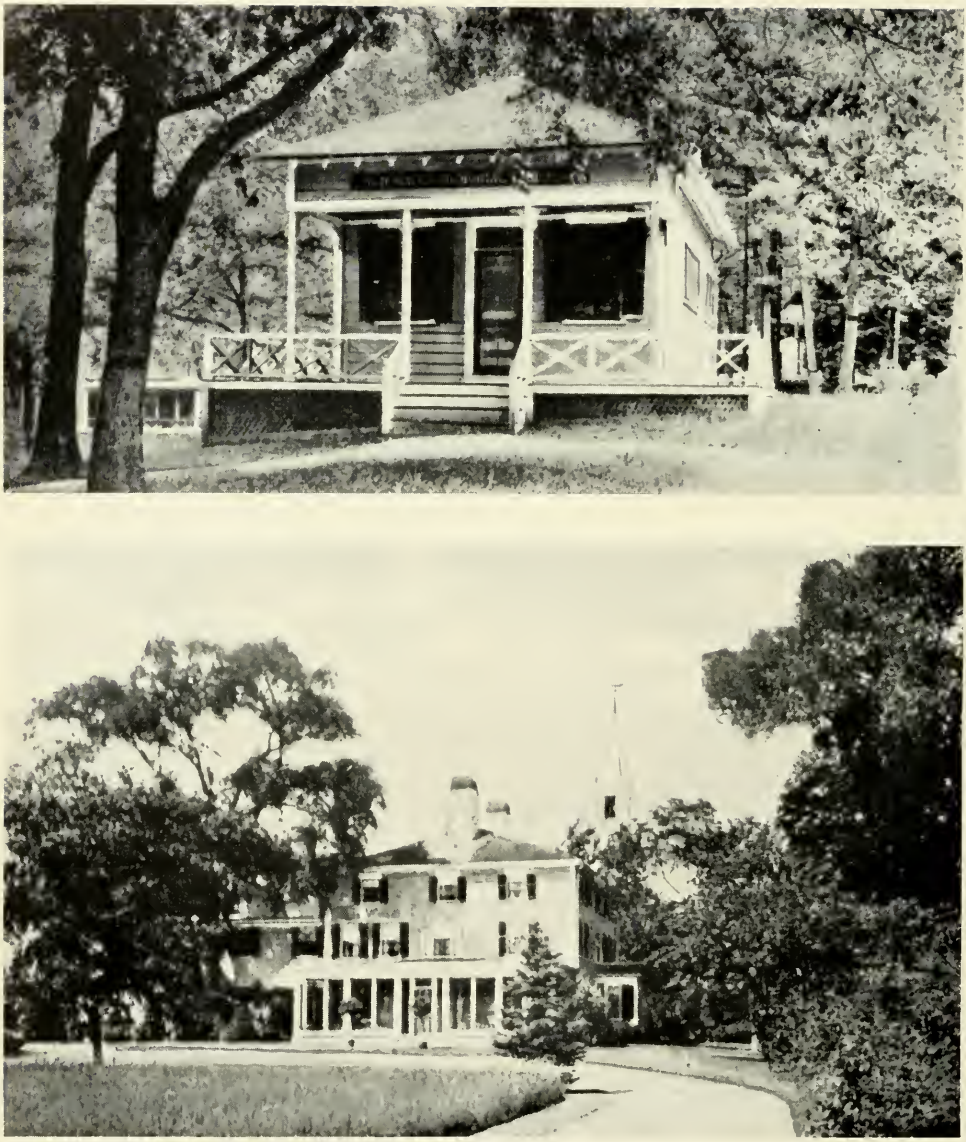
---

## CHAPTER XX.

## TOWN OF HAMILTON.

A little over twenty miles north of Boston is found the town of Hamilton, near enough the ocean for a body to hear the surf roar, yet nowhere does its territory touch the water. The old Eastern stage road winds through the center of the town; this, a part of the Old Bay Road was constructed in 1641. Ipswich is on the north, Essex on the east, Manchester and Wenham on the south, and Topsfield on the west. The great hills include Sagamore and Vineyard. The natural scenery hereabouts is indeed charming to the lover of nature. The area of the town is 9,440 acres. About three hundred acres are under water usually. Hamilton was originally in Ipswich, and was known as the Hamlet.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS



ABOVE—BATES MEMORIAL LIBRARY, HAMILTON; BELOW, HOUSE WHERE LAFAYETTE STOPPED, HAMILTON

The exact date of the settlement in this town is not now known. It is certain that land was granted to Matthew Whipple in 1638, and through this tract coursed the old Eastern stage line. His house was sold in July, 1647, to John Annable, tailor.

Hamilton was named for Alexander Hamilton and the date was 1793. However, the separation was not completed until later. The United States census in 1900 gave this town a population of 1,614; in 1910 it was given as 1,749, and in 1920 (last enumeration), it was only 1,631. It may be said, in passing, that its population in 1810 was 780.

After the original incorporation of Hamilton, the first officers inincluded these: Deacon Nathaniel Whipple, moderator; Lemuel Brown, clerk; Nathaniel Whipple, treasurer; Jonathan Lamson, Captain Daniel Brown and Joseph Poland, Jr., selectmen.

From the first, the principal business of Hamilton has been farming. There has been some manufacturing, but quite limited. About 1834 a large woolen mill was established on the Hamilton side of the Ipswich river, by the Mannings, hence the name "Manning's Mills." During the Civil War and in the year 1864 this factory turned out 5,500 pairs of woolen blankets and army ribbed-socks, etc., to the value of $135,000. January 12, 1884, these mills were totally destroyed by fire and never rebuilt. In its palmy days, the factory produced large amounts of blankets, and quite a factory village grew up about the mills. Farther down the river were a number of saw mills, including the old Dodge mill.

When the Essex Branch railroad was extended through in 1872, the Drivers' Union Ice Company opened up a large industry in ice shipping. The town's first railroad advantages date from the building of the Eastern Railroad in 1839, and this put many inns and stage stations out of commission.

Before the introduction of improved shoe-making machinery, Hamilton was dotted here and there with little shoe-shops, where boots and shoes were made by hand. In 1837 it was estimated that the value of home-made boots and shoes here was $14,700. At a very early day the fishing business was one of some importance, especially in the eastern portion, but the building of fishing boats was a much greater industry; these boats ran from ten to twenty tons capacity each. Captain John Woodbury built many such boats, and had to haul the same to the Chebacco river, by teams of cattle.

The first postoffice was established in 1803 and continued many years. The business interests of today are simply stores and shops, such as are usually demanded in towns and villages of the size of Hamilton. It will be understood that the town now has three trading points—South Hamilton, at the railroad station, and Hamilton proper, and Asbury Grove, reached by a street-car line.

Hamilton town has three postoffices—one at Hamilton, one at the

depot at South Hamilton, and one at Asbury Grove. Of the one at Hamilton it may be said that it has had for its postmasters: Captain George Appleton, about 1860; David Hoyt, 1873; Frank C. Norton, Annie E. Medbury, Nellie Kimball, Bessie R. Brown, Hattie Warner, Andrew Haraden, Clara Kimball, Carrie L. Rankins, William J. Daley; the last was commissioned May 8, 1913. Office business in 1920 was about $832. The office is in the William J. Daley building, and was previously in the town hall.

At South Hamilton the postoffice is at the station, and was originally called Wenham Depot, Massachusetts, but it was changed about 1905 to South Hamilton. The postmasters have included John Merrill; Charles A. Hills, appointed in 1887; Lester E. Libby, appointed 1894; Douglas H. Knowlton, appointed (commissioned) July 1, 1914. The office has always been located in the building it now occupies. The amount of business transacted during the last year was $3,722.79.

The present (1921) officers of the town include the following: Selectmen: George H. Gibney, chairman, Arthur C. Cummings, Jonathan Lamson; school committee: Harold S. Martin, chairman; Adelaide D. Walsh, Florence M. Lunn; treasurer, John L. Woodbury; town clerk, Clarence S. Knowlton; superintendent of streets, Charles E. Whipple; assessors: George H. Gibney, chairman; George M. Adams, Jesse S. Mann; fire engineers, George F. Pendexter, chief; Erle G. Brewer, Lester M. Whipple, Rodney Adams, Frank Dane. The chief of police is Alfred T. Poole.

The town hall was erected in 1900 at a cost of $20,000; the South School was built in 1898, cost $20,000; the East School was erected in 1918, costing $20,500. Bonds are still out on the South School to the amount of $980, and on the East School for $15,000. The volunteer fire company has a membership of nearly fifty men.

According to a vote of the town in 1712, a meeting-house was built, thirty-eight by fifty feet, with twenty foot studding. The windows were small diamond-shaped glass; the rafters were unplastered, and this caused a great number of sparrows to nest and twitter in the unfinished inside of the roof. This house was razed in 1762 to give place to a larger one, forty-four by sixty feet. It was erected by the parish, the pews excepted, which in this case were allowed to be built by the owners themselves. The latter, however, were heavily fined in case they later seated themselves or any member of their family in any other seats within the house, this act being styled "ungodly."

In 1764 provision was made that "any young men singers sett in the men's sixth seat below, during the parish pleasure." There was no provision for heating this church until about 1824, when box-stoves were introduced. Lighting was always done by candles brought by the membership. Hence the notices of evening gatherings came to be universal, "at early candle light." The pulpit was high, and overhung by a

sounding-board; in front was the deacon's seat occupied by Deacons Nathaniel Whipple and John Patch. Deacon Patch sat at the door, and Deacon Whipple at the farther end, wearing a full-bottomed wig. Deacon Patch lined the hymns, while Deacon Whipple set the hymns or psalm.

Of the clergy, it may be recorded that Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth was pastor from the date of church organization in 1714 to 1768—fifty-four years; he preached until summoned to his heavenly reward. He was succeeded by Rev. Dr. Cutler, who was called when a young man in May, 1771; his Christian name was Manasseh. He was a graduate of Yale College. He became a wonderful man in his influence and deeds as a statesman, as well through Revolutionary War days as later. It was he who had the anti-slavery clause entered in the treaty of 1787, creating the great Northwest Territory, by which act Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and other Western States were admitted only as Free States to the Union. Joseph B. Felt was the successor of Dr. Cutler as pastor in Hamilton parish. He was installed in 1824, and served faithfully and well until four years before his death, in 1837, aged eighty years. Following him came Rev. George W. Kelly, who on account of ill health resigned in 1850, having served since 1834. Next came Rev. John H. Mordough from 1850 to 1861, and he was succeeded by Rev. Frank H. Johnson, who served till 1863, after which came Rev. S. F. French, who resigned in 1871, and was followed by Rev. Calvin G. Hill, who resigned in 1876, after which no regular pastor was engaged for many years. In 1883 it was found expedient to reorganize this church society, or rather to do away with the old parish rules, and they organized what was called the First Congregational Society, taking the place of the 1829 Parish above treated upon at length. This was approved by the legislature in March, 1884. Since then this church has been conducted on strictly up-to-date church methods. Further information has not been furnished the writer.

A Universalist Society was formed in 1827, by Michael Knowlton and fifteen others. This existed only a short time.

In 1860 the Methodist Episcopal Church established the Asbury Camp Meeting Association. It purchased seventy-five acres in the grove, and laid out and sold lots, upon which many cottages were built. It was successfully managed many years. Incidentally, a branch of the Eastern railroad was extended to these famous camp-grounds. The National Camp-meeting in 1870 was held on these beautiful grounds, presided over by Rev. Inskip, D.D. A postoffice was finally secured and it was named Asbury, in honor of the Methodist church's Bishop Asbury. Today the place is known as Asbury Grove. Such in brief is the start of this little hamlet within Hamilton town.

## CHAPTER XXI.

## TOWN OF WEST NEWBURY.

As the very earliest history of the territory embraced within the Town of West Newbury has already been treated in chapters on the other towns of which this sub-division of Essex county was originally a part, it will not be taken up in this connection further than is necessary to show the causes which led to the separation from other towns. Generally speaking, this article will treat only of the history of the town since the date of its incorporation in February, 1819, one hundred and two years ago. It may be well to suggest to the reader of this volume that perhaps a clearer understanding of the subject may be had by reading the chapters on "Newbury" and "Newburyport," in connection with this chapter, the three sections of Essex county being so closely connected, one with the other.

The many hillsides and beautiful valleys found in this part of the county attracted the pioneer. The landscape must have been one of great charm to the first settlers, and now after the flight of nearly three centuries, with the numerous changes and improvements added by the hand of man, it is almost a wonderland of beauty to the resident as well as to the passer-by. Pipe-Stave, Archelus, Long, Crane-Neck, Meeting-House and Indian hills are among the interesting places within the town.

As early as 1685 these remote inhabitants of the town of Newbury began to feel inconveniences, and hence we find they sought to be set off from the territory of the original town of Newbury. A petition dated March 10, 1685, to the authorities of Newbury read as follows:

> The humble request of some of the inhabitants of this town desire and entreat you would be pleased to grant us your consent, approbation and assistance in getting some help in the ministry amongst us, by reason that we doe live soe remote from the means, great part of us, that we cannot worship God; neither can our families, with any comfort or convenience; neither can our families be brought up under the means of grace, as Christians ought to bee, and which is absolutely necessary unto salvation; therefore, we will humbly crave your loving compliance with us in this, our request.

This was the first move toward a new parish in Newbury, but the records are as silent as the tomb concerning any action taken in the matter. The next date this subject is referred to in the church or town records was when the meeting-house seems to have been built in 1688 at the Plains by the people of the West district, regardless of the wishes of the old parish of Newbury. This building was thirty feet square and was built by sixteen persons. Some have claimed that the date of the erection of this church was 1686, but a clause in the will of Joseph Morfng, dated November 5, 1688, shows conclusively that at that date the

house had not been erected: "I give to the new town in Newbury twenty pounds to help build a meeting-house, if they do build one; and if they do not build one, then I give twenty pounds towards building or repairing the meeting-house now standing in Newbury." Again, in 1690, the people of the district asked the town to make some provisions for a minister among them. The committee to whom this was presented replied that "considering the times as troublesome and the town being so much behind with Mr. Richardson's salary, the farmers and neck men being under great disadvantages upon many accounts, do desire and expect, if such a thing be granted, that they should have the same privilege to provide for themselves, which we think cannot conduce to peace, therefore desire the new towne to rest satisfied for the present."

This did not suit the petitioners, and they went ahead making plans to build and to support a minister in some way themselves. When this became known to the town authorities, it was brought up at a meeting, held July 14, 1691, and voted "that understanding that several (fifteen) of the inhabitants of the new towne are about calling Mr. Edward Thompson to be their minister, the towne do manifest their dislike against it, or against any other minister whom they should call, until ye town and church are agreed upon it, looking upon such a thing to be an intrusion upon ye church and towne."

In October the same year a petition was presented to the General Court by the west-end people "to establish a people by themselves for the maintenance of the ministry among them," and in December the town voted against the grant of the petition, and chose a committee to oppose it before the General Court. Great excitement followed between those who should have been more like the Master in their relations with each other. One of the "west-enders," as then called, was indicted for calling the committee appointed to consider their petition, "devils incarnate." Many such sessions ensued and were unrelenting and severe.

Matters drifted along until May, 1693, when the town voted "that Mr. John Clarke be called to assist Mr. Richardson (the Newbury minister) in the work of the ministry at the west end of the towne, to preach to them one year in order to farther settlement and also to keep a grammar school." But matters were still troublesome until finally, December 31, 1694, a concession was made by the town, and a committee of five drew up articles and proposed to set apart the west end of the town as a separate parish. In December, 1695, five acres of land on the east side of Artichoke river and one acre of land near the west meeting-house were granted to the west inhabitants when they saw cause to move the meeting-house to the place specified by the town. Until 1824, this parish was called the Second Parish of Newbury, but after that date, by order of the General Court, it was changed to the "First Parish of West Newbury," as that town had in the meantime been incorporated an independent town of Essex county.

On February 18, 1819, the General Court passed an act by which the ancient town of Newbury was divided, the western part to be known as the town of Parsons. This name did not suit many, and June, 1820, it was legally changed to West Newbury. The first selectmen were Daniel Emery, Joseph Stanwood and Thomas Case. The local management of public affairs in this town has been fully up to the standard of other towns within Essex county.

The officers of the town in 1920 were the following: Moderator, Parker H. Nason; Town Clerk, Elwood N. Chase; Selectmen, Robert S. Brown, Parker H. Nason, George C. Howard; Superintendent of Schools, Herman N. Knox; Treasurer and Tax Collector, Charles F. Brown; Auditor, Francis W. Noyes; Constables, Charles T. Mosley, Carroll C. Ordway, Willie E. Hudson; Tree Warden and Moth Superintendent, Frank D. Bailey; Forest Fire Warden, Edward Johnston; Chief of Police, Charles T. Mosley; Lumber Surveyors, William J. Dunn, George Milnes, Sherburn T. Davis.

Real estate valuations, $934,575; personal estate valuations, $151,-614; money appropriated by the town, $39,817.96; State tax, $3,080; State highway tax, $510.50.

West Newbury in 1900 had a population of 1,558; in 1910 it was 1,473; and the last (1920) United States reports gave it 1,492.

Assessed Valuations—Number of polls assessed, 411; dwellings assessed, 425; horses assessed, 213; cows assessed, 574; neat cattle other than cows, 230; sheep assessed, 21; swine assessed, 71; fowl assessed, 3,141; residents assessed on property, 436; non-residents assessed on property, 97; assessed on poll tax only, 188; acres of land assessed, 8,-160; taxes for State, county and town, $27,152.

Financial Condition, December, 1920—Assets—Uncollected taxes, $10,324.87; cash in hands of tax collector, $151.58; balance in treasury, $936.44; balance due on account excise tax, $144.81; due from State account State aid, $1,098.00; due from State account Mothers' aid, $231.-50; due from town's account, Mothers' aid, $338.00; due from State account moth work, $135.00. Total—$13,360.20.

Liabilities—Notes due National Banks, anticipation of revenue loan, $7,500.00; notes due State Treasurer, school-house loan, $11,000.00; bills unpaid estimated, $2,250.00; total—$20,750.00; excess of liabilities over assets, $7,389.80.

At the time West Newbury was incorporated its business interests in way of sundry though unimportant industries did not aggregate more than forty thousand dollars a year, but before the eighties the volume of business had greatly increased, and shoes and hair combs were being manufactured quite extensively. The comb business was established as early as 1770, at first conducted by Enoch Noyes, a farmer, who made horn buttons. He worked in his kitchen during the winter months, having as his only tools a hatchet, a saw, a bit of glass and a

woolen polishing rag. After the battle of Bennington, he engaged a Hessian comb-maker, who had deserted from Burgoyne's army, who soon taught him the art of comb-making. The business was founded by Mr. Noyes and continued by his son, grandsons, and great-grandsons. Interviews with men who were youthful in the forties inform us that there were not less than twenty-five separate shops turning out buttons and combs in West Newbury in 1830. They took their products to Boston, sold them to dealers, and brought back their one-horse rig full of horns with which to make more combs, etc. In 1887 the number of factories had decreased to only two, but through the use of steam and machinery, these two turned out as great an output as did all the others under the early-day methods. The two who were pioneers and who had remained in trade until the entire business was abandoned in the town, were S. C. Noyes & Co., and G. O. and T. M. Chase. The largest of these two firms was that of S. C. Noyes & Co., in which were some machines invented by Hayden Brown, by which horn combs were made equal to ivory in beauty of finish. About twenty-five years ago these industries all ceased to operate.

Carriage making was also carried on in the town at one time quite extensively, but later these factories were removed to Amesbury, on the opposite side of the river, and there helped swell the number of carriage factories to above thirty operated at one time. The manufacture of shoes was carried on in West Newbury on a moderate scale. In the eighties, such a factory was still operated by James Durgin & Son.

Today there is no manufacturing in the town. The one long, well-kept highway, with street cars running on its side, passes through the town, which has numerous old, but well preserved residences; farm houses, where still hangs the "Old Oaken Bucket", with thrifty orchards and smooth pastures greeting the eye on every hand. There are a few small shops or stores along this street, including Bailey's store and post-office, kept by Mrs. Smith; Hiram R. Poore, Daniel Cooney, Charles Brown, C. E. Rowell, C. B. Morse, Mrs. Flora E. Clark, and the "Emergency Cupboard."

The town has a Central School, a High School and smaller school. At present the churches of the town are the Episcopal, Roman Catholic, and two of the Congregational denomination. Three of these churches have regular pastors, while the Second Congregational Church is supplied from Newburyport.

## CHAPTER XXII.

## TOWN OF ESSEX.

Although Essex is among the lesser towns within the county, it may well claim much of unusual interest along historical lines; for in its final development of profitable industries, the education and sending forth to the great outside world, many a man of genius and high attainments hailed from here. Especially in its military and church activities has it shown wonderful strength. Of the men famous in both military and religious life, special chapters will treat more fully. In passing, however, it may be stated that from this town have come numerous judges; eminent surgeons and physicians; six commissioned officers in the French and Indian War; seven commissioned officers in the Revolutionary struggle; thirteen clergymen, two of whom were doctors of divinity, and one a presiding elder; fourteen physicians, all regular graduates in medicine and surgery; eight members of the legal profession; two delegates to the State Constitutional Convention of 1780; two to the Convention of 1788 which ratified the Constitution of the United States; one delegate to the State Constitutional Convention of 1820; three State Senators and one United States Senator—these were all duly accredited to this small town up to the year 1885.

No less authority than good Doctor Crowell, who many years since wrote concerning this town, avers that the first American settlement was made by the English in the persons of William White, John Cogswell and Goodman Bradstreet, the date of their arrival being about 1634. Nothing positive can now be learned of the families of these three men. White's Hill of this town is supposed to have taken its name from the White just named above.

An immigrant from England named Humphrey Bradstreet came over in the ship "Elizabeth," from Ipswich, England, with his wife Bridget and four children in 1634. It is believed that he was called by another Christian name, but that he and the person named as being one of the first three to settle in this town were one and the same person. John Bradstreet, of Rowley, of whom it is mentioned in Winthrop's journal that he was whipped for having "familiarity with the Devil," was one of the sons of this Humphrey. He was accused of bewitching a dog.

The John Cogswell named as being one of the first three settlers was the ancestor of Ralph Waldo Emerson and Oliver Wendell Holmes. At first, he resided in Ipswich, but that territory is now within Essex. Cogswell was a native of Wilts county, England, where he had been an extensive manufacturer of broadcloth and other woolen fabrics. He inherited the mills from his father's estate, the same having been run in the family for three generations. With his wife and seven children, he came to America in the ship "Angel Gabriel," of two hundred and forty tons bur-

ESSEX—ABOVE, FIRST CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH; BELOW, METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

den, carrying fourteen guns. She was strongly constructed, and was the vessel on which Sir Walter Raleigh sailed from England to South America on two voyages. Just exactly the spot where Mr. Cogswell or his companions located in this town is not known. He died in 1669, aged seventy-seven. His daughter Hannah married Cornelius Waldo, and from them descended Ralph Waldo Emerson.

Besides the three family names already mentioned, in a short time came in many more, as there is a list found in the Ipswich records for 1648 showing one hundred and sixty persons who contributed to a military fund. At least eight of this number were residents of Chebacco, viz: John Burnham, Thomas Burnham, William Cogswell, John Choate, Robert Crosse, William Goodhue, Thomas Low, William Story. More of the name of Burnham came to this settlement than any other one name in the whole settlement.

The Sagamore of Agawam, an Indian chief named Masconomet, claimed the ownership of land in this township. In 1638 he sold his right and title to the soil of Ipswich to John Winthrop, son of Governor Winthrop, for £20, equal to about $100 of United States money. The peculiar deed of old Masconomet to the whites was as follows, when translated into English:

I, Masconomet, Sagamore of Agawam, do by these presence do acknowledge to have received of Mr. John Winthrop the sum of twenty pounds in full satisfaction of all the right, property and claim I have, or ought to have, unto all the land lying and being in the Bay of Agawam, alias Ipswich, being so called now by the English, as well as such land as I formerly reserved unto my own use at Chebacco, as also other land, belonging to me in these parts, Mr. Dummer's farm excepted only. And I hereby relinquish all the right and interest I have unto all the havens, rivers, creeks, islands, huntings and fisheries; with all the woods, swamps, timber, and whatever else is, or may be, in, or upon the same ground belonging; and I do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction from the said John Winthrop for all former agreements, touching the premises and parts of them; and I do hereby bind myself to make good the aforesaid bargain and sale unto the said John Winthrop, his heirs and assigns forever, and to secure him against the title and claim of all other Indians and natives whatsoever. Witness my hand, 28th of June, 1638.

(Signed) MASCONOMET (his X mark.)

Witness hereunto, John Joyliff, James Downing, Thomas Catytimore, Robert Harding.

John Winthrop's journal, under date of June 13, 1630, while the ship "Arbella," in which he had sailed, lay near present Beverly, or "the land of Cape Ann," has this entry: "Lord's day 13.—In the morning, the Sagamore of Agawam and one of his men came aboard our ship and staid with us all day." This meeting may have been the means of Winthrop settling at the point which he did—Ipswich, and his ultimate purchase of the territory of Agawam from the Indian chief.

Here, as elsewhere, the first occupation of settlers was of necessity that of farming. Next came fishing, both from the sea and the rivers. At first hook and line were the only means of procuring the fish, but

later it was counted too slow work, and the Ipswich records show this method put into practice: "December 24, 1634.—It is consented unto that John Perkins, junior, shall build a ware (fish-trap) on the river of Quasycung (now Parker river, Newbury) and enjoy the profits of it, but in case a plantation shall settle there, then he is to submit himself unto such conditions as shall then be imposed."

Just when fishing began no one can tell, but it is certain that as soon as boats could be built, the settlers engaged in fishing, first in the rivers, and later in the ocean. At one time in the history of Essex, fourteen vessels were owned in the place, employed in the cod fisheries. There is nothing of that kind known since the close of the Civil War.

Digging clams for food and for bait has been another industry named by early writers in the occupations of the people. As early as 1763, the authorities of Ipswich ordered that only so many clams should be taken from the marshes as would supply the fishermen and for food required among the inhabitants. The amount allowed each of a crew to Newfoundland for one trip, was one barrel. In 1837 clams sold here at $2.50 per barrel, and in 1886 the net price was quoted at $4. The annual receipts for shell-fish, 1886-87, were $12,800 for Essex.

Malting and brewing was carried on extensively, as beer was in common use in every household. Tea and coffee were little used here at that date. Generally, each town had one malster. The farmer took his barley and other grain to him, as he did other milling grains, and it was "tolled" by the miller, the same as wheat. Much barley was grown and much good beer was made in all its purity. The records do not speak of any drunkenness.

The common trades, such as carpenters, blacksmiths, tailors, and shoemakers, were numerous, and filled a role that was very useful, if not indeed indispensable. Boat-building by ship carpenters and joiners were early enterprises in this settlement, along with the production of twine and cordage. In about 1863 this branch of industry took on larger proportions. Captain Burnham and Samuel Hardy, as well as David, William H. and H. W. Mears, were prominent in this industry, and supplied all that was required by the vessels from Essex; but before 1890, things changed. The heavier ropes and cords were obtained elsewhere, while the smaller cordage was made at home in the well-known "rope-walks."

The first saw and grist mills were constructed here in 1656, on Chebacco river; later, two more were added at the Falls. In 1693 a grist mill were set in operation in the town. Another set of mills were built in 1823, both saw and flouring mills. In connection, they had a wool-carding mill. In 1872 the Essex Steam Mill Company built two mills on Southern avenue. With the consumption of the forests, the saw mill industry has shrunk to meagre proportions at this date, as compared with earlier years.

By far the largest industry Essex has ever been favored with is that of building ships for the great ocean trade. This enterprise began in a modest way in the construction of the little Chebacco boats, boats without a bowsprit, having two masts and two sails only—foresail and mainsail—being sharp at both stem and stern. It is said that at the close of the eighteenth century there were nearly two thousand of these craft, of large and small tonnage, employed in the fisheries, and sailing from Cape Ann. The Indian name of Essex was Chebacco, hence the ship-builders named these boats after the Indian name. About 1825 the building of these boats materially fell off in volume, and larger vessels, with a square stern, full-rigged as schooners, were produced in large numbers. In the eighties vessels of still much greater tonnage were built at the Essex ship-yards, including several three-masted schooners, and two steamers, one for General B. F. Butler and another for Captain Lamont G. Burnham.

One of these vessels, built in 1853, became historic. It was constructed by John James and Leonard McKenzie, and was used by Dr. Elisha K. Kane on his Grinnell expedition, in search of Sir John Franklin, the famous Arctic explorer. Its name at first was "Spring Hill," but when used by Dr. Kane, she was renamed "Advance." She had a 144 ton burden and was complimented highly by Dr. Kane.

As time passed on, the Essex vessels were of larger and better construction. In 1842 the "Ann Maria," of 510 tons burden, was constructed. The swiftest boatmaking up to that day was in 1837, when in the month of July a craft was entirely built at the Essex yards and named the "July." Dr. Crowell mentions all the vessels so far named. Since his record, still larger craft have been the rule. The "Mattie W. Atwood," a three-masted schooner of seven hundred and seventy tons burden, was built in 1872 by James & McKenzie. In 1880, L. G. Burnham built the "Vidette" of eight hundred and nineteen tons burden; she had two propellers.

Coming down to 1888 and later dates, the active ship-builders were Arthur D. Story, James & Co., Moses Adams, Joseph, Samuel and Charles Oliver Story, Daniel Poland and Willard Burnham.

As to the present of boat-building, let it be recorded that there are now only two firms building vessels for the sea trade. These are Arthur D. Story and J. F. James & Son. The last named succeeded the old firm of Tarr & James, and they were preceded by Leonard McKenzie. Everett B. James is now at the head of this well known boat-building company. In 1921 the firm built and launched the prize boat "Mayflower," in the month of April, when ten thousand people were present at the christening.

John Prince established the first printing office in Essex in 1843. Along with it was published a newspaper, known as the "Essex Cabinet"; it survived, however, only a part of the year. Later, a religious paper

was issued, called the "Universalist Cabinet." Many years later the "Essex Enterprise" was established, but it was continued for but a short time.

Among the useful trades of Essex from an early time was that of tanning hides and pelts into leather. It is certain that in 1743, Joseph Perkins and father-in-law, Thomas Choate, Jr., bought for £928 twenty-six acres of land, known as Old Tenor, of Francis Cogswell, tanner, and Hannah, his wife: "One half of this land to go to said Thomas and the other half to the said Joseph." Joseph was engaged at tanning several years on this tract of land. He was succeeded in the same line by his grandsons, John and James Perkins. Their tan-vats were near the brook, in the rear of the old burying-ground. Captain Francis Burnham also had a tannery at the Falls for many years, on the same site on which the Francis Goodhue tannery was erected. With the change of times and the centralization of industries in larger cities, this industry was lost to Essex.

S. B. Fuller & Sons, with Frank E. Gilbert, in 1872 opened a shoe factory in Essex, in a building thirty-five by sixty feet, and three stories high; it was greatly enlarged in 1880. In 1888 there were about one hundred and twenty-five persons employed, the pay-roll amounting to fifty thousand dollars a year. Four hundred thousand pairs of shoes were made there annually in the eighties. For several years this industry has not existed in Essex.

Besides those already mentioned, Essex has had business interests in the successful handling of ice, hay, milk, butter, fruits and vegetables, all of home production. While many of the former factories have been closed down, other enterprises have sprung up.

The business of the town of Essex in 1921 is chiefly confined to agriculture, ship-building, clam digging and the making of fish-lines. The last-named business was established many years ago, when rope-walks and flax and hemp were used in the making of lines, cords and rope. The Mears Improved Line Company now makes a fishing line that is sold from coast to coast in large quantities. H. W. Mears is the present proprietor. There are now being taken from the sands along the coast of Essex no less than one hundred barrels daily of excellent merchantable clams. There are two saw mills in operation a part of the year, although timber is becoming very scarce in the vicinity of Essex.

Chebacco was set off from Ipswich in 1819, and incorporated as the town of Essex by an act of the legislature, February 5th that year. The committee of the town of Essex, in conjunction with another like committee from Ipswich, adjusted the settlement between the two places. The names of those serving from Essex were Georgee Choate, William Cogswell, Jr.,and Elias Andrews. The population in 1819 was 1,170, including twenty-one paupers. The late United States census returns for 1920 gives the number of inhabitants as 1,478. Other state-

ments in other enumeration periods give the following: In 1860, it was 1701—the largest on record; in 1830 it was 1,333; in 1840, it was 1,432; and 1870 the total was 1,614. The town is now bounded by Ipswich on the north, Hamilton on the west, Manchester on the south, and Gloucester on the south and east. The area is about 9,000 acres, 7,000 of which are divided into tillage, upland, fresh and salt meadows, woodland and highways. As late as 1890 there were 2,000 acres under water.

At the first town meeting in Essex, the moderator was George Choate, of the distinguished Choate family in New England and New York. Joseph Story, a Revolutionary War soldier, was the first town clerk; George Choate, Jonathan Story (4th), Elias Andrews, William Cogswell and William Andrews were chosen the original selectmen, assessors and overseers of the poor; Nathan Choate was first town treasurer, and Rev. Robert Crowell and the selectmen were by vote of the town meeting designated as the first school committee.

The following is a list of the town officers (elective) for the year 1921: Moderator, George E. Mears; Town Clerk, Epes Sargent; Selectmen: Caleb W. Cogswell (chairman), Aaron Cogswell; Secretary, Fred W. Andrews; Assessors: Fred W. Andrews, Leonard A. Story, Caleb M. Cogswell; Treasurer, Grove N. Dodge; Auditor, Charles M. Stevens; Tax Collector, Joseph N. Tucker; Overseers of the Poor: O. Perry Burnham William A. Lendall, John Wilson; School Committee: Alden C. Burnham Marshall H. Cogswell, Assie B. Hobbs; Tree Warden, Otis O. Story; Constables: Charles R. Lane, Stewart J. Hadley; Cemetery Commissioners: Leighton E. Perkins, Alphonso W. Knowlton; Highway Surveyors: Frank E. Watson, George H. Paynter, David Mears, Welbus L. Cogswell, Edward H. Burnham; Fence Viewers: A. F. Haskell, Benj. F. Raymond, Wm. A. Lendall, Enoch B. Kimball.

In common with many other towns in Essex county, Essex has a good library, of which the librarian's report in 1920 gave these facts: Bound volumes on shelves, 6,963; circulation, 16,320; volumes added, 165; cards in circulation, 484. The investment of funds belonging to the library was as follows: Bank deposits and Liberty War bonds, $20,664.64. The Burnham and Russ funds have been of great help toward carrying on this excellent library. The librarian making the above statement in 1920 was E. B. Story.

As a matter for future reference, it may be well to give the following figures from the town assessors' report in 1920; Value of assessed personal estate, $312,424.00; assessed real estate, $1,058,090.00; increase in 1920 over previous year, $37,807.00; tax on personal estate, $7,030.21; tax on real estate (1920), $23,807.78; tax on 458 polls at $5 each, $2,290.00. Concerning the last item, it may be said that three of the five dollars derived from the polls were paid to men who served in the War with Germany, as required by Chapter 283, Acts of 1919.

Sundry items from Report: Number of horses, 130; cows, 348;

neat cattle other than cows, 142; swine, 70; dwelling houses, 620; acres land, 7,852; fowl, 4,426.

In 1819 a postoffice was established in Essex with Dudley Choate as postmaster. He was succeeded by the following in their order: Amos Burnham, 1826; Enoch Low, 1854; Charles W. Proctor, 1864; Daniel W .Bartlett, Sr., and Daniel W. Bartlett, Jr., 1868 to 1881; Leighton E. Perkins, 1881 to 1914, when he was succeeded by Clarence S. Perkins. The office has been kept in the present building since 1868. It is a third class office, with one rural route going from it. The last year's business of this office was about $1,700.

The town began very early to agitate the question of temperance in the matter of drinking spirituous liquors. Its first temperance society was formed in 1829, and in 1842 the Washington Total Abstinence Society was organized. With the passing years and decades, as public sentiment changed regarding the handling of such problems, Essex has ever had her full share of worthy, practical, sensible temperance advocates, even down to these later years, when the States and the Nation itself have decreed the dethronement of King Alcohol.

Essex was without a railway until 1872, the nearest railroad communication being Manchester, on the Gloucester branch road, more than four miles distant, with Wenham six miles away. July 1, 1872, the first train of steam cars was run over the tracks of the Essex Railroad, which extended from Wenham to Essex. The town appropriated a part of the necessary funds to secure this railroad, which was subsequently sold to the Eastern Railroad Company and is today a part of the great Boston & Maine system. The road was extended across the river and marshes to the Thompson Island community, in 1887, when a jubilee was held over the event. To the first promoter and president of the original railroad company, Leonard McKenzie, Esq., must be awarded the credit of dominating service and labors in the construction of the long-wanted and much-needed road.

Fully forty years after the first settlement by the English, which is placed at 1634, there was no preaching in what is now Essex, by any regular ordained minister. Now and then, ministers from Ipswich would come over and hold a service, pray with the religiously-inclined and counsel with them. At funerals, these men of God also came to Essex, and after a brief service the remains of the deceased were taken upon the shoulders of the pallbearers to the burying-ground at Ipswich and there laid away to rest. Prior to 1667 there appears no record of any preaching at Essex. Early in 1668 Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, son of Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge, preached in private houses; he declined to act as a regular minister, on account of the church at Ipswich objecting thereto. This was no doubt due to the tax that always went with the organization of any new church. The first conference looking toward a second church was held in Ipswich, February, 1677. Two years later the

interested men and women took matters into their own hands, regardless of what might be said in Ipswich. These people were tired of traveling five miles weekly to worship God, hence they revolted. The frame of a suitable dimension for a church building was provided, without the sanction of the church or the State, as one might well term it, the work being carefully superintended by three energetic women who labored in secret with their husbands in this enterprise. Not many days after they had raised the frame for a church, three women—Mrs. Goodhue, wife of William Jr., Mrs. Varney, wife of Thomas Varney, and Mrs. Martin, wife of Abraham Martin, and Abraham Martin himself and his hired man, John Chub—were all placed under arrest, tried before a magistrate in Ipswich, found guilty of "contempt" in helping to raise a meeting-house at Chebacco, and bound over to the "Great and General Court" in Boston, where they made confession, and were allowed to go unpunished. Later they completed their meeting-house. The site of this structure served for the residence of Captain Joseph Choate. It was a very plain, well built structure, with a frame of white oak. The building had a cupola, and a fine toned bell hung within it.

The first minister was Rev. John Wise, a native of Roxbury, Massachusetts, born 1652. The father came from England in 1635 as a servant of Dr. George Alcock. The son, Rev. Wise, graduated at Harvard College in 1673, then little better in educational standards than our present high or normal schools. He was a chaplain in King Philip's War, and later preached at Hatfield, Massachusetts; he was married in 1678 to Miss Abigail Gardner. In the spring of 1680 he went to Chebacco to dedicate a church, the record states. He was finally ordained and settled here and preached in Essex for forty-five years. He died in 1725, aged seventy-three years.

It is not the intention in this chapter to dwell long on sundry points that might be thought interesting in a church history proper. In a general work of which this volume is a part, it is inexpedient to more than touch here and there, in an outline history. Hence the life and character of the numerous ministers will be very briefly mentioned.

The second minister in Essex was Rev. Theophilus Pickering, an officer of the Revolutionary struggle, and also a member of President Washington's cabinet, as well as in the administration of the elder Adams. After about sixteen years, Rev. Pickering and his flock disagreed over the preaching of that wonderful preacher and revivalist, Rev. George Whitefield, who in 1640 first preached in Ipswich, and visited Chebacco. He did not agree with Whitefield's methods of presenting his views, while his church, as a rule, held Whitefield up as a model. A considerable number in his church declined to stand by him. They consequently withdrew and formed a separate church, with Rev. John Cleveland as settled pastor. From this line of Clevelands came the late President Grover Cleveland.

The third minister of the original church at Essex was Rev. Nehemiah Porter, a native of Hamilton, who filled the pulpit upon the death of Rev. Pickering. He was a Harvard graduate; remained here seventeen years, and moved to Yarmouth, Nova Scotia. He left two hundred descendants; the year of his death was 1820.

The Church of the Separatists was presided over by Rev. John Cleveland until his death in 1799, over a half century. He was somewhat of an orator, and never afraid to speak his mind. Once in his church, it was bitter cold, while preaching one morning, and he suffered from the coldness. Finally, he stopped long enough to stamp his foot violently on the floor, and exclaimed, "O, God, who can stand before thy cold." (Psalm cxlvii). He then proceeded with his two hours' sermon. His successor was Josiah Webster.

All was orthodox preaching by the Congregationalists in Essex for over one hundred and seventy years after its original settlement. Then in 1809, a plain flat-roofed building, without steeple or tower, was erected upon the site of the Methodist church. It was thirty-five feet square, of pine, and instead of pews had long benches for seats. The Christian Baptist society occupied this plain meeting-house. The church had no written creed, the members styling themselves Christians, the same as the Campbellites after the death of Alexander Campbell. The society preferred to be known as the Church of Christian Baptists, or Christians. Their most distinguished preacher was Rev. Elias Smith. He founded the first newspaper in this part of the country—probably in the United States. Its first issue was pulled from the press in September, 1808, eight years prior to the "Boston Recorder". Styled the "Herald of Gospel and Liberty," it had an existence of nine years. Its editor, Elder Smith, was first a Calvinistic Baptist, then Free Will Baptist, then Christian; later, he became a Universalist, and at last was counted with the Rationalists. He became a botanical doctor in Boston and died in his eighty-fifth year in 1846.

The Universalist Society was formed in 1829 by forty-three persons, who signed a constitution and agreed to a statement of belief. Various clergymen preached here, including Rev. Ezra Leonard, a Congregational preacher, who was converted to the Universalist faith. Other ministers served, and in 1835 Rev. Joseph Banfield, a former Christian Baptist preacher, who now saw the faith as taught by Universalists, became the first regular pastor. The old Baptist church and sometimes the school house were occupied by this society for public worship. In 1836 a meeting-house was provided, under a committee which included Messrs. Jacob Story, John Dexter, Sr., Parker Burnham, Oliver Low and Samuel Hardy. The sale of the pews brought more money than the cost of the land, house and furniture, by $500. Since 1885 the pastors have been as follows: Revs. Closson, Sanger, Charles E. Petty, George Sanger and Wm. F. Rider, D.D. The present membership is sixty-eight. Since 1918 the Essex pastor has also served the church at West Gloucester.

HE NEW YORK
UBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
ILDEN FOUNDATIONS

MEMORIAL HALL, GEORGETOWN

OLDEST HOUSE IN GEORGETOWN, 1660; MODERNIZED

February, 1874, saw the first Methodist Episcopal church formed in Essex. It was instituted by Rev. Daniel Sherman, presiding elder. In 1888 these Methodist people were still flourishing and worshiping in the Century Chapel. Recent records of this church show that at South Essex it has a successful work, with a membership of eighty-one and of preparatory members, thirty. In 1911 the church auditorium was rebuilt and remodeled. Since 1900 the Land Court has given the Methodist church a clear title to its property. In the summer of 1920 the vestry was completed at a cost of $2,500, counting donated work, of which the pastor performed a hundred days' labor himself. Recent pastors have been: Revs. Tillon, Pitman, Thornburg, 1917-19; and present pastor, Rev. Louis H. Kaub, 1919—.

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

## TOWN OF GEORGETOWN.

This section of the work was furnished by local writers, whose names appear in the introductory mention of contributors to the History, and may be relied upon as accurate.

### HISTORICAL NARRATIVE

Georgetown is situated not far from the geographical centre of Essex County, and claims the distinction of containing within its limits the highest land of the county, Baldpate Hill. From the lookout which has been built on the top of this hill, the surrounding country within a radius of more than fifty miles can be seen. On the west and northwest are the mountains of Maine and New Hampshire; Monadnock and Kearsarge, with Agamenticus, farther to the north; while looking east across the irregular roofs of the Baldpate Inn and the clustered houses of the village may be seen the white sand hills of Plum Island, and on the horizon's farthest verge the faint blue line of the Atlantic. An observer from this hilltop somewhat less than three hundred years ago might have seen the sunlight reflected from the white sails of the pinnace which brought to these shores the first settlers of our town.

In the autumn of 1638, Mr. Ezekiel Rogers, with a little company consisting of about sixty families, dissenters from the Church of England, "godly men and men of good estate," emigrated from the Yorkshire town of Rowley, England, seeking in the new world the freedom which was denied them in the old. "Large accommodations" had been offered by the General Court of Massachusetts to Mr. Rogers if he would settle here. These "accommodations" comprised an area extending from the Atlantic to Andover, and included the towns of Georgetown, Boxford, Groveland and parts of Haverhill and Middleton, as well as

Rowley. It was all unbroken wilderness. Where now are broad highways, alive with motor cars, were then only narrow Indian trails, winding in and out among the giant trees of the primeval forest. Instead of the shriek of the locomotive and the blare of the automobile horn was the scream of the eagle or the wild fowl's harsh note, while the only sign of human life was, perhaps, the curling smoke from some Indian camp fire.

It required courage to clear this wilderness and transplant a home from an old world to a new, but this courage our sturdy forefathers possessed; and here, near the coast in Rowley, the band of emigrants cleared a little spot in the all-surrounding forest and built their first homes. For a time all their energies were spent in the laborious work of clearing the land of the forest growth and tilling the soil, but probably as early as 1645 the territory now known as Georgetown was gone over, the lands were examined, the lakes explored, and the brooks and streams, with the meadows through which they flowed, were appraised as of great value. The uplands were probably heavily wooded, but in these meadows was an abundance of grass, providing excellent pasturage for cattle in summer, as well as hay for winter use. The settlers of Rowley, however, seem not to have been in haste to take possession of these valuable lands in the western part of their plantation, partly, no doubt, because of the difficulty and danger of the enterprise, and partly because they were so fully occupied in the original settlement. Another possible reason for their delay has been given by Mr. Henry Nelson, in a newspaper article published in 1909. He says:

> It is well known by antiquarians that Rev. Ezekiel Rogers and Oliver Cromwell, the Puritan leader in England, were close friends, and that there was an agreement between them that if Cromwell failed to conquer King Charles of England in parliamentary contests, he was to come to this country and join Mr. Rogers. Somewhere in this broad area given to Mr. Rogers, extending from the River Merrimack to Ipswich River, was the selected spot for Oliver Cromwell . . . . . It is a plausible theory that land grants to individuals in that part of Rowley awaited the issue of the strife so fiercely carried on between Cromwell and Charles in the old home of the Rowley community. But all expectation of Cromwell becoming a citizen of Rowley becoming a thing of the past, the first grant of land was made out to Humphrey Raynor, who a year or two before had aided in its survey.

Elder Raynor was a prominent citizen and church member in Rowley, and was without doubt the first owner of land in the territory of Georgetown. His grant was in the southern part of the town extending from Baldpate pond perhaps nearly to Pen brook. A grant to Thomas Mighill followed in 1652. Under this date the records of the town of Rowley contain the following entry, the first having reference to the territory now Georgetown: "Twenty-three Akers at the place called the pen, where young cattell were formerly kept." This grant to Thomas Mighill included the farm formerly owned by Mr. Humphrey Nelson, and now the property of Miss Eleanor Jones of Haverhill. There was

probably good pasturage here, and the place had doubtless been used for the pasturing of young stock for some years before the grant was made.

In 1661 extensive land grants were made to Samuel Brocklebank and his brother John. These grants extended southerly, including the farm now owned by Daniel P. Bond, and westerly toward Central street, including the Harmony cemetery. Upon this Brocklebank grant stands what is undoubtedly the oldest house in town, now owned by Mr. Melvin Spofford. In the same year, 1661, an allotment of land near and on Pentucket pond was made to Mary, the widow of Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, and included the land between Pentucket and Rock ponds. It extended to Groveland. In 1666 or 1667 a tract of land, called the three thousand acres, was laid out as village land. This tract included nearly all of Georgetown west of Pen brook, extending from what is now the centre of the town to Baldpate Hill. Soon the people of Rowley began to discuss the encouragement of a settlement there. The following action is recorded in the Rowley town records: "It was agreed and voted that there should be a small farme laide out in the three thousand Acres of Land that was exchanged for land at the necke and the rest of the saide farm it is agreed that it shall be forever for the use of the ministry, or for the towne's use." John Pickard, John Pearson and Ezekiel Northend was appointed "to make a bargon with any who should appeare to take the saide ferme, provided that they Let not above thirty Acres of meddow, or halfe of the meddow belonging to the thre Thousand Acres, provided allso that they put the town to no charges, provided allso that they lay not out above thre score Acres of upland to the saide ferme."

It was not long before a "bargon" was made with one of Rowley's citizens, John Spofford, one of the original company of emigrants from Yorkshire. His name is found in the records of the division of lands into homestead lots in 1643. He had a house lot on Bradford street, near the centre of the present town of Rowley, and also owned land in the "fresh meadows, the salt meadows, the village lands, the Merrimack lands and shares in the ox pasture, the cow pasture, and the calf pasture."

This record is found under date of March 17, 1668: "Seventeenth day of March, in the year one Thousand six hundred sixty-eight, it was agreed and voted that John Spofforth, if he would goe to the farme that was granted to be laid out in the thre Thousand Akers, that he should have the benefit of penninge the cattell for the terme of seven years, he keeping the herde of the younger cattel as carefully and as cheape, as any other should doe." His lease was for twenty-one years, and he was to pay as rent for the first five years "three hundred feet of white oak plank, and after that time ten pounds each year, one-half in English corn at price current, or Indian corn, as he pleases, the other half in fat cattel

or leane at price current." And so John Spofford, after living for thirty years in Rowley, left his home there and removed to the "Gravelle Plain, near the Bald Hills," now Baldpate, and thus became the first settler of the town of Georgetown. Why he should have left his home in Rowley for this wilderness is not known. It may have been that the "benefit of penning the cattel" was a valuable privilege. At the time of his removal he had eight children, four sons and four daughters.

It is hard for us in these days of easy, comfortable living to picture the lives of the rugged pioneers who had possessed courage and hardihood sufficient not only to leave their comfortable homes in Yorkshire for the wilderness beyond the sea, but had now left the comparative shelter and comfort of the settlement at Rowley for the unbroken forest to the west. They had reached the elemental facts of life. They were engaged in a hand-to-hand struggle with the untamed forces of nature. Their first house must have been of the rudest and most primitive description—probably a log cabin made from the trees felled in the process of clearing the land. They were beset with dangers—cold, hunger, wild beasts, and, most dreaded of all, the Indians. Their nearest English neighbor was four or five miles distant, Moses Tyler of Boxford. What compensations did such an existence hold for the comfort and companionship they had renounced? Doubtless it did hold compensations, for it was not long before other settlers came. The first of these after John Spofford was Capt. Samuel Brocklebank. Indeed, it is probable that before that first permanent settlement Capt. Brocklebank had a house at his farm on Pen brook, and spent the farm season there, returning to Rowley in the winter. The records are meagre with regard to the other early settlers, but among the names of those who were first to settle are Wheeler, Browne, Plumer, Poor, Harriman, Goodrich, Stickney, Mighill and Nelson.

By 1700 about twenty families were settled within the limits of the territory now known as Georgetown, at least four-fifths of this number being in the Byfield section of the town. It was in this section that the massacre of the Goodrich family by the Indians occurred. Mr. Goodrich was at prayer with his family on a Sunday evening in October, 1692, when the house was attacked by a small band of Indians, and he, his wife, and several children were killed. It is said that one of the family, a little girl of seven, was carried off captive, but was redeemed the next spring. The house was sacked, and afterward set on fire; but whether it was wholly or only partially burned is not known. This house stood on the Newburyport road at the entrance of the street leading to Gorham D. Tenney's house. There is a tradition that this murder was the act of a roving band of Indians, who were returning from an unsuccessful raid in Newbury, the object of which was the death of a man against whom they had a grudge; and that coming unexpectedly upon the Goodrich home, they vented their anger and disappointment upon its unfor-

tunate inmates. That the Indians were numerous in this vicinity is shown by the number of Indian relics that have been found here. Many have been turned up by the plough near the banks of Parker river, on the slopes of Baldpate, and on the shores of the ponds, which were probably favorite fishing grounds of the Indians.

One of the largest private collections of Indian relics in New England is that made by Mr. Frank Bateman, who lived on the road between Georgetown and Newburyport. A description of it, published some years ago, is as follows:

This collection has the additional value of having been dug up on the owner's land or near it. In the collection there are about 900 good specimens, including axes, pestles, gouges, sinkers for fish lines, hammers, drills, arrow heads, and small effigies. Mr. Bateman has found five Indian graves in his garden. From one of them he took ninety specimens of stone work, including spear heads, knives, scrapers and drills. Nearly all were broken, but two of the drills were whole. In one grave he found bones. In another he found a stone ax, a drill, three arrow heads, and a tooth. The other three graves contained no relics. He has also exhumed on his property a number of Indian fireplaces with ash pits. The relics are scattered over an area of about an acre and a half, that must have been the site of an Indian village, including its graveyard.

Other valuable collections have been made, notably one by Mr. Alfred Spaulding and one by Mr. Hiram Harriman. The latter is now in the historical room of the Peabody Library. Mr. John Perley's monument in Harmony cemetery occupies the site of an Indian watch-tower built by the early settlers as a protection from the savages. In those days there was constant fear of the lurking enemy. Men were often shot by an Indian bullet or arrow while at work haying in the meadows. The men of every household were ordered to have their muskets with them while in the meeting-house on the Sabbath, and there were colonial laws forbidding persons journeying alone and receiving Indians into their homes.

The Indians were not so numerous, however, at the time of the first settlement of Massachusetts as they had been before. In Gage's "History of Rowley" is the following quotation from Johnson's "Pathway to erect a Plantation": "It seems God hath provided this county for our nation, destroying the natives by the plague, it not touching one Englishman, though many traded and were conversant among them. They had three plagues in three years successively near two hundred miles along the seacoast that in some places there scarce remained five of a hundred."

As the settlers became more numerous and the land was cleared, roads began to be opened through the town. An article on the subject Old Roads was prepared by Mr. Leonard Dresser for the Historical Souvenir Book which was published by the Georgetown Improvement Association in 1909. The article is as follows:

In 1800 the roads were in a primitive state, narrow and unwrought, but, fortunately, the art of roadmaking was very much improved about this time by the

introduction of turnpike roads connecting the villages. The roads as first laid out had little regard for public travel. The lots of farms were laid out in ranges, and a "proprietor's way" was laid out at the head of each row of lots, which paid but little attention to hills or valleys, and often made acute angles by passing around the corner of lots. Such an angle was made at Eliot's Corner on Pentucket Square. The Swamp, or Library Road was not made until the Parish Church had been used for forty years, standing on the lot east of the Humphrey Nelson house in the Marlboro district. Another right angle was made in passing the road to the Byfield mills, just below the Baptist Church parsonage, which may still be traced and may be remembered by some still living. At the west end of the Hill road it kept its course by some line of lots, beyond the house once occupied by Parker Spofford, over a rocky ledge, and down Gregg Hill, and turning a right angle to the left by Half Moon Meadow, past the house of Joseph Spofford, then, by a right angle to the right, passed on by the house of Moses Spofford to Boxford and Andover. The road over Spofford's Hill was early travelled to the old Spofford farm. It passed from Andover gate, which was near the present site of the soldier's monument, nearly as at present to the corner of the Little pasture, near the Bridges house, then by a circuit in the pasture to the farm gate or entrance to his premises. The road up the Great hills, as they were then called, was not made. It was a new and narrow cut between two high banks, and was a little over a carriage width. Elm Street is one of the oldest streets in the town, outside, of course, of the earlier roads through from Rowley to Bradford and Andover. Elm Street was opened to public travel somewhere about the year 1686. North Street came next, being opened in 1713, and one year later West Main, or Haverhill Street was opened for travel. Nelson Street was opened in 1770. Central Street was not opened until sometime in the early part of 1800, as in 1795 there was a fenced lane leading south from the corner, Pentucket Square, to the house of John Brocklebank. This lane was afterward opened through to the Chaplin's at South Georgetown, making the street now called Central Street. Many of the shorter streets, such as Nelson Avenue, Pond Street, Prospect, Middle, Union and School Streets are comparatively recent. The old road that connected the two ends of the Parish, Marlboro and Federal City, ran along the north side of Pentucket Pond, and is easily traced at the present time. Federal City was a little settlement in the western part of the town, and Marlboro was another settlement in the eastern section.

By 1795 there were sixty houses in the New Rowley parish scattered about on farms in various parts of the town. Most of them were unpainted, although a few were painted red. All that remains to mark the sites of many of them is a clump of lilac bushes, a group of gnarled apple trees, or a few "tiger" lilies. The first dwelling house to be erected within the limits of Georgetown was the log house built by John Spofford. It was raised in the western end of the Old Town Field, now owned by Samuel P. Batchelder. Later, Mr. Spofford built a frame house, which was burned. Another Spofford house was situated a little to the east, and still farther east was the house which has been generally known as the old Spofford homestead. It was probably built in 1741, and was occupied by descendants of the Spofford family until quite recently, when the house and farm were bought by Mr. Batchelder, who tore down the old building and erected a new residence on the site. The oldest house still standing in town is the one already referred to as the Melvin Spofford house, built on the Brocklebank land grant near the Old South

green. Nine years after having received his grant, Samuel Brocklebank, in 1670, erected a dwelling on the exact spot where the present house stands, and it is believed that the original structure forms a part of the present house, which was built over it. It passed into the hands of Dudley Tyler, who owned it in 1765, and later it came into the possession of Solomon Nelson, who left it to his son, Paul Nelson. While owned by Tyler and the Nelsons, it was used as a tavern, and had a sign bearing the picture of an English officer on horseback, supposed to be that of General James Wolfe, who was killed in the battle of Quebec. This sign is still in existence. It has in it a bullet-hole, about which there are a number of traditions. One says it was made by some patriot marching past on his way to battle for independence in 1775, who took this way of showing his hatred toward England and everything English. From Mr. Nelson the house passed into the hands of Charles Beecher, (brother of Rev. Henry Ward Beecher) and was used as a parsonage, while he was pastor of the Old South Church, as the First Congregational Church was then called. The house is still in good condition, its heavy oak timbers showing no sign of decay.

Another Spofford house is the one now owned by Mr. Alfred Kimball. This house was built by Deacon Eleazer Spofford, grandfather of Ainsworth, who was for many years librarian of Congress at Washington. Still another old house on Spofford hill is now owned by Mr. Allan Wilde. The date of its erection is unknown, but it was occupied as early as 1798. On the top of the hill is another very old dwelling, known as the Boynton house. It was occupied until quite recently. It may have been built by Richard Boynton in 1732, and remained in possession of the Boyntons until purchased by Mr. Samuel Noyes about 1882. It is now the property of Mr. John Seward of Boston.

The house now known as the Baldpate Inn is one of the oldest houses in town. It was raised July 4, 1733. It was built by Dea. Stephen Mighill and has been in the possession of the Spoffords or Mighills ever since. It was finally purchased by Mr. Paul Spofford of New York, who was in the direct line of descent from Deacon Stephen Mighill. It was improved and enlarged, and under the management of Mr. William Bray has become one of the best known hotels in Essex county; many famous people have been entertained there. Another interesting old house is the little brown cottage which one passes on the left hand side of the road in riding from Georgetown to Haverhill, just before reaching the electric car bridge over the railroad track. In this house was born the mother of George Peabody, the first of America's merchant princes to devote the bulk of his fortune to philanthropic purposes. Its original site was in Bailey lane, on the further shore of Rock pond, near a small stream, called Dodge's brook. After several years the Dodge house was moved across the pond on the ice to its present site.

The Pentucket house, still a conspicuous feature of the central

portion of the town, was for more than half a century one of the most popular taverns between Salem and Newburyport. It was built more than a hundred years ago by the Little brothers—Uncle Ben and Uncle Joe, as they were called—and is today as staunch and firm as when built.

In the Marlboro district is the Humphrey Nelson house, now the property of Miss Eleanor Jones. It has recently been remodelled and fitted with antique furnishings. In Marlboro also is the Job Brocklebank house, owned by Ebenezer Boynton in 1726. It passed through many different hands until 1799, when it again came into the possession of the Brocklebanks; a portion of it is still owned by Mr. Wendell Brocklebank. In the southern part of the town is the Adams house, now owned and occupied by Mrs. Samuel K. Herrick. It was built by Abraham Adams, about 1754, and is said to have been the first house in Georgetown to have a carpet spread upon its floor. So choice was the mistress of the home of this possession that she removed her shoes upon entering the room.

One of the most interesting houses in town is the Hazen house in the Marlboro district, now the property of Mrs. William O. Kimball, who uses it as a summer home. The exact date of its erection is unknown, although the timbers show it to have been built sometime in the latter part of the 17th century. Its distinguishing characteristic is its Dutch lean-to roof. Another interesting feature is a secret room, entered though a closet in the front hall. One of the rooms facing on the street had a forge in it at the time of the Revolution, where muskets and bullets were made for use in the war. Other old houses are the Nathaniel Nelson house on Elm street, built in 1797*; the Dow house, formerly known as the William Dole home, on West Main street, near the railroad crossing, built as early as 1793; the Clark house on West Main street, owned by Capt. Benjamin Adams, a captain of infantry in several campaigns in the Revolution; and the Colonial Tea House, on Elm street, formerly known as the Winter house. This house is full of valuable and interesting heirlooms of the Winter family, whose descendants still occupy it.*

The period between 1800 and 1830 was one of rapid growth for Georgetown, and many new houses were built. A map in Gage's History of Rowley shows the growth of that section of the town which lies be-

---

[*Note—In the cellar of this house may be seen a recess in one of the great chimneys where, tradition says, papers and gold belonging to the city of Newburyport were stored for safe keeping during the War of 1812, when much fear of a British invasion was felt in the New England coast towns. Mr. Nelson brought the valuables from Newburyport in an ox team by night, and in telling the story years afterward to his daughter, Mrs. J. P. Jones, said at its conclusion: "And only think, daughter, they never asked me to give any security for all that gold." Such was the reputation for probity of one of the early fathers of our town.]

tween Pentucket Square and Lovering's Corner, between 1810 and 1840. In 1810 there were ten buildings, in 1840 the number had increased to sixty. At the present time (1921) there are sixty-three.

In 1824 the town was granted a postoffice. It was a box 30 inches long, 12 inches wide, and 12 inches deep, inscribed on one side, "New Rowley and Georgetown post-office, established March 17, 1824. Benjamin Little, postmaster." This box is now in the Essex Institute at Salem.

The matter of separation from the town of Rowley now began to be discussed. The younger business men, who felt none of the sentimental attachment to Rowley to which the older settlers were responsive, and whose business was disturbed by the distance between the two parishes, clamored for a separation. Letters intended for New Rowley were often addressed to Rowley, and their delivery was delayed. In 1837 a meeting was called to arrange for a division. A succession of meetings followed, and after much-heated discussion about boundaries, the lines were established and the name Georgetown was decided upon. This was in 1838.

The Woman's Club was organized in the fall of 1895, with a membership of 39. The first meeting was at the home of the president, Mrs. Edward M. Hoyt, Oct. 24, 1895, and the meetings for the first year were devoted to Italian studies, under the direction of Mrs. May Alden Ward. At the close of the course, a public lecture by Mrs. Julia Ward Howe was given. For many years the club held to its original plan and had a course of study for at least half of the season. Of late years the program has been miscellaneous in character, and more emphasis has been placed upon the social side of the work. The club has contributed to many worthy causes, both within town and outside, and was active in many ways during the World War, giving generously to the various war organizations, besides doing a large amount of work. In 1914 the club was admitted to the Massachusetts State Federation of Woman's Clubs. There were at the close of last year, (June, 1921) 108 members. Mrs. Louise T. Perkins is at present president of the club.

The Georgetown Improvement Association was organized March 5, 1910. The first president was Rev. Bartlett H. Weston. The association raises its money by dues and an annual carnival, and is interested in all civic work for the town. It has at present a membership of 162, and the president is Mrs. Elizabeth McKay Daniels.

## GEORGETOWN—INDUSTRIALLY, COMMERCIALLY, OFFICIALLY.

Beginning in 1638-9: The first vessel to reach our shores brought not only the minister and the tillers of the soil, but also the millwright, sawyer and builder, the miller, cooper and maltster; the spinner, weaver

and dyer; the tailor, the shoemaker, the blacksmith, the tanner and the surveyor. For two hundred years—from 1638 to 1838—the present area of Georgetown was a part of Rowley. We are told that the surnames of the earliest settlers were Rogers, Nelson, Spofford, Mighill, Brocklebank, Dummer, Jewett, Perley, Pearson, Lambert; and that within the first fifty years there came into the record the names of Chaplin, Noyes, Shute, Dole, Merrill, Boynton, Bridges, Searles, Burpee, Woodbury, Tenney, Harriman, Stickney, Plumer, Poor, Tyler, Weston, Perkins, Dodge; also, in very early times Hilliard, Little, Palmer, Hardy, Moulton, Lovering, Giles, Cheney, Hale, Tidds, Dresser, Winter, Coker, Pingree, Adams, Bateman, Savory, Killam, Jones, Baker; in comparatively early times there appear the names of Brewster, Carlton, Osgood, Bailey, Daniels, Carter, Dorman, Atwood and Wilson. The men bearing the foregoing names were at one time or another identified with the industrial, commercial or professional life of the old and the new town. It is only with these phases of our history that the present writer deals.

Briefly and Chronologically: The making and manufacturing and compounding of articles of trade and commerce within the area of our present town limits began with the opening days of the settlement. The first manufacturers were the itinerant shoemakers, tailors and dressmakers. Among the very first to set up a permanent business was the malster. At first cloth and leather were brought from the "old country"; but in less than three years the millwrights had built a water-power sawmill, and sawyers were "getting out" lumber for the settlers' houses. Within the same period the millwrights had built for Thomas Nelson the first grist-mill in the settlement, wherein were ground corn, wheat, rye, oats and barley into meal and flour, both for home consumption and for shipment to Salem and other parts, in barrels made by the village cooper. From the "old country" the millwright brought his tools; the miller his "burr-stones"; the sawyer his saws; the spinners and weavers brought the heckle, the card, the small (flax) and the big (wool) spinning wheels, the harness and the several delicate parts used in the building of the great hand-looms, upon which homespun cloth—both linen and wool—were woven by the womenfolk. Before 1643 the millwrights had erected water-power fulling mills (small they were, no doubt), where the home woven cloth was fulled and made ready for use. Even during that early period the weavers of our settlement had "attained to a wide celebrity as the makers of fine cloth." As before stated, for the present purpose, we deal only with the doings of men within the boundary limits of what is now Georgetown.

The first business started here was done by Jonathan Harriman, when, in 1699-70, he located and built on Rock Brook the first mill, a sawmill and grist-mill combined. In this mill, lumber was sawn and grist was ground for exactly one hundred years. Later, but in the same year (1670), Jeremiah Nelson opened and "ran" the first grocery store;

and also in the same year, Joachim Rayner established a tannery business, which was kept in constant operation by himself and successors for eighty years. In 1715-18 Joachim Plumer established and conducted for many years a large clothing manufacturing business. This kind of business, later, became an important industry in the town.

In 1722 iron-works were built by Samuel Barret at the upper end of Rock Pond, where an excellent quality of iron was made from ore found near the shores of the pond, in the peat bogs near by. These iron-works were successfully operated for nearly twenty years. In 1732 Deacon Abner Spofford built and "run for forty years" a very large sawmill "on the stream which finds its outlet at Parker River above Scragg Pond." Forty-five years later, in 1778, on the same site, Colonel Daniel Spofford operated the largest grist-mill in the town's history. In this mill, he and his sons "ground three thousand bushels of grain (grown by the farmers of the town) in a single year." In connection with this mill the Spofford's "ran" a very large sawmill. (It is worthy of note that as early as 1725 there were eighteen grist mills in operation in this territory at one time.) There is no doubt but that the itinerant shoemaker came here with the first settlers, but the first one, whose name we know, was John Bridges. He went over his route with his "bag or kit" and made shoes for his patrons for forty years, from 1735 to 1775.

Daniel Pierce, in 1770, commenced the digging of the canal below Pentucket Pond. Later a dam was built just below Mill street, where a grist-mill was built (by parties now unknown) and "operated for seven months in the year." In 1770 Major Asa Nelson opened on Nelson street the second grocery store to be run in town. As early as 1782 Benjamin Wallingford, and his son "Ben," doing business "at the corner", had won an enviable reputation as "chaise makers." Their fame extending to wide fields, they did a large and profitable business.

The year 1775 was prolific in the development of new industries among the people of the parish: Eleazar Spofford established the business of "wire pulling," which proved very successful. Jonathan Chaplin built and operated a rope-walk; and Deacon Stephen Mighill, like his English ancestors, manufactured malt in ever-increasing quantities. As all of the early settlers were Englishmen, so they all drank home brewed ale, hence the importance of dealing with a maltster who was trained to the business as Deacon Stephen had been, for his ancestors for many generations had been "licensed maltsters under the Crown." The same year the Burpee family "dammed a swift running stream," built a mill and carried on the business of "breaking flax by water-power" for the people, which could be done much quicker and cheaper than by hand. The same year, too, Jeremiah Spofford built and operated a snuff-mill, and that year he commenced the manufacture of molasses from cornstalks and watermelons. The business was carried on successfully during the period of the Revolutionary War, a period when it was impossible

to bring molasses here from Jamaica and Cuba. After the war, molasses, made from sugar-cane, could be had that was better and cheaper. Besides the above-named new industries, Deacon Thomas Merrill and his two oldest sons manufactured nails "with forge, hammer and anvil" in "a smithy" located in the ell of his house.

We find also that as early as 1780 Westen & Phineas Hardy had built and were operating a tanyard, which was located near the site of the old Harriman mill on Rock Brook (Parker River), Mill street. It was during this year that Samuel Norris began the manufacture of clothing, the second to engage in this business in town. It was in this year that Captain Benjamin Adams began the tanning and currying of leather, his tanyard being on Salem Road (now Central street). As early as 1782 Captain William Perley had built and equipped a bark-mill, and was grinding bark by water-power. This he sold to the "nine tanneries" cheaper than the tanners could grind the bark by horse-power, and therefore did a large and lucrative business for many years.

The historian tells us that in 1785 Solomon Nelson and his sons built fishing-vessels of 18 to 25 tons burden, which, when completed, were hauled by oxen over the road to tide-water at Rowley, six miles distant. It must have been a grand sight to see the 40-odd yoke of oxen—big, sturdy and willing—slowly and carefully pulling such a great load over the road to the sea. Never again, in the history of man will such a beautiful sight (to the country-bred boy) be seen.

The year 1800 and the years immediately following were very significant years in the town's industrial history, for we are told that in that year Benjamin Wallingford, Jr., began and carried on successfully for "many years" the manufacture of "horse-collars, harness and saddle-bags." At that time, and for forty years afterwards, Deacon Solomon Nelson "ran" a large tannery on Nelson street. It was also in this year that Daniel Clark, one of the three or four largest tanners in the parish, built and "ran" a tannery on North street. Three years later, however, his tannery, lands and buildings were purchased, and the tan-yard was operated by Henry Hilliard, the first of that name to appear in the industrial affairs of the town. This Henry was a very active and pushing tanner and farmer during his long and successful life. At his death, his son Henry took up and carried on the business profitably to himself and his heirs for many years. Upon his death, his nephew, the third Henry (who is today an honored citizen of the town, and its tax collector for twenty-five years) came into possession of the property, and tanned and curried hides and skins up to 1903, when he closed the tan-pits forever and a day. Thus it was that the three Henry Hilliards carried on the business of tanning in the same tan-yard for exactly one hundred years.

During the early years of that century charcoal burning was carried on extensively here in a commercial way. As early as 1800 John Wood

acquired the great grist-mill, first owned by Daniel Pierce, and which had then been run for one hundred years, and added a sawmill to the plant. Within a few years the property came into the hands of Paul Stickney.

Beginning some thirty years before 1810 shoe manufacturing was "carried on" by the tanners in conjunction with their tanning business. The leather (both upper and under stock) was "given out" in the sides. This was "worked up" into boots and shoes by the farmers, and others, when the weather and other conditions were such that they could do nothing else; but with the opening of the year 1810 there began a new era in the history of our people, for in that year the two brothers Benjamin and Joseph Little came here and began the manufacture of boots and shoes on a large scale in a building located near the ancient parish church on the old South Green, on Elm street. Besides "carrying on the shoe business," the Littles "ran" a very large "West India and Dry Goods Store," where could be purchased a cambric needle or an ox-yoke, a quintal of salt mackerel, a gallon or a barrel of rum. Much of their merchandise they bartered for boots and shoes that the farmers made during their off hours, rainy days and during the winter months. Richard and his son, Amos J. Tenney, began manufacturing the regular Georgetown heavy boot and brogan in 1811,—which business was continued many years successfully. Beginning at this time (1811) and for the thirty years following, "Deacon Sol" and Nathaniel Nelson did a very large and prosperous business both as tanners and as shoe manufacturers.

In 1815 Paul Pillsbury (by some kind of a crude mechanical device of his own invention) produced the first shoe-pegs ever made or used in this field, and, so far as the writer knows, the first ever made except by hand with a knife. It was during this period that Deacon Asa Nelson owned and operated a large tannery on Elm street. Benjamin Winter was another one of the early old-time and successful shoe manufacturers; he began in 1818 and he made a specialty of boys' brogans, the first ever made in a commercial way in the parish. The records tell us that Stephen Little commenced the manufacture of "pegged shoes," the first ever made in the county for the general trade. Before that period, be it remembered, all kinds of boots and shoes were made "stitch-downs," "fudge-welt" or "fair-stitch."

It is worthy of note that some of the high-class journeyman tanners, men like Amos Nelson and Benjamin Low, and others in their class, "with the money they had saved, carried on an independent tanning business by renting and using the 'pits' of the large tanners." These two men especially became "well-off" as contracting tanners. Still another Nelson—Major Jeremiah—operated a very large tannery on Elm street, near the old meeting-house, from 1824 to 1845. But the greatest stride forward in the tanning business came with the year 1825,

when Colonel John Kimball (who at that period owned the Captain Benj. Adams tan-yard on the Salem Road, now Central street) tanned and curried in that year over four thousand South American horse-hides.

Beginning about 1829 Amos J. Tenney and his son, George J. Tenney, began the manufacture of heavy boots and shoes on a large scale, and in a few years their type of goods were reckoned as "standard" throughout the entire country. The son, George J., and his son, Milton G. Tenney, continued the business for upwards of fifty years. D. M. Winter, in 1830, was another member of the old families to enter the shoe business, and he also was successful.

Incidentally, it may be stated that by this time (1830) there was scarcely a farmhouse (or any other house) but that had in its back-yard a 12x12 foot shoe-shop. It was in these small shops that the country-wide known Georgetown boots and shoes were made until recent years, when they were manufactured in factories.

We are told that "Tailor" Thurlow (the last-known itinerant clothing maker, and the second one that we know by name) was at the height of his business career in 1830. It was in 1831 that Samuel Little, another man famous in the annals of Georgetown's history, began to manufacture shoes; but two years later (1832) he took Hiram N. Noyes (the father of George W., H. Howard and Miss Elizabeth M. Noyes) in as a partner, and, under the firm name of Little & Noyes, the business was carried on successfully for several years, when the partnership was dissolved and the business continued for twenty-five years by Little & Moulton, the leading manufacturing concern in the town.

The second manufacturing tailor (the first being Benjamin Plumer, in 1718, as we remember) to do business here was Samuel Plumer (the first of the remarkable trio of manufacturing tailors who made Georgetown widely known and justly famous as the center of production of high-grade clothing for men). Samuel Plumer commenced business in 1838, and continued it up to the time of his death in 1890, a period of 52 years.

The years between 1827 and 1840 witnessed Georgetown's greatest growth in population, manufacture and commerce. More than fifty buildings, including shops, were erected in one year, 1839. At that time there were 27 factories engaged in the manufacture of shoes. The capital invested was $99,000; the annual product was $221,000. At that time there were nine tanneries being operated, with a total capital of $11,000 and an annual output of $66,000. Carriages were manufactured here at the time to the value of $2,500. It is said that in the three or four years preceding 1835 and the years immediately following, Georgetown had the largest ratio of people engaged in the shoe industry of any town in the country; at this period, also, Georgetown was the largest producer of men's and boys' heavy boots and shoes in the United States, made almost wholly for the farmer, the fisherman and the miner; and

even to this day, though but very few of such goods are made anywhere, the Georgetown boot, shoe and brogan of this type is still supreme.

The next man to own the great Pierce-Wood-Stickney mill property on Mill street was Major Paul Dole, a notable man in the business life of the town for many years. He purchased the property in 1840, and within a few years increased its value five-fold by acquiring the "flowage rights" that naturally belonged to the water-shed that gathers the waters for the two large oval-shaped basins, Rock and Pentucket Ponds.

By thus securing these "flowage rights", and by raising the dam, he could "keep back" the "flood waters of spring," and thus was enabled to "run" his mill practically the year round. Major Paul had a brother, Edmund, who was reputed to be a "little queer." In 1841 he invented a machine that made shoe-pegs, but being "queer", he never would let anyone see it; and as it was never patented, nothing came of his invention. Up to about 1841 our manufactured products were transported by large two and four-horse teams into Boston, which returned with loads of merchandise for merchants and manufacturers. After the "Eastern" Railroad was built, these teams hauled goods back and forth to Rowley, which became our shipping point. This arrangement continued up to 1849, when the steam railroad was opened between Haverhill and Newburyport, via Georgetown, and in 1854 between Georgetown and Boston, via Danvers Junction.

Beginning in 1835 and bringing the record up to the present time (1921), we shall deal with men, things and events as chronologically and as briefly as possible, and make the story reasonably clear to the reader.

George W. Chaplin, one of the town's most able men, began the manufacture of boots and shoes in 1835. From the beginning to the end of his business activities in 1872—37 years—he was successful in business, active in public affairs, a staunch supporter of his church, and an honored citizen throughout a long life. Another man, in early life a noted teacher, widely read in ancient, modern and current history, wise in the council of town affairs, and famous in the business life of the town, was Mr. H. Prescott Chaplin. He entered the shoe business the same year that his brother George W. began, and he was actively interested in the business for fifty-five years, until his death, in 1890.

In 1837 Lewis H. Bateman (one of the town's most enterprising and all-around successful business men) formed a partnership with Charles S. Tenney, and they opened one of the largest (at that time) department stores in the county. This was possible, because Georgetown then, as now, was the "hub" of a large purchasing population. The firm "carried" a varied stock: dry-goods, groceries, boots and shoes; it did dressmaking, and upstairs ran millinery parlors. At the same time the firm was associated with a brother of Mr. Tenney in the conduct of a meat market.

In 1841-2 a man by the name of Blodgett came here, and established and carried on for a few years an extensive business in the manufacture of men's clothing, employing as many as "forty hands." He was also an inventor of ability. Being a poor mechanic (but a clever business man), he employed skilled mechanics in Boston, and they, under his direction, produced in 1846-8 (during the very same years that Howe, Singer, Wilson and Baker produced their sewing machines) a practical, good, workable sewing machine. When finished, he quickly applied for and was granted patents on his machine by both the United States and Great Britain. Being a wise and far-sighted man, he sold, for a very large sum, both his American and foreign patents. With his large wealth (for those times) he moved to Philadelphia, where he died.

John P. Coker began the manufacture of shoes in 1838, and with his son, Robert A., continued the business for fifty years. This concern was the first in this town to use a sewing machine in the manufacture of boots and shoes. It was a waxed-thread machine. Concerning this particular machine, a long and historically interesting story might be told; but, briefly, the Coker business was mostly the making of long-legged boots. Mr. David Haskell was the first man to operate the machine. Being an ingenius mechanic, he soon discovered that as the machine was of a "flat bed" type (up to that time all makes of machines—the Howe, Singer, Wilson and Baker—were all made "flat-bed") he could not "side-up" the legs of the boot tops. The only real and practical work that he could do on the machine was to "sew on the counters." After a few months of theoretical and practical experimenting, he devised, developed and patented in 1852-3 the first "post" sewing machine ever made. With his improved machine, he could "side-up" the "tops" of boots thirty times quicker than the same work could be done by hand, with "awl, waxed-end and clamps." Today, there are more of the Haskell idea of "post" machines used in shoe factories than all other machines put together.

Moses Atwood, in 1841, began the manufacture of "Atwood's Bitters," a patent medicine that attained to nation-wide popularity. Medicinally and financially the "bitters" were a great success. Lewis H. Bateman and Moses Carter had a hand in compounding the herbs, and aided Atwood in the early stages of the development of the business; but not feeling satisfied with Atwood's "cutting loose" from them when the business showed prospects of large profits, they both entered and carried on the business of making and selling "Atwood's Bitters" for several years. As they found iron ore in the "peat bogs" near the shores of Rock Pond in 1722, from which they smelted an excellent quality of pig-iron, so this same Moses Atwood, in 1844, discovered, at the base of Atwood's Hill (Scribner's), a deposit (not very large, as it proved) of ochreous earth, from which he manufactured and sold large quantities of "a mighty good" paint. The "bitters" and "paint" business making

him a rich man, he "went West" in 1853 or 1854. It is a notable fact that Atwood, Bateman and Carter, all three, manufactured and sold "Atwood's Bitters" for several years; and afterwards it was manufactured by a New York concern, and sold by them as one of the standard patent medicines of the country for fifty years.

The business of "manufacturing chemists" was begun by Moses Carter in 1841-2 and continued by him and his son, Luther F. Carter, up to the time of the latter's death in 1815. The third of this trio of "manufacturing chemists," Mr. Bateman, became, in 1858, the largest cigar manufacturer in Essex county, carrying on the business up to 1865, when he, disposing of the business, opened and conducted an old-fashioned apothecary-shop up to his death in 1871, the business begun by him being then taken over and continued up to this time by his son, Dr. Lewis H. Bateman.

The third and the most widely known and active of the "trio" of men's clothing manufacturers was Stephen Osgood. He "learned his trade" and later became a partner of Samuel Plumer (the first of his apprentices to do so); in 1848 he began business for himself, and he remained interested in the business up to the time of his death in 1911, sixty-three years.

In 1863 Major Moses Tenney purchased the Major Paul Dole mill, with its "flowage rights," enlarged the mill, and installed a full line of modern machinery for making woolen cloth, but the Civil War hurt rather than helped the enterprise, and so the business proved a great financial loss to the company promoters.

George W. Noyes, son of Hiram N. Noyes, became interested in the shoe industry in 1865, and he was prominently identified with the business for a period of forty-five years.

Edwin L. Daniels began his long life in the handling of leather in die making, manufacturing and selling of shoes in 1866, when he went to work for George J. Tenney. Today he runs the only retail shoe store in town, and so he has handled leather, in one way and another, in our town for fifty-six years.

As early as, or it maybe earlier than 1856, George H. Carlton associated himself with H. Prescott Chaplin in the shoe pattern making business. Later with Mr. Chaplin, as a silent partner, he manufactured shoes several years, up to 1870, when he joined A. B. Noyes, and under the firm name of Noyes & Chaplin continued in this business up to 1875, when he retired from the business altogether, and became the first cashier of the Georgetown National Bank.

The name of H. Howard Noyes will always stand high on the list of the town's great and successful shoe manufacturers. He entered the employ of his uncle, Mr. George W. Chaplin, in 1872, and managed the business until 1896. Edward K. Titus, a grandson of George W. Chaplin, was a partner in the business from 1887 to 1899. Mr. Noyes took

over the entire business in 1900, and he continued a steadily-increasing business up to 1918 (46 years), when he retired from the shoe business to give his whole time to banking and other financial interests.

In 1875 out-of-town capitalists purchased the old Harriman—Major Dole—Major Tenney mill property. They enlarged the buildings, and for a few years did a very large business in the weaving of fabrics; but the business being unprofitable, after a few years, it was discontinued altogether. Later the whole property was destroyed by fire; today only ruins remain on the site of its ancient glories.

Walter M. Brewster, also one of the town's big shoe manufacturers, having been a partner of H. Prescott Chaplin for a number of years, "came to the corner" in 1877 and "set up" for himself, continuing a successful business up to 1896-7, when he retired, a very wealthy man.

J. K. Nute manufactured shoes here from 1877 to 1881. The Little Corporation was organized in 1881, with Charles P. Tyler as president, Charles E. Jewett as treasurer, and Edwin L. Daniels as general superintendent. Not proving financially successful, the company was dissolved in 1888. John A. Gale, of Haverhill, manufactured women's "calf, buff and split" pegged and standard screw shoes for the Southern trade from 1878 to 1882, when he moved back to Haverhill. Cloutman & Dunham, from Farmington, N. H., in the same building (the "brick block") manufactured a medium-priced McKay sewed and standard screw line of boots for women for the Western and Southern trade. The firm remained here from 1882 to 1884. Horace E. Harriman, succeeding his father, continued a successful business, the making of men's high grade heavy boots and shoes, and retired from the business in 1896. Prebble & Worth in 1896 fitted up the old "Osgood carriage factory" and manufactured a cheap grade of women's felt, cloth and kid shoes, but the business was discontinued in 1898.

Major Hamilton L. Perkins, the third of the remarkable "trio" of Georgetown's great manufacturing tailors, having learned his trade of Samuel Plumer, became his partner in 1870, and he remained a partner until 1883, when he started up for himself, doing business here for several years, and then went to Haverhill, where he continued in the same business for nearly thirty years.

In 1885 Mr. George W. Noyes, Edward A. Chaplin and George H. Wilson incorporated the Georgetown Boot & Shoe Corporation. The A. B. Noyes Company was made into a corporation in 1888, with A. B. Noyes, president; Joseph E. Bailey, treasurer; and Edwin L. Daniels, superintendent. In 1896 Mr. Noyes retired from the company and went West; the business, however, was continued for twenty-five years, up to 1913, when the corporation was dissolved.

Cornelius G. Baker, who had done a successful business for more than two-score years, took in his son Fred W., as a partner in 1890, the partnership continuing for ten years to 1900.

Lawrence L. Chaplin, son of H. Prescott Chaplin, was in partnership with his father in the manufacture of boots and shoes for a number of years, up to 1900, when the business was discontinued. Afterwards he was with the George W. Chaplin company for three years. In 1903 he became the cashier of the Georgetown National Bank, which position he now holds.

At the end of the ten years' partnership with his father, Fred W. Baker, in 1900, began manufacturing "on his own hook" the famous "Little Ripper" shoes for boys and youths. From the start the business was very successful. The entire plant, however—building, machinery and stock—was destroyed by fire in 1917.

In 1895 Justin F. White (with Henry K. Palmer, as a partner) opened a retail shoe store and men's furnishings. At the end of the third year, Mr. Palmer retired from the business, and Mr. White continued the business up to two years ago. During the past few years Mr. White has added and built up a very large insurance agency business.

The story of the Pentucket Shoe Company, incorporated in 1896, if told in detail would (psychologically) disclose one of the most curious (certainly one of the most regrettable) chapters in the history of the town's business life. Never was there a business undertaking in our history where so many high-class men, clean cut, and financially responsible men, were interested as in this enterprise. Its incorporators in the order of the amount of their subscriptions were Walter M. Brewster, Harold F. Blake, Fred S. Hardy, Sherman Nelson, Dr. R. B. Root, Edward S. Ficket, Lewis H. Bateman, Dr. Edward M. Hoyt, Dr. Thomas Whittle, Theodore A. McDonald, W. W. Smith and George W. Noyes. Mr. Brewster was made president, Mr. Blake was made vice-president, and Mr. Hardy was treasurer and manager. The manager having had years of experience in managing the business that our company took over, success seemed assured; but at the end of the third year, solely under his management, the company failed, practically without assets. This manager afterwards identified himself with an electrical business (of which he had had no previous knowledge) and in a few years became a very wealthy man. The moral of the story is that "Every man may succeed in life if he but finds his business affinity."

Martineau & Burke in 1908 began the manufacture of leather skivings into "pancake" for heels and innersoles, and the firm did an extensive business here until 1919-20, when the entire business was removed to Ipswich.

In 1910 George W. Noyes and Edward A. Chaplin retiring from the business, the Georgetown Boot & Shoe Co. surrendered its charter; George H. Wilson, as an individual, continuing the business under its corporate name down to the present time.

Mr. Fred W. Baker in 1918 associated himself with men con-

nected with the firm of Cass & Daly, shoe manufacturers of Salem, Mass., and they incorporated the F. W. Baker Shoe Company, Inc. The company at once purchased and greatly enlarged the H. Prescott Chaplin shoe factory building and installed a full line of modern machinery. With plenty of capital at its disposal, the company will, under normal business conditions, do upwards of half a million dollar business annually.

Henry P. Chaplin, in 1917-18, took over the George W. Chaplin Company business from his uncle, H. H. Noyes, but the great war coming on soon after, he closed his factory doors, to help "Uncle Sam" fight the Germans.

The Community Shoe Shop (company) was incorporated in 1918 by Haverhill men; but as none of them were practical shoe men, the company was not a success, notwithstanding that local men, with their time and money, tried to make it successful.

The Georgetown Standard Shoe Company was incorporated by Theodore McDonald, John J. Molloy and Henry J. Minchin in 1920, and the company makes men's and boys' medium priced standard screw and loose-nailed goods. As a specialty the firm makes wood-soled brogans for use in foundries, woolen and felt mills, hat-shops, tanneries and by the miners. With the return of general business, the firm will undoubtedly be of great benefit to the town as a whole.

During the same year (1920) Thomas M. Cook & Son purchased the "old carriage factory" on Clark street, and removed their sole leather business from Haverhill to Georgetown. This business, which runs pretty steadily all the year round, will give employment to many men who formerly worked in Haverhill. George S. Rollins, for several years a growing shoe manufacturer in Haverhill, in 1920 purchased the Molloy factory and other buildings adjoining, remodeled them into a modern factory and moved his entire business here. While his line of work is entirely foreign to the old-time type of Georgetown footwear, he has, with modern machinery methods, maintained the quality of his former output, and has from the beginning done a capacity business since locating here. Being a large employer of men and women, his business is of great benefit to the town as a whole.

Fred H. and W. A. Harriman, sons of H. E. Harriman, in 1919-20, under the firm name of Harriman Brothers, began and are today manufacturing a popular priced shoe for children.

And lastly, in the matter of manufacturing, the Georgetown Wood Heel Company began the making of wood heels in the old Doctor Carter building, on East Main street. As this business permits of the payment of large wages, the business adds greatly to the general welfare of the town.

Cigar making was discontinued by Lewis H. Bateman in 1865; but it was taken up by Thomas B. Masury in the same year, and continued in a large way up to 1890, since which time no cigar making has been

done here. A large apple-evaporating business was conducted on Main street from 1870 to 1880. The first to "take pictures" in town was W. H. Harriman ("Uncle Has"), who opened his "saloon" in 1859, and "took" ambrotypes, tintypes and photographs up to 1872, when he sold his "saloon" to Selwin Reed, of Newburyport, who "ran" the business up to 1884. Since that time no picture studio has been opened in town. The first known wheelwright, carriage builder and repairer was Joseph Currier, who begun business here in 1840. He was followed by Robert Boyce; he by James Messenger, who did this work up to 1917. Today what little of this work is done is performed by E. S. Sherburne and Phillip Nolin.

The only local junk dealers in the history of the town have been Paul Pickering and his grandson, Charles S. Pickering, from 1869 to 1921.

Livery stables were maintained here for more than one hundred years. In the early days, three large stables could scarcely take care of the patronage. The business was carried on by such men as Savory, Boynton, Nelson, Adams, Rogers, Hood and Pingree, Charles A. Pingree being the last one to "hitch-up" a "livery team", in 1917.

Our first public soap maker was Elisha Hood; then came Charles Smith, and later his son, James R., 1887-1895; John T. Hilliard, 1886-1892; and the last was Clark Wilkins, who closed up soap making in our town in 1894.

Historically our harness makers have been Benjamin Wallingford, 1780; next one Delaney; Edward Dorney, 1842; followed by Robert Savory, Thomas F. Hill, Isaac McLain and Jacob Hardy, the last to retire from the business in 1919. The cold garage has taken the place of the warm and cozy harness shop. In the town's early history, and for several generations, the Spoffords and Hazens were the leading carpenters and builders of the town.

The making of wooden shoe-boxes was begun here first by Joseph P. Folsom in 1860, and the same business was carried on successively by William Sawyer, Bansfield Brothers, George B. James, M. Frank Carter and for the past thirty years by Williard C. Hardy.

Heel making, as a separate and distinct business, was first done here by John P. Coker & Son (Robert A.) and was carried on with a fair degree of success for several years. From 1910 to 1913 Charles E. Cartwright and Horace E. Harriman manufactured heels by a process invented by Mr. Cartwright. The heel met with instant success, being ordered in large quantities, but its very success killed the business locally, because great monied interests, seeing huge possibilities in the marketing of the Cartwright process of making heels, placed the same process made heel on the market at a cheaper price.

The cutting of ice, commercially, was begun here by Little & Tenney in 1853; by M. L. & C. N. Hoyt, 1880-1893; by Abbott Brothers in 1882, and the business was continued by Andrew M. Abbott up to 1919,

when he sold out to Pope & Butler; in 1893 the Middlesex Ice Company took over the Hoyt Brothers business.

For a number of years the Middlesex Company and the Porter-Milton Company, continually enlarging their house, did an enormous business up to 1918 and 1920, when all of the houses belonging to these companies were destroyed by fire. At this time no ice is being cut except for local trade by Adams & Bailey.

Concerning the professions: The lawyers of the past were Jeremiah P. Jones, Jeremiah P. Russell, William A. Butler. Those now living here, all native born, are Robert F. Metcalf, Harry E. Perkins, C. Atherton Holmes and Dennis F. Buckley. Of the other Georgetown "boys and girls" who have attained to pre-eminence in the professions in other fields we shall mention Lyman K. Eliot, who became a leader at the bar in California; Boyd B. Jones, today one of the great leaders of the bar in New England; Dr. Francis D. Donohue is today recognized as one of the greatest surgeons and cancer specialists known to the medical world; Charles M. Spofford is a noted authority on civil engineering, has been since 1909 Hayward Professor of Civil Engineering and head of the department of Civil and Sanitary Engineering at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, also a member of the firm of Fay, Spofford & Thorndike, civil engineers of Boston; Miss Marion D. Weston, Ph.D., is a noted botanist. For eleven years identified with the Rhode Island College of Education, she is today a professor of botany in that celebrated institution of learning. Forrest P. Hull is a noted writer, for several years on the editorial staff of the "Boston Transcript", is a graceful writer of special articles.

To the foregoing we may add the names of Moody Spofford, the greatest American civil engineer of his time. It was this Mr. Spofford who built the first bridge across the Merrimac River, built in Haverhill in 1794. Paul Spofford, the "merchant prince," was born here in 1792. Going to New York City early in life, he amassed in a few years a great fortune as the head of the firm of Spofford & Tileson, who were the largest jobbers of boots and shoes in the country at that period. Two years after the birth of Paul Spofford, another boy was born here —Nathaniel Savory; and while, perhaps, his story may not add any great lustre to the town's annals, it does give variety and scope to the doings of its sons. Early in life this young man Savory became a sailor and in due time qualified as a noted navigator. In 1841, on his becoming marooned on Peel Island, one of the Sandwich Islands (now the Hawaiian Islands), he fell in love with a native, a princess, the daughter of the king. When the old king died, Savory (our "Nat"), by right of his wife, became the king, or, we will say, the governor.

As matter of history: A member of Commodore Perry's staff records that when on their voyage to "open up Japan's 'closed gates,' in 1853, they 'called' at Peel Island, and there saw our Yankee 'King'—

living in ease and comfort, raising with but little labor abundant harvests of sweet potatoes, corn, onions, pineapples, bananas and watermelons." So far as we know, neither "King Nat" nor any of his descendants ever visited the land of his ancestors. He died in 1878. Another of our noted men was the Hon. Moses Tenney, State Treasurer from 1856 to 1860, the full legal term. Another was Charles S. Tenney, the first superintendent of the old Haverhill-Georgetown-Newburyport and Danvers railroad, which office he held until the line became a part of the great Boston and Maine railroad system.

As to taverns: The first building used as a public house in our "parish" was built by Captain Samuel Brocklebank in 1670. It was occupied by him as a dwelling up to the time of his death in 1676, when he was killed by the Indians on April 21, at Sudbury, Mass. This dwelling, then as now, faced "Old South Green," and soon after the Captain's death became a tavern. Who the first landlords were the records at hand do not show, but for a good many years previous to 1775 it was known as "Wolf's Tavern," and as early as 1750 it was "run" by Dudley Tyler. For the five years previous, and up to 1775, the landlord was Solomon Nelson, Jr. The second public house was known as Pillsbury's Tavern, and though, no doubt, many and many a glass of "hot rum toddy" was quaffed under its roof in its time, its general story needs no telling here. The third public house was Savory's Tavern, built by Col. J. B. Savory in 1825. Savory was an ideal landlord of the old fashioned type. He possessed in a high degree the art of "welcoming the coming, and speeding the parting guests," and so was a popular innkeeper for a great many years.

After Savory's death, his house was renamed the Pentucket House, and was so called under various landlords up to 1895-6. In 1840, James T. Dunbar opened "Dunbar's Hotel" in what is now the residence of George H. Wilson, and it was used as a hotel until about 1860, when it became a private residence. But in the long history of the town, of all the taverns, inns, houses and hotels that have given food, shelter and entertainment to the friend and stranger alike, the present famous house, standing on the heights of "Old Baldpate," and known for its splendid hospitality from one end of the country to the other, is the Baldpate Inn. This ancient and historical property was taken over by William Bray in 1895. The old dwelling place of the pioneer Mighills and Spoffords has been enlarged by him several times, and as each succeeding year comes and goes, more, and still more guests find good cheer under its roof.

Farming among us as compared with early times is insignificant. Where once could be seen several score pairs of oxen on the farms of the town, today not one pair can be seen here. Mr. Flint Weston, more than twenty years ago, owned and "worked" the last pair to be seen in yoke or in barn. To many (and the writer is one) it is the belief that the

glory of New England farming departed when oxen were no longer "raised" and kept on her farms. Cows only are kept today, kept for "making milk" for village and city consumption. Our farmers here, as elsewhere in the East, are even buying for their own tables butter, cheese, pork and lard; whereas the old-time farmer, from the milk he produced, made (1) butter and cheese, and (2) with the buttermilk and whey so made, he, in a large measure, raised pigs and hogs for fresh pork, bacon, ham, lard and for salt pork. From his large fields of corn he fattened his oxen, sheep and lambs for the market. These creatures being "raised and kept" on the farm, they made the kind of fertilizer that enriched its soil—incomparably so, as compared with the chemical fertilizers used by the farmers today. Now, except milk, eggs, potatoes and a few vegetables, the average farmer raises nothing; hence, as no general farming is being done in New England, so there is no money made in farming in our part of the country.

The Carlton Home is a home-like institution. It was established in 1901 and it was made possible through the munificence of the late George H. Carlton, who, by his will, left $20,000 to provide, and perpetually maintain, as he said: "A home for respectable people of both sexes who shall have reached the age of seventy years, and unable to support themselves in comfort." The management of the "home" is in the hands of a board of nine trustees—five of whom, under the terms of the will, shall be women. The funds of the institution have, from the beginning, been in the hands of trained financiers, with the result that today the treasurer has in his hands nearly double the amount of funds originally donated by Mr. Carlton.

Express forwarding business between here and Boston, and other points, was established here first in 1840 by George Spofford. In 1848-49 the business was taken over by Rutherford Martin and "run" by him up to 1873, when it was purchased by Charles W. Tenney. In 1896 he sold the business to his son-in-law, Henry L. Adams, who continued the business until 1918, when he sold it to Frank T. Maguire, Jr., who now carries on the business in conjunction with local business of the American Railway Express Company.

In 1849 George Spofford was appointed the first Boston & Maine railroad station agent here. The most celebrated was William E. Horner, a natural wit and philosopher, who held the position for thirty years. The present agent is Mr. Herbert C. Reed.

The Haverhill, Georgetown & Danvers street railway was opened as far as Georgetown on October 25, 1896. Instead of building the road to Danvers, as planned, its promoters, two years later, built and opened the line to Dummer Academy, and there connected it with the Ipswich & Newburyport line. This change of route gave great joy to our people, especially to those living in the lower part of the town, and in the Byfield district; and therefore, when the company two years ago ceased to

operate cars below Georgetown Square, dismantling its power-house and car-barns in Byfield, it brought great hardship and universal regret to the inhabitants living in the district through which the cars formerly ran.

The Bell Telephone Company opened its lines here in 1898, with eleven subscribers. Today it has 265 subscribers. Electricity for heat, light and power was brought into town from the Haverhill Electric Company's plant in 1912. Street lighting was installed in that year. To-day there are 375 families and plants using electric lights, and 25 plants using electric motors for manufacturing purposes.

Our fire department, as early as 1838, was noted for its efficiency. In the old days of the fireman's muster, our "boys" with the old hand-tubs—the "Pentucket" and the "Watchman"—won many a first or near "first prize." But when it came to "dinners" and the "fireman's ball" in the evening, Georgetown always won first honors. The old Hook & Ladder Company was organized in 1872; the Steamer No. 1 Company in 1875. These two companies were, by a vote of the town in 1920, merged into one company, the Combination Chemical & Hose Company.

Our fine old town hall, built in 1854-5, was destroyed by fire Dec. 14, 1898. For several years, up to 1916-7, the public meetings of the town have been held in various halls and church vestries, but in that year the town came into the possession of the old Memorial Church, and converted it into (or rather made use of it) as a town hall. This noble building, having also been destroyed by fire (in 1920), the town is again without adequate-sized rooms for public meetings. The concensus of opinion seems to be that the town will in the very near future erect a public building, with a large auditorium, and with offices suitable to the needs of the town.

Our first post-office was established in 1824, and our first post-master was Benjamin Little, who served twenty-seven years up to his death in 1851. His successors in the order of their service were: Joseph P. Stickney, Samuel Wilson, Joseph Hervey, Jeremiah P. Jones, Richard Tenney, Charles E. Jewett, Rev. O. S. Butler, Sylvester A. Donoghue, 1878-86; Jos. V. Noyes, 1890-94; Albert B. Comins, 1894-98; Stephen Osgood, 1901-05; Thomas F. Hill, 1904-08; T. Allan Hill, 1908-13. In 1913 our post-office became a branch of the Haverhill office, with T. Allan Hill as superintendent.

The first town meeting in Georgetown was held on April 28th, 1838. At this meeting Robert Savory was chosen moderator; George Foot, town clerk; John A. Lovering, Sewell Spofford and G. D. Tenney, selectmen and assessors; James Peabody, Moses Thurlow and Jeremiah Clark, overseers of the poor; Benjamin Winter, collector and treasurer; Moody Cheney, Charles Boynton and Robert Savory, constables.

The officials of the town at this time (1921) are as follows: Moderator, Eugene L. Parker; town clerk, Justin F. White; selectmen, Jacob

Hazen (chairman), William Bray, Martin E. Murphy; assessors, J. Winifred Yeaton (chairman), Henry P. Poor and Leonard M. Dresser; overseers of the poor, Leon S. Gifford (chairman), William Bray, Jacob Hazen; treasurer, Justin F. White; collector of taxes, Henry Hilliard; auditor, Herbert C. Reed; school committee, Albert C. Reed (chairman) Cornelia B. Adams, Frederick W. Perkins; constables, Thomas F. Welch (chief), George N. Moffitt, H. Sherwood Hardy; tree warden, Harry K. Kinson; trustees of the Peabody Library, John F. Jackson (chairman), Louis K. Osgood (secretary), George W. Noyes, John W. Perkins and Allan H. Wilde.

In 1921 this town had real estate valuation of $1,255,000; personal property valued at $274,087. The United States Census of 1920 gave Georgetown a population of 2,004.

## THE CHURCHES OF GEORGETOWN.

A history of the religious life of Georgetown is interwoven with that of the Mother Church of Rowley (formed in 1639), to which belonged the first settlers. The Spoffords, who were the earliest settlers in what is now Georgetown, transferred their membership in 1692 to the church in Bradford, organized ten years earlier. In 1702 the inhabitants near the Mills on Parker river, including a part of Rowley, and a part of Newbury, formed a parish called at first Rowlbury, afterwards Byfield. This parish included all the people living northwest of a line drawn over Long Hill to the road which now goes to Haverhill, by way of East and West Main streets to the Great Rock boundary on the present Groveland line.

The church building was erected on the spot now occupied by the Byfield church, on the line between Georgetown and Newbury. The first pastor was Rev. Moses Hale, a worthy, devoted and successful minister. He was born in Newbury, in 1678, graduated from Harvard in 1699, and was ordained in 1706; he died in 1743. His successor was Rev. Moses Parsons (father of Hon. Theophilus Parsons, the eminent jurist). He was born in Gloucester in 1716, graduated at Harvard in 1736, and was ordained in 1744. He died in 1789, at the age of 73. The present pastor of this church is Rev. Cyrus L. D. Younkin, and the present membership is 70.

The Second Parish in Rowley, long known as New Rowley (since 1838 as Georgetown), was incorporated October 5, 1731. In this parish the first Congregational church was organized, October 4, 1732. On that day eighteen men stood together, while Rev. Moses Hale of Byfield read the simple covenant (still in use), to which they assented by raising the right hand. Mr. Hale then declared them to be a Church of Christ, regularly constituted.

Rev. James Chandler, of Andover, born in 1706, graduated at Harvard in 1726, was called to be their pastor. He was ordained October

31, 1732, on a settlement of £300 and an annual salary of £110 (about $500), and twenty cords of wood. He married Mary Hale, daughter of Rev. Moses Hale, of Byfield. Mr. Chandler was an able and devoted minister. He died in 1787, at the age of eighty-three, after a faithful service of fifty-eight years.

The church building stood on the site of the home of the late David Brocklebank, with the parsonage nearby, on the spot where now stands the residence of the late Humphrey Nelson. This structure remained in the same place until 1768, when it was sold to the Baptist Church for a trifle, taken down, and rebuilt at Hale's Corner, Bradford. Later it was removed to New Rowley, near Dole's Mills.

The Old South Meeting House was built on the corner of Main and Elm streets, where it remained standing for over a century. This was a much more pretentious building than its predecessor, being 45 by 55 feet, surmounted by a tower and tall steeple, and topped by a weather cock 105 feet from the ground. This frame was raised in one day, July 25, 1769, and from its timbers the celebrated George Whitefield preached one of his powerful sermons. The building was sold and taken down in 1875, a new one having been erected in 1874, at the corner of Clark and Andover streets—the present First Congregational Church.

Owing to the bitter controversies between those of the Calvinistic and Arminian faiths, a successor to Mr. Chandler was not easily found. In the interval of eight years there were in all sixty-four candidates. Rev. Isaac Braman was finally chosen. He was born at Norton, 1770; graduated at Harvard; and ordained in 1797, on a settlement of £200 and an annual salary of £80 (and ten cords of wood), with an addition of £10 when corn was more than four shillings a bushel. He continued sole pastor until 1842, when Rev. Enoch Pond, Jr., of Bangor, Maine, was appointed colleague. Mr. Pond served very acceptably in this capacity for some four years, and died, much lamented, in 1846. His successor as associate-pastor to Mr. Braman was Rev. John M. Prince, ordained in 1846. Mr. Prince resigned in 1857 because of ill health.

The Rev. Charles Beecher, son of Lyman Beecher, was installed as third colleague in 1857. Upon the death of Mr. Braman in 1858, he became sole pastor, and so continued till 1873, when a colleague for him was chosen, Rev. Thomas Beeber.

In 1863, eighty-five members of the First Congregational Church withdrew from its membership and formed the Orthodox Church. At this time George Peabody, the London banker, presented the church organization with a beautiful brick building (erected near the centre of the town at a cost of about $100,000) in memory of his mother, Mrs. Judith Peabody, a native of this parish. From now on the church was known as The Orthodox Memorial Church. The first pastor was Rev. David Dana Marsh, who was ordained in 1868. Mr. Marsh served acceptably for twenty years, and was succeeded by a series of pastors until

the year 1908, when after forty-five years of faithful and fruitful service the members deemed it wise to disband and reunite with the Mother Church—the First Congregational Church. The present pastor of this united church is Rev. Hugh Penney, and the present membership is 180.

What is now the Baptist Church in Georgetown dates its origin from about 1754, the time of the withdrawal of a number of the members of the Congregational Church. These people styled themselves Separatists, and were soon joined by others of similar faith. In 1781 they became a branch of the Baptist Church of Haverhill, with Elder Samuel Harriman as leader. But in 1784 they were set off as a distinct church of the Baptist faith. Their house of worship was removed to the Mills in New Rowley, near the old Baptist parsonage. In 1829 a new church was built on the parsonage grounds; this was removed in 1837 to its present location, corner of North and Pleasant streets. It has since been enlarged and remodelled. The first pastor of this church was Elder William Ewing, of Shutesbury. Elder Shubal Lovell became pastor in 1797, and continued so for thirteen years. The present pastor is Rev. Frederick L. Brooks, and the present membership is 132.

The Universalist Society was organized in 1829 with 59 charter members. The church was built on the site of the present Central School, at a cost of over $2,000. Meetings were held with many eminent preachers. Rev. Joseph Morse was the first minister. The building was sold to the town in 1855. That the Town Hall might be erected on its site, the church was at this time removed to the opposite corner and changed into a dwelling house.

The first Roman Catholic service in Georgetown was held in 1849, in the apartment of James McLain in the house of Nathaniel Nelson, corner of Andover street and Nelson avenue. Services were afterward held in various places up to 1870, when the Congregational Chapel, corner of Main and Elm streets, was purchased. St. Mary's Church on Central street was dedicated in 1907. Among the early priests were Rev. Richard Cummings and Rev. John Cummings of Newburyport. The present pastor is Rev. John J. McGrath, and the present membership is 250.

All Saints' Church (Episcopal) was established in 1916, on the corner of West Main and School streets, by Rev. Glenn Tilley Morse, the present rector. The present membership of this church is 60.

In a town of independent thinkers, like Georgetown, it was inevitable that a number of organizations should be formed, of longer or shorter existence. Soon after the establishment of the Baptist church, a Free Will Church was started, but was of short duration. About 1840 a Union Church divided for a year or two the religious forces of the town, but this was neither the time nor the place for church union.

The Oberlin Perfection Movement disturbed the harmony of the religious sphere for a season. But the rising sentiment in favor of re-

form in the question of temperance and the abolition of slavery caused a more serious and lasting disturbance. The Liberty Party here was made up of strong men and women, and although not exactly a church, the Come-Outer Element was very much in earnest.

It is said that a branch of the Mormon Church existed here for a season. The leader in Georgetown was Elder Nathaniel Holmes. This church had a much larger following over the line in East Bradford, from which neighborhood there was quite an emigration to Utah. It should be said in justice to Elder Holmes and some others of that faith that they were strongly opposed to polygamy.

The limitations of space prevent an adequate mention and appreciation of the many devoted ministers who have served the different churches in the town. But fuller tribute should be paid to those three men who in unbroken succession for a century and a half (from 1731 to 1881) were servants of the old First Congregational Church. Alike were these men in their ever-zealous devotion to their beloved Christian faith; in their genial, kindly dispositions; in their courteous and gentlemanly ways; and in their keen, trained intellects. Each of the three worthy divines was up to his generation or beyond in his religious faith and practice. Of Mr. Beecher this was pre-eminently true, and no proof is needed.

Concerning Mr. Chandler, it is related that he advised one of his deacons to hear Mr. Whitefield preach. Receiving the answer, "Why, your preaching is good enough." Mr. Chandler said: "But Mr. Whitefield doesn't preach as I do; he preaches with power," and this at a time when Whitefield was debarred from many a New England pulpit. Mr. Braman took great delight in telling this story of himself. At a period of strong religious dissensions he made a pastoral call upon a household divided within itself. No reference was made to creed or belief, but, during the call, the good lady of the house drew Father Braman aside and guardedly whispered: "I like your preaching very much, your doctrines have the right ring, I wish you will be enabled to settle, but don't tell John this!" Not many minutes later, John took the prospective pastor aside, and said almost the same words, adding cautiously at the end, "but don't tell my wife!"

In fulfillment of the divine promise to the godly man, "With long life will I satisfy him and shew him my salvation," we note that each of the three noted preachers lived to attain the four-score mark and beyond. Father Braman reached the advanced age of eighty-seven years, while the average age of all was eighty-five years. Long lives were also granted to ministers' wives in those days, it would seem, as Huldah Nelson Harriman, widow of Elder Harriman (first Baptist minister) died in her 101st year, and the widow of Mr. Braman (Sarah Balch Braman) lived to be 103. It is interesting to note that from the birth of Mr. Chandler (the first of the three ministers) in 1706, to the death of

Mr. Beecher (the last of the three ministers) in 1900, a period of 194 years had passed. Proud indeed may Georgetown well be that these three venerable ministers of the Lord, who gave to us so much of their precious lives, lie buried in our town.

Summary: Byfield Church—Formed in 1702; present pastor, Rev. Cyrus L. D. Younkin, membership, 70. First Congregational Church—Formed in 1732; present pastor, Rev. Hugh Penney; membership, 180. First Baptist Church—Formed in 1781; present pastor, Rev. Frederick L. Brooks; membership, 132. Catholic Church—Formed in 1871; present pastor, Rev. John J. McGrath; membership, 250. Episcopal Church —Formed in 1916; present pastor, Rev. Glenn Tilley Morse; membership, 60.

---

## CHAPTER XXIV.

## TOWN OF ROCKPORT.

The town of Rockport, with a present population of 3,700, came into existence, as an historic fact, by Sandy Bay, the fifth parish of the town of Gloucester, and Pigeon Cove, a part of the Third Parish, being set off from Gloucester and incorporated as the Town of Rockport, February 27, 1840. It is situated on the most easterly part of Cape Ann, and bounded northwesterly by Ipswich Bay, on the east by the Atlantic Ocean, on the south by Massachusetts Bay and on the west by the city of Gloucester. It has a water front of about six miles. The greater part of the coastline is rugged and rock-bound, though here one finds a few sandy beaches, including Long Beach, a mile in extent. Fine driveways are thus afforded, along with good bathing facilities. Pebble Stone, Cape Hedge, is composed of an immense pebble-stone reef. Schoolhouse Beach is found here. There are also a number of other pleasant beaches. The Cape, or Fresh Pond, a beautiful sheet of water, covers seventy or more acres. Pigeon Cove has for many years been a popular summer resort.

Early in 1839, after an agitation of the proposition for several years, the vote of the town was finally taken. It stood 319 "yea" against fifty-four "no" on the question of incorporation as a separate place. A meeting was called, and five persons were chosen on the part of Sandy Bay to confer with a committee to be chosen by the present town, viz: George D. Hale, James Haskell, John W. Marshall, Nehemiah Knowlton, Reuben Dade. Very soon the new town of Rockport, including Sandy Bay and Pigeon Cove, was incorporated, the date being February 27, 1840. This act was approved by Governor Marcus Morton on the same day. The warrant for the first town meeting called upon voters to meet in the vestry of the Congregational Society, March, 1840. The first

moderator was Captain John Davis, and Colonel William Pool, town clerk; he and his son, Calvin W., were clerks for many years.

The present (1921) town officers are: Selectmen and Overseers of the Poor: John H. Dennis, Eli L. Morgan, Frank C. Todd; Town Clerk, Byron G. Russell; Treasurer, Mrs. Lois F. Sherburne; Constables: John E. Sullivan, John V. Spates; Surveyor, Fred E. Smith; Auditors: W. Elmer Smith, Winfred A. Mason, A. Carl Butman; Town Attorney, J. M. Marshall; Harbor Master, C. W. Gott.

Rockport in 1880 had a population of 3,912; in 1885 it was reported as 3,888; in 1900, it was 4,592; in 1910 it had fallen to 4,211; and the United States Census for 1920 gave the total as 3,878.

Richard Tarr was doubtless the first man to effect a permanent settlement in this town, in Sandy Bay. He here erected a log cabin about 1690. He was born in the west of England about 1660, and died in 1732, leaving an estate of approximately £400, and a large family of children. The next to enter the town was John Pool, who according to family traditions and records was born in Taunton, England, in 1670. He was by trade a carpenter, and worked at his trade in Beverly for several years, with Richard Woodbury. It was he who furnished the builders of Long Wharf in Boston with a greater part of the lumber required for that extensive work. In the early eighties, there were forty-four persons bearing the name of Pool in the town of Rockport.

In 1688 it appears that prior to that date no general division of grant for any part of this territory of Gloucester had been made. On the 27th of February of that year, however, the town voted that every householder and young man upwards of twenty-one years of age who was born in the town and was then living therein, should have six acres of land. Among the conditions annexed were these: that the inhabitants should be permitted to cut wood upon these lots for their own use; and, second, that the people should have a free passage through them for certain purposes to the water-side. In accordance with this plan and town vote, eighty-two lots, all numbered, beginning at Flat-Stone Cove, and terminating at Black Beach, Sandy Bay, were laid out to persons living on the east side of the cut. In 1725 the town was provided with a schoolhouse, "to keep a good school in for godly instruction of children, and teaching of them to read and write good English." In 1734 the whole number of taxpayers in Sandy Bay was thirty-seven, more than one-half of whom made their livelihood by fishing.

Rockport has no natural harbor to receive large shipping interests. But millions of dollars, from the first settlement down, have been expended for harbor improvements, until at present a safe, fairly good harbor exists. Thus what nature failed to accomplish, man in his wisdom and energy has brought about. In 1829 the federal government caused a survey to be made of this harbor, with a view to the construction of a breakwater. A few years later Congress made an appropria-

tion of $50,000 for the improvement of a harbor. Work was begun in 1885 on plans by which the government was to enclose, by a breakwater of great strength, sufficient space to surround a harbor of 1,370 acres with water twenty-four feet deep at low tide stage.

One of the greatest drought seasons ever known in this county was that of 1779, as a result of which the settlers endured great hardships, in addition to the burdens laid upon them by reason of the war. Most of the agricultural resources were cut off for that year. Moreover, the winter of 1779-80 was one of unusual severity, one record declaring that "snow fell for twenty-seven days in succession."

Ever since 1807 Rockport has been protected by a fire company and such engines and other equipment as the times afforded. A company was organized during the year just mentioned, consisting of twenty members. Each man was to provide himself with two leather water buckets and a leather sack, or bag, on which was inscribed his Christian name. This equipment was to stand in the hall, or front room, of his place of residence. A fine of one dollar and fifty cents was imposed on all who failed to meet these requirements. Later, forty-seven members belonged to this company. The first engine purchased in 1827 cost $315 and was named "Enterprise." The next engine was purchased by Gloucester, and the company had twenty-five members. In 1848 the "Votary" was bought by Rockport, costing $1,000; this served until a steamer was purchased in 1885. The fourth engine was "Pigeon Cove" (suction), bought in 1860 for $1,100; this required a company of forty men to render the best service. In 1866 "Silver Grey" was bought for $898, and required fifty men. In 1876 the town bought a hose-carriage, "C. H. Parsons," at a cost of $710, and a hook and ladder truck costing $775. In 1885 the steamer "Sandy Bay," a third-size Silsby, which, including wagon, cost $3,970. This required only fifteen men to perform excellent work at fires. As the years have slipped by, and other improvements have been made in fire-fighting apparatus, the town has invested, so that today it is abreast of the other towns in Essex county, believing that in "all that is good, Rockport can afford the best." Yet with all the precautions, fire has caused the total destruction of quite a number of buildings in the town, including several struck by lightning. The Methodist church was burned in May, 1875. The Annisquam Mill took fire in December, 1883, when the main structure and contents were destroyed, throwing nearly three hundred persons out of employment.

Long before the days of organizing the Woman's Christian Temperance Union, the forming of State and National Prohibition platforms in this country, or before the Women Crusaders, or Francis Murphy, with his blue-ribbon pledge lectures and campaign against the liquor traffic, Rockport was highly interested in the subject of doing away with liquors as a beverage. Back in 1856, sixty-six years ago, Rockport had her "Carrie Nations," as did Kansas in the later years. July 8,

1856, occurred a women's raid. The body consisted of about two hundred women. Armed with hatchets, and led by a man bearing an American flag, they marched through the main streets of the town for the purpose of making a demonstration against the grog shops of Rockport. They were hasty, in that they did not stop to consider the legal rights they had or did not possess. They visited thirteen saloons and seized bottles, jugs, casks, etc., destroying with their hatchets the vessels and their contents. The raiders had completed their work by three o'clock in the afternoon, and then repaired to Dock Square, where a love-feast was held, with congratulations to one another on the work accomplished. They were subsequently arrested, and after a long legal battle were released. A number of legal questions were at issue in this quite celebrated case.

At Sandy Bay a postoffice was established in 1825, having a semi-weekly mail service. The next year a tri-weekly service followed. In 1828 a daily stage coach service was established. The first postmaster was Winthrop Pool, who continued until 1838, when he died. His successors in office have been: Henry Clark, George Lane, Francis Tarr, Jr., Addison Gott, William W. Marshall, William Wingood, Walter G. Peckham, James S. Wallace, and William Parsons, sixteen years term. Eugene Meagher, the present postmaster, was commissioned under President Woodrow Wilson in July, 1914. This has long been a second-class postoffice, and now transacts a business of somewhat in excess of $10,000 annually. The town carriers are: John S. Higgins, Arthur Wilson, Ralph Wilson. There are two rural free deliveries, one about twelve miles, the other twenty-four miles in length. The carriers of these routes are respectively John Denn and Richard Dodge. This postoffice has occupied the L. E. Smith store-building for nearly a quarter of a century.

Meanwhile the change in matters of transportation and mail-service since those early years of the last century has indeed been marked. In the eighties, instead of the one-horse, two-wheeled chaise to Gloucester Harbor, as in 1825, there had come to be eight trains of well-appointed case running to and from Boston daily.

As its name would indicate, Rockport's natural resource is stone. The first stone known to have been shipped from Rockport or Cape Ann was quarried about 1800, near Lobster Cove. It was moved on simple skids to the shore, where it was loaded on a small fishing-boat and taken to Newburyport, to be used as a mill-stone.

The first derrick set up here was in 1836. The earliest steam engine employed in these quarries was in 1853-54. Prior to that period, water was pumped by hand, while hoisting was either by hand or by use of oxen. Nearly every section of the United States has at some time or other bought stone from these quarries. An account of these immense quarries given in 1885 states that at that date there were then engaged about five hundred men. Fifteen boats were constantly in use in trans-

porting the output from the quarry companies of the Rockport Granite Company, Pigeon Hill Granite Company, Charles Guidot, Edwin Canney, Ballou & Mason, Herbert A. Story, E. L. Waite, Charles Dormon & Son, and Bryant, Lurvey & Company. Stone from these quarries has gone into the foundations of San Francisco (California) buildings, back in the fifties; into paving the streets of New Orleans, Boston, New York and scores of lesser cities. The rock is of excellent quality and seems inexhaustable in quantity.

It is indeed fortunate that factories and stone quarries have been successfully operated in a place with so little of the real soil culture. As the stone industry has already been touched on sufficiently for this work, a few paragraphs concerning the various factories of the past and industries of today are now in order:

In 1822 William Hall of Boston first made isinglass in Rockport from hake sounds. He paid from three to five cents per pound for the sounds in a raw state. Before he commenced to buy them, they went to waste, with all other fish offal. He cleaned and dried this part of the fish, running it through rollers turned by hand, paying fifty cents a day for the man power thus obtainable. He secured letters patent on his process, and after a few years sold out to Jabez Row, William Norwood and others, a change which finally resulted in the formation of the corporation known as the Rockport Isinglass Company. They put in iron instead of wooden machinery and used horse power instead of man-turned mills. In the eighties, two concerns were producing isinglass from hake sounds—the Cape Ann employing forty-five men for five months a year, and Haskins Brothers, who employed almost as many men. At present the demand for the isinglass product is not so great as when lager beer was permitted to be made, hence the plant is running on short time.

In 1847 a cotton mill was incorporated here for the making of duck and fishing lines. For a number of years the enterprise prospered, but presently there sprung up in many other New England and New York towns similar mills, which finally caused an over-production. The Rockville plant thus declined in importance. After a lapse of about twenty years, the plant changed its machinery somewhat, and produced other cotton goods. The capacity was doubled, and new and larger buildings were erected. Some years later the company failed, and the machinery was sold for $140,000 to satisfy the creditors. As the original cost was $500,000, stockholders lost heavily. The name of the corporation was changed to the Annisquam Mill; the machinery was renewed and a good business was being carried on there, when in December, 1883, the property was destroyed. It included a fine large stone building, and employed two hundred and forty men. Its destruction was a severe loss to Rockport.

In 1887 the Cape Ann Oil Cloth Company originated with Albert

W. Lane and N. S. York, who carried on a good business, and went from small to larger quarters on several occasions, as the business increased. In the eighties they were making, under United States patents dated 1883, rubber oil goods, coats, hats, horse covers, buggy-aprons, etc., in connection with standard oil clothing. Both the above concerns have gone out of business.

Of the present industries of Rockport it may be stated briefly that the isinglass factory, the cold storage plant and Waddell's boat-building plant are about all in the line of industries. The stone quarries have ceased to operate much on account of the introduction of cement and concrete work. The Inter-State Fishing Commission had a large cold storage plant.

In the month of May, 1884, the shore-end of the Bennett & Mackay submarine cable was landed at Rockport, the event being greeted with a great celebration. The Old and New World had again been united by an electric ocean cable. James Gordon Bennett, the famous New York journalist, President Chester A. Arthur and many other noted men were present, and all responded to toasts. This cable was the largest in diameter of any thus far laid beneath the ocean's waves.

The Fifth Parish of Sandy Bay was incorporated and approved by the governor, January 1, 1754. A meeting-house was erected about the same date. It stood near the head of Long Cove; it was thirty-six feet square and two stories high. It was taken down in May, 1805, just before the death of the venerable pastor, Ebenezer Cleaveland. John W. Marshall's history of Rockport's churches gives the following on the societies existing as late as 1886:

In the year 1753 the citizens of Sandy Bay commenced to build a meeting-house near where the Mt. Pleasant House now stands. The timber was hauled to the spot and was framed and ready to raise, when, on account of dissatisfaction on the part of a considerable number of persons, the frame was removed in the night time (tradition says by women) to the southern part of what is now Baptist Square, and there it was erected. It was thirty-six feet square, two stories high; it had no tower or belfry. It fronted the south; on the front was a porch, through which was the entrance to the audience room and the galleries, which were upon three sides; the front gallery was used by the singers. Over the pulpit was a sounding-board; the pulpit was also furnished with an hour-glass, by which the minister timed the service. The lower floor was furnished with eighteen pews, and on each side of the middle aisle were three long seats for the aged men and women; there was a seat for the colored people (slaves) of whom there were several before the Revolutionary War; there was also a seat under or near the front of the pulpit for the deacons; here they deaconed off the hymn, one line at a time. Captain Young and Thomas Dresser led the singing; they had no music book or tuning-fork; they were guided wholly by the ear. The horse-block stood near the eastern corner of the meeting-house, by which they were accommodated in mounting their horses. Man and wife rode the same horse; there was at that time hardly a carriage in the village. Previous to the building of the meeting-house, in fact ,until January, 1754, when Sandy Bay was incorporated as the Fifth Parish of Gloucester, they were obliged to pay their tax to support preaching in the First Parish of Gloucester, of which it was a part; but for several years previous to 1754 the First Parish re-

linquished one-third part of the yearly tax of Sandy Bay on condition that they support preaching by themselves four months of each year, which for several years they did. Rev. Moses Parsons officiated one winter; there is the name of no other clergyman handed down except that Mr. Ebenezer Cleaveland came to Sandy Bay in 1752 and preached in the log schoolhouse, which was set in the yard front of the present Congregational meeting-house, a part of the time.

Ebenezer Cleaveland was appointed a chaplain in the Revolutionary War, and upon his return, found his parish in a distressed condition; some had died in prisons and some were drowned at sea, while others had fallen in actual battle; nearly all of the old able-bodied members had gone, and what was owing him on back salary could not well be paid, so they gave their obligations to him in ninety quintals of hake-fish per annum.

The successor of Rev. Cleaveland (though he did not come for over twenty years, the parish being without regular pastor) was Rev. David Jewett, a man thirty years of age at that time. He died at Waltham, in 1841. His parish erected a beautiful granite monument to his memory. It stands fifteen feet high, and has an elaborate tablet on one side of its base-stones.

The next pastor was Rev. Wakefield Gale, who was installed in 1836 and dismissed in 1864, after a successful ministry. Then came Revs. William H. Dunning, who died in 1869; James W. Cooper, resigned in 1870; Charles C. McIntire, installed in 1871, dismissed in 1880; R. B. Howard, seventh pastor, installed in 1880 and who served until 1884, when he was followed by Albert F. Norcross, 1885-91; Israel Ainsworth, 1891-1908; Walter W. Campbell, 1908 to the present time.

Of the Second Congregational Church it may be stated that it was organized in March, 1855 by sixteen members, who were dismissed from the First Congregational Church for that express purpose. The First Church was getting too small for the increasing membership. The pews were largely sold, and held for life, by certain members, who would not dispose of any part of them to new comers, hence the new organization was a necessity. Rev. David Bremer, who had been assistant pastor in the First Church, was chosen pastor of this newly-formed society. He resigned in 1863, after increasing a church with sixteen members to one of more than eighty. Next came Rev. L. H. Angier, his salary being fixed at $1,000. After the close of the Civil War, the society could no longer support itself and pastor. Letters were therefore granted to such as wanted to reunite with the First Church. Many did so, while others went into the Methodist Episcopal church. The church building or chapel, costing $4,000 in 1855, was sold to the Y. M. C. A., and that body in turn sold to the Odd Fellows.

Pigeon Grove Chapel (Congregationalist) originated in a Sunday school in May, 1857. There were nearly forty members in the Sunday school. A neat chapel was erected in 1868, costing, with furnishings, $3,696.

The First Church of Christ at Pigeon Cove was organized in March, 1874, with a membership of nineteen. Land was bought and a small chapel was built by the society. John W. Marshall was superintendent of this Sabbath school for twenty-four years. In 1886 three services were held each Sabbath in this chapel—one by the English, one by the Flanders, and another by the Swedes, each congregation having a minister of its own.

The Methodist Episcopal church of Rockport had a class formed by Rev. Aaron Lummus, preacher at Gloucester Harbor church, in 1831. In 1838 it was set off as a circuit with town parish, under charge of Rev. L. B. Griffin. The same year a church edifice was built. It soon became a separate charge, with Rev. Washburn as pastor. He was succeeded by Revs. Brown, Bradley and Richards. Without attempting to give the names of all later pastors, it should be stated that the society has flourished with the passing years. A fine church was built and dedicated April 14, 1869, at a cost of $16,000, and burned May 2, 1875, from an unknown cause. Another church was erected, costing $9,000.

The Baptist church at Sandy Bay, Gloucester, was constituted in 1807. Rev. Elisha Scott Williams was the first minister. He belonged in Beverly, but supplied this pulpit for a time. The society was legally incorporated in 1811 by the name of the First Baptist Society of Gloucester; there was no settled pastor until 1819-20. The first person to be baptized here was James Woodbury, March, 1805, the same being baptized by immersion. The Rev. James A. Boswell was the first settled pastor here. A meeting-house was built in 1822. The cost of land and building was $2,200. In 1866-67, the church was rebuilt, the improvements costing $6,000.

Not until after 1850 were there many foreigners in this town, hence no field for a Roman Catholic church. Rev. Father John McCabe of Salem celebrated the first mass in the place in 1850. In 1855 a chapel was built and first used in 1856, Rev. Thomas Shehan being deeply interested in this work. The house of worship erected cost $3,000.

The first attempt at establishing a society of the Protestant Episcopal denomination was in 1872. That year services were held in the Y. M. C. A. rooms by Rev. D. Reid, rector of St. John's Church, Gloucester. Only occasional services were held until May, 1886, when St. Mary's Mission was formed. Its charter members were as follows: Otis E. Smith, Frank Wilson, Charles Trenson, Mrs. Rosa Ann Morse, Reginald R. Colley, T. T. H. Harwood, Mrs. Abbie Tibbets, Fanny U. C. Sanborn, Delia F. Smith, Eliza T. Lane, Mary L. Tibbets, Fanny C. Tupper, John Moore, Frank H. Perkins, Luther C. Tibbetts, James Moore, Jr., O. S. S. O'Brien, M.D., Chas. F. Mills, Cora A. Pickering.

The Universalist Society in Sandy Bay was organized February 27, 1821, by the name of the Universalist Benevolent Society of Gloucester. For a time this society held services in the Congregational church

building, but soon got into trouble with the Congregational society, which denied them the right to use the church. After a law-suit, it was decided in favor of the Congregational society. As it was no longer any use to claim a meeting-place there, the members used the school-house. Among the ministers who preached for this Universalist society are recalled such men as Revs. J. H. Bugbee, J. Gilman, J. P. Atkinson, Hosea Ballou and Lafayette Mace. A meeting-house was built in 1829, costing $3,000. The society was incorporated in 1839 by the name of the Second Universalist Society of Gloucester, but in 1845 it was changed to the First Universalist Society of Rockport.

The Second Universalist Society was organized in the Engine Room, in August, 1861, with twenty persons present. This first society was only a Sunday school. March 31, 1869, a religious society was formed in connection with the Sunday school. In 1878 this was renamed Second Universalist Society of Rockport. In 1873 the society built a neat edifice costing $10,500. While many noted ministers have preached, but few regular pastors have ever been called here.

The churches of Rockport today include the Baptist, Methodist Episcopal, Universalist, Episcopal, Catholic and Congregational.

The First Baptist Church was organized March 29, 1808, and it appropriately observed its centenary in 1908. The society now has one hundred and seventy-three members; its Sunday school has an attendance of eighty-five. The superintendent is Herman S. Sherburne. The society was incorporated in 1811, by the name of the First Baptist Society of Gloucester; no settled pastor until 1819. The first person baptized by immersion in Sandy Bay was James Woodbury, March 10, 1805, by Rev. Elisha Scott Williams, of Beverly. A meeting-house was built in 1822 at a cost of about $2,400. The present church is valued at about $4,000. The subjoined is a list of pastors who have here served: Revs. James A. Boswell, Reuben Curtis, Bartlett Pease, Otis Wing, Levi B. Hathaway, B. N. Harris, S. C. Gilbert, Thomas Driver, George Lyle, Thomas Driver, A. E. Bartelle, J. M. Driver, Samuel Cheever, Benj. I. Lane, Lewis Holmes, A. J. Lyon, E. D. Bowers, George A. Cleveland, N. B. Wilson, Wm. B. Smith, Jesse Coker, Charlton B. Bolles, William Clements, Daniel C. Easton, Charles W. Allen, Walter R. Bartlett, John C. Stoddard.

Up to about 1830 there were few Catholic people living in Rockport, but before 1850 quite a goodly number had come in and made permanent homes, therefore the necessity of forming Catholic societies as soon as possible. The first mass was celebrated in Eureka Hall, in 1850, Rev. Father John McCabe, of Salem, officiating. A Catholic church was formed and a building erected in 1856. This building stood on Broadway, and was the result of untiring efforts on the part of Rev. Thomas Shehan, of Salem. The first ministering priest was Rev. Luigi Acquarone, and his parish encircled the Cape. The congregation grew rapidly,

Rev. Thomas Barry was appointed to take charge of the parish, and he remained till his death in 1883. Rev. D. S. Healey immediately succeeded him as priest of the parish. From that day until the present time the Catholic church has flourished and is today in a good condition, although the writer has been unable to secure data relative to the congregation at this time.

The First Methodist Episcopal Church has occupied the field about Rockport many years, though much less than other churches. The present church edifice was erected in 1876, costing $15,000. The total membership is now 110, and that in the Sunday school is about 225. James B. Silva is present superintendent. The pastors serving here succeeded one another in the following order: Revs. J. H. Mansfield, J. H. Humphfrey, E. E. Small, Joseph Chandlin, Wesley Wiggin, L. P. Causey, E. D. Lane, E. E. Holmes, E. E. Abercrombie, W. T. Hale, H. P. Rankin, Adam Bird, E. B. Frye, and the present pastor, Newton S. Sweezey.

---

## CHAPTER XXV.

## TOWN OF BRADFORD.

The East Parish of Bradford was incorporated as a town, named Groveland, March 8, 1850. A portion of Boxford, including over three-fourths of Johnson's Pond, was annexed to Groveland, March 21, 1856. Bradford is one of the most northern towns in Essex county. Originally the Indians held this territory, and the name of the particular tribe was the Pawtucket. It is supposed that about 1638 Masconomet, the chief, was fully satisfied with the disposition made of his lands to the white settlers, but in the early years of the eighteenth century, Samuel English and Joseph English, his grandchildren, and John Umpee, his nephew, claiming to be his heirs, made a new demand, and an elaborate deed was executed by them in 1701 to John Tenney, Phillip Atwood and John Bointon, for themselves and other freeholders and proprietors of Bradford. The consideration was 16 pounds and 12 shillings. The deed was attested by Nathaniel Saltonstall and Dudley Bradstreet, magistrates of Haverhill and Andover, respectively. This deed was at once recorded.

Bradford was well protected from invasions by the Indians by Haverhill on the north and by the river. Still, there was ever alarm and anxiety among the settlers, and Bradford soldiers had to march elsewhere. Sentinels were stationed and they patroled constantly during the Indian scare-days. Three garrison houses were constructed, one of brick at the west end of the town; one where the parsonage later stood; and the third was where Widow Rebecca Foster's house stood in 1820. This was palisaded, when grave danger was felt. There was also

a block-house on the neck near the falls. The Indians sometimes crossed the river near that point, when on their forays.

One of the original settlers, Thomas Kimball, was killed by the Indians in King Philip's War, the Indians being the notorious Praying Indians, Symon, Andrew and Peter. Kimball resided on the road from what is now South Groveland to Boxford. The story runs that the Indians were on their way to kill somebody at Rowley, who they imagined had injured them; but finding it was too late in the night, they turned in and made another deadly sacrifice instead. Kimball's wife and five children were carried away captive by Symon and his band, but later were set at liberty, it was thought through the influence of a friendly chief, Wannalancet.

The Bradford lands originally laid out to the Haseltines and Wilde include the west half of the village. Their meadow land is known even today as the Haseltine Meadow. In 1658 Joseph Jewett had laid out to him the whole of Bradford Neck. In 1671, the following lot owners appear of record "below the Glover Farm:" Joseph Chaplin, 35 acres; John Simmonds, 42 acres; Abraham Foster, 37 acres; John Simmonds, 36 acres; John Simmonds, 66 acres; Hugh Smith, 38 acres; Jonathan Hopkinson, 32 acres; Samuel Boswell, 53 acres; James Dickinson, 57 acres; Deacon Jewett, 95 acres; Mrs. Kimball, Boston, 102 acres; James Barker, 111 acres; John Boynton, 93 acres.

Bradford was known originally as Rowley Village. That part now called Bradford was at first "the Merrimac Lands." Sometimes it was styled Rowley Village-by-the-Merrimac. Georgetown used to be called New Rowley. Probably there is not another American village so little changed with the passing centuries as that of Rowley. There one finds the two or three main streets upon which the exiles settled themselves—Wethersfield, in memory of the pastor's birthplace, and Bradford, to preserve the name of the substantial town in Yorkshire, England, from which others had emigrated to our shores. This band was made up of industrious weavers, farmers and smiths, who soon introduced their own special trades and callings here. They had a great storehouse for hemp and flax, built their fulling-mill and made serviceable clothes.

Rowley was incorporated September 4, 1639, when it was ordered by the General Court that "Mr. Ezekiel Rogers' plantation be called Rowley." May, 1640, it was declared by the same court "that Rowley bounds is to be eight miles from their meeting-house in a straight line (westerly); then a cross line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver when it doth not prejudice any former grant." October of the same year, "the neck of land on Merrimack, near Corchitawick, is ordered added to Rowley."

The first meeting-house in Bradford was built in 1670, probably a rough log building, although it must have been quite high, for it is seen by record that in 1690 a gallery was constructed. John Haseltine gave

the meeting-house lot and churchyard, which was the old burying place on the road to present Groveland. The meeting-house stood in the west corner of the lot and the departed dead were laid to rest in the rear. The first house erected in the town was not far from the last named spot. The first schoolhouse was built on about the same site, the same being eighteen by twenty-two feet, with seven-foot posts.

Prior to the Revolutionary War there had not been much trading in the town of Bradford. Possibly a store or two near each church was to be seen and patronized for the necessities of the household. Moses Parker opened the first store of much note, and that was located in East Parish. Upper Parish (Bradford) usually traded at Haverhill. Shipbuilding was carried on to some extent in 1720, but has long since been a lost art, so to speak.

The water power furnished by Johnson's creek has always been of untold value to this part of Essex county. The noted Dr. Perry once said: "Indeed, it would be easy to show how enterprising individuals might gain wealth, and the community better served, by enlisting in their service the force of this water, which God, in his goodness, causes to flow down this stream for the use of men." This was said long years before the great factories had been built and the busy hum of machinery had been heard for the first time up and down this wonderful valley.

In 1760 Daniel Hardy commenced making shoes here. They were sent to Portsmouth; many were also sent to the Southern States and as far as the West Indies. At the time of the French Revolution it was said that "the shoe business is one of the most important lines of business in the town." Dr. Perry's diary speaks of 1820 industries in this place as follows: "Large quantities of shoes are manufactured here, and sent to the Southern States and West Indies. One hundred and fifty men are constantly employed, besides many who employ the winter in it, who, it is supposed, make fifty thousand pairs of shoes and boots yearly."

In 1792, Samuel Tenney, Uriah Gage, Timothy Phillips, and William Tenney engaged in the manufacture of shoes in Bradford. Their market was Boston, Salem, Newburyport and Portland. At first these goods were carried to market on horseback. Shoes went largely to Salem, and thence on to the West Indies and our Southern States. Between the years 1815 and 1837 the shoe business in Bradford was immense for those days. But as soon as Haverhill obtained its railroad, business men in Bradford commenced to remove their factories to that place, on account of shipping facilities. In the early eighties, it was stated that the following men and firms were then or had been recently engaged in the manufacture of shoes in Bradford: Montgomery, Hoyt, Johnson, Ordway, Webster, Sawyer, Farrar, Kimball, Day, Waldo, Merrill, Ford, Carleton, Durgin, Pearl, Toun and Hopkinson.

With the passing of years and the annexing of Bradford to the city

of Haverhill, conditions have materially changed. Bradford is now one of the numerous resident districts of the thriving city, while its business enterprises are confined to a few small concerns.

At the annual election in 1896 it was determined to annex Bradford to the city of Haverhill, and this went into effect January 4, 1897. This included all the territory of Bradford village and country districts. So, since the date last named, the history as an incorporated territory of Bradford has been one and the same as Haverhill.

Without going back into the dim and misty past, to speak of census enumerations, it may be stated in this connection that in 1900 the United States census reports gave Bradford (in with Groveland) 2,376; in 1910 it was 2,253 and in 1920 it was placed at 2,650.

The first meeting-house in Bradford was erected in 1670, and twenty years later a gallery was provided, hence it will be seen the building was one of good proportions, otherwise it would have been too small for such an improvement. The minutes of the church state that January 29, 1671, "at a general town meeting," an agreement was made with Samuel Haseltine "to sweep the meeting-house one whole yeare, and for his pains he should have of every householder and voter one peck of Indian corn, which is to be brought to his house." (This shows that money did not go as a medium very much in those early times, but commodities served as "coin of the realm.") The first year, Rev. Symmes, pastor, received forty pounds and the next year fifty pounds sterling as a salary. It was payable in wheat, pork, butter, cheese, malt, Indian meal or rye. It has been questioned by one of a later date than colonial days what the minister could have needed so much malt for? In reply, it should be stated that malt was in every house. Beer was drunk by old and young, and was counted a staple article of diet. Even the Harvard College accounts were partly payable in malt. Butter and cheese being used so much in settlement of accounts leads us to believe that dairying was a very early and profitable branch of farm life here.

The common hour for Sunday forenoon services was from eight to nine o'clock, and members were fined for being tardy. No manuscripts were read by the minister for a sermon, but the good man of God placed his hour-glass before him and when it had emptied itself of its sands, if he proposed to preach longer, he turned the hour-glass over again. The elders gave out the psalms, line by line, to be sung.

One odd feature of the first church organization in Bradford was the fact that no permanent church organization was had from the year 1668 to 1682, notwithstanding Rev. Symmes was minister all those years, and had not yet been ordained. Finally this was brought about, and Rev. Symmes remained pastor until he was so aged that an assistant pastor had to be provided for him. About 1705 Rev. Symmes passed to the other shores, and in a short time was succeeded as pastor by his talented son, Rev. Zachariah Symmes, a graduate of Harvard, and a man

about thirty years of age at the time he came to the Bradford church to take his venerable father's place as minister. He died after a checkered ministry, in October, 1725. The next minister was Rev. Joseph Parsons, who with others did not endorse the preaching of Whitefield and opposed his being admitted to the pulpit.

The East Precinct was incorporated in 1726, and the church organized one years later. Rev. William Balch was the first pastor for the new parish. He was ordained in 1728 and died in 1792, aged eighty-eight years. The East Parish built its first meeting-house in 1726 and its second one in 1790. The two parishes were separated after two hundred years of municipal life. Groveland was incorporated March 8, 1850.

The fourth pastor of the First Parish was Rev. Samuel Williams, a graduate of Harvard College, a noted astronomer and mathematical scholar. He was ordained in his twenty-second year, hence was not well liked by the older set of ministers. In 1780 he was dismissed at his own request, to take a chair at Harvard College. His successor was Rev. Jonathan Allen, aged thirty-two years, and also a Harvard graduate. He died in Bradford, in 1827. Following this minister was Rev. Ira Ingraham, who did not long remain pastor on account of his bitter opposition to the stand his church took in not wanting to further the cause of total abstinence. From that day on to 1866, the pastors of this church were, inclusive of these: Revs. Hoadly, ordained 1830, dismissed 1833; M. C. Searle, dismissed 1834; Nathan Munroe, dismissed 1854; James T. McCollom, dismissed 1865; John D. Kingsbury, installed 1866. The present church history is wrapped up with that of Haverhill.

## CHAPTER XXVI.

## TOWN OF GROVELAND.

Groveland originally was included in territory now occupied by Georgetown, Boxford, Rowley and Bradford, Rowley having been first settled in September, 1639, by Rev. Ezekiel Rogers and about sixty families, and was then styled Roger's Plantation. It was named Rowley on account of the immigrants coming from Rowley, England. Among the companions of Rev. Rogers were John and Robert Hazeltine and William Wilde. In 1649 these men desiring to obtain more land sought the rich meadows and fields in the handsome, rich Merrimac Valley, in the then Indian territory of the Pentucket, for a permanent abiding place. As the settlement increased, the name was changed to Merrimac, and finally to "Bradford," so called after Bradford, England. The earliest mention of Bradford in Massachusetts records is in October, 1675, in a list of expenses occasioned by King Philip's War. The Gen-

eral Court order establishing the incorporation of Rowley, and dated May 27, 1668, read as follows:

> In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of Rowley, living over against Haverhill, the court, having considered the petition, perused the town of Rowley's grant to the petitioners, heard Rowley's Deputy and also considering a writing sent from Rowley with what else hath been presented in the case, doe find there is liberty granted to the petitioners by the town of Rowley to provide themselves with a minister and also an intent to release them from the township when they are accordingly provided, and therefore see not, but this court may grant the petitioners to be a township provided they doe gett and setle an able and orthodox minister and continue to maynteigne him or else to remain to Rowley as formerly.

At the village of Groveland in the summer of 1921 the business was in the hands of the following persons: Hardware store, by Cobban Bros.; Groceries, by Messrs. C. P. Boynton, W. T. Pike, A. E. Brock, "the Distributing Store"; a bakery by F. E. Packard; tobacco and cigar store, Fred Wood; Groveland Garage, by H. L. Macdonald, also another garage by Harvey Hatch; Banking by the Groveland Co-operative Bank; The Mutual Fire Insurance Company, W. T. Pike president. The place has street car connections by the Newburyport and Haverhill line, every fifteen minutes during the day.

The records show a town meeting was held, at which, on February 20, 1668, officers were elected as follows: Thomas Kimball, constable; John Gage, Robert Haseltine, Joseph Pike, John Griffing and John Tenney, selectmen; Joseph Pike, clerk of writs; Samuel Worcester, Benjamin Gage, Benjamin Kimball and David Haseltine, overseers.

The major part of Groveland was at first platted into lots running south from the river, which were granted in the following order, beginning down the river at the easterly end, to Joseph Richardson, Jonas Platts, John Hopkinson, Joseph Bailey, Edward Wood, Benjamin Savory, William Hutchens, Ezra Rolf, Samuel Tenney, Francis Jewett, Samuel Worster, Samuel Stickney, John Hardy, William Hardy, Abraham Parker, and Daniel Parker, and adjoining the Carleton Patent. A large part of Johnson's Pond was within this town, and from it flowed Johnson's creek, having a fall of seventy-five feet to the river. The name Groveland has no special significance, other than that it was suggested by the existing beautiful groves in and surrounding its territory.

The industries of this town, save those in South Groveland, had in the early eighties of the last century become about extinct, though in an early period were well sustained and quite numerous. The falling waters of the stream called Johnson's creek were harnessed up as early as 1670 and made to do service in propelling a grist-mill on that stream. Corn mills were opened along the stream in 1684. A fulling-mill was built in 1660 and a flouring mill on the same stream in 1690. It has been stated by an old historical writer that up to 1820 there had been on this creek four saw-mills, five grist-mills, three fulling-mills, and two

tan-bark mills. During the year 1820, it is certain that there were five tan-yards in operation. On account of the production of leather here, there grew up quite a manufacture of coarse boots and shoes. Other factories included a chocolate works, brass and pewter buckles, cooper-shops, tobacco factories, together with brick-making and the straw hat industry. By about 1837 many of these industries had disappeared.

The population of Bradford in 1850, after it had seen Groveland incorporated, was 1,328; the town of Groveland having 1,286. In 1885 Bradford had 3,106 and Groveland 2,272. The United States census returns for 1900 gave Groveland 2,376; in 1910 it was 2,253, and in 1920 it was 2,650.

Of course, being a well regulated New England town, Groveland has had its full share of various religious sects and societies. In 1667 Rev. Zachariah Symmes was engaged as pastor, at a salary of £40, one-half to be paid in wheat, pork, butter and cheese, and the other half in cattle and corn. At the town meeting in April, 1670, it was voted by the townsmen that "Sargeant Gage, Robert Haseltine, Benjamin Kimball, Thomas Kimball, John Simmonds, Nicholas Walington and John Griffing be chosen for the ordering, setting up and furnishing of a Meighting House according to their best discretion for the good of the town."

The Church in the East Parish of Bradford was incorporated in 1726; organized in June, 1627, with Rev. William Balch as pastor, with £100 settlement and £100 annually as a salary At the first year's end the church numbered one hundred and seventy-nine. He served as minister here for the long term of sixty-five years, closing it only at death in 1792. He was followed by Rev. Ebenezer Dutch, who served till his death in 1814. Next came Reverend Gardner Braman Perry, who died while pastor in 1859. Other ministers were Revs. Wasson, Daniel Pickard, Thomas Daggett, Martin S. Howard, John C. Paine, James McLean, Augustus C. Swain, 1881, followed by Rev. Bernard Copping to October, 1887.

The present membership of the Congregational church is 241, the largest it has ever been. In 1895 the Ladies' Parlor was added to the chapel; in 1908 the church was renovated, new pews were placed without rental, and the entire front of church was changed; in 1910 the chapel was raised and a gymnasium built; a new organ was also installed; in 1912 the house of the third pastor Perry was made into a parsonage, with extensive repairs; in 1918 hardwood floors were placed in the church building. Pastors since 1894 have been Revs. Louis F. Barry, Alexander Sloan, Charles F. Clarke, Arthur Deckman, Andrew Campbell, Archibald Cullens. The present pastor is Herbert E. Beckwith.

Besides the Congregational church, there was organized at East Bradford, a Methodist church before its incorporation as Groveland. This was formed October, 1831, under direction of Rev. Thomas W. Gile

and Aaron Wait, employed by the Christian Union Association. Rev. Charles S. McReading was the first Methodist pastor assigned to this charge. A church building was erected the following year. Since then the Methodists have had a work in the town for many years, but not at present.

At South Groveland there is an Episcopal and a Catholic church.

The South Groveland section was started as the result of the building of the Groveland Woolen Mills at that point. It is also a near-by village to Haverhill city, and street cars run every quarter of an hour between the two places. There is a small retail store business, a postoffice, and school and church interests suitable to a place of its size.

In 1921 the government in the town of Groveland was in the hands of the following officers: Town Clerk, Harry W. Vaughan; Treasurer and Collector, Frank M. Worthen; Assessors, Charles S. Husten, James H. Early, Ralph E. Maddock; Selectmen: H. W. Hardy, James H. Early, Charles H. Pike; Constables: Charles H. Stevens, George L. Nelson, Daniel Buckley, William T. Shanahan; School Committee: Stanley P. Ladd, Robert H. Crawford, John W. Cochrane; Three Warden, Sidney E. Johnson; Overseers of the Poor: Samuel H. Nelson, John F. Dorgan, C. Russell Cammett, clerk; Water Commissioners, George Mitchell, Allen G. Twombly, George B. Stiles; Auditor, Elliott C. Dorr; Moderator, John Morris.

In 1920 the following items from the assessors' report were for the town of Groveland: Number residents assessed on property, 536; non-residents assessed on property, 182; assessed for poll-tax only, 340; value of assessed personal, including bank stock, $358,459; value of assessed real estate exclusive of lands, $988,590; land exclusive of buildings, $263,167; total, $1,610,246; tax rate per thousand dollars, $30.40.

Horses assessed, 120; cows, 221; neat cattle, 53; sheep, 26; swine, 54; dwellings, 587; acres land, 4,995; fowls assessed, 1895; valued at $1,895.

---

## CHAPTER XXVII.

## TOWN OF SWAMPSCOTT.

The history of Swampscott until 1852 was merged in the history of Lynn, yet it has, from the earliest days of the settlement, possessed an identity of its own. Its name, like that of Saugus and Nahant, antedates the arrival of the Puritans, and is one of those pleasing survivals of Indian nomenclature that have remained constant through many generations. During almost two and a quarter centuries Swampscott had no separate identity as a township, yet it did possess a local individuality and a name. The origin of the name is given by Waldo Thompson in

NEW YORK
BLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
ILDEN FOUNDATIONS

SWAMPSCOTT PUBLIC LIBRARY

his "History of Swampscott": "It is composed of two Indian words, a substantive, Ompsk, and an appellative, Musqui, meaning respectively (a standing) rock, and red; with the local affix 'ut.' Musqui-ompsk-ut means literally "at the red rock," and this by contraction became M'squompskut, and then, the English dropping the initial "m," Squampskut, Swampscot, Swampscott."

The only copy extant of the earliest map of the territory of New England, by William Hack, about 1663, is in the collection at Pilgrim Hall, Plymouth, Massachusetts. On this map the name appears as Swans Gut, a corruption of the Indian words that is quite easy to understand where one had but slight acquaintance with the language into which the Apostle Eliot translated the Bible.

Swampscott has ever possessed a picturesque beauty quite its own, which has attracted to it those seeking pleasing home sites rather than those in search of industrial centers. While it is generally conceded that the first tannery in the Colony was located in Swampscott, and Thompson records that a brick-yard was established here in 1630, there has been no extension of either industry to survive to the present. The fishing industry, which flourished for many years, has passed away almost entirely, and the entire township may be termed a residential community, where the individual homes, varying from the humble cottage through all gradations to the pretentious and sumptuous residence, is supplemented by extensive hotels known far and wide for their excellence in meeting the requirements of the very extensive summer colony that annually comes to this choice section of the North Shore.

Lest it be assumed that a town having a population of over 8,000 people, with no supporting industries, may be lacking in enterprise and progressiveness, and hence not of healthy growth, we shall present a summary of the inventory of the public property of the town at the present time, as evidence of its thrift and prosperity:

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Miscellaneous | $104,420.00 | Brought forward | $889,307.60 |
| School | 633,400.00 | Health | 500.00 |
| Cemetery | 7,620.00 | Moth | 2,022.00 |
| Police | 8,867.00 | Poor | 70.00 |
| Street watering | 1,050.00 | Fire | 58,420.00 |
| Highway | 23,580.00 | Water | 211,208.90 |
| Assessors | 5,245.00 | Sewer | 34,850.00 |
| Park | 105,125.60 | Engineering | 747.00 |
| | $889,307.60 | | $1,200,925.50 |

Furthermore, we would call attention to the fact that the attractiveness and accessibility of the town and its facilities for extending hospitality to the vacation-seeking public causes four thousand to five thousand summer residents and guests to visit it each year.

Francis Ingalls is recorded as the first settler in Swampscott. He and his brother Edmund Ingalls were in the first group of settlers who

came in 1629, and have been considered in the narrative of the settlement of Lynn. While neither Lewis nor Newhall entered into the details of the biography of Francis Ingalls further than to credit him with establishing a tannery in Swampscott and to receiving, with his brother Edmund, 120 acres of land in the division made in 1638, the research of Waldo Thompson presents more details. By his will, dated August 12, 1672, and probated in Boston, November 1, 1672, it is evident that he had a wife, Mary Ingalls, to whom he left all his estate, "movable and Imovable," for her lifetime; a son is also mentioned. After the death of his wife he provides: "Then, after my debts be discharged, and my son Joseph belknap satisfied for his disbursements, that then what there shall remain unto Elizabeth farman now living in Andover, my will is that she shall have." Francis Ingalls lived near the present junction of Burrill and New Ocean streets, near by his tannery, which was located on Humphrey's brook. Again referring to Thompson for authority, the house was about sixteen by thirty feet in dimensions, and faced due south, according to the custom of the times, and the tannery was built in 1632. The vats were extant as late as 1825, and the stone chimney of the house and other relics were found when another house was built on the lot in later years. Among other early settlers of Swampscott were Samuel Smith, W. Witter, John Humphrey, W. Clark, Edw. Richards, Lady Deborah Moody, Daniel King, J. Blaney and John Phillips.

Contemplating the comfort and luxury of the inhabitants of this town at the present time, we cannot refrain from presenting by contrast the apparent meagre intimate possessions of what may be termed a man of fair circumstances in this community in the early colonial days. After living over forty years in this settlement, establishing a business and providing for a family, his personal belongings, outside of real estate and business accounts, are summarized in the inventory filed after his death, as follows: "2 coats, 2 pairs of breeches, 1 pair draus, and a leather doublet, and a waistcoat, 1 hat and a pair of stockings, 1 pr. shoes, 3 prs. pillows, 3 napkins, 8 pieces of old pewter, 1 Iron Kittull, a frying pan, 1 Bible and another book, a warming pan and dripping pan, 3 chairs, 4 cushions, a spinning wheel, 2 silver spoons." This inventory is presented only to show something of the changes of 250 years, and to indicate something of the limitations of those times of peril and privation. Yet to such hardy, self-reliant and frugal forebears do some of our most highly-valued families trace their lineage.

As early as 1826 Swampscott was designed as Ward 1, Lynn, and had a population of 123 males and 120 females. After Lynn became a city, in 1850, there was a desire on the part of the people of Swampscott to be set off and incorporated as a town. On May 21, 1852, by act of the Legislature, Swampscott became a town, and the act was signed by Governor George S. Boutwell. This event was celebrated by a procession of which Col. Thomas Alker was marshal; it paraded the streets,

with the Salem Brass Band; there was an address by Rev. Jonas B. Clark, and the reading of a poem written for the occasion. In the evening there were fireworks, Dr. J. B. Holden causing a fire balloon to be sent up; there was also a torchlight procession, with illumination and other demonstrations of satisfaction over the fact that Swampscott had passed from the status of a community and had become a town.

The first town meeting in the newly-chartered town of Swampscott was called to order by Waldo Thompson. It was convened in Atlantic Engine Hall on Saturday, the fifth day of June, 1852, and resulted in the election of the following officers:

Moderator—Samuel C. Pitman.
Selectmen—Samuel C. Pitman, Eben B. Phillips, Henry J. Thing.
Town Clerk—John L. Seger.
Treasurer—John Chapman, Jr.
Assessors—J. F. Phillips, Thomas Stone Jr., Allen Washburn.
School Committee—Jonas B. Clark, Henry H. Hall, Edward Woodford.
Overseers of the Poor—William D. Rowe, Mark G. Phillips, John B. Richardson.
Surveyors of Highways—Allen Washburn, Jonathan F. Phillips.
Constables—B. H. Davis, Nathaniel Galeucia, Charles Leavitt.
Tythingmen—William Widger, J. P. Blaney, John Wilkins.
Measurer of Wood and Bark—Philander Holden.
Surveyor of Lumber—Moses Gilbert.
Field Drivers—A. C. Newhall, James Nesbit, S. R. Bartlett, William Galeucia.
Pound Keeper—Jacob Wilford.
Board of Health—James Nesbit, J. B. Holder, A. C. Newhall.
Fence Viewers—Allen Washburn, Ebenezer Weeks, F. Griffin.
Sealer of Weights and Measures—John B. Richardson.
The whole number of votes at the first Town meeting was one hundred and fifty-five.

The first town meeting in the Town Hall was convened March 9, 1861, Eben N. Wardell presiding as moderator, and Rev. Jonas B. Clark opening the meeting with prayer.

Daniel King, a merchant, lived in Swampscott in 1642, and purchased the Humphrey property in 1651. He died May 28, 1672, and the inventory filed after his death totaled £1,528 9s. Captain Ralph King built the house long known as the "old Blaney House" in 1641, and John Blaney was married in 1656 and moved into it. The house, a conspicuous landmark in Swampscott for many generations, was razed only a few years ago. In 1651 it was ordered by the Court that "no person who is not worth two hundred pounds shall wear any gold or silver lace or any silk hose or scarf."

John Phillips settled in Swampscott in 1650, and from him the Phillips Beach section of the town received its name, and through him the long line of Phillips families was established. He died in 1694 and left a widow, Hannah, and two children. John Humphrey and his wife, Lady Susan, embarked from Kings Beach, near Black Will's Cliff, when they left Swampscott for England in 1641.

1832—Ebenezer Weeks kept a tavern opposite Blaney's Beach. 1846—The first post office established, Waldo Thompson, postmaster. 1852—Dr. William R. Lawrence of Boston contributed 150 books and $100 to start a library. 1879—A post office was opened at Beach Bluff. Thompson, post master. 1879—A post office was opened at Beach Bluff. 1881—Street cars of the Lynn & Boston Horse R. R. commenced running, and in 1884 the line was extended to Marblehead. Col. Charles A. Stetson was proprietor of the Astor House in New York City. Honorable Enoch Redington Mudge was proprietor of the St. Charles Hotel in New Orleans in ante-bellum days.

More than passing mention is due John Humphrey (Humfry) for the important part that he took in colonizing this section of New England. He was one of the six original purchasers, from the Plymouth Company, of that tract of land extending from three miles north of the Merrimac to three miles south of the Charles rivers, and westward to the "South Sea." One year later these six gentlemen, namely Sir Henry Rosewell, Sir John Young, Thomas Southcott, John Humphrey, John Endicott and Syman Whetcomb, had associated with themselves Sir Richard Saltonstall, Mr. Isaac Johnson and eighteen others, when the Charter of the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay in New England passed the seals, March 4, 1628-9, which was in the fourth year of the reign of King Charles I.

Since John Humphrey was active from the beginning of this organization, which acquired the corporate name of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England; to him should be given credit—in part at least—for securing a charter which sets forth such fundamentals of free government as are contained in the section here quoted:

> And our will and pleasure is. And we do hereby for us, our heirs and successors, ordain and grant, That from henceforth forever, there shall be one Governor, one Deputy Governor, and eighteen assistants of the same Company, to be from time to time constituted, elected and chosen out of the freemen of said Company, for the time being, in such manner and form as hereafter in these presents is expressed. Which said officers shall apply themselves to take care for the best disposing and ordering of the general business and affairs of, for and concerning the said lands and premises hereby mentioned to be granted, and the plantation thereof, and the Government to the people there.

This Charter permitted the removal of the seat of Government to the New World, and was one of the foundation stones in the structure of Liberty and Freedom.

At the election of officers, which occurred October 20, 1629, Mr. John Winthrop, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Mr. Isaac Johnson and Mr. John Humphrey were nominated for governor. "By a general vote and full consent of this Court," Mr. John Winthrop was chosen governor, and in the same manner Mr. John Humphrey was chosen deputy governor for

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

THE DEPUTY GOVERNOR JOHN HUMPHREY HOUSE

99 Paradise Road, Swampscott

Showing present condition after partial restoration by the Swampscott Historical Society, Inc.

the ensuing year. It was also decided to remove the seat of the government to the New World when the colony was established.

On the 23d of March, 1630, the last court of the Governor and Company to be held on the other side of the water was convened in the cabin of the "Arabella" (the vessel that was to convey Governor Winthrop) while the fleet lay at anchor at Southampton before departure. As it was decided that John Humphrey was to remain in England, he was discharged of his deputyship, and Thomas Dudley was chosen to fill his place. It appears that John Humphrey was then made treasurer, and he remained very active in the management of the company.

In the spring of 1630, eleven vessels, having on board about 1700 persons, sailed from Southampton to the new colony. Salem was the chief objective point, and from there the passengers scattered through Salem, Saugus, Charlestown and Boston, where settlements had been made, and commenced new settlements in Roxbury, Dorchester, Watertown and Medford.

John Humphrey was a native of Dorchester in Dorsetshire, England. He was a lawyer, and a man of considerable wealth and of good reputation. Governor Winthrop characterizes him as "a gentleman of special parts of learning and activity, and a Godly man." By local historians he is variously designated as "Mr.," "Esquire," "Honorable," "Colonel," "Sergeant Major General" and "Assistant Governor." He served as associate justice and was a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. He is mentioned as "one of our earliest and most efficient benefactors," and as one of the most influential in promoting the settlement of the colony, securing colonists, obtaining many donations and procuring some ministers. Evidently, he was interested in ships and in trading with the colonies, for it is recorded that on the 2d of November, 1632, a vessel, of which John Humphrey was part owner, was wrecked off Cape Charles and twelve men were drowned.

John Humphrey's investment in the colony was quite material. It was agreed that each member of the company was to receive 200 acres of land for each £50 invested in the enterprise. In the allotment of land he received a grant of 500 acres in 1633 in the present town of Swampscott. Later his land holdings were increased, until it is said that he owned 1,300 acres of land between Sagamore Hill and the Forest river. He was also granted 500 acres of land in the present town of Lynnfield, where his holdings gave the name to Humphrey's pond. In Marblehead he owned much land, three hundred acres of which was the tract that Salem wished to give for the establishment of the proposed college, afterwards named Harvard College. That was near the present site of the Tedesco Club. John Humphrey was one of the original committee appointed to establish the college. November 7, 1632, the court "referred to Mr. Turner, Peter Palfrey and Roger Conant to set out a proportion of land in Saugus for John Humphrey, Esqr." This land was laid out at Swampscott.

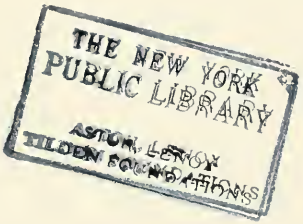
The map published by Alonzo Lewis in 1829 shows the westerly boundary of this farm to have commenced at a point a little east of Red Rock, and to have crossed the easterly part of Sagamore hill near the present junction of Lewis and Ocean streets, and to have continued in a straight line across the present Eastern avenue to a point near the Fay estate. Sagamore Hill included all the bluff along the shore from the present site of Washington street to near the Swampscott line, for the elevation is the same at the junction of Ocean and Lewis streets as at Ocean and Nahant streets. It is so shown on the old maps. This would include the easterly part of Sagamore Hill in the Humphrey farm, and would well conform to the record that in 1636 John Humphrey built a wind-mill on the easterly shoulder (one historian says "knob") of Sagamore Hill. Where else should he have built it, except on the highest accessible part of his farm? The name Windmill Hill then given to the location has passed out of general use.

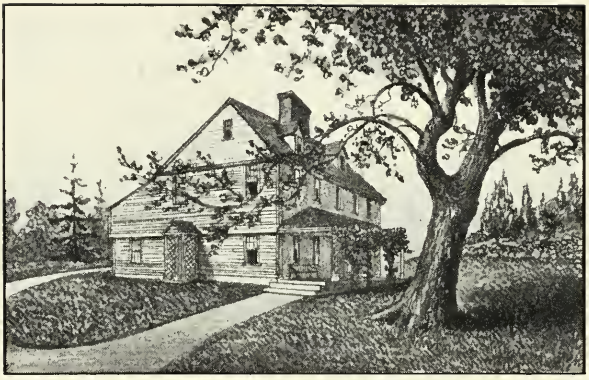
John Humphrey married Lady Susan, daughter of Thomas Clinton, third Earl of Lincoln. Rev. Mr. Whiting refers to her family as the highest among the English nobility. It is evident that the family of the Earl of Lincoln was greatly interested in the new colony.

Of the four vessels of the fleet that conveyed Governor Winthrop to Salem, the "Arabella" was the one on which he took passage. This ship was formerly the "Eagle," and was renamed the "Arabella" in honor of Arabella, the daughter of the Earl of Lincoln. Lady Arabella accompanied Governor Winthrop on this voyage to join her husband, Isaac Johnson, who had preceded her to this country. This is undoubtedly the Johnson to whom John Humphrey referred in a letter to Governor Winthrop as "my dearest brother." Lady Arabella died about a month after her arrival at Salem.

Isaac Johnson, brother-in-law of John Humphrey, was a man of wealth, who owned property in four counties in England. He established his home in this country near the present site of Boston City Hall.

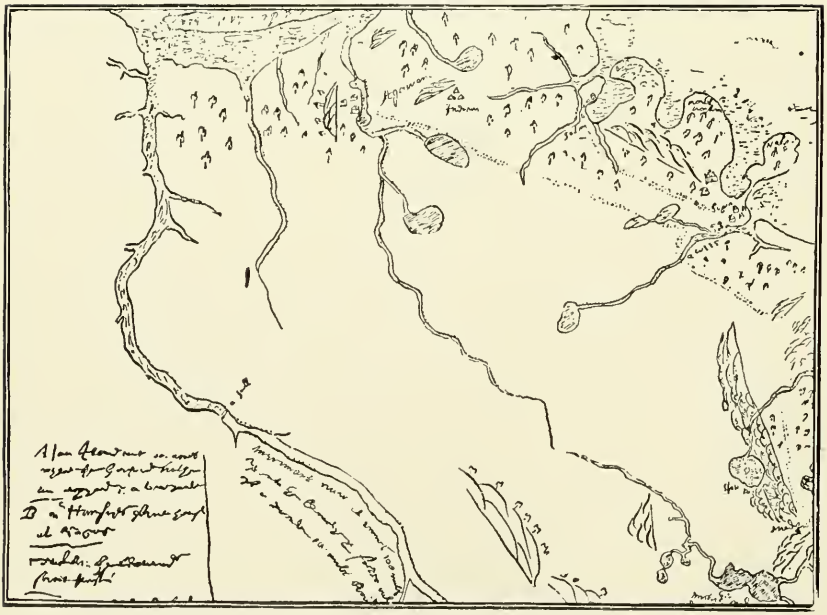
In the transfers of property it is shown that the major part of Mr. Humphrey's Swampscott farm was purchased by Lady Deborah Moody in 1641. Lady Moody arrived in Salem in 1640 and had 400 acres of land granted to her in Salem soon after her arrival. She retained her connection with the Salem church, but lived in Lynn (Swampscott). She paid £1100 for the Swampscott property. She incurred the displeasure of the church by "maintaining that the baptism of infants was unwarranted and sinful." For this reason she was obliged to leave the colony, and she went to Long Island, where she became a woman of great influence in the Dutch colony. Her son, Sir Henry Moody, sold about 400 acres of the farm in Swampscott in 1651 to Daniel King. For him King's beach and King's street are named. The property remained in the King family for many years, and finally passed by foreclosure of mortgage into the hands of Robert Bronsden of Boston. The mortgage bore date of February 24, 1693.


THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS



THE OLD HUMPHREY HOUSE

Taken from an Old Sketch



SECTION OF OLD MAP IN BRITISH MUSEUM

With notes by Governor Winthrop, showing location of the Humphrey house

Robert Bronsden, on September 27, 1700, transferred 120 acres of the property including the house in question, to John Burrill, Sr., who lived on Boston street. The property remained in the Burrill family until 1797. John Burill, Sr., never lived in the Humphrey house, but on his death bed, in 1703, he gave the property to his son, Hon. Ebenezer Burrill. From 1703 until 1761 Ebenezer lived in the Humphrey house, and his son, Samuel, lived there until his death in 1797. In 1798 the property was sold to Robert Hooper of Marblehead. It passed to his daughter, the widow of Hon. William Reed, in 1842, and subsequently it was purchased by Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge. (The above upon investigation of Miss Ellen Mudge Burrill). The map published by Alonzo Lewis in 1829 gives the names of the original owners (with date) of the houses in Lynn and also of subsequent owners. That map indicates the location of the Humphrey house with the date of 1634, and beneath the name of John Humphrey, 1634, is the name Lady Moody, 1640. [1641 it should be.] It also gives some of the bounds of the Humphrey farm.

There is also a relic of the past in Swampscott that tradition has associated with the name of John Humphrey and his wife, Lady Susan. That relic is the Humphrey house, whose history has been searched thoroughly, until it appears that there is no reasonable doubt that the house, which for generations stood near the present intersection of Elmwood road and Monument avenue, is the one built by or for John Humphrey in the period 1634-37, and referred to by Governor Winthrop in his margin notes and "thumb-nail" sketch on a map sent by him to England previous to Nov. 20, 1637, and possibly at an earlier period. A copy of that map is reproduced in this work, and the notes have been authenticated by eminent authorities on such matters in this State as in the handwriting of Governor Winthrop. This map, with other evidence presented, should forever disprove the contention that the Humphrey home was on Nahant street, Lynn, rather than in Swampscott. In 1891, this historic house was moved from its original location to 99 Paradise road, where it now stands. It has been acquired by the Swampscott Historical Society, recently formed and incorporated, and is in a fair state of preservation, as is shown by the cut.

The most positive and conclusive evidence of the location of John Humphrey's home in Swampscott is shown in a map of the Massachusetts Bay Colony found in the British Museum, London, and reproduced herewith.

A section of this map was published by Rev. George Anson Jackson in 1904 in his little book, "The Ladye Susan." This map is believed to have been drawn by Thomas Graves, surveyor, about 1634, and many reference marks and margin notes in the handwriting of Governor Winthrop. While most of the representations of houses in the clusters representing settlements are without detail, there are certain "thumb-

nail" sketches, about one-sixth or one-fourth the size of a postage stamp, that show some distinguishing marks of detail. Under one of these sketches, representing a house with the door in the center, windows on either side and a chimney in the center, appears the letter "B." In the margin in Gov. Winthrop's handwriting appears the note: "B. Mr. Humphrey's ferme house at Saugus." The location of the Humphrey house, as shown on this map, is near the easterly end of King's (Humphrey's) beach, Swampscott, exactly as given in Alonzo Lewis' "History of Lynn." It also corresponds to the location of the Humphrey house as shown on the map published by Mr. Lewis in 1829.

This map is a complete confirmation of both the tradition and the recorded history that John Humphrey, on arriving in the Colony, "went to reside on his farm at Swampscott, which had been laid out by order of the court." An examination of this old map under a magnifying glass shows that while a very few of the houses indicated are sketched as "half houses," the Humphrey house is shown as a house complete, with door and chimney in the center. In these essential details the sketch corresponds to the main details of the house under consideration. The reasonable inference is that the Humphrey house was the most pretentious in the Colony at the time. This would be fully in keeping with the wealth and position of John Humphrey, and would indicate that he had provided a home in keeping with the tastes and social standing of his wife, Lady Susan, who, like her sister Arabella, had "come from a paradise of plenty and pleasure which she enjoyed in the family of a noble earldom into a wilderness of want."

What can be more reasonable than the supposition that Mr. Humphrey had caused this house to be built for the reception of himself and wife even before they arrived here? The land had been granted to him in 1633, he was apparently engaged in trade with the Colonies in ships that he owned at least in part, he had been made an assistant to the governor before he arrived here, and had the wealth and official connection to accomplish all this. Admitting the evidence of the Winthrop map, which has been accepted as authentic, we have next to consider the date at which the notes and sketches were made. Newbury was made a town May 6, 1635, and Dedham September 8, 1636. Neither of these towns are shown on this map. Agawam was settled in 1633, and the name changed to Ipswich, August 5, 1634. On this map it appears as a cluster of three houses (one a half house), some Indian wigwams nearby, and under the name of Agawam. Newtown was named Cambridge, September 8, 1634. It appears as Newtown on this map. Weymouth, so named September 1, 1635, appears under the old name Wessagusans. Lynn, which received its present name November 20, 1637, appears as Saugus, which was the original name. The fish weir on the Saugus river which was authorized in 1633 is indicated on the map. Mr. Craddock's farmhouse at Medford is sketched as a "half house." The loca-

tion of Ten Hills farm, Governor Winthrop's farm, is shown, as is the windmill and the fort at Boston. A very careful study of the map and a careful consideration of the points above mentioned, as well as others, lead us to conclude that the map was marked and the margin notes written by Governor Winthrop in the summer of 1634, and that the map was then sent to England. While there are letters on record from Robert Ryce of England, asking Governor Winthrop to send him a map, there is nothing to connect those letters with this map, so far as we can ascertain. Even if this map was sent in response to those letters, it would prove that the John Humphrey house was standing in 1637; we are therefore quite satisfied that it was built four years earlier, or in 1634, which was in the fifth year of the settlement of Lynn.

We extract liberally from an article by Henry S. Baldwin, which presents a valuable and concise picture of Swampscott past and present:

With a shore line of three and one-half miles and well protected beaches, it has always been a favorite spot for fishermen, and the town has been noted for this industry from the time of the Pilgrims down to the present. Undoubtedly, the earliest settlers of Massachusetts Bay colony came to what is now Fisherman's Beach in their small vessels to obtain much-needed supplies of food. Records of the town show that all through the colonial days, and even after the Revolutionary War, this was the principal fishing port of New England. At one time there were more than 30 schooners, locally known as "jiggers," hailing from Swampscott. Residents of the town still living remember when ox carts were driven from all parts of New England and even from Canada to Swampscott, for the purpose of obtaining supplies of fish. These carts were loaded with geese, eggs, butter, cheese and produce, by the inland farmers, who disposed of their articles to the fishermen when Swampscott was reached. Here a return load of fish would be obtained. Jeremiah L. Horton, now eighty-seven years of age, states that he has seen piles of frozen cod resembling cord wood in the yard on Humphrey street where is now located the Swampscott Club. As the demand for fish became greater, warranting the use of large vessels, the Swampscott fishing fleet gradually disappeared, and today the industry is conducted on a small scale by the use of motor boats and dories.

The Swampscott dory is noted throughout the world as a type of small boat which especially meets the requirements of fishermen. It is so constructed that it is very seaworthy, and yet can be readily handled and drawn up on the beach. On account of its shape, it can be stowed in nests on larger vessels, and for this reason has played an important part in the fishing industry of New England. Mr. Horton, who has fished in Massachusetts bay since he was 13 years of age, states that the first dories were built by a man named Andrews. The distinction of designing this type of craft belongs to Mr. Theophilus Brackett of this town.

It may not be generally known that the Beach road, which follows King's Beach from the Lynn line, through Humphrey street and Puritan road, is the oldest highway in the country. Most New England coast towns have their stories of shipwrecks and tragedies of the sea. In January, 1857, a terrible storm drove the bark Tedesco on the rocks near the Ocean House. The ship was destroyed and her entire crew of 12 men were drowned, the bodies of six being recovered and buried together in the Swampscott cemetery. Up to the middle of the last century the population of Swampscott was made up largely of fishermen and farmers, but with the advent of better means of transportation, it gradually took on the character of a residential town and a delightful summer resort. Situated

on Nahant bay, which tourists have likened to the Bay of Naples, the scenery is most attractive. As one leaves the shore, beautiful fields and woods appear before the eye.

Swampscott is fortunate in that three main roads of the North Shore pass through the town. The outer road, or boulevard, which follows the shore closely and extends through Humphrey and Orient streets and Atlantic avenue to Marblehead or Salem, affords the most charming and varied scenery; while Paradise or State road, located more centrally in the town, is a direct route to points on the coast and the northern part of New England. The westerly highway lies in Essex street, which is the old county road and is still much used, particularly for commercial traffic. There are more than 30 miles of modern roads in the town, which, combined with the many beaches, attract hundreds of visitors in the summer season.

One of the earliest hotels was the Ocean House, which formerly stood on Galloupe's Point. This was demolished, and later the New Ocean House, which now extends the entire length of Whale's Beach, was erected. This popular hotel has expanded until it is now one of the largest and best equipped summer hotels on the New England coast. It has become a favorite resort for people from all parts of the United States and foreign countries. Many professional societies hold their annual meetings here. Hotel Preston, near the Marblehead boundary, is also an establishment enjoying a wide reputation for superior service. There are a number of well-appointed retail shops, located for the most part on Humphrey street. The population of the town in 1852 was about 1000, while the last census, taken in 1920, shows a total of 8101. The town is supplied with excellent water of the metropolitan system, and is considered a very healthy locality.

Swampscott has a fully motorized fire department, efficient police protection, postal delivery; and, in fact, most of the advantages usually found only in large cities. Educational facilities are exceptional, there being five modern school buildings, with 52 teachers. At the recent annual town meeting, the sum of $131,000 was appropriated for educational purposes for the current year (1921). There are six churches, representing various denominations, and many fraternal and social organizations. The Tedesco Club, Neighborhood Club, Masonic Club, Swampscott Club, Catholic Club and the Woman's Club afford an opportunity for citizens to meet socially. Recently a co-operative bank has been opened in the town.

Among the many prominent residents may be mentioned the name of Prof. Elihu Thomson, a founder of the General Electric Company, president of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology for the second time, and a man of world-wide scientific reputation. His residence is located on Monument avenue, and the residence of Andrew W. Preston, president of the United Fruit Company, whose wonderful foresight has brought this company to be recognized as the greatest industrial organization in the West Indies and Central America. His beautiful home, The Arches, on Atlantic avenue, is one of the finest on the North Shore.

[Abednego Ramsdell, the picturesque figure of Lynn in the Concord fight, resided in Swampscott near the junction of Cherry and Essex streets. Hearing of the Paul Revere alarm, while shooting birds at the shore, he returned home, seized his equipment and a little food and (according to tradition) ran to Concord and arrived in season to take part in the fight, and there paid the supreme sacrifice upon the altar of liberty. He was buried in the Eastern burial ground.]

From the days of the Revolution down to the World War, Swampscott has always furnished her full quota of soldiers and sailors. Even though the town was small during the period of the Civil War, Swampscott sent out more than 200 men to preserve the Union. In the World War 512 men and women answered the call to the colors, many serving at home and abroad with distinction.

A memorial shaft has been erected in Monument square for those who gave their lives in the Civil War, and a boulder and bronze tablet were dedicated on November 11, 1920, to the heroic dead of the World War.

We now draw upon certain town statistics, for the purpose of indicating the steady development in the growth of the town's material concerns:

Building Inspector John T. Lee reported to the board of selectmen that 154 building permits were issued during the year 1921, with estimated cost of construction of $474,275. Of this amount, $361,000 represented the cost of 46 dwellings. The permits for erection of garages called for an expenditure of $35,000.

Assessors' property report. Valuation of the town of Swampscott, April 1, 1921. Table of aggregate of polls, property and taxes assessed April 1, 1921:

| | |
|---|---|
| Number of residents assessed on property | 1,976 |
| Number of firms, corporations, etc., assessed on property | 52 |
| Number of non-residents assessed on property | 375 |
| Number of non-resident firms, corporations, etc., assessed on property | 30 |
| Number of persons assessed on property | 2,433 |
| Number of persons assessed on poll tax only | 1,370 |
| Total number of persons assessed | 3,803 |
| Number of male polls assessed | 2,366 |
| Value of assessed personal estate | $1,391,298 |
| Value of assessed buildings, excluding land | 8,360,183 |
| Value of assessed land, excluding buildings | 5,866,327 |
| Number of dwelling houses assessed | 1,846 |

Note: These items appear in the tabulation below.

The subjoined tabulation, interesting for the comparisons it affords, gives valuation of real and personal property by five-year periods from 1880 onwards, along with the tax rates. The figures for 1921 are also appended:

| Year. | Real Estate. | Personal Property. | Total Valuation. | Tax Rate Per $1,000 |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1880 | $1,991,880 | $1,133,247 | $3,125,127 | $7.00 |
| 1885 | 2,365,280 | 1,130,863 | 3,496,143 | 9.00 |
| 1890 | 3,001,550 | 1,857,777 | 4,859,327 | 10.00 |
| 1895 | 3,756,900 | 1,444,947 | 5,201,847 | 12.00 |
| 1900 | 4,446,900 | 1,138,275 | 5,585,175 | 11.00 |
| 1905 | 6,030,185 | 2,117,442 | 8,147,627 | 14.50 |
| 1910 | 8,489,200 | 2,698,340 | 11,187,540 | $15.00 |
| 1915 | 10,810,305 | 5,028,193 | 15,838,498 | 17.80 |
| 1920 | 14,007,916 | 1,316,938 | 15,324,854 | 23.00 |
| 1921 | 14,226,510 | 1,391,298 | 15,617,808 | 24.00 |

Following is the list of elected town officers for the year 1921:

Selectmen—Henry S. Baldwin, chairman; William E. Carter, John B. Earp. Moderator—Daniel F. Knowlton. Town Clerk—George T. Till. Town Treasurer—James W. Libby. Collector of Taxes—Philip E. Bessom.

Assessors—Edward A. Maxfield, chairman, term expires 1923; Oscar G. Poor, term expires 1922; Clarence B. Humphrey, secretary; term expires 1924.

Water and Sewerage Commissioners—George D. R. Durkee, chairman, term expires 1922; Harold G. Enholm, term expires 1923; Charles E. Hodgdon, term expires 1924.

Park Commissioners—James T. Lyons, chairman, term expires 1922; Stuart P. Ellis, secretary, term expires 1923; Archibald Miller, term expires 1924.

School Committee—Rev. Edward Tillotson, chairman, term expires 1923; Rev. John Vannevar, term expires 1922; Mabel E. Hardy, term expires 1924.

Trustees of Public Library—*Frank F. Stanley; †Elihu Thomson, term expires 1922; Louise C. Stanley, term expires 1923; F. Keeler Rice, term expires 1924.

Overseers of the Poor—Joseph F. Crowell, chairman, term expires 1922; Harry E. Cahoon, term expires 1923; Edmund Russell, secretary, term expires 1924.

Board of Health—Dr. Loring Grimes, chairman, term expires 1923; John B. Cahoon, term expires 1924; Harold H. Bartol, term expires 1922.

Surveyor of Highways—Michael J. Ryan, term expires 1924.

Tree Warden—Everett P. Mudge.

Constables—Frank H. Bradford, Clarence W. Horton, Charles Walter Burrill.

Commissioners of Trust Funds—Henry B. Sprague, term expires 1922; George H. Lucey, term expires 1922; Granville Ingalls, term expires 1922.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

## TOWN OF NAHANT

Nahant is a peninsula extending out into Massachusetts Bay, to the south of Lynn. Originally, this tract of land (almost an island), together with Lynn, included a township adjoining the town of Salem, the first landing place of the Puritans. In this large territory the Puritans made their first homes, at long distances from one another, "in convenient spots, each family occupying large tracts of land. A few families gathered at Tower Hill, Breed's End, Sagamore Hill and Swampscott, as well as at Nahant."

Although Nahant is one of the smallest in population and area of any town within the limits of Essex county, it was without question one of the very earliest places to be settled by the white race. Its history reaches away back more than five hundred years before the landing of the Pilgrim Fathers at Plymouth Rock; at least, it has been blended by both history and tradition that far back. Before taking up the actual recorded history of this most interesting locality, it may be well to mention some of the early traditions, including the stories of the Norsemen voyagers, which say that "Thorwold, in 1004, A.D., spent the winter in Narragansett Bay, and in the spring set sail to find his way back to the coast of Greenland. Working his way around Cape Cod, which he called Kilararnes, he sailed northward to the main land, and came to anchor near a bold promontory, which projected into the sea, covered with a forest to the water's edge. He was so delighted with the place that he

* Deceased. † Appointed.

exclaimed "Here it is beautiful, and here I should like to fix my dwelling." Continuing, the story goes on in this wise:

While at anchor near the promontory, and while preparing to go ashore, the Norsemen discovered three small canoes, each containing three natives, whom they pursued and killed, all but one, who escaped to his tribe. He, with a just indignation, soon returned with others of his tribe to destroy, if possible, the Norsemen, who had so cruelly betrayed their confidence. But the arrows and the frail birch canoe of the natives were as nothing compared to the battle-screens of the ships of the Norsemen, so that the natives soon retired, but not until they had killed or at least mortally wounded Thorwold, who only had time to say, "This is my death-blow; I desire you to depart as soon as possible, but first take my body to the shore and bury it upon the promontory before you where I had intended to make my abode. I shall now dwell there forever. Place a cross at my head and also one at my feet, and call the place Krossanes."

Abbot in his "History of Maine" gives place to this story, saying that it occurred at some point near Boston Harbor; doubtless "it was the first conflict between the Europeans and the Indians of North America in which the White race was outrageously in the wrong." After Thorwold's death, his crew returned to Narragansett Bay, where they spent the winter, and in the spring set sail for Greenland with a cargo of wood and furs.

While this story is interesting, the objection has been raised that it lacks any authenticity as to the persons, their deeds and the exact location in New England where such a scene is supposed to have been staged. That it should have been Nahant is a theory supported by sundry writers. Historian Abbot admits it to have been in Boston Harbor, and Lewis in his "History of Essex County" favors Nahant.

To connect up closer with established facts in recorded history, it should be added that John Smith, in his voyages along the New England coast, noticed Nahant, which he called the Mattahunt Isles, and here he made a landing. He also referred to the cliffs on the northeast coast as the iron mines, as they much resemble iron-ore. Other records call the same place Nahant, so named after an Indian chief Nahanton.

In 1622 Robert Gorges obtained a grant of lands (according to the public records) in Massachusetts Bay, in which grant Nahant was included. Before Blackstone and Johnson made their home in Boston, settlers had been cultivating the soil of Nahant, and chopping down its forests, with which to erect their humble cabins and increase their farms. It is believed that this settlement was not far from 1630, a belief based upon dates and facts included in the deposition of one William Dixey, who under oath, in 1657 wrote as follows:

Sworne saith, that about twenty-eight years ago, Mr. Isaak Johnson, being my master, Writt to the Hon'rd Govern'r as now is Mr. Endicott for a place to sitt downe in upon which Mr. Endicott gave me and the rest leave to go where we wee would, upon which I went to Saugust, now Linne, and there we mett with Sagamore James and some other Indians, whoe did give me and the rest to dwell there or thereabouts.

whereup I and the rest of my masters company did cutt grass for our cattell and kept them upon Nahant for some space of time, for the Indian, James Sagamore and the rest, did give me and the rest, in behalf of my master, Johnson, wt land wee would, whereupon wee sett down in Saugust and had quiet possession of it by the above said Indians and kept our cattell in Nahant the summer following.

Desposition given May 1, 1657.

Isaac Johnson left Lynn for Boston in 1630, becoming one of the first to settle there. The first settlement made in Nahant was with the full consent of the Indians, both races living in peace together up to that time. Thus it is established that the original settlers first obtained a title to their land from Governor Endicott to go where they would, and afterwards from the Indian Sagamore James.

Notwithstanding there was far more land than could be used by the first settlers, disputes yet arose over boundary lines of the several tracts—human nature then being identically the same as today. Finally an allotment was made by vote in the town meeting. The minority, however, were displeased, and picked out the choicest tracts and purchased them from the Indians, as they believed the latter were the only true owners. Among these purchases was one by Thomas Dexter, who bought Sagamore Hill and Nahant, claiming them as his own to till and pasture upon within enclosures which he built. The Lynn people would not agree, and trouble arose, resulting in a law-suit. "Nahant was especially valuable as a pasture for cattle, as a fence had been put across the northwest end of Long Beach, protecting all the peninsula, keeping the cattle safely enclosed, besides serving as a barrier to keep out the wolves and bears." These great advantages were not overlooked by the settlers at Nahant, who believed them worth fighting for.

Thus it will be seen that there sprung up several classes of claimants for this most valuable plot of ground, almost surrounded by the waters of the Atlantic Ocean. Thomas Dexter claimed it by right of purchase from the Indians. There seems good evidence to prove that he purchased Nahant, fenced it in, and that a suit of clothes was a part of the consideration paid. Another claimant was the town of Lynn, whose settlers claimed it by their right of being "first settlers," and who had given it to others, to be used in common.

Still a third class laid claim thereto, on account of having taken their lands there, and refused to be held for rental by two parties—the town of Lynn and the Dexter family interests. On account of these differences, many moved to other parts, rather than longer be annoyed; still others, of a more stubborn make-up, refused either to leave or to pay rent. One writer says: "The contest for Nahant seems to have been both severe and stubborn, so much so that after the town of Lynn had voted to allot the land at Nahant equally to the several proprietors, it was voted at a subsequent town meeting, 'that the soil should be sown down to English grass, and that no house should be left standing.' Such an act it is hardly possible to find elsewhere; but in spite of it, the ad-

ministrators of Thomas Dexter appealed to the decision of the court. In 1676, the case was decided against them in favor of the town of Lynn."

The next heard of Nahant in 1687 was when the notorious Edward Randolph, English commissioner of Charles II, petitioned "His Excellency, Sir Edward Andros, Knight, Governor, etc.," for a grant of Nahant. In 1706, Lynn voted to divide its lands among the town's people, and received from the court legal right to hold and divide all common lands. Before this act of the town, a deed of Nahant had been procured by Lynn from the Indians, bearing date of September 4, 1686, thus making the title of Nahant satisfactory after a seventy-year contest at law.

A town committee met and divided Nahant into two hundred and eight lots, the largest containing four acres and six rods; the smallest was thirty-eight rods. This division was easily made by making eleven strips, or ranges running across the peninsula from northeast to southwest, each strip being forty rods wide.

August 14, 1819, "The Patriot" published this description of Nahant, and the same is worthy of reproduction:

Nahant possesses advantages as a watering-place superior to any in New England. It is a peninsula stretching two miles into the sea. You approach it by land, over a most excellent turnpike road, surpassed by none in the United States; and across a beach of unsurpassing smoothness, on whose hard level the wheel leaves no mark, and which may be justly considered as one of the curiosities of the country.

From its bleak bluffs the ocean spreads itself before you in all its grandeur, now bearing on its broad and beautiful bosom the white sails of commerce, and now roaring in rage and breaking its wild wave on the shore. You have here the sublimity of a sea voyage, with the security of a residence on the land. The rocky shore of the peninsula presents another appearance of sublimity and grandeur; the rude magnificence and gigantic outline of one part is relieved by the beauty and regularity of others; and in the cells and caverns which diversify the scenery, an admirer of nature may find abundant amusement in exploring the innumerable traces of her workmanship.

On the high grounds of Nahant the air is most pure, refreshing and salubrious. The heat of the summer's sun is moderated by luxuriant sea-breezes which never fail, from some quarter, to alleviate its intensity.

Its waters afford abundant sport for fishermen; small fish are caught in surprising quantities from the rocks; and a short distance in the bay cod, haddock, mackerel and halibut reward the labor which pursues them."

The first hotel was opened here in June, 1823, known as the Nahant Hotel. This house was sold and rebuilt in 1853-54. The new hotel had a dining room service for six hundred persons at one time. Telegraph wires connected with Boston, and a special steamer plied the waters between Nahant and Boston. In September, 1861, this hotel, costing over $100,000, was burned to the ground.

The first steamboat to enter Boston Harbor was the "Massachusetts," of which the "Columbian Sentinel," July 19, 1817, had this to

say: "The new and beautiful steamboat 'Massachusetts' has by perseverance so far overcome the prejudices of the public, and on Thursday afternoon, in her excursions around the harbor, she was filled to overflowing with ladies and gentlemen. This boat is one hundred feet long on the deck, and measures one hundred and twenty tons." Doubtless this boat made frequent excursions to Nahant in 1817. In 1820 she made her regular runs there from Boston; the steamboat route was really established from Boston to Nahant in the season of 1818, the steamboat "Eagle" being the popular steamer at that date.

The citizens of Nahant tried in 1846 to have the town incorporated, and petitioned the legislature to grant such corporation, but owing to opposition from the people of Lynn, this was denied them. Then Nahant asked Lynn to appropriate certain funds with which to protect the beach and repair the wagon roads; this, too, was refused. Under leadership of Frederick Tudor, the citizens of Nahant then sought by public subscription to make the needed improvements, and in this way nearly all of Willow Road was constructed. The road then from Lynn to Nahant was simply a long beach and at high tide nothing more than a ridge of soft sand, through which it was very hard to travel. At low tide, or even half tide, however, the hard, firm sand made a much easier road. Hence, nearly all journeys across were made at low tide. The timetable of the first stage coaches to Nahant was changed weekly to correspond with the tides. On account of this feature it was not long before Boston provided boat service to Nahant.

In 1847 Lynn voted an appropriation of one thousand dollars to aid the required improvement in Nahant. By this and other funds, there was constructed between Lynn and Nahant a graveled road, though very narrow. In 1851 a great sea storm ruined this roadway, submerging the beach and destroying the breakwater. In 1848 the legislature prohibited the taking away of any stones or dirt from Long Beach and Nahant.

In 1853 the inhabitants of Nahant again asked to be incorporated as a town, to be called Nahant. This time the prayer was heard and later approved by the governor, March 29, of that year. The new town had within its limits all of Long Beach, the city of Lynn being only "too glad to get Nahant off of her hands." In the settlement between the two places, Nahant had to pay Lynn $2,000. The newly-made town had a population of three hundred souls, sixty-nine dwellings, and thirty voters, mostly all Whigs.

There was a long road or "lane" from Lynn to Nahant; a cutaway to North Spring; a street one rod wide to the schoolhouse and Cary's gate. called Schoolhouse Lane. Below Whitney's Hotel the streets had been laid out by Coolidge. At the time of its incorporation, Nahant had two churches, one schoolhouse with forty-eight pupils, four public houses, ten boarding-houses, two firms of carpenters and builders, a paint shop,

a grocery and the little postoffice. There were then no signs of warning "Private Grounds," "No Trespassing Here," for the cattle roamed at will over the beautiful fields. After a long contest in the courts over the title of Long Beach—whether it belonged to Lynn or to Nahant—it was finally decided that Nahant was the legal owner of such lands.

Longfellow said in his Journal: "Life at Nahant partakes of the monotony of the sea. The walk along the shore, the surf, the rocks, and friendly chat—these make up the agreeable rounds." Here it was that Longfellow wrote much of that which made his name immortal, the "Song of Hiawatha." It was penned in the old Johnson house. Here, too, Professor Agassiz and N. P. Willis spent their summers mostly.

The present officers of the incorporation of Nahant are inclusive of these: Moderator, F. A. Wilson; Selectmen: H. C. Wilson (chairman), Daniel G. Flinnery, secretary; Charles A. Phillips; Town Clerk, William F. Waters; Treasurer and Collector, Charles Cabot Johnson; School Committee: Fred A. Pirie, John S. Tombeno, Frank E. Bruce; Public Library Trustee: Henry Cabot Lodge, A. G. Wilson, F. A. Wilson; Surveyor of Highways, P. J. O'Connor; Constables, Fred J. Timmins; Tree Warden, Herbert Coles.

Fishing interests at Nahant have ever been looked upon as of great value to the people living there. Fishing vessels were owned by Nahant residents from the first. The history of the industry in olden times has perished with the faithful, brave fishermen. In 1824 a well known schooner built at Essex for this fishing enterprise was named "Lafayette." Among the better-known fishermen and boat-pilots were Caleb and Joseph Johnson, who followed the business for a half century, and supplied the Boston fish market with thousands of tons of fish. But the fish industry has gone from Nahant and summer resorts have taken their place.

From the beginning of its history, Nahant has had its full share of destructive sea storms and shipwrecks. An old history of Lynn and Nahant gives detailed accounts of many such storms. Commencing with 1631, Captain Wiggins' boat was wrecked on Long Beach, followed on down by the great storms of 1757, 1769, 1772, 1778, 1795, 1827, 1829, 1836, 1840, 1843, 1851, 1856, 1857, one and all making a sea story worth reading, did space permit in this work. Here ships from almost every country have gone down to sail no more. Lives in scores and property in millions have been destroyed along Long Beach, so popular a resort in our times.

In July, 1847, a postoffice was established at Nahant, the same being kept in the Nahant Hotel. Phineas Drew was the first postmaster; he was proprietor of the hotel. During the same year the office was taken to a grocery store, when W. W. Johnson was appointed postmaster, serving until his death, when his son, Edwin W. Johnson, succeeded to the

office. In summer months, mail was carried to this office every day, but in the winter months only once a week. In 1887 T. Dexter Johnson was appointed postmaster. Before the postoffice was established at Nahant "Johnson's Nahant and Boston Express route" was opened between the two points. By many authorities this is set down as the first "Express" business formed in the country.

In 1866 a town hall was dedicated in Nahant, and later a fire company was organized. In 1872 a public library was established; edgestones and cement sidewalks were placed in position, street lamps were installed, and matters generally seemed to take on "city airs."

Mention may be made of the old iron mine from which a small amount of ore had been taken at an early day, and cooked at the various forges, including the one at Braintree; also the curiosities of the Spouting Horn, Bass Beach, Spouting Rock, Pulpit Rock, Natural Bridge and Swallow's Cave. Each and all have their own peculiar setting, and must needs be seen to be understood and fully appreciated.

From the close of the Civil War period, for many years, this town was noted as a summer resort, and to some extent still maintains this distinction, but with the many improvements at various headlands, here and there all along the New England rockbound and wavewashed coast, the popularity of Nahant is not so great as in former years. Former industries have long since disappeared. Many of the inhabitants removed to other places, where they might work at their trades or callings. Once there was a small shoe business here, especially before the improved shoemaking machinery came into use, when thousand of pairs of shoes were made and many were "bound" by women and girls. It may well be stated that to catch fish and make shoes in Nahant is now a "lost art."

As to the patriotism of the people at Nahant, see "Military Chapters."

The Nahant Library is open the year round, and is constantly growing in interest and number of books and papers. During the last year there was an increase of 1,417 volumes. The total circulation of books in the children's department for the year ending December, 1920, was 7,378. The total number of books in the library is 27,263; number of volumes circulated for home use, 23,540; number of patrons during the year 1,147; fines paid during the year, $56. These facts have been gleaned from the report made by May W. Perkins, librarian. It should also be stated that the reading room is now furnished with thirty-four magazines and papers, of America's choicest publications. These various publications, for old and young, with the numerous stacks of valuable books, are kept in a $50,000 building owned by the town. This of itself speaks loudly in praise of the intelligence and culture of the inhabitants.

Among the charming estates found at Nahant should not be overlooked that of Senator Henry Cabot Lodge. It is situated at the extreme end of East Point. On these prominent acres, overlooking the majes-

NAHANT—ABOVE, TOWN HALL; BELOW, PUBLIC LIBRARY

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

tic ocean, up to 1861 stood for a number of years what was known as the Nahant House, a hotel presided over by Paran Stevens, who intended to convert Nahant into a summer watering resort of a most fashionable type. September 11, 1861, it "took fire," says Senator Lodge in his recent autobiography, ("Early Memories") and was burned to the ground. As a hotel, it was a failure financially after the first few years. One account says that this hotel had hundreds of rooms, with dining room space for six hundred diners to be seated at once. There were literally acres of piazzas connected with the structure. Here were entertained the numerous "bonanza kings" of those early days before the Civil War. In this manner the owner of the hotel made much money.

After the fire had consumed the hotel building, the property was thrown upon the market, but no one seemed to care to invest in Nahant property. Senator Lodge's father, Mr. John E. Lodge, made an effort to have some one rebuild the hotel. Failing in this, he purchased the property himself; but before he developed his plans, fully, he died, and the estate fell to the children. Senator Lodge and his sister here erected houses of their own, including the present mansion, still so much beloved and appreciated in the summer-time by the Senator and his family. The sale of this property, so finely situated, was made to the elder Lodge in 1868. The grounds contain many acres, and the residence is a veranda-inclosed mansion of attractive architecture, set upon the commanding heights of East Point. To what nature had done for this place has been added the skill of expert landscape gardeners. The grounds extend to the sea on the northeast and south, including the cliffs, upon which the surf of the ocean breaks with force of the whole Atlantic Ocean. It is truly an attractive estate. Trees, shrubs and flowers are to be seen on every hand. Here the Senator delights to spend the heated season of each year, when freedom from official cares permits.

What is to be known as Fort Augustus Gardner, Nahant, is now in course of construction. About the time of the Spanish-American War, the United States government purchased a tract of land, to which has more recently been added much more territory. Here an extensive fortification is being built, beneath Bailey's Hill. Seventy-six different land holdings were bought. On these grounds were standing, at one time, forty-seven dwellings. The fort is located midway along the southern shore of Nahant, and commands an extended view of Broad Sound, as well as of the South Shore. Its natural qualifications for a defensive station are plain to the observer. Here the first earth-works were thrown up in 1898. Among other objects to be attained by this fortification, the government intends making a proving station for ordnance tests.

The old Tri-Mountain House, known far and wide, originally stood on a part of these grounds. Work is steadily being carried on in the construction of the fortress. The recent abandonment of numerous forts in Boston harbor is doubtless due to the fact that Fort Gardner is here

being constructed. The site is practically a solid ledge. The bestowal of the name is in recognition of the fame and patriotic labors of Hon. Augustus Peabody Gardner, who represented the sixth district in Congress. He resigned his congressional office, during the World War, to accept a commission as major in the army. Scarcely had he thus entered the service of the United States than he suddenly fell ill, death resulting shortly afterwards. Deceased was a son-in-law of Senator Lodge.

The sale of property for unpaid taxes is almost a universal thing in all towns and cities throughout the country, but the town of Nahant is an exception to the rule. Like all towns or cities, it has its delinquent taxpayers, of course, but never in the history of the town has the tax collector been forced to issue a notice of sale of private property within the town, and there are few towns in the country that can make a like boast. The "Item" of Lynn says of this subject:

> The assessed value of the town last year was something like $4,149,697. Since January 1st, 1921, the delinquent tax has been reduced from $17,000 to about $12,000 without any extra effort on the part of the tax collector.
>
> Diplomacy is the method used by tax-collector Charles Cabot Johnson, who has served in this capacity for more than eighteen years. When the unpaid taxes reach nearly the three-year mark, Collector Johnson personally visits the delinquent and in his well known gracious manner points out the law on unpaid taxes and how trouble, red tape and considerable inconvenience to both property holder and the town can be avoided. His advise is always heeded.

Before the erection of the old stone schoolhouse, the church goers usually attended church at Lynn. The Hoods and Breeds were Quakers in their religious faith, and were all members of the Society of Friends. The Johnson families belonged to the Baptist denomination in part, while another branch of the family were devout Methodists. The Rice family were of the regular Orthodox Church. The children of these families attended Sabbath School in the various churches already mentioned. After the exercises were ended, the children had the long walk of over three miles over the beach. If the tide was out, the trip was easily made; but at high tide it became tedious, and it was as much as a horse could do to drag a buggy through the sand, empty, while the parents and children in such times usually had to walk, wading through the sands, ankle deep.

After the completion of the stone schoolhouse, the three churches held their services, pastors from Lynn being their preachers. The oldest church building was the Independent Methodist denomination. At evening, lights were obtained from lanterns and candles. The lantern was "a lamp unto their feet and a light unto their pathway." Before this church was built, there was erected in 1831 a frame chapel, provided by the summer residents, and suitable only for summer use. The builders of this chapel were also the builders of the village church. All denominations were welcome, as all had contributed. The land upon

which the church was built was generously donated by Caleb Johnson and J. W. Page; Dr. William R. Lawrence presented the bell, and Charles Amory gave a communion set. It was written in the eighties of these churches: "The Nahant church and the Village church have been enlarged and improved, so that but little of the original structures can now be seen." A Young Men's Christian Association was organized here in 1876.

Preaching and Mass were observed by the Catholic people in the old chapel until 1872, when, under Rev. Patrick Strain, of Lynn, a church was built and owned by the congregation.

---

## CHAPTER XXIX.

## TOWN OF NORTH ANDOVER.

North Andover occupies a part of the original town of Andover. The town lines as now maintained were fixed as late as 1855. What was called the North Parish, from 1709 onwards became North Andover, and that portion of the town as originally known was called Andover. North Andover contains about 15,400 acres, all replete with geological formations, and with matters of interest to the scientific agriculturist. Its rocky period evidently belongs to the most ancient period known to any part of the globe. One well-informed writer speaks of the charming landscape scenery of this region as follows:

It is seldom that a more interesting geological formation than this can be found; and nowhere, as the result of the hand of nature's work, does a more lovely landscape appear—the view stretching from each one of these rounded elevation miles away to the Wachusett and the Monadnock on the northwest, while to the immediate gaze the mysterious group stands around as fascinating monuments of an ancient age. The explanation which is given of these unusual hills is most interesting, and carries the mind back to the time when the great seas of ice covered this hemisphere, and left a record of their slow and steady march as a guide to man in his endeavors to unravel the mystery of the earth's formation and his own creation.

It was this territory of which in 1634, by action of the General Court, "It is ordered that the land about Cochichewick shall be reserved for an inland plantation, and whosoever will go to inhabit there shall have three years' immunity from all taxes, levies, public charges and services whatever, military discipline only excepted. John Winthrop, Richard Bellingham and William Coddington, Esquire, are chosen a committee to license any that may think meet to inhabit there, and that it shall be lawful for no person to go thither without their consent or the major part of them."

This land was purchased by Rev. John Woodbridge of Newbury, in 1641, after a lengthy correspondence with Governor Winthrop. Finally, when seeming obstacles were removed, the purchase and grants were con-

firmed by the court. The town was named Andover by some of the settlers that had emigrated from Andover, Hampshire, England. The earliest roster of actual settlers, probably made prior to 1644, gives the subjoined names as original settlers and residents of the plantation: John Osgood, Joseph Parker, Richard Barker, John Stevens, Nicholas Holt, Benjamin Woodbridge, John Frye, Edmund Faulkner, Robert Barnard, Daniel Poor, Nathan Parker, Henry Jaques, John Aslett, William Ballard, John Lovejoy, Thomas Poor, George Abbott, John Russ, Andrew Allen, Andrew Foster, Thomas Chandler.

Captain Edward Johnson, of Woburn wrote of Andover in 164 as follows:

> About this time there was a town founded about one or two miles distant from the place where the goodly river of Merrimack received her branches into her own body, hard upon the river Shawshin, which is one of her chief heads; the honored Mr. Simon Bradstreet taking up his last sitting there, hath been a great means to further the work, it being a place well fitted for the husbandman's hand, were it not that the remoteness of the place from towns of trade bringeth forth some inconveniences upon the planters, who are enforced to carry their corn far to market. This town is called Andover, and hath good store of land improved for the bigness of it.

A former set of historians, dwelling upon the general history of this portion of New England, including Andover, wrote as follows:

> The motives and manners and customs of those who founded North Andover and its associate towns are interesting and important. They formed a part of that large body of dissenters who, under various names, came to New England and settled the Colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay. They came, it is true, to enjoy religious freedom, but they also sought a civil organization, founded on the right of every man to a voice in the government under which he lives. In the charters granted to all the towns by the General Court, it was provided that the grantees were to procure and maintain an able and orthodox minister amongst them; and to build a meeting-house within three years. This was their first motive. In all their customs they were obliged to exercise the utmost simplicity, and they voluntarily regulated their conduct by those formal rules which in their day constituted the Puritan's guide through the world. As an illustration of their character and manners, in 1651 dancing was forbidden at weddings by the laws of the colony.

In 1660, William Walker was imprisoned a month "for courting a maid without the leave of her parents." In 1675, because "there is manifest pride appearing in our streets," the wearing of "long hair or periwigs," and also "superstitious ribands used to tie up and decorate their hair," were forbidden under severe penalties. Men, too, were forbidden to "keep Christmas," because it was "a Popish custom." In 1677 an act was passed to prevent "the profaneness" of "turning the back upon the public worship before it is finished and the blessing pronounced." Towns were directed to locate a cage near the meeting-house, and in this all offenders against the sanctity of the Sabbath were confined. At the same time, children were placed in a particular part of the meeting-house by themselves, and tithing men were chosen whose

duty it was to take care of them. So strict were they in the observance of the Sabbath that John Atherton, a soldier in Colonel Tying's regiment, was fined by him forty shillings for "wetting a piece of an old hat to put into his shoes," which chafed his feet on the march. People who neglected to attend meeting for three months were publicly whipped. Even in Harvard College, students were whipped, for grave offenses, in the presence of the students and profssors, prayers being offered before and after the infliction of punishment.

The domestic economy of the early colonists was simple and in many cases rude; their dwellings were small, coarsely constructed, and deficient in all those appointments that are now considered necessary to the health and comfort of the family; their diet was coarse and common. Palfrey tells us that "in the early days of New England wheaten bread was not so uncommon as it afterwards became," but its place was largely supplied by preparations of Indian corn.

According to town records, the first town meeting was held in 1656 at the house of John Osgood. All freeholders were expected to attend these meetings, and were fined if they were absent without good excuse. Perfect order was preserved in town meetings. If any man spoke in meeting after silence had been commanded twice, he was fined twelve pence. Care was taken that the metes and bounds should be carefully preserved, and an inspection of the same was made every three years. Discipline regarding meeting house seats was very strict. Young people were not allowed to be out abroad from home Saturday and Sunday nights. Factories were early encouraged to locate in the settlement. In 1686 Henry Ingalls was allowed to set up his saw mill on Musketo river.

From the earliest times, North Andover has been a thriving town. In the pioneer days, its soil attracted a first-class set of people who took hold to win in a struggle which was no small undertaking. Farming and kindred branches were the chief occupation of its sturdy settlers. Farms have run from ten to three hundred acres. Of course it is not to be supposed that after hundreds of years of constant use, this soil is now any where near what it was in its virgin state, but with careful management, rotation of crops, etc., it has been kept up fairly well to the present time.

Manufacturing commenced in this town in 1671, when Joseph Parker and Stephen Johnson dammed the Cochichewick river for the purpose of gaining sufficient water power to propel their mills. From that date on, through the first century of the town's history, a large number of mills of various kinds were in operation for a term of years. They then went into decay, or in some instances were washed down stream by the floods. Grist mills were ever encouraged by the authorities, and they necessarily multiplied as the settlement increased. Then came the attempts at powder-making and paper-making, while woolen

mills, spinning mills, fulling mills and the weaving rooms all had their part in the development of the town. Arthur, John and James Schofield, Englishmen, came in first to establish a successful business in the woolen industry. They set up carding mills on the Cochichewick and Shawshin rivers. Later came Nathaniel Stevens, who operated heavier in this line. This small beginning eventually became the great and well-known Stevens Mills. Stevens was a native of North Andover, born in 1786.

The old Isaac Osgood site was later (1836) occupied by the machine shop of Charles Barnes, George H. Gilbert and Parker Richardson. This shop was the beginning of a prosperous manufacturing village. Just below this "Mashine Shop Village" was built the North Andover Mill, near the old stone mill, which was in use in 1828 by George Hodges and Edward Parker. In the eighties the three large woolen mills on the Cochiechewick river employed about three hundred and twenty-five operatives and worked up over 1,500,000 pounds of wool annually.

At this time (1921) the industries are limited to the silk factory, by the North Andover Silk Mill, the thread and yarn mills of Smith & Dove, and the North Andover foundry and hay-scale manufactory. The town is connected with Haverhill by electric cars. The present postmaster is Michael F. Cronin.

While Salem has had the name of being the headcenter of all that was strange and terrible concerning the presence of witches away back in early days, yet this delusion was fully as prominent in and about Andover and North Andover as anywhere else. A belief in a personal devil and his agents on earth was a common belief among our forefathers from England. In France, in 1374, this delusion in an epidemic form, so to speak, broke out, and had its followers with tens of thousands for more than two centuries. The supernatural seemed to have possessed an incredible charm, and sorcerers were considered as important as lawyers or doctors in a community. All Europe was influenced by this delusion, and sorcerers and witches by the thousands suffered death by fire annually. In the reign of Francis I, more than one hundred thousand "witches" were put to death. Traditions of these delusions still had place in the early settlement of Essex county. Frightful judicial discipline was applied in this county in 1692, but let it be recorded that here in Andover and in Essex county, the fearful delusion was suppressed and stamped out for the first place in the world. The tragedy of 1692, usually attributed to Salem, was in reality enacted in North Andover to fully the extent that it was in Salem, if not worse. As other chapters from other writers on this subject will appear elsewhere in this work, no further references will be made in this connection.

A public library was established in North Andover in 1875 by the donations of General Eben Sutton, aided materially by many local contributions. This is in the Merrimac manufacturing district. In 1878 a

fine library was established at Ballardvale, J. Putnam Bradlee furnishing one thousand volumes. The Stevens Memorial Library was established in 1907, at the corner of Main and Green streets. It was the gift of Hon. and Mrs. Moses Tyler Stevens.

North Andover was incorporated in 1855, and has ever since been well governed by prudent and efficient officers. The present town officers include the following: Town Clerk, Joseph A. Duncan; Town Treasurer, George H. Perkins; Selectmen: Peter Holt, Alex M. White, Fred Leach; Overseers of the Poor: Peter Holt, John T. Campbell, Alex M. White; Assessors: Peter Holt, Patrick P. Daw, Edward E. Curley; Superintendent of Schools, Dana P. Dame; Superintendent of Public Works, Richard H. Ellis; Chief of Police, Wallace E. Towne; Constables: John H. Campbell, Wallace E. Town, James H. Goff, John P. Walsh, John R. McEvoy; Keeper of Lock-up, John A. Morrissey; Highway Surveyor, Willard H. Poor; Tree Warden, William L. Smith; Superintendent of Town Farm, George L. Barker; Forest Fire Warden, William L. Smith; Fish Warden, Joseph Hinchcliffe; Collector of Taxes, Frank A. Mackie; Auditor, James W. Elliott.

The present town clerk's report for last year gives statistics of interest as follows: Whole number of deaths in town of North Andover during year, 95—male 39, and female 56. The persons who died seventy years and older in the year were: Mary Hazelhurst, 70; Joseph A. Jette, 76; Mary Kennedy, 70; Maria D. Kimball, 87; Mary Ann Greenwood, 88; Mary Reeves, 81; Ann M. Grover, 88; Catherine Devitt, 79; Louisa Holroyd, 84; Jannette G. Jewett, 81; John Morris, 72; William Freeman Hodgetts, 70; John Meserve Coffin, 76; Emma J. Phillips, 74; Susan Pratt, 81; Hannah Lees Andrew, 74; George A. Brocklebank, 76; James Davis, 79; Emma Hanson, 81; Sarah Frances Carr, 78; George F. Cunningham, 73; Daniel Perley Stiles, 70; Richard Oliver, 79; George Gilbert Davis, 76; Samuel A. Smith, 76; Ellen F. Mahoney, 73; Annie Brady. The whole number of births during the year was 113—64 males and 49 females; foreign parentage, 62. The assessors' report shows: Aggregate value real estate, $5,474,275; personal, $1,821,884; State tax, $23,460; State highway tax, $3,195.81; Special State tax, $1,148.40; Bay State street railway tax, $159.80; county tax, $14,382.21; town grant, $167,863; overlevyings, $478.52; total, $211,587.74.

Poll tax assessments, $8,865; tax assessed on real estate, $158,753.10; on personal estate, $52,834.64; rate per thousand, $29; abatement authorized, $2,711.84; acres of land assessed, 14,109; dwellings, 1,072; hens, 277; cows, 697; neat cattle, 197; swine, 53; dogs assessed, 238; persons liable to military duty, 1,047.

The United States census returns for the past three decades give North Andover figures as follows: In 1900, 4,243; in 1910, 5,529; and the last (1920) enumeration placed the population at 6,265.

North Andover has always been the home of numerous uplifting

associations and societies, including temperance orders and debating societies, as well as benevolent and secret orders, among them the Masonic Fraternity. It really sounds strange today, when we have national prohibition well under way, to solve the curse of the American saloon, to read in the annals of any given county in the commonwealth, such as Essex, about the formation of a temperance society in North Andover as early as 1825, nearly a century ago. Such a society was organized by Rev. Bailey Loring, through whose influence lecturers were secured here in the persons of E. H. Chapin, Hosea Hildreth and Lucius Manlius Sargent. In 1841 there were established both a lecture course and a debating club.

To "provide and maintain an able orthodox minister among them" was the highest obligation that rested on the founders of towns in all New England. To provide meeting houses was another great and vital feature. These buildings, according to the land grants and charters, must be erected within three years from date of settlement. A new meeting house seems to have been constructed in North Andover in 1669, and there are records showing that there had been "a first" meeting house erected there about 1646, and that it stood near "the Old North burying-ground," on the high land opposite the house of Governor Bradstreet. The second meeting house served until 1711, and the third church was used until 1753, when the fourth building was raised. Its cost was £300 sterling. January 1, 1754, the pews were sold, the highest bringing seventeen pounds, and the lowest six pounds. These seats were always sold according to location, after having taken into account the social and financial standing of persons seeking a pew. Perhaps these good old brethren had not read or heeded the Scriptures, wherein it is written that God is no respecter of persons, but looketh at the heart. With these early church seating "committees" it was rather a matter of finance.

Another church building was erected in 1835, costing $11,000. The clock and bell were taken from the old church and placed in the new one. In 1844 an organ was introduced, and the old clarionet and violin were discarded.

The original membership of this church, as established in 1646, was made up of ten male members, including the pastor: John Woodbridge, teacher; John Osgood, Robert Barnard, John Frye, Nicholas Holt, Richard Barker, Joseph Parker, Nathan Parker, Richard Blake and Edmond Faulkner. The following is a list of pastors down to 1870; Rev. Johen Woodbridg, 1645—95; Rev. Francis Dane, 1648—97; Rev. Thomas Barnard, 1697—1719; Rev. John Barnard (son of last named) 1719—57; Rev. William Symmes, 1757—1810; then came Rev. Bailey Loring, who served until Rev. Francis Williams was called in 1850; the eighth minister was Rev. Charles C. Vinal from 1857 to 1870, and he was succeeded by Rev. John H. Clifford.

The Trinitarian Congregational Church was organized at North Andover, September, 1834, by a small company of men and women who came out of the Congregational church, which had become Unitarian in its belief. The present membership is 300, and the Sunday school has an attendance of about 140 pupils. Reginald Andrews is present superintendent. The church edifice is of wood, erected in 1865, and to replace it an expenditure of $50,000 would have to be made. It contains a fine, expensive pipe organ among its fixtures. The pastors have been as follows: Revs. Jesse Page, seven years; L. H. Cobb, D.D., seven years; B. F. Hamilton, seven years; R. C. Flagg, five years; George Pierce, three years; H. H. Leavitt, eleven years; H. E. Barnes, D.D., five years; and J. L. Keedy, sixteen years, and still pastor.

---

## CHAPTER XXX.

## TOWN OF MERRIMAC.

The history of the town of Merrimac extends back only to 1876, at which date it was separated from the West Parish of Amesbury. It is situated on the north side of the Merrimac river, for which it was named. Its territory is about two and one-half by three miles in extent, and is bounded on the four sides by the Merrimac river, the city of Haverhill, the New Hampshire line, and the town of Amesbury, from which its territory was carved. Here one finds plains, valleys, hills, and the majestic flow of the Merrimac river, all vying with each other to make charming the landscape scene—a thing of beauty, which it has been said is a joy forever. No wonder a Whittier could have been produced here, for poetic inspiration seems on every hand.

There is no record showing the exact date of the coming of the first settlers to this part of Essex county. It is known that Edward Cottle was a settler here very early, if not indeed before anyone else. Samuel Foot and John Pressey came respectively in 1659 and 1664. Henry Tuxbury, Thomas Nichols, John Grimpsen and Thomas Sargent had all settled here before 1670, while the Allens, Fowlers and Morses were known to have been here in 1700. Merrimac at an early day was known as Jamico, and was not known as Merrimac for fully a century. After it was considered safe on account of supposed Indian raids, and along about the opening years of the eighteenth century, the settlement was increased by the coming of the Davis, Clement and Kelly families; and about 1722 others came, including Abraham Merrill, from Newbury, and his three men—grown sons, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. But before these had settled it has been found that a grant of land was issued to Thomas Harvey, a ship-carpenter and builder; his settlement was in 1666. Perhaps no better list of early immigrants and actual settlers

in this part of the county can be given than to take the names of those who united in the support of their church in 1726:

Abraham Merrill, David Sargent, Jonathan Sargent, Samuel, Jr., Henry Dow, Benoy Tucker, Elias Colby, Philip Sargent, Jr., Richard Goodwin, Philip Sargent, Timothy Sargent, Samuel Poore, Jacob Sargent, Jr., Henry Trussell Jedidiah Titcomb, Samuel Foot, Joseph Harvey, Jonathan Cleark, Jacob Pressey, Daniel Sargent, Samuel Davies, William Davies, Joseph Lanckester, John Pressey, William Fowler, Ezekiel Colby, Thomas Beedle, Samuel Colby, Jr., Jonathan Davies, Jo Davis, John Bartlett, Jr., Abner Whittier, Ephriam Pembert, John Pressey, Nathaniel Merrill, Micah Lanckester, Joseph Bartlett, Eben Aboot, Nehemiah Heath, Samuel Dilver, Thomas Beedle, Jr., James Ordway, John Ordway, William Sargent, Jr., Joseph Pregett, Jeremiah Fowler, Joseph Currier, John Bartlett, Sr., John Hoyt, Abner Brown, Eph Davies, Samuel Hunt, Samuel Hadley, Thomas Stevens, Jr., Jacob Sargent, Titus Wells, Samuel Juell, Thom Colby, Nathaniel Tucker, Thomas Bartlett, John Fowler, Thomas Wells.

Benjamin Hadley, Jacob Hoyt, Thomas Davis, Joseph Hadley, William Pressey, Charles Sargent, Philip Rowell, Samuel Martin, Joseph Moody, Thomas Rowel, Timothy Colby, John Harvey, David Coope, Joseph Collins, William Moulton, John Davies, Joseph Shoort, Thomas Dow, Benjamin Tucker, Francis Davies, John Straw, Richard Kelley, John Nichols, John Blasdell, Jonathan Ferrin, Henry Trussell, Jonathan Kelley, Israel Young, Thomas Fowler, Cap. John Foot, Charles Sargent, C. Feavor, Jonathan Colby, John Martin, George Hadley, A. Colby, D. Hoyt, Jo. Sargent, Ezra Tucker, John Lanckester, John Foot, Jr., Jonathan Clement, Jonah Fowler, Jonathan Nichols, Nathaniel Davies, John Whittier, Samuel Stevens, William Harvey, John Sargent, Chas. Allen, Timothy Hoyt, John Hunt, Isaac Colby, Robert Ring, Jo Davies, Jr., Isaac Rogers, P. Call, Jas. Dow, V. Rowell, Andre Rowen, Robt. Beedle.

In 1824 a postoffice was established in West Amesbury, with Edmund Sargent as postmaster. In 1857 a postoffice was established at River Village, with Ebenezer Fullington as postmaster. Of recent years the postmasters in Merrimac have been as follows: George Prescott, Alexander Smart, died, and was succeeded by his widow; then George Ricker, and present postmaster, Martin B. Crane, since October, 1913. This office has one rural free delivery route, connected with Amesbury also. Business last year was $4,200.

Merrimac was incorporated in 1876, approved by the governor on April 11, of that year. The first selectmen chosen were: William H. Haskell, S. S. Blodgett, Alexander Smart. In keeping good his word, William P. Sargent, then of Boston, donated a newly built town hall which cost $20,000. This stands on a lot donated by Messrs. Haskell, Goodwin, Poyen Gunnison and Clement. Sargent's Hall was dedicated in the autumn of 1876. Donations were made: For land for cemetery purposes by J. A. Lancaster; a thousand volumes toward establishing a public library, by Dr. J. R. Nichols, and the town gave the funds for the erection of a suitable tablet to the memory of William P. Sargent, who gave the town hall.

The municipal affairs of the town have been faithfully administered with the passing years, by good and efficient men. The town owns its water work and electric light plants and is fully up to the standard

in educational matters. The 1920-21 town officers include the following: Selectmen and Overseers of the Poor: Homer R. Sargent, James F. Pease and George B. Crofut; Assessors: Frank E. Bartlett, Willis H. Scott, Herbert N. Noyes; Town Clerk, Clifton B. Heath; Town Treasurer, Frank E. Walker; Auditor, A. Raymond Waterhouse; Collector of Taxes, Fred W. George; Constables: James P. Donahue, Fred O. Bailey, Leon N. Dow; Inspector of Animals, Charles E. Welch; Inspector of Slaughtering, Charles E. Welch; Inspector of Wires, Warren A. Bailey; Sealer of Weights and Measures, Edward S. McKay; Tree Warden, Charles R. Ford; Forest Warden, Charles R. Ford; Burial Agent, John E. Bean; Superintendent of Streets, Edward F. Goodwin; Engineers of Fire Department, John W. Growcut, Roswell J. Eaton, Willard L. Fowle; Sworn Weighers: Byran H. Sargent, Alice J. Hoyt and Edward S. Preble; Fish Warden, Forrest A. Morse; Moderator, Clarence O. Libby.

The town is well supplied with churches and lodges, which organizations are mentioned elsewhere in this work. The churches include the Baptist, the Church of the Nativity, the Pilgrim Congregational, and the Methodist Episcopal churches.

In 1921 the town of Merrimac supported the following industries: Automobile and carriage body manufactures—J. B. Judkins & Company, Merrimac Body Company, Walker Body Company. Carriage makers—William F. Carter; Heel makers—James M. Cushman; Wood Heel Company. Bankers—Merrimac Savings Bank, First National Bank, Economy Co-operative Bank.

At one period or another, the factory interests in what is now Merrimac have been quite extensive. In the early days of Amesbury, agriculture was the chief occupation of its people, but later saw mills and catching the salmon and sturgeon became a larger industry; then ship-building commenced in the West Parish. At a very early period brick-making was a business of no small importance in Merrimac, as understood today. A trade with the West Indies was also one of considerable proportion. At Merrimacport, earthenware was made as early as 1790. Among the makers of such ware was James Chase, and later his son Phineas; subsequently came Smith Sargent, in about 1825. Tanneries and coopershops were common away back in the twenties and thirties. In 1883 the Bay State Felt Boot and Shoe Company, under a patent process, commenced to produce felt-foot wear. From 1885 on many years this company produced 12,000 cases of shoes per year.

Carriage-making has usually been counted the great manufacturing business of Merrimac. In 1887 the following paragraph shows the output of vehicles in Merrimac to have been as indicated by firms:

H. G. and H. W. Stevens began in 1869; carriages, 415; carriages repaired, 600; value, $185,000; men employed, 100. J. A. Landcaster & Co. began in 1858; carriages, 438; sleighs, 112; value, $70,000; men employed, 30. Clement & Young began in 1884; carriages, 75; value $18,000; men employed, 12. John B. Judkins & Son, began in 1857; carriages, 200; value, $80,000; men employed, 50. William O.

Smiley began in 1882; carriages, 75; value, $12,000; men employed, eight. Loud Bros. began in 1866; carriages, 200; sleighs, 125; value $82,000; men employed, 32. C. H. Noyes & Son began in 1845; carriages, 90; value, $18,000 men employed, ten. S. C. Pease & Sons, began in 1861 carriages, 300; value, $100,000; men employed, 42. Samuel Schofield & Son began in 1879; carriages, 75; value $18,000; men employed, 11. Harmer & Doucet began in 1873; carriages, 175; value, $74,000; men employed, 50.

Daniel M. Means began in 1881 carriages, 75; sleighs, 15; value, $15,000; men employed, 12. Moses G. Clement & Son began business in 1849; carriages, 200; sleighs, 60; value, $45,000; men employed, 19. George Adams & Sons began in 1857; number carriages, 200; sleighs, 100; value $35,000; men employed, eighteen. H. M. Howe (late Hough & Clough) began in 1879; carriages, 75; value, $20,000; men employed, 15. C. E. Gunnison & Co., began business in 1879; carriages, 250; men employed, 20; value, $35,000. At Merrimacport—William Chase & Son began in 1838; carriages, 50; sleighs, ten; value, $15,000; men employed, 11. Willis P. Sargent began in 1854; carriages, 40; value, $6,000; men employed, 3. George Gunnison began in 1882; carriages, 50; value, $9,000 men employed, 7. A. M. Colby began in 1868; carriages, 150; sleighs, 40; value, $30,000; men employed, 19.

Different manufacturers made their own style of vehicles, some plain and some fancy, some cheap and others high-priced One shop made gears, while others made bodies, and another set of shops ironed, and still others were engaged in painting wagons and sleighs.

The first application of machinery these shops made to any considerable extent was when John F. Foster engaged in the business. In 1867 he formed a partnership with Henry Howe in the manufacture of wheels. In 1870 the plant was burned to the ground, and within forty-nine days it was rebuilt and in operation again. Here about five thousand sets of wheels were produced annually. February 17, 1882, the firm of Foster & Prescott lost their entire works by fire, and never rebuilt. All, in all, the carriage and sleigh factories here have been the commercial life of the town for a large number of years in its history.

Like so many New England towns, Merrimac's history would hardly be complete without mentioning the fact that there were many years when boot and shoe factories flourished here abundantly as well as in most of the towns in the county. Moses Goodrich and Charles Sargent made boots and James B. Hoyt made shoes on quite an extensive scale.

The population of Amesbury in 1875, the year before it was separated and Merrimac was formed, was 1,987; in 1880 it was stated by the United States census reports that Amesbury had a population of 3,355; in 1885 it was 4,403; in 1880 the population of Merrimac was 2,237; in 1885 it was 2,878; in 1900 Merrimac had 2,131; in 1910 it was 2,202; in 1920 it was 2,173.

The church history of Merrimac would require a volume of itself, but it must suffice to give the reader of this work a brief outline of the various religious societies, which here follows:

The first pastor of the first Congregational church here was Rev. Paine Wingate, who was ordained in June, 1726, and continued to serve over the parish for almost sixty years, when called by death; his wife

followed to the better world two years later, both being beloved by all.

A new meeting house was erected in 1787, and a year later Rev. Francis Welch was settled as a pastor at a salary of £80 per year. He died in 1793 and was succeeded by Rev. David Smith, who was succeeded in time by Rev. Samuel Mead, of Danvers, in 1804. He remained until his death in 1818 and was followed by Rev. P. S. Eaton, who was dismissed in 1837, when Lucius W. Clark became pastor, and under his care and administration another church building was erected in 1839. At his own request he was dismissed in 1842. Henry B. Smith was the next pastor, and he was followed in 1827 by Rev. Albert Paine, who in 1854 was succeeded by Rev. Leander Thompson, of Providence. He remained until dismissed in 1867, and was followed by Rev. Lewis Gregory, who was dismissed in 1875, after whom came Rev. W. H. Hubbard, who was pastor until 1883. The next to serve in this pulpit was Rev. Thomas M. Miles, who became pastor in 1884 and was succeeded by Rev. George L. Todd in 1892; Rev. James W. Flagg came in 1901; Charles W. Legg came in 1918, and is still pastor. There are now 347 members, and a Sunday school attendance of 260 pupils. Herbert E. Whitney is the present superintendent.

The first church was erected in 1724, two years before organization; the second was built in 1787; the third in 1839; the fourth in 1860, and still serves. Its value is $20,000; parish-house, $5,000; additions, $3,000; total value $28,000.

Until 1836 this Congregational church was the only church organization within the borders of what is now Merrimac. That year the Universalist church was formed, and the next year a house of worship provided. Rev. Eldredge Brooks was the first pastor of this society.

The Baptist Society at Merrimac was organized in 1849 at the house of Levi Williams. What is now Merrimacport was then known as the river village of West Amesbury, and the church referred to was until 1857 called the West Amesbury Baptist Church. The charter membership included thirty-seven persons. It belonged to the Salem Baptist Association, and Nathaniel S. Pinkham, of Concord, New Hampshire, was its first pastor.

Another Baptist church was formed in the central village of Merrimac in 1867, with eighteen members; a neat church edifice was erected in 1869. The first pastor was Rev. W. H. Kling. The charter members were Job Hoyt, Daniel Gould, George H. Swasey, Gilman S. Hoyt, B. A. Kelley, Mercy Powell, George B. Hoyt, George H. Swasey, Jr., Ellen N. Gould, Hannah P. Hoyt, Eunice Gould, Frances Swasey, Mary C. Hoyt, Anne E. Kelley, Sarah B. Osgood, F. C. Poyen, Frances A. Swasey and Carrie T. Kelley. The present membership is 133, with a Sunday School attendance of 130. The superintendent is Justin E. Moulton. The value of church property is estimated at $9,600. The following have been pastors in about the order given: Revs. S. D. Ashley, J. H. Cox, H. A. Cor-

nell, George A. Williams, Silas Morse, Wesley L. Smith, John H. Tidd, and the present pastor, Rev. Henry Schwab.

The Methodist Society at Merrimacport was formed in 1875, and Rev. Dinsmore commenced to preach in a hall in December of that year. He became the first regular pastor appointed to the place by the annual conference.

The Catholic people of West Amesbury (now Merrimac) first held services in Mechanic's Hall in 1870. At the time of organization the congregation had a membership of one hundred and fifty communicants. In 1884 it built a church building on Green street, and in 1887 was reported as having almost 400 members.

The secret orders in Merrimac consist of the Masons, Odd Fellows, Grand Army of the Republic, and several beneficiary societies. The Masonic lodge was instituted A. L. 5869. Riverside Lodge, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was instituted December 3, 1875, and dedicated a handsome lodge room hall in May, 1887. The Colonel C. R. Mudge Post, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized December 20, 1869, under Commander Alexander Smart. In 1882 a Woman's Relief Corps was organized with thirty members. In 1883 the Merrimac branch of the Irish National League of America, No. 326, was formed. These orders are all flourishing today.

---

## CHAPTER XXXI.

## TOWN OF METHUEN

The town of Methuen is situated in the west part of Essex county, bordering on New Hampshire, and contains about twenty-two square miles. Before the incorporation of the city of Lawrence it was a section of land on the north bank of the Merrimack river, about nine miles long by three wide, following the curves of the river. The north part of the city of Lawrence was taken out of Methuen on the side next to the river, near the middle of the town, thus leaving the two ends three miles wide, and the middle of the town a little more than a mile at its narrowest part. The towns surrounding Methuen are the city of Lawrence and the town of Andover on the south; Dracut and Salem, New Hampshire, on the west; Salem, New Hampshire, and Haverhill, on the north; and Haverhill and Bradford on the east.

Probably the white man first set foot in Methuen about 1637. The settlers at Ipswich and other places along the coast explored the country before its settlement, to find the most desirable places to locate. About 1640 a dozen or more colonists from Newbury, with Nathaniel Ward, settled at Haverhill, where the city proper now stands. Two years later they bought of the Indians a tract of land embracing a large part

ABOVE, NEVINS MEMORIAL LIBRARY, METHUEN; BELOW, NEVINS MEMORIAL HOME, METHUEN

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

of what is now Methuen. It is certain that the east and south portions of the town near the river were first occupied, probably on account of the places of Haverhill and Andover being nearer. It is said that while repairing the old "Bodwell House," in what was later Lawrence, a brick was found with the date "1660" which had been marked before the burning of the brick. This really established the fact that there had been a settlement as early as that date. However, it is doubtful whether there were many settlers until Methuen was set off from Haverhill. The Indians had troubles with the whites previous to 1700, and seriously checked, if not entirely prevented, the farm settlements. Andover and Haverhill were both frontier towns by act of the General Court, and both towns suffered severely during the Indian War. Yet there is no account of any Indian battles on the land where the name Methuen applies today. In Andover and West Haverhill, there were many bad attacks, as will be seen by reference to their local histories in this work. Again, it is likely that but few if any settlers were then in Methuen, or the savages would not have passed them by.

In 1712, nine persons living in that part of Haverhill in what is now Methuen petitioned the town to abate their rate for the support of the ministry and the schools, "on account of the great distance they lived from the town, and the difficulty they met with in coming," and the town voted to abate one-half the ministry rates. The names of these persons were Henry Bodwell, John Gutterson, Thomas Austin, Joshua Stephens, Robert Swan, John Cross, William Cross, Robert Swan, Jr., and Joshua Swan.

In order to organize this town, it was ordered by the court "That Mr. Stephen Barker, a principal inhabitant of the Town of Methuen, be and hereby is empowered and directed to notify the inhabitants of the said town, duly qualified for voters, to assemble and meet some time in the month of March, to choose town officers according to law, to stand for the year." In compliance with this order, a meeting was appointed for the ninth of March, 1726. Thus the date of town organization is fixed for Methuen. From that time on until the village of Methuen was changed to that of a city, a few years ago, this town had its governmental affairs carried on about in keeping with all towns in Essex county. After a short duration as a "city," the State Supreme Court decided it was not constitutionally incorporated, and hence it was thrown back as a town, such act going into effect January 8, 1921. At about the date last given, the town had an indebtedness of $576,127.12.

The town officers for 1921 are James H. Lyons, George H. Richardson, selectmen; Henry N. Hall, Howard Hammons and G. L. Butler, assessors; Everett L. Bragdon, street commissioner; John T. Douglas, town clerk; B. Clinton Buswell, treasurer and collector; Josephus Matthews, building inspector; Lewis V. Golden, Louis Barnes and Wil-

liam H. Whitman, water commissioners; Albion G. Pierce, moderator; Alfred H. Wagland, tree warden; Charles R. Bower, Frank A. Sherman and Stephen E. Smith, school committee.

In 1920 the United States census gave the city (now town) of Methuen a population of 15,189. Its schools and churches are treated in general chapters of this work. The great milling industry is coupled largely with that of near-by Lawrence, and has been treated in the city history of that corporation. The chief trading of the people in Methuen goes to Lawrence, with which it is connected by electric cars running every few minutes. The internal improvements of Methuen are fully up to date, and show progress and culture, as well as genuine thrift.

The records show the beginning of church life in Methuen was when "the first church in Methuen was founded by Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Andover, October 29, 1729," as reads the church record kept by Rev. Christopher Sargent during his ministry at that place. This man of God gathered together twenty-four persons, and within a month thirty-five others united with the church. Rev. Sargent was ordained a week later and remained pastor until 1783. He was born in Amesbury in 1704, and graduated from Harvard in 1725. He built up a church of more than five hundred members, and was faithful throughout his pastorate. He died in 1720, and was buried in the old grave-yard on Meeting House Hill, near the church where he had so long labored. Despite his excellent qualities, he could not please all, and in 1766 the records show that a certain number withdrew from this church and established the Second Church of Methuen. Rev. Chapman was ordained pastor of Second Church in 1772; about the same time the "Second Parish" was set off by the legislature, and every taxable person in the parish had to help pay for the support of the ministry. In 1887 this church had a membership of two hundred and fifty.

In 1796 the old meeting-house was torn down and a new one was erected on its site. To show the habits of the times (contrast, please, with today, when we are enforcing the United States Prohibitory Amendment to our National Constitution), the statement that at the church raising "The Spectators be given a drink of grog apiece at the raising." In 1832 the location of the church was no longer considered central, hence it was moved where later stood the stone church, built in 1855. In 1880, through generous gifts, the church was able to construct the handsome stone chapel.

The first Baptist church of Methuen was organized in 1815, and now has a membership of two hundred and sixty-four communicants. The attendance in Sunday school is about one hundred and ten, and the present superintendent is Eugene Strout. It appears there had been a Baptist society in that neighborhood many years before the date just named, but records have long since gone to dust, so it may be as well to start this narrative of the church with the present organization, dating

from 1815. A church was built and dedicated in 1816. Charles O. Kimball served as pastor from 1815 to 1835. The present well-kept church record gives the following list of pastors: Revs. Charles O. Kimball, 1815-35; Addison Parker, 1835-39; Samuel W. Field, 1839-46; Joseph M. Graves, 1847-50; B. L. Bronson, 1850-58; Howard M. Emerson, 1860-62; King S. Hall, 1862-67; N. W. Williams, D. D., 1868-71; Lyman Chase, D. D., 1872-76; T. J. B. House, 1877-83; S. L. B. Chase, 1883-87; Robert McDonald, 1887-91; Nathan Bailey, 1892-02; Frederick Blolssley, 1902-04; Robert B. Fisher, 1905-1912; John Ward Moore, November, 1912, to present. The present church edifice is of wooden material. The building before the present church was burned March 21, 1869. This church now has bequests amounting to nearly $25,000.

Howe Street Baptist Sunday School—In 1913 a chapel was erected in Methuen by the Howe Street Sunday school. It is a wooden structure, and is now valued at about $3,000. It was really built by the school and neighborhood, by earning money in various ways. The Ladies' Sewing Circle gave the fine piano. The expense of carrying on the school has been one-half by the Home Missionary Society, while the people have raised the other half. Services are held nine months of the year, Sunday evenings, with students from the Baptist Seminary acting as preachers. It is designed eventually to organize a regular church at this point.

The Forest Street Union Church was organized June 11, 1913, and now has a membership of one hundred and eighty. A fine Sunday school is conducted, in connection with other church work. Ammi P. Whiton is the present superintendent. A stone edifice was given by the community, people removing their stone walls for building purposes. A large boulder is placed as the corner stone. The land was donated as a memorial to a former resident. The building was dedicated June 7, 1914. Eight or nine denominations are here represented. Not long since a handsome parsonage was provided on land donated by S. E. Smith. The pastors have been Rev. Ernest C. Davis, 1913-20, died April, 1920; Rev. Oliver B. Loud, who began his ministry October, 1920. The charter members were as follows: Clarence E. Young, Mabel A. Young, Ruth B. Young, Elmer E. Young, Ella Robertson, Addington Tobertson, Ina Taylor, James Robinson, Agnes Robinson, George Bennett, Gertrude Bennett, Lonzo S. Crosby, Florena D. Crosby, Seth Lambert, Mary Robinson, Herbert P. Wilkinson, Blanche Wilkinson, Mary E. Blood, J. R. Milton, Mrs. Milton, Jennie Milton, Rosalie Milton, Eva S. Larrivee, Salome S. Larrivee, Nels Mathisson, Catherine Cole, Mary Cole, Evelyn Cole, Annie Hill, Emily J. Cole, Orton M. Flye, Gordon N. Smith, Guy Robinson, Anna McLeod, Althea K. Smith, Stephen E. Smith, Avis F. Smith, Florence S. Smith, Mary Finucane, James W. Allen, Stanley Cokum, Ernest Larrivee, Clarence L. Young, Edith L. Young, Anna I. Giles, Helen B. Gage, Mary V. Davis, Edith C. Davis, Mabel Robinson,

Margaret Warcup, Nellie M. Warcup, Sarah A. Robinson, Charlotte M. Nice, Dorothy E. Bennett, Albert Hill, Dana Bragdon, George Robertson, Van Ness Smith, Olive Smith, Ammi P. Whiton, Laura G. Whiton, Robert P. Burnham, Olivia W. Burnham, Martha Whittier, Lillian Hill, Bina Dowing, John A. Hinsch, Jr., Pauline Hinsch.

Tyler Street Primitive Methodist Church was organized at Methuen, June, 1914, and now has a membership of thirty-seven souls. The Sunday school connected has a membership of sixty-six, with J. W. Hartley as superintendent. A church edifice was erected in 1915, costing $3,000; its present value is about $4,500. The church is without a regular pastor at this time, but is cared for by Rev. J. Holden, pastor of St. George's Primitive Methodist Church.

Emmanuel Primitive Methodist Church was formed in January, 1897, by T. A. Humphries. Among the first members are recalled Thomas White, Lena White, Joseph M. Emsley, Mrs. Joseph M. Emsley, Margaret White, William Craven, Mrs. William Craven. The organization now has a membership of one hundred. The Sunday school has a membership of about two hundred and fifty pupils and teachers, with William White as superintendent. A chapel was built in 1903 and a schoolroom in 1914. In 1908 the parsonage was purchased. The present value of church property is $20,000. A ten thousand feet tract of land was donated by Alfred Newsholm. The chapel and about fifty thousand feet of land were given by Edward F. Searles.

About 1833 an Episcopal church was formed in Methuen, but it appears to have been short-lived. It held its meetings in Wilson Hall. In 1878 another Episcopal church was organized, under the name of St. Thomas,' and a church building was erected on Broadway, near the Lawrence line. The first rector was Rev. Belno A. Brown. In the eighties the church was in charge of Rev. Thomas De Learsy. Concerning the present organization no data have been furnished by the authorities of the church.

The Roman Catholic denomination has always been strong in Methuen. For many years the people attended church at Lawrence. In January, 1878, a movement was made by leading Catholics of Methuen and approved by the priest at Lawrence, to establish religious services. The town hall was engaged and served as a meeting house for many years. From the beginning, Father Marsden was officiating priest. Later pastors included Father O'Farrell, Father Riley, Father O'Connell, Father Rowan and Father Murphy. In 1887 the congregation numbered four hundred souls. At present there are two Catholic churches—St. Monica's, and the French Catholic church—both in a prosperous condition.

The Universalist society was organized in Methuen in 1824. At first services were irregular and were held in school houses and in the old McKay building. A church edifice was erected, so as to be dedicated

in July, 1836. The first settled minister was Rev. John A. Gurley. In 1871 the church building was remodelled, and the surrounding grounds were greatly improved. The society is still one of the numerous religious bodies of the city.

A former history of this place gives the following facts concerning the establishment of the Methodist denomination in Methuen:

> We are informed that the Methodists first held meetings in Methuen in 1834 or 1835. They occasionally occupied the Second Parish meeting-house, and held meetings in the school-houses, but after the institution of regular religious services they occupied "Wilson's Hall." The building used in 1886 as a school-house, on Lowell street, was built by them for a meeting-house, and occupied several years, until the establishment of a Methodist church and society in the new city of Lawrence drew off a portion of the members, and so weakened the society in Methuen that it was thought best to sell the building. After the sale of the meeting-house no regular services were held in Methuen by that denomination until 1853 or 1854, when a reorganization was effected and religious services were held in the library room in the town hall. As the society increased in numbers, more commodious quarters were needed, and the society held their meetings in the town hall until 1871, when a meeting-house was built at the junction of Lowell and Pelham streets. John Barnes, of Lawrence, was the first pastor after the reorganization. Since then, Methodism has prospered in the city and today there are two societies—the Methodist Episcopal and Oakland Methodist churches, both doing excellent service.

An officer of the First Methodist Episcopal Church, as above described, gives the author the following list of pastors, serving in order given: Revs. J. W. F. Barnes, 1853-54; Charles Young, 1855-56; Elijah Mason, 1857; Nathaniel Chase, 1858; John L. Trefen, 1859-60; Charles R. Harding, 1861; J. B. Holman, 1862-63; William Hewes, 1864; D. W. Downs, 1865; L. L. Eastman, 1866-68; James Noyes, 1869-71; G. I. Judkins, 1872-74; C. A. Cressey, 1875-76; F. C. Farnham, 1877-78; J. W. Walker, 1879-80; O. S. Baketel, 1881-83; H. H. French, 1884-85; Alex. McGregor, 1886-89; T. G. Mellor, 1889-90; George H. Spencer, 1890-93; J. W. Adams, 1894-96; Wesley J. Wilkins, 1897-1900; W. T. Boultonhouse, 1900-03; W. F. Ineson, 1903-05; R. T. Wolcott, 1905-07; William Thompson, 1907-09; William B. Locke, 1909-12; Charles W. Martin, 1912-14; R. E. Thompson, 1914-16; G. N. Dorr, 1916-20; J. R. Dinsmore, 1920, and present pastor.

The present church building was erected in 1870. The present membership is 196, with a Sunday school attendance of 191.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

## CHAPTER XXXII.

## THE CITY OF SALEM

Salem was first settled in 1626. Much concerning its original settlement has been treated in Dr. Frank A. Gardner's excellent original article, "The Story of the Planters," which forms a genesis for this work. Dr. Gardner's contribution refers chiefly to Salem prior to 1630, hence the writer of this chapter will not attempt to go back to an earlier date concerning what may be recorded in the history of Salem, in this, the latest history of Essex county.

At first, Salem township comprised all territory now embraced within the towns of Beverly, Danvers, Manchester, Marblehead, Middleton, Peabody, a part of Topsfield, Wenham and Lynn. This obtained until 1637. Lynn was set off in 1637; the first free school was taught in 1641; Wenham was set off in 1643, Manchester in 1645, Marblehead in 1649, Topsfield in 1650, Beverly in 1668, Middleton in 1728, Danvers (also Peabody) in 1752.

The deed of Salem was secured from the Indians for the sum of £40 sterling in 1686. The area of the city, in acres, is now 5,100. The City Hall was constructed in 1838; City Charter accepted April 4, 1836.

The settlement of Salem may be dated 1626, when Roger Conant and his faithful companions, leaving Cape Ann, took up their temporary residences at Naumkeag, as Salem was at first styled, or it may be dated September 6, 1628 (old style), when John Endicott cast anchor in Salem harbor, as governor of the colony, sent out by the Massachusetts Company in London, of which Matthew Cradock was governor, to make a permanent settlement on the shores of Massachusetts Bay. As the city has the date 1626 inscribed upon the face of its seal, that will be the date for the purpose at hand, from which this historical record will begin.

Salem, as well as Plymouth, Massachusetts, was never incorporated as a town. It was recognized from the first by the court held at Charlestown, August 23, 1630, as a distinct plantation or town, and was exempt from the common charge for the support of the ministry, which office was then held by Rev. Mr. Wilson. Its charter as a town was not questioned upon the arrival of Winthrop in 1630, but its bounds were not yet defined. This was effected in the month of March, 1635.

As has been noted already, Salem never passed through the process of being created into a town in the municipal sense, but was so recognized from the first of its history. By an act passed by the General Court, the town of Salem chose, at a meeting held on June 19, 1637, a "committee of twelve to manage the affairs of the town." These men were Messrs. Hathorne, Bishop, Connaught, Gardner, John Woodbury, Peter Palfrey, Daniel Ray, Robert Moulton, Scruggs, Jeffry Massy, John Balch and John Holgrave. The "Connaught" mentioned was, in fact,

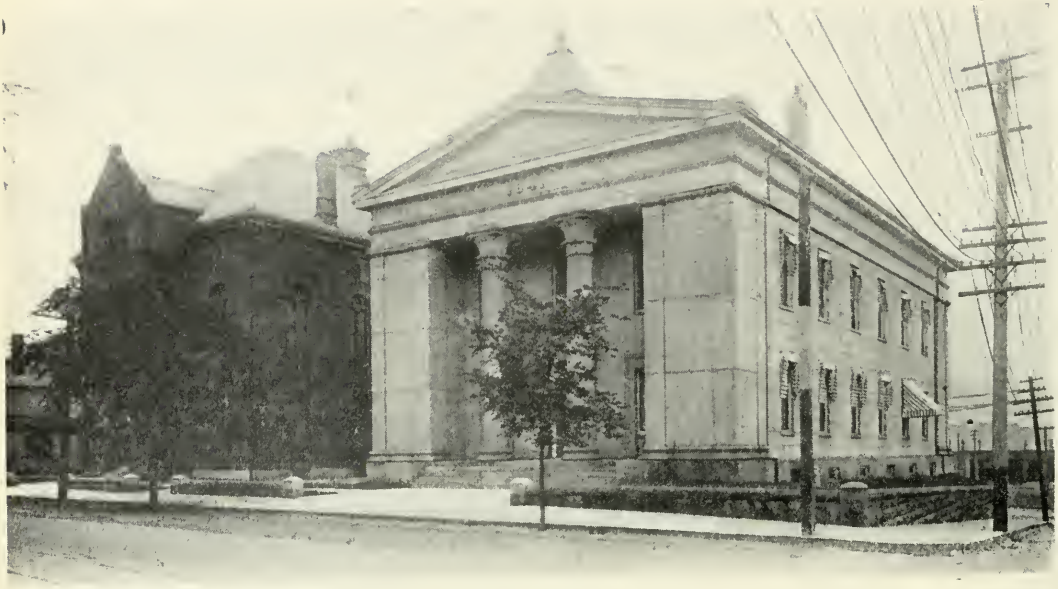
Roger Conant, founder of the city, his name, with others, being spelled differently then than at a later date. At a general town meeting in December, 1638, seven men were chosen for the managing of the affairs of the town—Messrs. Endicott, Hathorne, Conant, John Woodbury, Laurence Leech, Jeffry Massy, and John Balch, says the record. From 1648 the "Seven Men," as they were called before, were known thereafter as "Selectmen." In early times town meetings were held in the church of the First Parish. This building stood near the southeasterly corner of Washington and Essex streets, and was erected in 1634. A town building was built in 1677 exclusively for town purposes; this was in the middle of School street, now Washington, near what was later known as Lynde street, and faced the south. The upper part was built for a courthouse, and there the Court of Oyer and Terminer, organized by Governor Phipps in 1692 for the trial of witches, was held. In 1719 a second town and court house was erected on Washington street, near the southerly end of the railway tunnel. Here the General Court met, October 31, 1728, and April and May, as well as in June, 1729. This was the place of holding court, from the fact that Governor Burnet believed that undue influence was exerted in Boston against a grant for his salary. The lands within the territory of Salem were originally held by the freemen of the town, and all grants were made by them. Messrs. Osgood and Batchelder, in their history of Salem in 1879, said:

> With increasing population, this method of holding the lands became unwieldy and cumbersome, and in 1713 the then owners of the common lands under the province laws became organized into a quasi corporation with the title of Commoners. In 1713 the Commoners granted all the highways and burying places and common lands lying within the town bridge and block-houses to remain forever for the use of the town of Salem, and the Common was then dedicated forever as a training field. In 1714 the Commoners, at a meeting held at the meeting-house of the First Parish in Salem, voted that Winter Island be wholly removed and granted for the use of the fishing rights to use the same to be let by the Selectmen of Salem; and the same year the Neck lands were granted and reserved to the town of Salem for a pasture for milk cows and riding horses, the same to be fenced at the town's charge.
>
> In 1722-23, February 26, the Grand Committee of the Commoners, who had charge of affairs, reported the whole number of rights to be 1,132, and the number of acres held 3,733. Several distinct proprietaries were formed under an act of the Colonial legislature; and the Commoners of the two lower parishes, having 790 rights and 2,500 acres of land lying between Spring Pond and Forest River, organized themselves into a corporation. This organization continued until 1855, when they were incorporated into the Great Pasture Company, and by that company the last of the common lands, about 400 acres in extent, are now held.

In the early part of 1836 an effort was made to change from a town to a city government. The population of Salem was then 15,886. Its property valuation the year before was $8,250,000, and the amount raised for county and town purposes was $40,391.

The amount of tonnage of vessels owned in the district, which in-

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS



ABOVE, COURT HOUSE, SALEM. BELOW, CUSTOM HOUSE

cluded Beverly, was about 35,000. This consisted of thirty ships, twelve barks, seventy brigs, one hundred and twenty-four schooners and fourteen sloops. The town appeared like a city, though its government was not like the latter. It had a police court and its lawyers were numerous. After the presentation of a petition by George Peabody, and it having been favorably received, at a town meeting held February 15, 1836, the committee voted that it was expedient to take on a city form of government, and a committee was chosen for that purpose, as follows: Joseph Peabody, Benjamin Merrill, Gideon Barstow, Eben Shillaber, Isaac Cushing and Nathaniel J. Lord. This committee was to act with the original committeemen, three from each ward in the town of Salem. An act to "establish the city of Salem" was approved by Edward Everett, Governor, March 23, 1836, and warrants were immediately issued, calling a town meeting to be held April 4th. At such meeting the moderator was Benjamin Merrill, and when the vote was taken to accept or reject the proposed city charter, there were 802 votes cast, of which 617 were in the affirmative. April 25th the same year, an election was held to determine who should be the first mayor of the new city. There were 1104 votes cast, and Leverett Saltonstall received 752, Perley Putnam 260, George Peabody 56, and David Putnam 36. The organization of the city government took place in the Tabernacle Church, Monday, May 9, when, after prayer by Rev. Dr. Brazer, and the administration of the oath of office by David Cummins, one of the justices of the Court of Common Pleas, the mayor-elect delivered his address. Thus it was that the second incorporated city in the Commonwealth had its city government set in motion, and it has been administering by its executive authority and power ever since.

Not until about three years after the organization of the "City of Salem" did it have any legal seal, but finally, after considerable agitation, the fixing the date which should be thereon, and other conditions, as suggested by George Peabody, who made the principal design for the city's seal, it was adopted March 11, 1639. The same emblem is in use today, it being somewhat unique and expressive of conditions as they existed when the shipping and foreign trade was much greater than today.

Under the three city charters, the first adopted in 1836, the second in November, 1912, and the present one adopted January 3, 1916, the following have served as mayors of the municipality of Salem: 1836-38, Leverett Saltonstall; 1838-42, Stephen C. Phillips; 1842-45, Stephen C. Webb; 1845-49, Joseph S. Cabot; 1849-51, Nathaniel Silsbee, Jr.; 1851-52, David Pingree; 1852, George W. Upham; 1852-54, Asahel Huntington; 1854, Joseph Williams; 1855, Joseph Andrew; 1856-57, Wm. E. Messervy; 1858-60, Nathaniel Silsbee; 1860-63, Stephen P. Webb; 1864-65, Stephen G. Wheatland; 1865, Joseph B. F. Osgood; 1866-67, David Roberts; 1867-70, William Cogswell; 1870-74, Nathaniel Brown; 1874-76, Henry L. Williams; 1876-80, Henry K. Oliver; 1880-82, Samuel Calley;

1882-85, William M. Hill; 1885-89, John M. Raymond; 1889-93, Robert S. Rantoul; 1893-99, James H. Turner; 1899, David M. Little; 1899-1902, John F. Hurley; 1902-05, Joseph N. Peterson; 1905-07, Thomas G. Pinnock; 1907-09, John F. Hurley; 1909, Arthur Howard; 1909-12, Rufus D. Adams; 1912, John F. Hurley; 1914, Matthias J. O'Keefe; 1915, Henry P. Benson; 1917, Dennis J. Sullivan to present date, 1921.

It should be said that the present city government of Salem is what is known as the "commission form of government," and has been such since January 3, 1916. The manner of electing its officers is as follows: "The city election is held on the Tuesday next following the first Monday in December. In the year 1919 and every second year thereafter, there is to be elected a mayor and five councillors at large for a term of two years from the first Monday in January following. In the year 1920, and every second year thereafter, there is to be elected one member of the city council from each ward in the city for a term of two years, from the first Monday in January following. In each year there is to be elected two members of the school committee at large for a term of three years, from the first Monday in January following."

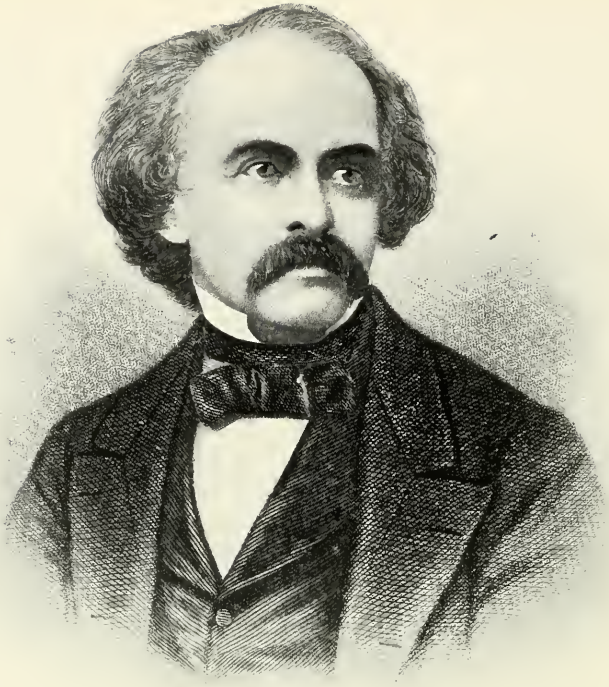
The last mayor under the charter of 1912 was Henry P. Benson, and the first under the 1916 (present form of city government) was Dennis J. Sullivan. The 1921 city officers include the following: Dennis J. Sullivan; councillors, Frederick W. Broadhead (president), G. Arthur Bodwell, Emile Brunet, Michael J. Doyle, John H. Greeley, Albert Pierce, Michael E. Ryan, William O. Safford, Omer P. Theriault, S. Herbert Wilkins, John M. Wilson; J. Clifford Entwisle, city clerk. The assessors are Charles J. Collins (chairman), Joseph F. Hudon, William E. Symonds, with six assistants. The mayor receives a salary of $3,000; the city clerk, $2,400; councillors, $500; assessors, $1,500 to $1,700; city engineer, $3,000; city marshal, $2,275.

The assessors' reports show as follows: Value of personal estate, $8,288,560; real estate, $35,271,275; buildings, $24,169,925; lands, $11,101,350; total real estate and personal, $43,448,523; tax-rate 1920 per $1,000, $28.20; tax on polls, $21,204; total amount raised by taxation, $1,341,646; expended for city purposes, $1,167,646; expended for county tax, $73,230; expended for State tax, $100,769; number residents assessed, 5,663; non-residents assessed, 461; horses assessed, 558; cows assessed, 65; dwelling houses assessed, 5,474; acres of land assessed, 5,100.

The sum collected and paid into the treasury of the city in 1920 was $1,451,186; bonded debt outstanding, $2,580,500; temporary loans outstanding, $400,000; tax overlay (1919), $15,000; total credits, $3,184,000; treasurer's balance, $323,783; balance net debt, $2,280,000; present borrowing capacity, $177,773.

Until the great shipping, fishing and ocean trade had virtually left Salem for other ports of the world, its population was almost entirely

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS



Nath Hawthorne

BIRTHPLACE OF HAWTHORNE

English blood, but times changed, and in a few years other nationalities settled there, so that today it has a mixed population, some of almost every race and division of the human family. The United States census gives the total population from 1850 to the present date as follows: In 1855 (no government report at hand for 1850), 20,934; in 1860, 22,252; in 1870, 24,117; in 1880, 27,598; in 1890, 30,801; in 1900, 35,956; in 1910, 43,697; and in 1920, 42,529.

Salem's many well known men include Alexander Graham Bell, inventor of the Bell telephone system; Nathaniel Bowditch, the great navigator; Nathaniel Hawthorne, author of "Scarlet Letter," etc.; General James Miller, of Lundy's Lane, collector of customs in Salem when Hawthorne was surveyor of the port; Joseph E. Worcester, author of "Worcester's Dictionary" and other works; Story, Benson and Rogers, celebrated sculptors.

The first practical system to supply Salem with water was conceived in 1796. Those interested in the scheme met at the old Sun Tavern. As a result, a charter was secured March 9, 1797, under the style of the "Proprietors of the Salem and Danvers Aqueduct." This provided that the towns of Danvers and Salem should have the right to place conductors into the pipes for the purpose of drawing such water therefrom as might be necessary, "when any mansion, house or barn or other building" should be on fire, without paying therefor. This company was legally organized April 7, 1797. William Gray, Jr., was president, and Jacob Ashton, vice-president. The fixed capital was $10,000, divided into one hundred shares of $100 each. At first, the system consisted of a large hogshead sunk into the spongy ground near Brown's and Spring pond, pine logs with three-inch bore, and a reservoir on Gallows Hill, ten feet deep and twenty-four feet square. This work was finished in the spring of 1799, and water was supplied to families at five dollars per year. In 1802 a new fountain was constructed, and water was piped to Gray's Wharf and sold at a shilling a hogshead. In 1804 the old logs were replaced by new ones with five-inch bore. About 1817 another reservoir had to be made to meet the demands. In 1855 there were not less than sixty town pumps in various streets. In 1834 another company was incorporated, but owing to the old company cutting the water rates, it never operated. That year the first iron water pipes here were laid at a cost of $5,000. This company was later reorganized and continued to make improvements until 1860, when it had in use forty miles of pipe, thirty-six hundred takers, and reservoirs holding over a million gallons of water. But still there was not enough water, so the citizens had a bill passed by the legislature, calling "for the necessary steps to procure from them the power to establish city water works." This was accomplished, and contracts were let in February, 1866, for the construction of such water-works. About one million dollars had been spent before these were completed. Wenham Lake was the chief source

for obtaining the water. As the decades passed by, the city grew, the demand for more water and better water caused improvements to be made until the present time, when the water department now shows the area of Wenham Lake to be 251 acres; watershed of Longham Brook, 1,716 acres; daily pumping capacity, 25,000,000 gallons; 65 miles of pipes; size of reservoir, 400 square feet; capacity of reservoir, 20,000,000 gallons; elevation above high water, 142 feet. A canal from the Ipswich river furnishes much of the water used by Salem.

The Salem Fire Department consists of the following permanent members: One chief, one deputy chief, eight captains, two lieutenants, one surveyor of motor apparatus, one mechanician, one aid to chief, and 32 members or privates; total force of 79. The apparatus consists of a Reo roadster, a Buick roadster, triple combination pumping engine, combination engine, combination chemical engine with Booster pump, two combination chemical engines, city service ladder truck, aerial ladder truck, steam fire engine, hose wagons; fire alarms, about 400; value of property involved, $1,212,000; amount of insurance, $1,000,000; amount of loss by fire, $55,265.

It costs the city $38,000 per year for its electric lighting, the same being paid to a private corporation under a ten-year contract that expires in 1926.

The Public Library was secured through the acceptance of the gift of the heirs of Captain John Bertram, who bequeathed his late residence on Essex street in 1887 to the city of Salem, provided they should incorporate and raise certain funds. This was carried out by the issue of bonds amounting to $25,000. The library was thrown open to the public in July, 1889. There are now over 70,000 volumes. This property is in the hands of seven trustees, six elected for life, and the acting mayor making up the list. There are now three branches of this library, situated in different sections of Salem.

One of the most valuable, as well as famous, institutions in the city of Salem is the Essex Institute. This institution, centrally located, was formed by the merging of the old Essex Historical Society and the Essex County Natural History Society, in February, 1848. The Essex Historical Society was founded by incorporation in 1821, a century ago. The other society was formed in 1836. In the Institute there are now in round numbers a half million volumes, exclusive of booklets and periodicals. Its museum contains an immense collection of rare and beautiful paintings, engravings, medals, coins, currency and relics. In the rear of the Institute building proper one finds a well-preserved building erected in 1684, an old-time shoe-maker's shop, and many other interesting objects. During the winter months scientific lectures are given by the Institute; also a series of concerts. To be appreciated, one must need visit and revisit this wonderland of books and works of art. The location of the Institute is Nos. 132-34 Essex street.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

ABOVE, OLD EAST INDIA MARINE HALL AND PEABODY MUSEUM, SALEM.
BELOW, MARINE ROOM, PEABODY MUSEUM

The Peabody Museum, with its unique collection of treasured objects from various parts of the globe, was organized in 1868, having received funds by the generous gift in 1867 from the philanthropist George Peabody, a native of Danvers, this county. He was born in 1795, and died in London in 1869. The object in his gift was to "Promote Science and Useful Knowledge in the County of Essex." A recent account of this institution, in brief, is as follows:

Under the instrument of trust, East India Marine Hall (erected in 1824) was purchased and refitted and the Museum of the East India Marine Society (begun in 1799) and the Natural Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, (begun in 1834) received by the trustees as permanent deposits, were placed therein. Other rare and valuable collections have been added, especially the Marine and Oriental departments. The institution contains departments known as the Entrance Corridor, Marine Room, Hall of Natural History, Hall of Ethnology, the Weld Hall, etc. About seventy thousand visitors are to be seen here annually. It is sustained wholly by the fund set aside by the generous Peabody, who "never did things by halves." This museum is located at No. 161 Essex street, and is in charge of "The Trustees of the Peabody Museum."

The following score and more of institutions are situated in the city of Salem, all speaking well for the citizens of the place: Association for the Relief of Aged and Destitute Women of Salem, Bertram Home for Aged Men, Salem Association for the Prevention of Tuberculosis, the Esther C. Mack Industrial School, Educational Institute, Peabody Academy of Science, Plummer Farm School and Reform for Boys, Ropes Memorial, Salem Athenæum, Salem Marine Society, Salem East India Society, Salem Hospital, Salem Seamen's Orphan and Children's Friends Society, Young Men's Christian Association, Woman's Friend Society, and Salem Young Women's Association.

The district Custom House for the ports of Salem, Beverly, Marblehead and Lynn is located here. The present Deputy Collector is William J. Sullivan; Inspectors, Daniel F. Connolly and Charles Luscomb. It should be stated in this connection that before 1819, during the prosperous earlier years in Salem, there was no government building for the accommodation of such officers. This has been a port for the collection of customs since about 1658. In 1683, Marblehead, Beverly, Gloucester, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury and Salisbury were annexed to the port of Salem by the Court of Assistants, and it was decreed that this port and Boston "shall be lawful ports of the Colony, where all ships and other vessels shall lade or unlade any of the plantation's enumerated goods, or other goods from foreign ports, and no where else, on penalty of the confiscation of such ship or vessel, with her goods and tackle, as shall lade or unlade elsewhere." For thirty-four years the custom house was located at the corner of Gedney Court, the building having been erected in 1645, and styled the French House, on account of several French families having once resided there. Like post offices, this Custom House was moved from one place to another. In 1789 it was where later stood

the bank building in Central street; Major Hiller was then collector of the port. In 1805 it was removed to Central building; in 1807 it was in Essex street; in 1811 at the corner of Essex and Newbury streets; and in 1813, in the Central building again. In 1819 it was moved to the government building erected for that purpose, at the head of Derby Wharf, as now. It was very much greater in size than has ever been necessary for the customs of this port. One record, however, shows that down to 1886 there had been collected as duties in this port, since the establishment of the Union in 1789, more than $25,000,000. The largest amount ever collected in a single quarter was in 1807, when it totalled $511,000. In 1886 there were collected only $28,700 in duties. The amount collected in 1920 was less than $1,000. Perhaps the most important personages connected with this Custom House have been Nathaniel Hawthorne, surveyor from 1846 to 1849, and "New England's most distinguished soldier," James Miller, who was collector from 1825 to 1849.

On account of the many articles on the free list of late years, this Custom House, really a branch of the Boston district, has not collected a large amount in duties. The number of vessels entering from foreign ports in the last year was nine and of domestic vessels one, while those clearing this port were three foreign vessels and eight domestic. The total amount of receipts in way of customs in 1920 was $639.02, while the expense of collecting these duties ran far in excess of the receipts. A vast amount of lumber comes to this port, but as it is on the free list no duty is collected on it.

The subjoined concerning Salem's foreign trade and other commercial interests is extracted from an article written in the eighties, by Charles S. Osgood:

At the beginning of the nineteenth century, Salem was one of the principal points for the distribution of foreign merchandise, over eight million pounds of sugar being among the imports of the year 1800. The streets about the wharfs were loaded with goods from all parts of the country. It was a busy scene, with the coming and going of vehicles, some from long distances; for railroads were then unknown and all transportation must be carried on in wagons and drays. In the taverns could be seen teamsters from all quarters, sitting around the open fire in the chilly evenings, discussing the news of the day, or making merry over potations of New England rum, which Salem in the good old times manufactured in abundance.

All this has changed. The sail lofts, where on the smooth floor sat the sailmakers, with their curious thimbles fastened to the palm of their hands, busily stitching the great white sheets of canvas that were to carry many a gallant ship safely through storm and tempest, to her destination in far-distant harbors, and that were to be reflected in seas before unvexed by the keel of an American vessel, are deserted, or given over to more prosaic uses; the ship-chandlers' shops are closed and the old mathematical instrument-maker has taken in his swinging sign of a quadrant, shut up his shop, and, as if there was no further use for him here, has started on the long voyage from which there is no return.

The merchandise warehouse on the wharves no longer contains silks from India,

tea from China, pepper from Sumatra, coffee from Arabia, spices from Batavia, gum copal from Zanzibar, hides from Africa, and the other products of far-away countries. The boys have ceased to watch on the Neck for the incoming vessels, hoping to earn the reward by being first to announce to the expecting merchant the safe return of his looked-for vessel. The foreign commerce of Salem, once her pride and glory, has spread her white wings and sailed away for ever!

The early, long continued and staple trade of Salem was in the product of the fisheries. The harbors and rivers swarmed with fish, and the supply was so plentiful that large quantities were often used for fertilizer. From 1629 to 1740, Winter Island seems to have been the headquarters of the Salem fishing trade, and that trade was the staple business of Salem down to a much later period. In 1643 the merchants of Salem were trading with the West Indies, with Barbadoes and the Leeward Islands. Between 1640 and 1650, the commercial career of Salem received an impetus, and her vessels made voyages not only to the mother country, but to the West Indies, Bermudas, Virginia and Antigua. Her wealth was great in proportion to her population, and Josselyn, writing in 1644, said: "In this town are some very rich merchants." In 1663, William Hollingworth, a Salem merchant, agreed to send one hundred hogsheads of tobacco from the river Potomac by ship, from Boston to Plymouth in England, the Isle of Jersey or any port in Holland, and thence to said Island, for seven pounds Sterling per ton.

From 1670 to 1740, the trade was to the West Indies and most ports of Europe, including Spain, France and Holland. From 1686 to 1689, inclusive, Salem is trading to Barbadoes, London, Fayal, Pennsylvania, Virginia and Antigua. The great majority of her vessels are ketches from twenty to forty tons, and carry from four to six men. Only one ship appears among them, and her tonnage is but one hundred and thirty tons. In 1698-99 registers are taken from two ships of 80 and 200 tons, a barque, three sloops and twenty ketches. The ketch of those days was two-masted, with square sails on the foremast and a four-and aft-sail on the mainmast, which was shorter than the foremast. The schooner, which gradually supplanted the ketch, first appears in our Salem marine about 1720.

In 1700, the foreign trade of Salem is thus described by Higginson: "Dry, merchantable codfish for the markets of Spain, Portugal and the Straits, refuse fish, lumber, horses and provisions for the West Indies. Returns made directly to England are sugar, molasses, cotton, wool, logwood and Brasiletto-wood, for which we depend on the West Indies. Our own produce, a considerable quantity of whale and fish-oil, whale-bone, furs, deer, elk and bear skins, are annually sent to England. We have much shipping here, and freights are low."

In 1788, our ships sailed to and from India, visited Calcutta and Bombay; the last-named place furnished the first cargo of cotton shipped here from abroad. The ship "Hazzard" entered from Calcutta with a cargo of sugar, cigars and cordage, the duty being $16,876; a year later one landed and its duty was $27,000. The trade between Indian Ocean ports and Salem was great for many years. Sumatra and Java Islands shipped much to Salem. Again, the trade with Manila was immense. One cargo of sugar amounting to 789,000 pounds, 64,000 pounds of pepper, 30,000 pounds of indigo, was landed in Salem in 1797. The duty on this cargo was $24,000. There was also trade with China as early as 1804.

October, 1797, the first of many ships that sailed to Manila reached that port in safety and loaded up with sugar and indigo, mostly. One ship, called "St. Paul," made twelve voyages between Salem and Manila—the first being in 1838. This journey required an even hundred days when "the sea was right." The last known ship between these two places was in July, 1858, when the "Dragon" made the trip with a large cargo of hemp.

The Isle of France, Madagascar, Zanzibar, Cape of Good Hope and the Aus-

tralian trade, as well as that between Salem and the Feejee Islands, constituted a large commerce for many years. Nathaniel L. Rogers owned the first ship that sought and obtained entry to the port of Australia, at Sydney, in 1832. The trade between Salem and South America was quite extensive. The brig "Katy," Nathaniel Brown, master, cleared for Cayenne in April, 1798, with fish, flour, bacon, butter, oil, tobacco, candles and potter's ware. From 1820 to 1860 this South American trade was constant. Between Salem and Buenos Ayres the trade was of much magnitude. From 1816 to 1860, inclusive, there were one hundred and twenty-one arrivals at Salem port. The season of greatest activity was between 1841 and 1860. But Salem also had a trade in far-off Africa. On the west coast of that continent, commencing in the fall of 1789, a large trade was carried on in the sale of New England rum. Later, much gunpowder and tobacco were transported to West Africa from Salem. This trade was mostly between 1832 and 1864. During that period there were over five hundred entries at the port of Salem. The early trade between Salem and West Indies was mostly in the product of the fisheries—sugar, cotton and tobacco being taken in exchange. Trade with Spain and Portugal commenced in 1700 and continued until after the War of 1812, after which but one entry was made, that of a cargo of salt from Cadiz to Salem. Then Salem had a good trade with points along the Mediterranean sea, including Genoa, Naples, Leghorn, Messina, Smyrna, etc. Salt, wine, brandy, figs, raisins, almonds, candles and soap were imported from these ports to America. This trade was chiefly between 1800 and 1810. Another excellent trade was established between Salem and Nova Scotia, commencing about 1840, the vessels being largely English boats. By this trade, wool, coal and plaster were largely imported to this country.

Salem was first in New England to sail a vessel to California, after gold had been discovered in 1848. This was the brig "Mary and Ellen," by Stephen C. Phillips. This boat was bound for the Sandwich Islands, via San Francisco, but both vessel and cargo were sold in the last-named city. In 1833 there were one hundred and eleven vessels from Salem engaged in foreign trade, but early in the eighties there were only a dozen vessels known as Salem boats engaged in such trade. While the foreign trade was largely lost to Salem, its tonnage has really increased by her coasting trade. In 1870 there entered the harbor at Salem 1812 coasting vessels, having an aggregate tonnage of 213,514, and 1237 vessels measuring 203,798 tons entered for the year ending June 30, 1878. In 1885 there arrived 1569 vessels, with a tonnage of 270,000. The first passenger steamboat to enter Salem harbor was the "Massachusetts," running between Salem and New York City, July, 1817. It is claimed upon quite reliable records that Dr. Nathan Reed of Salem was the real inventor of steam navigation, and not Robert Fulton. He petitioned Congress in 1790 concerning his discovery, stating that he "made application of steam to the purposes of navigation and land carriages." He also invented the first machine for making cut nails. Robert Fulton improved on the steam navigation idea of Dr. Reed, and now has the credit of being the original inventor. But Fulton's success came sixteen years later, on the Hudson river. Dr. Reed was a member of Congress from Maine in 1807, and was chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas. His trial trip with the world's first steamboat was in the summer of 1789, between his iron works at Danversport and the Essex bridge at Beverly. Governor Hancock was among the few gentlemen who were invited to make this trial trip. This marked a wonderful era in the world's transportation affairs.

In 1629 the "Home Company" sent six ship-builders to Salem, of whom Robert Moulton was chief. Salem Neck was used for a ship-yard. Richard Hollingworth came as a ship-builder in 1635, and in 1641 built a three hundred ton ship. From 1629 to 1640, Salem had but little ship-

ping of her own, but matters soon changed. From 1659 to 1677 four noted ship-builders were located here, one being Jonathan Pickering, who had a land grant at Hardy's Cove.

A famous vessel was built here by Retire Becket, who named it "Cleopatra's Barge," of one hundred and ninety-tons burden. Its owner was Captain George Crowninshield, who "spared no expense in her construction or in her appointments." She was built for a pleasure trip to the Mediterranean, and was a wonder to the people of Genoa. In point of beauty, luxury and magnificence, it stood at the head of all boats of that time. She was launched October 21, 1816. Pages might be written on ship-building in Salem, but other works extant have covered this interesting topic. The ship-building enterprise has long since been abandoned in Salem.

Salem's Industrial History—The United States census in 1880—a half century and more ago—gave Salem a total of manufactured products $8,441,000, of which the leather industries comprised nearly one-half. In 1887 there were in Salem thirty-one manufacturing enterprises. The leather industry in this city had a slow growth. The first to engage in leather tanning was Philemon Dickinson, who was in business in 1639. The first tanneries in Salem were located on lands now bordered by the north side of Washington Square and by Forrester street. Excavations for basements less than forty years ago brought to light numerous half-rotted tan-vats. On Liberty street have also been discovered in late years, decayed tan-bark and rotting cattle horns. In 1768 Salem had four large tanneries in operation. It was about that date, possibly a few years earlier, when Joseph Southwick, a preacher-tanner of Danvers, introduced the first horse turned tan-bark grinding mill. Late in the eighteenth century the tanneries of Salem were found operating on the North River. In 1850 there were eighty-three establishments, of which thirty-four were tanneries, as many currying shops, fifteen shops carrying on both branches of the trade, and two dressers of morocco; 550 hands were employed, and the output was about $870,000 annually. These were mostly small tanneries, working from four to a dozen men each. In 1885 Salem had fifty-four firms dealing in leather manufacture, twelve tanners and fifteen curriers, twenty-one tanners and curriers, and six morocco dressers. The 1880 census states that Salem had fifty-two plants, 910 employees, capital invested $1,167,000, and products amounting that year to $4,209,000. Of later years the city has not depended so much on its tanning industries as it did a hundred years ago, the manufacture of shoes having come to be a very profitable industry. A recent directory names the following as leading concerns in the various industries in Salem: Shoe factories—B. F. Bell & Co., J. Brown & Sons, Cass & Daley Shoe Co., Derby Shoe Manufacturing Co., Daniel Glover & Sons, J. T. Hopkins Sons, Salem Shoe Manufacturing Co., Salem Turn

Shoe Co., Don D. Sargent Co., Stevens Soft Sole Shoe Co. Also a Casket factory by A. M. Joly; the Salem Elevator works, Salem Hat Bleachery, and the New England Overall Co., the Naumkeag Steam Cotton Company, oil refineries, etc.

After the leather and shoe business, the records of the city, industrially, show that in the eighties the cotton manufacturing business was next of importance. The cotton factory famous in Salem as well as throughout the country was incorporated April 5, 1839, as the Naumkeag Steam Cotton Company. Its original capital was $200,000. The first plant erected on modern plans was that constructed in 1847, at which time the capital stock was increased to $700,000. The first cotton mill was 460 feet long by 60 feet in width, contained about 33,000 spindles and 643 looms, with a weekly capacity of 9,400 yards of cotton cloth. "The Naumkeag" was looked upon as among the finest cotton factories in the United States. The capital was increased after ten or a dozen years, and another mill building, about the same size as the former, was built and equipped. By 1886 the company had a capital of $1,500,000. It consisted as a plant of five main buildings, with machine shops, warehouses, etc., attached or near by. The total number of spindles was 100,000, while the number of looms was 2,400. These mills were propelled by two monster Corliss steam engines, and lighted by 2,200 gas jets and 650 incandescent lights, the plants for both kind of lights being on the premises. During 1886, there were made in these mills 18,750,000 yards of cotton cloth; 16,000 bales of cotton were consumed annually. There were then employed 1400 operatives, and the pay-roll amounted to $420,000.

At the time of the great fire of 1914 these mills suffered much loss, but being so well and long established, rebuilding speedily followed and the industry went on as before. The immense buildings all went down before the devouring flames except one structure. The large cotton warehouse, with a million pounds of cotton, was burned to the ground. The plant now comprises many massive structures of brick and cement re-inforced. The floor space is now twenty-two acres. These mills produced in 1920, 10,516,000 pounds, or 18,252,527 yards; the sales amounted to $9,360,348.25; number males employed, 556; number females, 768; total, 1,324. The number of spindles is 150,000; number of looms, 2,924. The "Pequot" and "Naumkeag" brands of sheetings are an American household word. Their quality really sells them.

Jute bagging was made in large quantities by two companies, which began to operate in 1865 and 1870. One was styled the Bengal Bagging Company. David Nevins & Co. of Boston owned the property in the seventies. Five million yards of bagging were produced in these two bag mills annually; 22,500 bales of jute were consumed, and they cost eight dollars a bale. Two hundred and seventy hands were employed in these mills, over one-half being women and youth. The jute butts were

brought from Bengal in large vessels. The amount received at the Salem Custom House on this material was about $2,000 a cargo. The bagging here produced was mostly shipped South, and there used as bales for cotton. But times have changed, and no such mills now exist in Salem.

From the earliest days in Salem, the manufacture of white lead for painting purposes was numbered among the best industries of the place. It was first made here in 1826, when two such factories started. One was by the Salem Lead Company, and the other that of Colonel Francis Peabody. These works were both located in South Salem. The first plant stood where the Cotton Mills now stand, and the other where Lagrange street is now situated. The first-named mills failed in 1835; the Peabody concern was more successful, and in 1846 the works were sold to the Forest River Lead Company. A thousand tons of white lead was turned out from this factory until 1882, when an assignment was made, and later the business was entirely abandoned. What was known as the Salem Lead Company was incorporated in February, 1868, and its works were on Saunders street. Here 1,500 tons of white lead, dry and ground in oil, with sheet lead, were produced; thirty hands were being employed in 1887.

The refining of oils commenced in 1835, when Caleb Smith began the oil and candle-making business. About the same date, Col. Francis Peabody started a similar plant in South Salem. In one season, Peabody bought $150,000 worth of whale oil to be used in candle-making, and also introduced the first candle-wicking machine into this country. In the eighties, Salem had four oil refining and manufacturing plants. One large concern was burned in 1887. The later oil concerns of Salem produced large quantities of currier's oils for the use of tanning and finishing leather.

Salem was also the home of the Hall typewriter, which was made in large quantities in 1885; the company was incorporated in April, 1886, on a capital of $100,000. Fifty men were employed, and two hundred machines were made each month.

Salem has had two car companies engaged in the making of horse street cars. One was the Salem Car Company, in 1863; it proved unprofitable, and the shops were sold to the Eastern Railroad Company. One hundred and fifty cars were made there annually at one time. The Atlantic Car Company was organized in 1872, and commenced to make railroad coaches, but the Jay Cooke financial panic of 1873 swamped the enterprise. The buildings subsequently belonged to the Poor Brothers tannery corporation of Peabody.

The story of electric lighting in Salem may be briefly told. Salem was among the earliest cities in New England to introduce electric lights; the first appeared in December, 1881. In April, 1882, the Salem Electric Lighting Company was organized on a $100,000 capital, taking over the plant started in 1881. The incandescent light was introduced in Salem

in June, 1885. From the last-named date, Salem has kept apace with all other cities in the introduction of every electric improvement.

Among the greatest conflagrations on the American continent have been the fires of Chicago, Boston, Portland, (Maine), Baltimore, San Francisco, and those of Salem and Lynn. The Salem fire burned over two hundred and fifty-two acres of territory; 1,376 buildings were destroyed; area of burned district was one-half mile wide and one and one-half long; entire loss in excess of $15,000,000; the insurance loss paid amounted to $11,744,000. About twenty thousand people were rendered homeless, and those thrown out of employment exceeded ten thousand.

During a prolonged dry spell, on June 25, 1914, at about one o'clock in the afternoon, in the leather district, in the Korn leather factory at No. 57 Boston street, there were several loud explosions, which upon investigation showed the cause to have been a mixture of acetone, amalacitate and alcohol; also that a large amount of celluloid was stored in the building. This plant was engaged in the manufacture of tip finish for patent leather, made up of extremely high explosives. The conflagration started in a shed which had wooden doors. Inside were a lot of inferior sheep skins, also three small barrels filled with highly-inflammable materials. It was suggested at the investigation that possibly the fire occurred by a quantity of celluloid being set on fire by the sun's rays coming through the glass in the nearby windows of the building. It was stated by one well posted as to the surroundings, that "if this factory had been equipped with a sprinkler system, the building might have been saved and the conflagration averted. There was nothing in the building which water would not have extinguished." Many of the best homes in Salem were reduced to ashes within a few hours. The twenty-five Sisters removed one hundred children and aged women from the Orphan Asylum, (just as it was about to be fired by approaching flames and intense heat), to St. Mary's, in Walnut street, and later they were all removed to St. John's, at Danvers.

This fire was not without its fatalities, sad as it is to record. A veteran, Samuel P. Withey, was burned to death in the house at the corner of Winthrop and Prescott streets. Joseph J. Pickering was burned to death at No. 131 Lafayette street. James Hosman's body was discovered near the rectory on Salem street. A number of persons died from excitement or from exposure and strain, while being removed from the fire district. Among the sixty or more persons injured were Oscar Choinard, who jumped from a second story window; Vincent Dowell, arm broken while acting as a volunteer fireman; Charles McCarthy and Captain Remon, injured about their heads by flying nozzles; Captains Preble and Kelly of Lynn, overcome by smoke; James Hoey, three ribs broken; Frank King, arms badly burned. These brave fellows all remained at their work as firemen, even James Hoey with his broken ribs.

Heroic relief work went forward from first to last. The Red Cross Society, under orders from Superintendent Bigelow of the Salem Hospital, by eight o'clock on the first day of the fire removed fifty-seven patients to hospitals in Beverly and Peabody, as well as others to almshouse and hospitals on the Neck. There were thirty-two nurses, and all did excellent work. President Wilson telegraphed from Washington: "I am sure I speak for the American people in tendering heartfelt sympathy to you to the stricken people of Salem. Can the Federal Government be of service to you in the emergency?"

The relief committee established headquarters at the Armory, and Governor Walsh called a meeting at the State House to form a general relief committee, of which John F. Moors was chairman. The Salem "Evening News" started a relief fund early the next day after the fire, and headed the subscription with $500, followed by another of the same amount by John S. Saltonstal, of Beverly. The same day, Henry C. Frick sent his check for $25,000, and tendered the use of two of his automobiles to be used in relief work. The side cities and towns, as well as far distant places, did all in way of relief that was possible. By noon, the Ward Baking Company had two tons of bread in Salem, and Mayor Scanlon of Lawrence sent two car loads of bread and other provisions. A firm in Boston sent one hundred and fifty-six gallons of coffee, all creamed and sweetened. Lynn sent over fifteen truck loads of provisions; Hood offered one thousand pints of milk a day, and the Mohican Market, Salem, 1,000 rations a day, while much more was sent in from side towns. In less than forty-eight hours after the fire alarm sounded, $150,000 had been raised. A message came over from sister Beverly that $100,000 could be counted on from that city. The State fund amounted to $569,000, while Congress appropriated $200,000. There was doubtless as much as $3,000,000 loss not covered by insurance. Mention should here be given of the good work by the fire companies from Boston, Chelsea, Marblehead, Peabody, Beverly, Lynn, Swampscott, Wakefield, Danvers, Reading, Stoneham, Quincy, Newburyport, Revere, Lawrence, Malden, Gloucester, Manchester, Medford, Hingham, Somerville, Winchester, Ipswich, Wenham, Cambridge; all took part with some of their best fire-fighting apparatus.

The militia was called into service and looked well to its duties. Different companies guarded various districts of the city. They also had charge of the rations at the Armory, and the following figures tell their own story: Number of rations issued from June 28th to July 1st, 18,175. The cost of feeding the refugees was $2,200 daily, and the militia that served until July 7th cost Massachusetts $50,000. Now after the lapse of seven years, the burnt district has been fairly well rebuilt, with here and there evidences of the great fire of 1914. The new buildings that took the place of the old ones are, as a rule, of a modern and

much better style. With the expansion of the city, it will not be many more years before the traces of that conflagration are all obliterated.

The Salem Hospital is a private institution, supported from the income of funds given for the purpose, from money received for the board of patients, and from gifts and annual subscriptions; the city grants free water, and in return the hospital cares for many of the city's afflicted poor and unfortunate cases. Where persons are not able to pay, they are cared for scientifically until able to leave, board and all, free of all charges. This hospital was founded by John Bertram, in the spring of 1873. Mr. Bertram came to Salem when a mere lad, as the son of a scissors grinder; but through the native ability he possessed, he engaged in shipping on the seas, was captain of several boats he owned, and finally became wealthy. He was taken very ill, and cared for tenderly by doctors and nurses, who finally restored him to health. This caused the appreciative patient, that he was, to enquire what poor persons would do were they taken ill as he had been. He was told that they must of necessity suffer and die for want of attention. He then and there decided to find means for a hospital in Salem, which he did, by purchasing a residence property in the heart of the city, on Charter street, where numerous additions were made. The great fire of June 25th, 1914, swept the property away, after which land was purchased and the present spacious modern brick hospital was erected in 1917. Its cost was about $650,000. It has a housing capacity of 135 patients at one time. The present building opened in November, 1917. At the end of the first twenty years of the institution (1893), reports show they had cared for 3,048 resident patients and 968 outside patients; 814 patients had paid board; and 2,-928 were free. In 1884 a maternity hospital was added. The present superintendent is Wilbur B. Bigelow. The board of trustees is made up as follows: Matthew Robson, president; Walter H. Trumbull, John Robinson, Charles S. Rea, George A. Vickery, Robert Osgood, Richard Wheatland, Robert M. Mahoney, Walter K. Bigelow, Frank P. Fabens, George W. Grant. January 1, 1921, the treasurer had on hand $10,203. The last year the receipts and expenditures amounted to $231,961. This is a truly modern institution, and one of great credit to the city of Salem, as well as a perpetual monument to its thoughtful founder, Captain John Bertram.

Harmony Grove Cemetery is reached by continuing down School and Grove streets to No. 30 Grove, the main entrance being within easy walking distance from the city proper. It comprises sixty-five acres. It was the first burying ground used around Salem and neighborhood. An archway of rough stones spans the carriage-way to the entrance. The grounds have some wooded growth of natural timber. Many expensive monuments have been placed on private lots within this Silent City of the Dead. In 1905 a handsome chapel was erected on the grounds, the

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION, SALEM

ESSEX INSTITUTE, SALEM

gift of Mrs. Nancy C. Blake in memory of her son, George Harrison Blake, who died in 1869. In a lot on Locust Path the remains of George Peabody, the great philanthropist, are at rest. Also a sarcophagus of granite marks the resting place of Captain John Bertram, founder of Salem Hospital. There are other burying grounds, both Catholic and Protestant, used by the people in Salem, but Harmony is one of the oldest and largest.

Salem has numerous beautiful parks and environments, some of which are truly historic. The subjoined list includes several of the more important places in and about the city: Gallows Hill, off Witch Hill; Forest River Park, Fort Lee, Willows, The Neck, Moody Square, Nauvoo, portion of Ward 3, near the Mill Pond; Winter Island, Mack Park, Mason Hill, Liberty Hill, Lookout Hill, Unionville, North and South Salem, Legg's Hill, Juniper Point, Kernwood, Fort Pickering, Castle Hill, Carltonville, Cold Spring, off Liberty Hill.

Concerning the parks, it may be said that The Commons, named Washington Square in 1802, is a territory of about eight acres, and has always remained public land. It is a historic spot; was once a cow pasture, then used for general training or military drills as early as 1714. Forest River Park, finely situated on rolling land skirting the harbor, was purchased by the city and opened for park purposes in 1907. There are twenty-nine acres in this tract. It is equipped with a bathing basin, spaces for games and various sports. Ledge Hill Park, opposite Harmony Cemetery, was given to the city by Esther C. Mack in 1885. This is an extension of a rocky ledge of quite an altitude, and affords an excellent view of the city and its harbor. Liberty Hill is reached by way of Liberty Hill avenue; it has been a park from the first settlement of the place. It is popular on account of its numerous cold springs of pure water, which have been used for centuries. The Millerites (religious sect foretelling the end of the world) held a great camp meeting here in 1844.

"The Willows" is at the east end of the city, in the section long known by this name. It is annually visited by tens of thousands of home, as well as many sight-seeers from abroad. Steamboats ply the harbor at this point. To the north is Beverly shore; Cape Ann is at the northeast. The city provides open pavilions where parties may lunch and enjoy the scenery. The old trees, from which the place derives its name, were European white willows planted by the Salem Board of Health in 1801 to provide a shade for the convalescents at an old hospital. Nine of the original forty trees still survive. Junior Point adjoins the Willows to the south, and is a fine summer retreat. Fort Lee has been a fort and block-house point on Salem Neck from the earliest days of Salem. It is located on the heights at the left, beyond the city farm. A fort was constructed here in 1742, and used in the War of 1812-14. In the

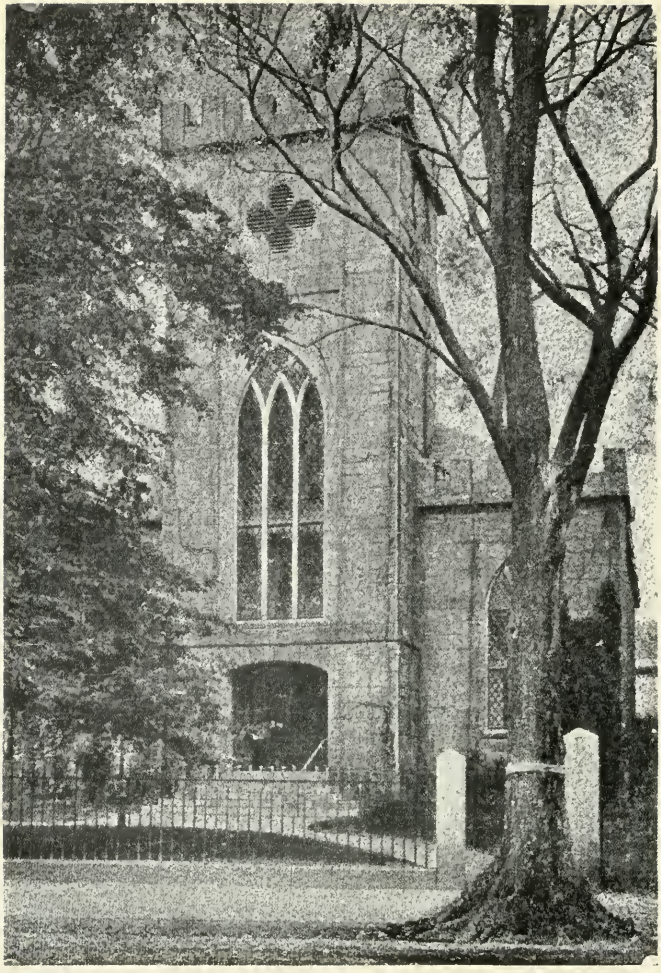
Civil War it was mounted with guns to command the approach to the outer harbor; it is still owned by the federal government. The old earthworks add to the appearance of the Neck. Winter Island, opposite Fort Lee to the right, is reached by a causeway. Here used to be the center of the fishing business of Salem.

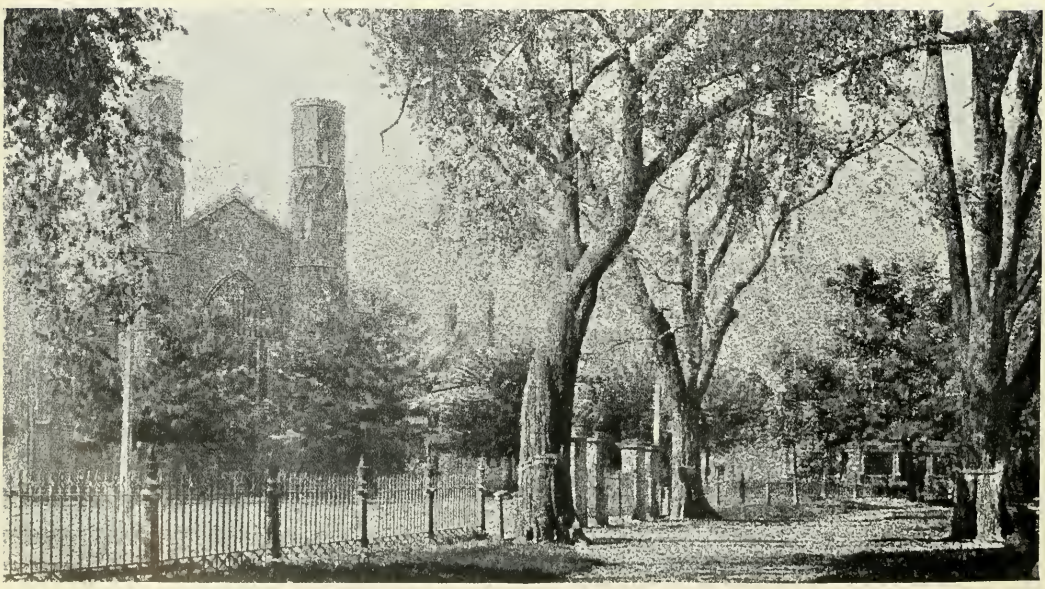
Fort Pickering, on Winter Island, was built in 1643; it was occupied in the War of 1812-14, and at the Civil War period had guns in position. During the Spanish-American War, two companies of Massachusetts Heavy Artillery were stationed there. It commanded the entrance to the inner-harbor. Town House Square is formed by the junction of Essex and Washington streets. From the pioneer settlement, this has been the center of population and business, and also the scene of many important events.

Without entering into a detailed history of the First Congregational Church, Unitarian, it may here be recorded, for reference, that this society was formed in 1629, and was then of the Calvinistic faith. Its pastors have included Rev. Samuel Skelton, associated for a time with Mr. Higginson, as teacher; Roger Williams, Rev. Hugh Peters, Rev. Edward Norris, and Rev. Higginson, who served forty-eight years, his death occurring in 1708, aged ninety-two years. The next minister was Rev. Nicholet, from Virginia; then came Nicholas Noyes, succeeded by Rev. Jonathan Curwin, Samuel Fisk, Rev. John Sparhawk, Rev. Thomas Barnard, Rev. Asa Dunbar, Rev. John Prince (pastor fifty-seven years), Rev. Charles W. Upham, Rev. Thomas Treadwell Stone, Rev. George W. Briggs (resigned in 1867), and Rev. James T. Hewes. Rev. Fielder Israel, who closed his ministry in Salem in 1889, was succeeded by Rev. George Crosswell Cressey, D.D., from 1890 to 1896; Rev. Elvin James Prescott, 1897-1902; Rev. Peter Hair Goldsmith, 1903-10; Rev. Edward Dunbar Johnson, 1911, and still serving. During the pastorate of the last named, the church gave up the old method of raising money by the sale of pews, and is now on a voluntary subscription basis. For a number of years this church has maintained a series of Wednesday noon services. The early history of this church is very interesting, and will readily be found in almost any library of Essex county.

As to church buildings of this society, it may be said that four church edifices have been occupied since its formation in 1629. All have been on or near the same spot. "An unfinished building of one story," said Rev. Upham, "was temporarily used at the beginning for the purpose of the congregation." The second house was erected in 1670, and the first one was used for school and other purposes for ninety years, and later removed to Gallows Hill. It was finally presented to Essex Institute by Mrs. David Nichols. The second church cost £1000, had galleries, and Cotton Mather called it "the great and spacious meeting-house." This building was used about sixty years. In 1718 it was too far gone to

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS





ABOVE, NORTH CHURCH, SALEM. BELOW, SECOND CHURCH AND WASHINGTON SQUARE

be of value, and was removed and the third church built. This was seventy-two feet long on Essex street, and fifty feet wide, with two galleries and a tall spire. The present church was dedicated in 1826 and serves until the present day, but has at various times been remodeled and materially improved.

The Second Church in Salem, Unitarian, was known as the East Church for many years, but in 1897 it united with the Barton Square Church, and resumed the old name of the Second Church of Salem. Mr. Manchester, who had been for four years pastor of the Independent Church in Barton Square, was made pastor of the United churches. The First Church resisted a separation and the formation of the Second church as long as possible, but finally, in 1718, it yielded and the Second Church was organized. During 1718 the First Church lost by death, within three weeks, its two ministers, Revs. Noyes and Curwin; then followed the settling of Rev. Samuel Fisk, as pastor, the erection of a large new church building and the completion of the East Church building. The East Society's meeting-house was situated a half mile to the east of the First Church, on Essex street. In 1761 the meeting-house was newly sashed and glazed; in 1766 clapboarded; in 1770, "there not being room to accommodate the congregation," it was voted to enlarge it, which was done the following year. In 1846 this house was abandoned and the present church was erected. July 13, 1903, the church was partially destroyed by fire. It was restored and opened November 2, 1903. The new organ was first used on December 28, 1903. In October, the two hundredth anniversary of the building of the old East Church was celebrated. In 1918 the two towers that ornamented the church were condemned as unsafe and were taken down to within a few feet of the roof.

The pastors who have served this church are as follows, in the order named: Rev. Robert Stanton, died in 1727, succeeded by Rev. William Jennison, who was dismissed in 1736; next came Rev. James Diman, who served until 1788, when he died; then came Rev. William Bentley, who died in 1855; he was sole pastor of the East Church for years, aided the last few years of his ministry by Rev. Dexter Clapp. Dr. Flint remained with the church until his death, in 1868. He was not the active pastor the last four years of his life. Rev. Samuel C. Beane succeeded Dr. Flint, resigned in 1878, and was followed by Rev. George H. Hosmer, who remained until 1886, and was followed by Rev. William H. Reeby, who served two years, and was in turn followed by Rev. David Edward Towle, who served from 1892 to 1897, after whom came Rev. Alfred Manchester, Rev. J. F. Dutton having served for a short time between Revs. Reeby and Towle.

There is some question when the South Church (Congregational) first began as an independent one in Salem, but it is known that it was recognized in record February 14, 1775, but it called itself the Third

Congregational Church until March 15, 1805, when it was incorporated under title of "The Proprietors of the New South Meeting-House." Its edifice was dedicated in 1805 and remodeled in 1860. The ministers were as follows: Rev. Daniel Hopkins, Rev. Brown Emerson, Rev. Dwinell and Rev. Atwood. The lastnamed died while pastor, and since then the pastors have included Revs. Dr. Edward S. Atwood, died 1888; Rev. Brodie, 1888-04; Rev. Harold Colson Feast; Rev. George W. Roesch, 1908-10; Rev. Thomas Langdale, 1910-14; Rev. H. M. Bartlett, 1914-20; Rev. George Leo Patterson, 1920, and is still serving. In 1804-05 a handsome church was built. It possessed a high spire, which was a great attraction for many years. The building was burned in 1904, when a stone church was erected in its place.

The Tabernacle Church (Congregational) was originally a part of the First Church, but in 1735 a difficulty arose which split the church in two parts. It came up over Rev. Samuel Fisk, an early pastor. The date of the Tabernacle Church organization was probably May 4, 1735. The pastors have included Revs. Dudley Leavitt, John Huntington, Nathaniel Whittaker, D.D., Joshua Spaulding, Samuel Worcester, D.D., John P. Cleaveland, Samuel M. Worcester, son of a former pastor; Charles Ray Palmer, 1860 to 1872; Hiram B. Putnam, DeWitt S. Clark, installed in 1879, served until his death in 1916; and was succeeded by Rev. O. H. Bronson, who remained two years, and was followed by Rev. W. H. Spence, present pastor. Good church buildings have usually been owned by this church, including the one erected in 1854; the large two-story chapel erected in 1868, has served until now. Plans are under consideration at this writing (1921) by which it is believed that a handsome stone structure will soon take the place of the old wooden building.

March 3, 1772, the proprietors of the North Meeting-house organized themselves into a religious society with the title of North Church, Unitarian. The trouble between the parent church and the new one arose over the selection of a pastor. The long line of pastors included Revs. Thomas Barnard, Jr., John Emery Abbot, John Brazer, Octavius Brooks Frothingham, Charles Lowe, Edmund B. Wilson, installed in 1859, served until his death in 1904, and was succeeded by Rev. George D. Latimer, his associate until 1907, when he was followed by Rev. Theodore D. Bacon. Without entering into details as to church edifices, it may be said that the present building has recently been greatly enlarged and much improved.

St. Peter's Episcopal Church was established in 1733, and a building erected the following year. It had forty pews, and a high tower at its western end. It gave place to the present Gothic building in 1833, and this was enlarged in 1845. The first rector, Rev. Charles Brockwell, died in 1755. Next came Rev. William Gilchrist; he died in the ministry in Salem in 1780; the next rector was Rev. Nathaniel Fisher, a Harvard graduate; Rev. Thomas Carlisle succeeding him as rector, and

he in turn was followed by Rev. Henry W. Ducachet. The next rector at Salem was Rev. Thomas W. Coit, who induced Rev. Alexander V. Griswold to become rector in 1829, continuing until 1834. Then came Rev. John A. Vaughan, and he was succeeded by Rev. Charles Mason. Rev. William R. Babcock became rector in 1848, resigning in 1860. The next rector was Rev. William Rawlins Pickman, who left in 1865, and was followed by Rev. James O. Scripture, then by Rev. Edward M. Gushee. Rev. Charles Arey commenced his work in Salem in 1875, continuing until 1891, when he was succeeded by Rev. Henry Bedinger, who remained rector twenty-five years, and was succeeded by Rev. Charles W. G. Lyon, in 1917. Under rectorship of Rev. Bedinger in 1905, a reorganization took place, and since then all pews have been free to the worshiping public.

Grace Episcopal Church was organized in 1858. Rev. George D. Wildes was the first rector, and then came Revs. Joseph Kidder, James P. Franks, Howard R. Weir. A neat frame Gothic-style church building was erected in 1859.

The First Church of the Nazarene is situated at No. 10 Church street, and was organized January 1, 1904, under the name of Beulah Pentecostal Mission, by Rev. Alexander J. Macneill, leader. April 9th the same year it was organized into a church. Pastor Macneill resigned and was followed by Rev. Thomas W. Delond. The society worshiped at 23 Brown street for three years, when they purchased the estate at No. 10 Church street and erected their present edifice, which they dedicated April 19, 1913, under the corporate name of the First Pentecostal Church of the Nazarene. Rev. Delond resigned, and was followed by Rev. Ira D. Archbald, and he in turn was followed in May, 1915, by Miss Mary A. Custance and Annie S. Allen. In May, 1917, came Rev. R. J. Dixon, who remained one year, and was succeeded by Rev. George A. Rideout, who in turn left after one year and seven months. The next pastor was Rev. A. H. Higgins, who is still serving as pastor. In September, 1920, at the general conference of the denomination, the word "Pentecostal" was dropped from the title of the church, leaving it simply "First Church of the Nazarene."

The First Church of Christ, Scientist, held its first service in Salem at the studio of Prof. Charles F. Whitney on Fairfield street, March 12, 1896. Services were continued there until June 7, 1896, when Pythian Hall, Creamer Block, on Essex street, was secured for Sunday evening services. Sunday morning services commenced July 3, 1898. During these first years, Mrs. Sarah W. Shepard, who was looked upon as the founder of the church in Salem, served as First Reader, with Miss M. Frances Allen of Beverly as Second Reader. September 25, 1898, services were held in the chapel of the old First Church (Unitarian), the chapel being located at 16 Lynde street. All legal requirements for perfecting an organization were met by October 31, 1898, though the char-

ter granted by the State bears date of November 29, 1899. There were seven charter members, namely: Sarah W. Shepard, Emma J. Marvin, Maria G. Delano, Jacob Marston, Henry S. Fiske, William S. Fenollosa and Alice E. Barnard.

The church grew steadily in membership and activity. A free public reading room was opened January 22, 1900, at 39 Church street. In 1907 the chapel in which services had been held for several years was purchased as a permanent church-house and ever since has been used as such. This was dedicated, free of any debts, January 1, 1911. About that date a splendid pipe organ was donated the church by Mrs. William Penn Hussey. The church has taken an active part in the various public movements, especially so during the weeks just following the great conflagration of 1914. For many weeks its doors were open for relief work, and many thousands of dollars in cash, clothing and general supplies were given to the needy, regardless of creed or nationality.

Three years consecutively is the limit to hold the office of a Reader. The list to date is as follows: First Readers—Sarah W. Shepard, Henry S. Fiske, 1896-02; Charles F. Whitney, 1902-05; William S. Fenollosa, 1905-08; George P. Bonney, 1908-11; Benjamin G. Ingalls, 1911-14; Hatherly A. Stoddard, 1914-17; Leon G. Miles, 1917-20; William C. Keith, 1920, still serving as First Reader. Second Readers—Miss Frances Allen, William S. Fenollosa, 1896-02; Mrs. Addie Webber, 1902-03; Mrs. Martha P. Mader, 1903-06; Mrs. Clara Ingalls, 1906-09; Mrs. Mary I. Keith, 1909-12; Mrs. Rosetta P. McKinstry, 1912-15; Mrs. Edith M. Smith, 1915-16; Mrs. Abbie W. Tay, 1916-19; Miss Miriam Pope, 1919, still Second Reader in 1921.

The Universalist Church—According to Dr. Bentley's diary, John Murray, founder of the Universalist church, who was then settled at Gloucester, preached from the pulpit of the First Church, Thursday evening, December 29, 1787. Under date of December 24, 1789, Bentley says: "Worship was at the meeting of the Universalists, as well as at the four churches." The above preface to the remark about the preaching of Smith in 1804, etc., is more historically correct. After Dr. Bolles, the ministers were Rev. Arthur G. Rogers, 1888 to 1892; Rev. Charles H. Puffer, 1893 to 1913; Ulysses S. Milburn, November 1, 1913, to the present time. Upon the death of Dr. Bolles in January, 1920, at Tufts College, where he had long filled the chair of Modern History (endowed by a Salem citizen, Walter Scott Dickson), a memorial service was held in this church for him, at which Prof. Edward S. Morse of Salem and Dean McCollester of Tufts spoke. During Mr. Rogers' pastorate a movement was started to erect a new parish house, which was finally erected in 1889. It is a commodious and well-equipped two-story building adjoining the church, two house lots having been purchased on Ash street to accommodate it. It is used for Sunday school and other functions. Centennial anniversary exercises were held here and well attend-

ed. From the estate of Walter Scott Dickson the church received an endowment of $20,000, which has been added to from other sources recently, providing the income for current expenses. In the John Murray Crusade, in 1920, as a part of the observance of the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the Universalist church, this church raised over $10,000 in addition to the regular budget. The parish service flag shows sixty-nine stars for those who were in the World War.

For many years prior to the formation of the Advent Christian Church in 1875, meetings of the people of the Advent faith had been held in Salem. For some years these meetings were held in the Holyoke and Hardy halls. In 1885 the old church on Herbert street was purchased and occupied until 1890. At that time a change became desirable; the Herbert street building was sold and the present structure at 127 North street built, largely through the effort of Rev. G. F. Haines, at that time pastor of the church. New interest and increasing prosperity have fully justified the change. In 1885, a corporation was formed, known as the Second Advent Society of Salem, Massachusetts, and in 1895, when the church became an incorporated body, the society conveyed all its property, both real and personal, to the church. In 1918 the estate at 37 Buffum street was bought for a parsonage. The pastors have been as follows: Revs. Charles Goodrich, George W. Sederquist, Elmner N. Hinckley, G. F. Haines, J. W. Davis, Roger Sherman, C. R. Crossett, William G. Knowlton, and H. L. Faulkingham.

There was a gathering of Society of Friends in Salem as early as 1656-57, ten years after the founder, George Fox, began his itineracy in England. They were terribly persecuted here by the narrow-minded orthodox religious organizations. The history of this church is replete with interesting items and historic incidents, but all too long for space allowed herein. At Salem the "Quakers" at first had meetings at private houses. Their first meeting-house stood on the south side of Essex street, No. 373-377. The second meeting-house was built in 1716, where later was platted the "Quaker Burying-ground." The brick building built in 1832 was still in use by the Friends in 1914, when it was burned. A new structure was reared as soon as possible after the great fire. The present minister is Josephine H. Carr.

Methodism was first organized at Salem in 1821, a century ago. Its first pastor was Rev. Jesse Filmore, in 1822. In 1823 a church was built on Sewall street, where later stood the Wesleyan chapel. This church did not unite with the general conference until 1835. Before the formation of a second Methodist church, the following names appear as having been pastors: Joseph B. Brown, 1832-33; Jefferson Hamilton, 1833; T. C. Macreading, 1834; Aaron Waitt, 1834-35; J. W. Downing, 1835-38; T. G. Hiler, 1838-39.

The Second Methodist Episcopal Church was formed in March, 1841, by members withdrawing from the First Church. They built a

church in Union Square, later known as the Advent Church. The first pastor was Rev. Spaulding, who was succeeded by pastors including Revs. Joseph A. Merrill, David K. Merrill, Horace Moulton, Phineas Crandall, David L. Winslow and John W. Perkins. Trouble arose in the First Church, and after a few years the Second Church absorbed the active membership of the former. In 1851 a larger church was found necessary and was erected on LaFayette street. The pastors include (in order given) the following: Revs. Luman Boyden, 1851-53; A. D. Merrill, 1853-54; Daniel Richards, 1854-56; John A. Adams, 1856-57; Austin F. Herrick, 1857-59; John H. Mansfield, 1859-61; Edward A. Manning, 1861-62; Gersom F. Cox, 1862-64; Loranus Crowell, 1864-67; S. F. Chase, 1867-69; D. Dorchester, 1869-72; J. S. Wheedon, 1872-74; George Collyer, 1874-77; Daniel Steel, 1877-79; George W. Mansfield, 1879-82; William P. Ray, 1882-85; T. L. Gracey, 1885-87.

Since then the pastors have been as follows: Revs. George A. Phinney, 1889-91; George F. Eaton, 1892-98; G. S. Chadbourne, 1894-96; Dillon Bronson, 1897-99; Charles Tilton, 1900-02; N. B. Fisk, 1903-04; John W. Ward, 1905-08; Thomas C. Cleveland, 1909-11; John L. Ivey, 1912-19; Charles W. Jeffras, 1920, and still serving as pastor.

In 1893 the interior of the church was remodeled and a steam heating plant installed. In 1909 the church property was sold and a new church was erected at the corner of Ocean avenue and LaFayette street. It was dedicated in March, 1911. A parsonage was soon built near the church. This church is now very active in community work in all its departments.

In days gone by—prior to the eighties—there were other religious societies in Salem, including these: The Mormons (Latter Day Saints) had a church here of about one hundred members prior to 1842; ten years before, Joseph Smith, the "prophet," came to Salem. Erastus Snow was the head of this local church, but when Nauvoo, Illinois, was made the center of the cult, many left for that place, and the Salem church collapsed.

In 1876 a society of deaf mutes was formed in Salem, under Rev. Philo Packard, one of their number. They had twenty-two members at one date. The Spiritualists have from time to time had a goodly following in Salem, but have never locally been counted strong as a sect. In 1884 there was listed in the directories "A Lutheran Swedish church, organized in 1884—no pastor—John Lonn its president. Its place of meeting, Central, corner of Charter street." The colored race had an organization in Salem as early as 1828, when they were aided by the white people in organizing a church of their own race, which flourished for a time.

The Baptist denomination has had societies and church organizations in Salem ever since 1804, and had members as early or before Roger Williams' ministry. The first minister was Lucius Bolles, succeeded by

Rufus Babcock, John Wayland, Robert C. Mills, George E. Merrill, Galusia Anderson, and others who served later. No further data on this denomination are at hand.

The following concerning the Catholic Church in Salem is contributed:

"The first settlers of old Naumkeag, under Conant and Endicott, did not love Catholics or Catholicity." Thus writes one of Salem's most eminent sons, the Right Rev. Louis S. Walsh, Bishop of Portland, Maine, in his interesting monograph, "The Origin of Catholicity in Salem."

History abundantly confirms this statement, and further evidences the fact that this early antipathy to the Church of Rome constituted an inheritance which the Puritan of Salem bequeathed to posterity in no less a measure than did his coreligionists elsewhere in the Massachusetts colonies. For long, the inhabitants of Salem were imbued with that spirit of hatred towards Rome which so embittered Endicott that he cut and mutilated the "Red Cross" in the royal ensign, because, as Winthrop wrote, "the red cross was given to the King of England by the Pope as an ensign of victory, and so a superstitious thing, and a relique of Antichrist." Religious toleration, in its modern sense and acceptation, had no part in the Puritan scheme of life. But the ways of God are mysterious, and it is of historic interest to note that the Puritan of Salem, notwithstanding his normal, inherited antagonism to Catholicity, was destined by Divine Providence to be identified with the introduction and establishment of that religion in his native town.

Salem had been founded but a quarter of a century when the same ruler above mentioned, Endicott, courteously welcomed to Salem the French Jesuit, Gabriel Druillettes, the first Catholic priest to set foot on Salem soil. History is silent in regard to what occurred during this visit, but it does inform us that Endicott consented to act as Father Druillettes' representative in the matter of an alliance—defensive and offensive—between the English and French colonists, which occasioned the missionary's mission to the Bay and Plymouth colonies. On this occasion, also, Endicott's bounty generously provided the missionary with money to defray his expenses on the homeward journey to Quebec.

The passing years softened greatly the enforcement of religious conformity of a rigid character, and a degree of toleration was reluctantly and grudgingly conceded, the consequence of which was the introduction, growth and development of numerous religious bodies. Commercial intercourse with other countries, especially those of Europe, taught the inhabitants of Salem how narrow and unreasonable their fathers had been, yet, at heart, much of the ancestral spirit remained, and there was no change among them with regard to the Church of Rome. However much the sects may have "agreed to differ" among themselves, and there was much disagreement on matters doctrinal and otherwise, all were united upon a single point—hatred of the Catholic church. After the Revolution, however, exceptions were found here and there, a notable one being the case of the Rev. William Bentley, pastor of the East Church, Salem, a Unitarian of liberal views, indeed, for his time, who welcomed as his guest the Rev. John Thayer, "formerly Protestant minister at Boston," "the first New England Convert Priest," who laid the foundation of the Catholic faith in Salem. Because of this courtesy and kindness to Father Thayer, Bentley incurred, as he wrote,

"all the prejudice which can arise in illiberal minds on such an occasion."

The story of Father Thayer belongs more fittingly to the early days of the church in Boston. A brief resume will serve the present purpose. John Thayer, the fourth son of Cornelius and Sarah (Plaisted) Thayer, was born in Boston, May 15, 1758. He belonged to one of the oldest and most wide-spread families of Massachusetts. Through his father, his ancestry is traced back to Richard Thayer, Sr., who founded the family in Massachusetts, to which colony he had been admitted freeman in 1640. John Thayer received an honorary degree of B. A. at Yale College in 1779; he entered the Congregational ministry, and served for a time as chaplain to Governor Hancock, and at "The Castle" in Boston Harbor. In 1781, in response to what he called "a secret inclination to travel," he went to Europe, and eventually to Rome. He was in that city at the time when its inhabitants were particularly interested in miracles said to have been wrought through the intercession of the venerable Joseph Labre, then but recently deceased. A personal investigation of several of these wonderful cures made a deep impression on his mind, and further inquiry into Catholic doctrine resulted in his abjuring the faith of his Puritan ancestors, and solemnly professing the Catholic faith in Rome on the twenty-fifth day of May, 1783. He afterwards entered the Seminary of St. Sulpice in Paris, was ordained priest, and spent some time among the English-speaking Catholics of Paris, going later to the diocese of Southwark, in England. He returned to America in 1789, arriving in Baltimore in December, and in Boston early in January, 1790.

On April 15th Father Thayer wrote to Bentley asking information about the Catholics in Salem, and made known his intention of visiting the town in their interest. "The Bentley Diary" informs us that he made his visit on the fifth of May following, and, accompanied by Bentley, he sought out the Catholics, for whom he arranged to say Mass on the following morning. On the sixth of May, 1790, therefore, in the presence of a truly cosmopolitan congregation, he said the first Mass in Salem, perhaps in Bentley's quarters in the old Crowninshield house, still standing, No. 106 Essex street, or, more probably, as Bishop Walsh writes, in "the old brick house" at the head of Union street, across from the Bentley home. His second visit to Salem was in June, and on the twenty-sixth of that month he addressed a large concourse of people in "the old Court House." "After a short prayer," writes Bentley, "he began a vindication of his church against the pretendedly reformed. His subjects were auricular confession, reading of the Scriptures, &c."

He made a third visit in July. Calling on Bentley, he "mentioned his purpose to open a Mass house in this town." On July 27, 1790, Father Thayer wrote to Doctor Carroll: "I've begun to visit ye country & shall soon I believe establish a Chappel at Salem, ye second town of ye State." This plan, however, failed of realization. A condition of affairs which developed in the Boston congregation, his controversy with the Reverend George Leslie of New Hampshire, with John Gardner, and others, made more immediate demands upon him, and we find no record of him in Salem until June 22, 1791, after his formal appointment by Bishop Carroll as pastor of the church at Boston.

On August 17, 1791, Father Thayer administered the sacrament of baptism—the first time in Salem, so far as can be determined with any degree of certainty—to a Mr Haederkin, to Barnabas and Bridget Ryan. His last recorded visit to the town was on October 15, 1791, when he

celebrated Mass on board the Spanish vessel "San Fernando," returning to Boston on the ship.

The work thus begun by Father Thayer was continued by two very excellent priests whose names are endeared to the people of the Boston archdiocese—Reverend Francis Matignon, D. D., who arrived in Boston in August, 1792, and the Reverend John Cheverus, afterwards the first Bishop of Boston, who came in 1793. But, as Bishop Walsh writes, "The baptismal records and a few fragmentary notes indicate rather than describe the work of Father Matignon." "The Bentley Diary" tells us, under date of January 11, 1810: "Dr. Matignon officiates with the Catholics in town this day. He has visited ever since his incumbency at Boston, but not on Sundays." And again, under date of December 1, 1811, we read: "Dr. Matignon in Town. He & Bp. Chevereaux make monthly visits to Salem, so that our few Catholics begin to know each other." On one of his visits, Father Matignon was made to feel the anti-Catholic spirit of the day. "Good old Dr. Matignon of the Holy Cross, Boston," writes Bentley, February 25, 1810, "was here upon his Catholic labours, but at a Christening of a child in Becket street, belonging to one Swasey, he was beset by the leaders of the Freewill sect & they most grossly insulted the Old Gentleman. * * * The Doctor refused to suffer any of his friends to interfere & expressed his pity at the ignorance & impudence of these intruders."

Undoubtedly, then, both Dr. Matignon and Father Cheverus visited Salem several times a year previous to the dates above cited. But where the Catholics—few in number in those early years—were accustomed to assemble cannot be stated with any too great a degree of certainty. Of course, it is probable that "the old brick building" on the corner of Essex and Union streets was often used. Occasionally, as on the visit of Bishop Cheverus, April 30, 1811, services were held at "Mr. Campbell's in Daniel's street below Derby." On Good Friday, April 16, 1813, the Court House was used by Rev. Dr. Matthew O'Brien. "Being Good Friday," writes Bentley, " * * & Catholic have advertised for hearers * * * Dr. Obrian, a new comer, in the Catholic. He has the Court House * * * We have never had a Catholic service in a public building since Thayer's visits & never in due form with the Service." There is a tradition that for some time the house of a Mr. Connolly on Herbert street and "an old schoolhouse" on Hardy street were used. Bishop Walsh gives the late Rev. Thomas Shahan as authority for the statement that for some years previous to 1821, services were held in a hall on the northeast corner of Washington and Federal streets. Land was bought for a church in 1813, but sold again in 1817. And it was not until 1821 that the Catholics of Salem, then about one hundred and twenty-five souls, enjoyed possession of a church of their own. On October 14th of that year Mass was said in "old St. Mary's," the first Catholic church in Salem. It was built on the east corner of Mall and Bridge streets, and, at the time of its erection, was the third Catholic church in Massachusetts, and the fourth in all New England.

After the death of Doctor Matignon, September 19, 1818, Salem was visited at regular intervals by Rev. Philip Lariscy, an Irish Augustinian, and by Fathers McQuade, Taylor and Byrne until the appointment, by Bishop Fenwick, of the Reverend John Mahoney as the first pastor on October 25, 1826. Salem thus enjoys the distinction of being the first parish created in Massachusetts after the original one of Boston.

Father Mahoney, the first pastor, was a native of Ireland. He had

spent some six years on the missions of Maryland and Virginia before coming to Boston. When he assumed charge of Salem, within the parish limits were included Lynn, Saugus and Marblehead to the south; Reading and Danvers to the west; Beverly, Ipswich, Gloucester, Amesbury, Newburyport and Dover, N. H., to the north. Lowell was added in 1827, and Waltham in 1831. Father Mahoney labored zealously for some five years in the Salem parish. The industrial development of Lowell brought many Catholics there. To better supply their needs, he began the erection of a church in that town, a temporary structure to serve for a church and a school house. In 1830 he undertook the building of "old St. Patrick's" in Lowell, and was appointed first pastor there in July, 1831.

Rev. William Wiley, an American convert, prepared for the priesthood by Bishop Fenwick, by whom he was ordained in December, 1827, and succeeded Father Mahoney as pastor in September, 1831. The three years of his pastorate were marked by devotion to the needs of the people not only of Salem, but in the far-outlying districts. In Salem, he organized a school for the instruction of Catholic youth in 1831; the church was finished by him and dedicated by Bishop Fenwick on New Year's Day, 1832. He displayed special zeal in preaching the true faith to non-Catholics, and the records of the period show a list of twenty-two converts baptized and received into the church by him during these years. For this work, his own experience peculiarly fitted him, since he had been born a Protestant and accepted the faith, when a young man, from conviction of its truth. Father Wiley left Salem in the summer of 1834.

On October 29, 1834, the Rev. John D. Brady was appointed to succeed Father Wiley. Father Brady was a native of Ireland; he was ordained in Boston on July 27, 1833, and had been an assistant to Father Byrne in Charlestown previous to his assuming charge of the Salem parish. During his pastorate, Dover, N. H., was set apart as a separate parish, to which Newburyport was joined in 1836. Lynn seems to have been attended regularly at this time, Mass being said in the house of Mr. Laurence Birney. Father Brady built the first parochial residence near the church on Mall street. The marriage and baptismal registers for the period show a steady increase in the number of Catholics, but the peace and concord of the parish were occasionally marred by contentions necessitating the intervention of the Bishop. Father Brady continued in office for over six years, being succeeded in 1841 by the Rev. James Strain, who remained but one year. Notable of Father Strain's short stay was his advocacy of Catholic education by the establishment of a school for boys and girls under the care of Mr. Daniel O'Donnell. This school was opened first in the quarters of Mr. O'Donnell, but soon transferred to the basement of "old St. Mary's." It was discontinued during the pastorate of his successor.

On March 4, 1842, Rev. Thomas J. O'Flaherty, a former physician, who had been ordained by Bishop Fenwick on September 6, 1829, became the fifth pastor. He had made some of his studies at Maynooth College, and some time after his arrival in America he received the degree of Doctor of Medicine from a college in Philadelphia, hence his popular title, Doctor O'Flaherty. He enlarged the church to meet the growing need of the congregation, and abandoned the old rectory on Mall street for a more commodious one on the corner of Howard and Bridge streets. As a student, scholar, and preacher he rendered great and useful service to the parish and to the diocese. His translation of Count de Maistre's

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

CHURCH OF THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION, SALEM

"Letters on the Spanish Inquisition" placed much valuable information in the hands of English readers, and his expounding of Catholic doctrine brought many converts to the church. His promising career was suddenly interrupted by death, March 29, 1846.

After the death of Doctor O'Flaherty, the Catholics of Salem were attended by Father O'Sullivan of Boston until the appointment, in June, 1846, of the Rev. James Conway as pastor. Father Conway was ordained in Boston, July 31, 1831. The early years of his priesthood were spent among the Pennobscot Indians, and as assistant to Father McDermott at St. Patrick's, Lowell. In 1841 he was appointed to the new parish of St. Peter's in that town, where he remained until his assignment to Salem. "The zeal shown in the Pennobscot mission, the energy displayed and the experience acquired in the difficult task of forming a new parish in Lowell, and in building a new church there, were now to be spent with his life in laying broad and deep and strong the foundations of the present Catholic church in Salem."

His first care was to enlarge and beautify the church, increasing its seating capacity by six hundred. The Sunday school and choir were reorganized in 1846; a parochial residence on Winter street (1848) and later (1852) a much larger one on Mall street were his work; he purchased and opened the Catholic Cemetery in 1849. Though Lynn had ceased to be a part of the Salem parish in 1846, the rapidly increasing number of Catholics in Salem and vicinity in 1849 was so great that a larger church became necessary. Father Conway deemed it more advisable to build a new church and form a second parish. In 1850, the Church of St. James' on Federal street was begun, and Mass celebrated there for the first time on Christmas Day of that year. In 1855 "the Hodges estate," on Walnut street, now Hawthorne Boulevard, was secured as the site of the first distinctively Catholic school in Salem. The Sisters of Notre Dame were introduced to Salem in the fall of 1855 and installed in a schoolhouse and convent set up on the site of the present school. They were insulted and almost attacked by the hostile natives, but persevered in their labors with almost immediate success. Early in the spring of 1857 ground was broken, and the foundation of the present Church of the Immaculate Conception laid. Its walls were just beginning to rise under his supervision when sudden death called him to his eternal reward, May 24, 1857.

In 1850, just at the time the new Church of St. James was under contemplation, there came to Salem, as assistant to Father Conway, the Rev. Thomas Shahan, "whose name is now and will remain forever lovingly associated with the Catholics of Salem and of the entire Essex county." The young curate identified himself with the erection of the new church and attached himself closely to the people in its neighborhood. At the same time he took charge of the mission work at Danvers, South Reading and elsewhere. In 1854, while the new church was still unfinished, a new parish was formed, with Father Shahan as its pastor. Three years later, on the occasion of Father Conway's death, he was given charge of "old St. Mary's," thus reuniting both parishes under one head and embracing the territory of Salem, Marblehead, Reading, Danvers, Beverly and Gloucester.

Under Father Shahan, the building of the Church of the Immaculate Conception was pushed forward rapidly, and it was dedicated on Sunday morning, January 10, 1858, St. James' Church being dedicated the same afternoon. This same year, he exchanged the residence on Mall street

for the house on Union street, which, much enlarged, is the present parochial residence. This same year, also, he bought an old Baptist church in Gloucester, and had it fitted for Catholic services. In 1859, the first churches in Marblehead and Danvers were opened under his supervision. The same year the basement of the present church in Salem was finished and fitted for three schoolrooms. At the close of 1861, the organization of the parish completed, Father Shahan, at his own request, was appointed again to the charge of St. James' parish, and hence was made the final division of Salem into the two parishes (English speaking) just as they exist today. He remained at St. James' until 1864, when he was assigned to Taunton. A parochial school for boys was opened by him in St. James' parish in 1852, and subsisted until 1868. The introduction of the Sisters of Notre Dame and the founding of a girls' school did not take place until 1864. He was succeeded as pastor of St. James' by the Rev. William J. Daly, who remained four years. His successor, Rev. John J. Gray, came in 1868. Father Gray remodeled the old church into a parochial hall, with school rooms in the rear, built the convent and the parochial residence opposite. His greatest undertaking was the new St. James Church. The corner stone of the noble edifice of brick and granite was laid in 1891, and the work of erection well under way when interrupted by Father Gray's death in 1893.

Rev. Michael J. McCall, the present pastor, came to Salem from Concord as successor to Father Gray in 1894. Under his able administration most of the improvements visible in the parish today have been made. The discovery of a radical defect in the construction of the new church necessitated its being taken down and rebuilt. In the brick school, conducted by the Sisters of Notre Dame, some seven hundred children receive instruction in primary, grammar and high school courses.

When Father Shahan returned to St. James', Rev. Michael Hartney, who was ordained at Boston in 1857, and had served as assistant to Father Shahan, chiefly at St. James', was promoted to the pastorate of the Immaculate Conception parish in 1862. One of his first acts was to convert "old St. Mary's" into a school house for boys. It was used for this purpose from 1863 to 1868. The old church was torn down in 1877, portions of both base and superstructure being preserved to form part of the tower of the present church. In 1864, Father Hartney finished the work of the sanctuary, and erected an altar of Caen stone, which gave completeness to the interior fitting of the church.

In January, 1866, through the generosity of Mr. Thomas Looby, and with the moral and material support of the pastors and the people of the two parishes, an orphan asylum for Catholic children who, by misfortune, were too often exposed to the unfair methods of proselytism of the day, was opened on the corner of Washington and Bridge streets. This institution, in charge of the "Grey Nuns," later removed to Lafayette street, and after many years of prosperous and progressive work was totally destroyed in the great Salem fire of June 25, 1914. It has not been rebuilt. Father Hartney labored among his flock alone for several years and won their regard by his devotion. His death, in Worcester, January 15, 1868, was the result of an accident.

On February 3, 1868, Rev. William Hally came to take charge of the parish. Like his predecessor, he had been associated with Father Shahan, to whom he had been assigned as assistant in October, 1860. After the division of the parishes in 1861, he remained with Father Shahan at St. James' until September, 1863, when he was made pastor of Quincy,

from which place he returned to Salem as pastor of the Immaculate Conception parish. During the long and efficient administration of this able and zealous priest, many notable improvements were effected in the parish. His first care was the reduction of the parish debt; the old "School Fund Association" became the "Church Debt Society." His plan to further enlarge the church resolved itself eventually into the erection of the "Chapel of the Sacred Heart" in the rear; the church tower was built, replacing the old belfry, a new organ installed, new stations of the cross were erected, the interior of the church was re-decorated, a new convent built, and the old school house replaced by a new and more commodious one.

In 1872, the greatly-increased number of French Canadians, and the inability of many of them to speak English, demanded special consideration. The basement of the Immaculate Conception Church was given over to them, and Father Harkins—now Bishop Harkins of Providence—entrusted with their spiritual welfare. In May, 1873, Father Talbot, a French Canadian priest, was appointed their pastor. He remained, however, but a few months, when Father Harkins again assumed their charge. He secured for their use a Sailors' Bethel on Herbert street. A few months later, Rev. Olivier Boucher took charge of his fellow countrymen in Salem, and remained with them until 1875, when he was transferred to Lawrence. Father Talbot returned for a time, but was finally succeeded, in 1878, by Rev. J. Z. Dumontier, who remained but a few months. In September of that year, Rev. Octave Lepine became pastor; in 1879, he was replaced by Rev. F. X. L. Vezina. Father Vezina purchased, in 1881, an estate on Lafayette street, in South Salem, where most of the French still live. On this site a church was erected, and opened for services in 1884. It was dedicated in 1885, under the title of St. Joseph's. In August, 1885, Rev. J. O. Gadoury came as assistant to Fr. Vezina, who shortly retired for a time to Canada. During his absence, Father Gadoury purchased and remodeled the parochial residence. Two years later, upon the resignation of Father Vezina, Father Gadoury was made pastor. In 1892 he founded a large school on Harbor street, in the rear of the church. A four-story brick building, having a hall on the ground floor and twelve large class rooms, was erected, and near this a wooden convent for the Grey Nuns, who taught the children. A new brick church was erected to replace the original St. Joseph's, a wooden church and separate parish erected in the "Castle Hill" district, and many other improvements made in the parish before his death in 1906.

He was succeeded by Rev. George Rainville. During his pastorate the disastrous fire of June, 1914, all but entirely destroyed the entire parish property. Undismayed by the disaster, the people under his direction undertook the work of rebuilding. The basement of the church was fitted up for services; the auditorium being used for school purposes; a new convent and parochial residence were built, and plans for a school were under way when he died in March, 1920. His successor is the present pastor, Rev. Pierre H. Grenier, who has been sent to complete the work of restoration and sustain the high spiritual ideals of the people.

In 1877, Father William Hally retired as pastor of the Immaculate Conception parish. He was succeeded by Rev. P. J. Hally, who introduced the practice of holding services for the Catholic prisoners in the county jail and the almshouse. The interior of the church was much improved by him, and the parish school extended by an addition in the rear for boys. He replaced the Sisters of Notre Dame by the Sisters of Char-

ity, who continue in charge of the school at present. In 1896 Father Hally resigned his pastorship, to take up missionary work among the negroes.

He was succeeded by Rev. John D. Tierney, formerly of Rockland. Father Tierney improved the property, especially the parochial residence. He also bought land on Lafayette street, in the then growing southern section, for a chapel; but the fire of 1914 has much changed the aspect of this district.

As with the French, in the time of Rev. W. J. Hally, so with the Poles, in Father Tierney's time. Their increasing number necessitated special consideration. The basement was given over to them, and Rev. J. Chmielinski of Boston attended to their spiritual welfare until the assignment of the Rev. Joseph Czubek as their pastor in 1901. Property was purchased on Herbert street, on which a church—St. John the Baptist—was erected, the basement being devoted to school purposes. A convent was erected on Union street. Some years later an old Protestant church on St. Peter street was purchased and renovated to meet the growing demands of the parish. The old church on Herbert street was converted into a school in which today more than six hundred children are educated by the Felician Sisters.

In 1904, Father Tierney was transferred to St. Catherine's, Charlestown. His successor was the Rev. Timothy J. Murphy of St. Ann's, Neponset. Fr. Murphy died in 1911; his pastorate was marked by special interest in the cause of Catholic education, and in the matter of the temperance and no-license movement in the city.

The present pastor, Rev. John P. Sullivan, came from Middleboro as successor to Fr. Murphy. The years of his pastorate have been marked by many needed and notable improvements in and around the parish property; by an active and public-spirited participation by himself and his people in all civic and religious activities of the community, and under hs leadership and guidance his people today receive the recognition which they have duly merited.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

BEVERLY—1. HISTORICAL SOCIETY—2. BALCH HOUSE, 1638—3. CIVIL WAR SOLDIERS' MONUMENT—4. OLD POWDER HOUSE—5. FIRST SUNDAY SCHOOL IN AMERICA

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

## THE CITY OF BEVERLY

Captain Smith was so impressed with the natural beauty of this part of Essex county that he called it "the paradise of all these parts." When in 1626 the fishing station there was abandoned and the few who had settled there removed to Naumkeag, they coasted the Manchester and Beverly shore, which was also admired by Endicott and Higginson. The first settlement was effected on the peninsula between Collin's Cove and North River. Dr. Gardner of Salem, in his article on "The Planters," in this work, fully sets forth the conditions of settlement in Beverly and surrounding country. In passing, it may be stated that the leaders of the Cape Ann plantation and the most prominent men of the first Salem settlement were doubtless the founders of the first permanent colony of "Cape Ann Side", later incorporated as Beverly. Pioneer families included these: Balch, Conant, Woodbury, Brackenbury, Dixey, Palfrey, Trask, Dodge, and Scruggs; also Thomas Tuck, for whom Tuck's Point was later named; Ralph Ellingwood, for whom a Point was named, and the first ferryman; John Stone, who conducted an "ordinary" or inn near the junction of Cabot and Front streets. Another pioneer here was Captain Thomas Lathrop, who fell in the massacre at Bloody Brook. Andrew Elliot lived in the upper part of the town; his many descendants included the celebrated divine, Rev. Dr. Andrew Elliot; an ex-mayor of Boston, Hon. Samuel A. Elliot; and a president of Harvard College, Charles W. Eliot. Other early settlers in these parts were the Lovetts, the Prides, the Dodges; Richard Ober, founder of all of this name in New England; Robert Briscoe, Lawrence Leach, Henry Herrick, Hugh Laskin, the Grover families—all settled here and built homes, and many of their number reared large families.

The following shows the advancement of the city: Beverly settled, 1626; incorporated as a town, 1668; incorporated as city, 1894; city charter adopted, 1894; city charter amended, 1898; charter revised and accepted, 1910; area in present city (acres), 9,770; population in 1900, 13,884; population in 1910, 18,650; population in 1915, 22,959; population in 1920, 22,561; registered male voters, 5,305; female voters, 3,713; number of polls, 8,444; miles in streets, 83; miles in sewers, 51.84; number of parks, 2; playgrounds, 7; public bath houses, 1; athletic fields, 1.

The Public Library was established in Beverly in 1857, and is open every day except Sundays and holidays from 9 a. m. to 9 p. m. The collection of books amounts to over 42,242 volumes. In the winter of 1918-19 on account of the coal famine occasioned by the World War demand for coal, this library was closed from February to March. A room used as reading-room in the City Hall was utilized for reading room purposes. Again, in September and October of 1919, owing to the influenza epi-

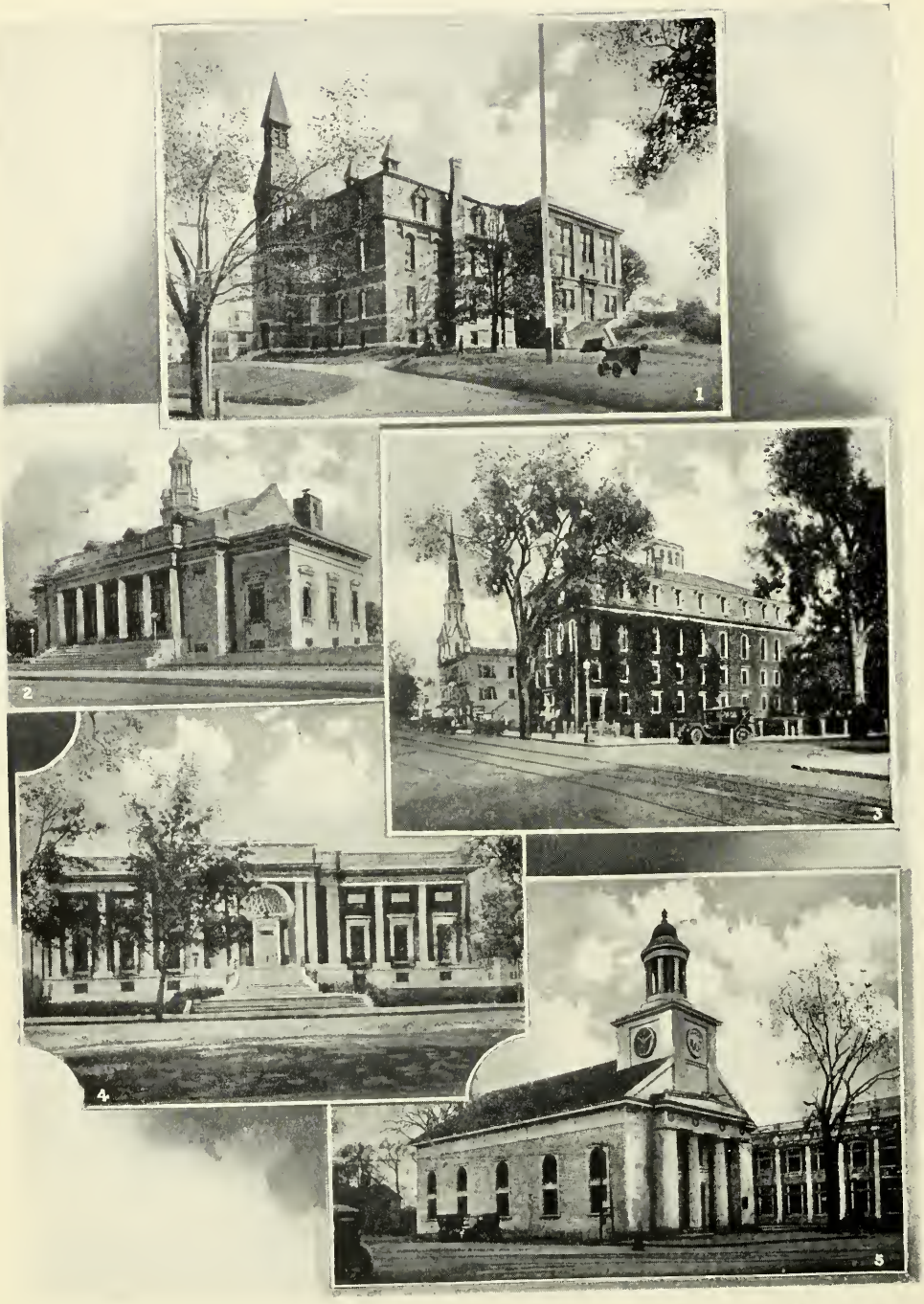
demic, the libraries were all closed by the board of health. Martha P. Smith, librarian, gave the above facts in her annual report in 1919.

Once attached to Salem, then in 1668 becoming a separate town, Beverly so continued until 1894, when it became a city. The following have served as mayors: John I. Baker, 1895; Charles H. Odell, 1896; Freeborn W. Cressy, 1897; Perry Collier, 1898; Benjamin D. Webber, 1899-1900; Samuel Cole, 1900-02; Parker S. Davis, 1903-04; Joseph A. Wallis, 1905-06; S. Harvey Dow, 1907-08; Charles H. Trowt, 1909-10; Frederick A. Dodge, 1911-12; Herman A. MacDonald, 1913-16; James McPherson, 1917-20; Frank D. Tuttle, 1921.

The present city officials are: Mayor, Frank D. Tuttle; City Auditor, Bertha L. Hayward; City Clerk, Edward P. Eldredge; City Collector, Frederick A. Cressy; City Engineer, Albert H. Richardson; City Electrician, William H. Greenlaw; City Physician, Dr. James F. Lawlor; City Solicitor, Thomas J. Casey; City Treasurer, Percy A. Wallis; Commissioner of Public Works, James W. Blackmer; Harbor Master, Charles B. Chapman; Secretary of School Committee, Ralph C. Simmons; Superintendent of Almshouse, Walter Farnham; Superintendent of Schools, S. Howard Chace; Pumping Station Engineer, Herbert T. Conant.

Beverly being so near Salem did not have postal facilities of its own nearly so early as other towns in Essex county. Asa Leach was the first postmaster of whom we have any record. This was before the building of the Essex bridge, and Mr. Leech was also in charge of the ferry and kept a public house at the corner of Cabot and Davis streets. He was postmaster many years. Succeeding him came Dr. Josiah Batchelder; he kept the office at his residence on the corner of Davis and Front streets. The next to hold the office was John Burley, who later resigned in favor of John Lemon, who was followed by Farnham Plummer. Then came Jonathan Smith, who held the office nine years, until the appointment of Stephens Baker in 1833, who held the position sixteen years and was succeeded by Joseph D. Tuck, and he in turn was succeeded by Gilbert T. Hawes, who moved the office to the corner of Cabot street and Railroad avenue. Thomas A. Morgan succeeded him, under whom the postoffice was located in the Masonic Block, where his successor, Thomas D. Davis, continued it. Mr. Davis was a veteran of the Civil War, whose health had been impaired in Andersonville and Libby prisons. His successor was another veteran of the same war, Colonel Francis E. Porter, who was an excellent postmaster, but through a change from Republican to Democratic administration, he was removed and the appointment of Jeremiah Murphy made, who moved the postoffice to Odd Fellows Block, where every modern convenience then existing was installed. Postmaster Murphy received his appointment at the hands of Grover Cleveland, August 2, 1896. Under the Harrison administration the office was in charge of Postmaster Charles H. Odell, after which the administration changed back again to Grover Cleveland, and Josiah Woodbury was

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATION



BEVERLY—1. HIGH SCHOOL—2. POST OFFICE—3. CITY HALL—4. PUBLIC LIBRARY—5. FIRST UNITARIAN CHURCH, DATING FROM 1667

made postmaster to August 10, 1894, and was succeeded by Francis Norwood, who held the office for sixteen years, appointed by President William McKinley. He was succeeded by Charles Prescott, who was appointed by President Woodrow Wilson, and assumed charge February 1, 1914.

Beverly is a first class postoffice. Free delivery service was established November 1, 1888, and the four carriers appointed were Josiah Woodbury, Martin Murray, William P. Hanners and John C. Foley. There are now eighteen regular and six substitute carriers. The Federal building in which the postoffice is now conducted was completed in July, 1912, costing over $75,000.00 The postal receipts for the last fiscal year have been $70,470.81. Upon the opening of the new postoffice building, the first mails were sent from the office July 14, 1912, by clerks George A. Carr and William G. Smith.

The postoffice force in August, 1921, is as follows: Charles Prescott, postmaster and custodian; Calvin A. Pierce, assistant postmaster and assistant custodian; Charles A. Larcom, superintendent of mails. Clerks: George A. Carr, Edward C. Eldred, Roger W. Fegan, Willard R. Herrick, James A. V. Hurd, William G. Smith, Elmer A. Standley, George Thompson, Harry C. Woodbury, George L. Worcester, (sub-stations) clerks in charge—Charles A. Baker, Arthur G. Farrin, Edwin L. Pert, Mary C. Jones. The list of city carriers at this time are these: William P. Hanners, J. Perley Stone, J. Lewis Preston, James S. Brown, Thomas J. Fraser, Alfred H. Larcom, Chester W. Sinclair, Joseph E. Darling, George E. Knowles, Willard A. Standley, Fred A. Hinchcliffe, George E. Hathaway, Dennis J. McGowan, Charles H. Dockham, Arthur W. Jones, Harlan A. Cole, Arthur B. Stiles, Thomas J. Wallace.

The following comprises a list of present-day enterprises in Beverly as relates to the shoe and leather industry: Austin & Hawkins Co., J. H. Baker & Co., Bartlett Trask Shoe Company, E. F. Bell & Co., Bray & Stanley, Criterion Shoe Company, P. A. Field Shoe Company, Flint Bros., Gagan Counter Co., Garden City Shoe Co., Millett Woodbury Co., Moore Bros., Peabody Shoe Company, F. A. Seavey & Co., M. Shortell & Co., Woodbury Shoe Company.

The Beverly Chamber of Commerce is a new institution for the young city of Beverly. It was organized in 1920. From its first annual report, the subjoined facts have been obtained: The purpose of the Chamber of Commerce is to carry out the wishes of the members in helping to solve problems affecting the good of the whole community. Suggestions are at all times welcomed by the board of directors, from the members, from the different organizations of the city, and from the citizens of the community interested in everything that is good for the whole city. It is the aim and object of this Chamber of Commerce to make it the medium through which the best thought of the citizens of the

community may be coordinated and concentrated upon securing action in the things that tend to the progress of the city.

The program of activities for the first year's would-be accomplishments were inclusive of these subjects: Major—Housing, Public Health, Retail Trade, Transportation, Sidewalks, Schools, Publicity. Minor—Coordination of all civic and charitable work, Restaurant, Girls' Club, Recreation, Traffic, Water Supply. Supplementary—Employment Bureau, Public waiting room; City plan of zoning; Community Memorial, Building, Harbor Development, Boat service to Boston; Americanization, State Forestry.

"Buy in Beverly" is the slogan adopted by the Chamber of Commerce, and it is taken up by every dealer in the city, not merely on account of its being Beverly, but because the stores offer superior values and service. A Merchants' Carnival was inaugurated in October, 1920, and proved to be a big trade event; it brought thousands of visitors and customers.

This Chamber of Commerce affiliates with other organizations as follows: Chamber of Commerce of the United States, Essex County Associated Boards of Trade, National Association of Commercial Executives, National Association of Retail Secretaries.

A Community Christmas Tree set up and loaded with suitable gifts for the young, especially the needy of the community, was brought about solely through the efforts of the Chamber of Commerce in its first year's work. The housing, rooming and boarding place propositions have each found place in the careful deliberations of this organization. The annual report for 1920 shows receipts and disbursements to the amount of $15,836.43. Officers, 1920-21—Chester C. Pope, president; John H. Newell, A. Scott Fraser, vice-presidents; Arthur K. Story, treasurer; C. S. Nice, secretary and manager. The directors are Messrs. James W. Blackmer, Albert Boyden, Arthur A. Forness, A. Scott Fraser, Walter E. Hubbard, Peer P. Johnson, Charles F. Lee, John H. Newell, Chester C. Pope, Charles R. Pritchard, Robert Robertson, George H. Vose. The amount of funds on hand in the bank April 1st, 1921, was $2,913.

On other pages of this work will be found a narrative concerning the great United Shoe Machinery Company. The following concerning Beverly's greatest industry is from the pen of an excellent authority:

In the history of Beverly, shoes and shoemaking have always been identified with her success, and many of her most prominent men have been connected with the craft. The people of this and the preceding generation have watched with ever-increasing interest the development of the shoe factory right here in our midst from the little shop in the door yard of almost every home to the large and well-equipped modern shoe factory of today. With the growth of the shoe industry, there has been a corresponding growth of city and property. Today we point with pride to the large and well-regulated shoe factories in the manufacturing district.

It was the custom in the early history of our country for journeymen shoemakers or "tramping jours," as they were called, to travel from house to house, repairing shoes, and not unfrequently they took orders for shoes made to measure. These shoemakers, or cordwinders and cordwainers, as they were called in those days, boarded with the men for whom they were working, staying at the house until all necessary repairs were made in their line, then going on to the next place, and so on. In the winter they traveled on snow shoes. The earliest cordwainer of whom we have any knowledge in our city was Andrew Elliott, who lived on Cabot street, above the Gloucester Crossing, near what is now the corner of Simon street.

This part of the town at that time was called "Haymarket," also "The City," and was a very important place and a center of trade. Mr. Elliott was the first town clerk of Beverly, and from him descended many prominent men, including President Eliot of Harvard College. We find that a shoemaker of note, Thomas Beard, resided in Salem in 1629. Also that Thomas Edwards, a name familiar to Beverly people today, resided in the same town. This was in 1649, and in 1652 Jonqas Fairbanks was brought before an Essex county court and charged with "wearing great boots."

Just before the Revolutionary war, Joseph Foster moved to Beverly from Ipswich. He was deacon and also town clerk. He settled on Cabot street, near the way now known as Chestnut street. He was one of those who supplied the Continental army with shoes during the war. His shop was afterward occupied by Thomas Herrick, who with his sons, Joseph H., Sidney, Emerson, Thomas F. and Oliver, carried on the business. Thomas Herrick was the grandfather of Representative Joseph E. Herrick. This shop was afterward moved to the corner of Cabot and Myrtle streets.

Joseph Foster's son Daniel had a shop just below the Samuel P. Lovett estate, on Cabot street, where he manufactured thick, heavy boots, calfskin jackets and petticoat trousers for fishermen. The principal retail trade in shoes was done by the grocery stores at that time, and Mr. Foster supplied these stores with men's shoes of various designs. He also shipped shoes, as was customary in those days, to the West Indies and the southern states, receiving in return all kinds of produce, beans, corn, grain, etc. In connection with shoes, hats, furniture and New England rum formed part of the shipments. These men would occasionally accompany the shipment, both for the sake of the trip and to superintend the sale of the cargo. The following anecdote will illustrate the pluck and fearlessness of these men. During the war of 1812, several of these shoemakers chartered a schooner, loaded her at Essex during the night, ran the blockade successfully, and disposed of their cargo at an immense profit, thus securing for themselves a good round sum of money as the result of their venture and the reward of their daring.

Daniel Foster's three sons, James, Seth and Joseph, all worked with him, and later, under the firm name of Daniel Foster & Sons, they owned the patent for manufacturing pegged shoes in Essex county. James Foster manufactured shoes in the Gorham Howard building, still standing on the corner of Bartlett and May streets, also in the original part of the shop, where William Cullivan's store now stands. His son Daniel, for many years an assessor of Beverly, succeeded him in the business until 1841, when he retired to engage in the fishing business. Seth Foster worked in the business until 1824, when he removed to Marblehead and

continued the trade there. Many of the older manufacturers of that town learned their trade from him. In 1829 he moved to Ithaca, New York, and devoted his time to the manufacture of custom shoes, in connection with his retail store there. In 1830 he removed to Newark, New Jersey, and in the year following to Elizabeth, the same state, where he remained until his death in 1833. It was said of Mr. Foster that he was the first to introduced pegged shoes into New York State. He was the father of William A. Foster, who was so long in active business on Park street, and who was the first to introduce steam machinery in connection with the manufacture of shoes in Beverly. He was also the father of Daniel Foster, who did a successful shoe business on the corner of Railroad avenue and Rantoul street for many years. Joseph Foster, if we are not mistaken, left no children. He worked with his father somewhat, but paid more attention to out-of-door matters, and experimented largely in the culture of the mulberry, with a view to the raising of silk worms and the manufacture of silk. For this purpose he set out the orchard of trees near the corner of West Dane and Cabot streets, from which Mulberry street derives its name. His experiments were both interesting and curious, and he was commended by the agricultural department at Washington for his intelligent attention to the subject. But, as it required more capital to develop his experiments than he was able to command, he was never able to meet his expectations in this particular.

Among those who learned the trade of the elder Daniel were Captain Daniel Cross, Olphert Tittle and Osman Gage, all seafaring men. Mr. Tittle carried on an extensive business where the drug store of John H. Moore is located. Deacon Nehemiah Roundy had a shop near the northerly corner of the Kittredge estate on Cabot street, now occupied by the Mason building, which houses the Almy, Bigelow & Washburn store and other business concerns.

At that time it was customary for apprentices to serve seven years and to board with their masters. Some were bound out at a very early age and served until they were 21. One little orphan lad was bound to a shoemaker at the age of seven. When he was fourteen, he remarked to a companion that he was the happiest boy alive, for he had but seven more years to serve.

Deacon Roundy introduced the system of apprentices serving fourteen months. At the end of that time they considered their trade learned, and received journeymen's wages. He had many apprentices under this system, and some of them have been among our most noted and influential citizens. Out of the many we will mention but one, the first mayor of Beverly, the late Hon. John I. Baker. Mr. Roundy manufactured the celebrated Wellington boot, which was a very popular and leading style at that time. He shipped shoes to Africa and other foreign countries, and also had a very successful home trade in Boston, and for many years made his weekly trip over the road with his one-horse team. He at one time manufactured shoes in the house on Cabot street directly opposite the head of Elliott street. Three of his sons, John P., Augustus and George, worked with him. Among others who worked in this shop was Joseph Woodbury (2d), who for many years manufactured shoes on the corner of Railroad avenue and Hardy street, and who after his death was succeeded by his son, Myron, who conducted the business until his death in the factory on Rantoul street occupied by E. F. Bell & Co.

George A. Woodbury (2nd) another son, was for years located on the corner of Park and Bow streets, and did quite an extensive business there.

Joseph Masury is another who worked in this same shop. He afterward did a large and successful business in Cleveland, Ohio, and other western cities. James Hill, who for many years was town clerk and prominent in town affairs, was another of Deacon Roundy's employees.

William Goodridge carried on the business in the Luke Goodridge house, which was located on Cabot, near the corner of Dane street. His sons, Charles, Luke and William, worked with him. About the year 1819 Captain Thomas B. Smith bought the Benjamin Roundy estate, adjoining the William Goodrich house. He enlarged and altered the house and built a large factory, where he did an extensive business in the manufacture of heavy boots and shoes. This shop was for many years a sort of reform headquarters, where anti-slavery, temperance and other measures were discussed, many of which found earnest support and able advocates. His brother, John G. Smith, worked with him. This shop was moved down on Railroad avenue near the depot, and afterward to River street, across the tracks. In 1830 David Lefavour began the manufacture of women's morocco and walking shoes in the shop then located on the Captain Issachar Foster estate at Beverly Cove. He found a market for his goods through a kinsman in Providence, Rhode Island, and gained for them an excellent reputation. His business increased until he was obliged to build larger at the Cove. When his son, Joseph W., became of age, and was associated with him, the business increased still more, and he was ultimately obliged to build the large and convenient factory which is still standing on Rantoul street, opposite the foot of Wallis street, where after the father's death the business was carried on by the son until the death of the latter.

John Lefavour, a brother of David, commenced the manufacture of shoes in 1847. He was, during the early part of his life, a seafaring man, being engaged in the merchant marine and bank fishing. For some two years he manufactured shoes for the Cuban trade, his shop being on Ober street, at Beverly Cove. In 1864 he moved the business to Park street, near the depot, and took his son, John H. Lefavour, into partnership, continuing in the business until his death, in 1872. Nearly opposite the David Lefavour shop at the Cove stood the little shop where the name Woodbury Brothers, which stood for many years on the factory of the Woodbury Shoe Company, had its origin. Here Thomas Woodbury, with his brothers, Elisha, Luther and Stephen, worked at their trade. The present firm, so well known in the shoe trade throughout the country, started here also, but were soon obliged to build larger, and during their long career have probably manufactured more shoes and employed more help than any other shoe concern in Beverly.

Next to the John Lefavour shop at the Cove was the Boden shop, where Warren Boden, an early apprentice of Deacon Roundy and his brother Porter, worked at the trade. Opposite that shop was the Galloup shop, where several of the Galloup brothers worked at the trade. Another shop there was that of Philip Hammond, at Ober's Point. Another was the shop of John K. Fielder, on Hale street, just below Lothrop street. This shop was a sort of rendezvous for the boys, who used to meet there evenings, where they learned to play the violin and other musical instruments, and many a good time was there enjoyed.

Israel Foster had a shop at Chapman's corner, and did considerable business there. There were several other of the little shops in that neighborhood. There was one on the corner of Dane and Essex streets, one on Cabot street, near the corner of Pond street, and another on

Knowlton street. One of these shops, which stood on the corner of Cabot and Davis streets, was afterward removed to Dane street. Jeremiah Trask, Sr., had a shop on the Joshua Trask estate, near the Gloucester Branch railroad crossing on Cabot street, where he, with his sons Jeremiah, Nathaniel and Manasseh, did quite a little business. Later Manasseh made shoes to measure in a shop on Cabot street, near Milton street. The store of Jeremiah Trask, Jr., on Cabot street, near the corner of West Dane street, was a busy place. Among the apprentices in this shop were the late Seth Norwood, father of former Senator Francis Norwood, and George S. Millett, who was one of the largest manufacturers in the city at one time.

Not far from the year 1830, Ebenezer Moses came here from Malden and established himself in the shoe manufacturing business on the corner of Cabot and Essex streets. With him came William D. Crossfield and William Larrabee. Mr. Moses manufactured mostly run-rounds and pumps for both ladies and gentlemen. He built a large factory accommodation on the corner of Federal and Chapman streets, and was the first to introduce the division of labor with one to fit the sole, one to sew the shoe, and another to finish. He did a large and successful business up to the panic of 1837, and continued for several years afterward with varied success.

It is interesting to know, in this connection, that Samuel Preston, of Danvers, the inventor of the first pegging machine, was a school teacher in the old brick school house on School street, and after he had removed to Danvers and engaged in the business there, many Beverly persons, including some of his old pupils, were in his employ.

A large number of Beverly people in the eighteenth century and the early part of the nineteenth, were fishermen, who worked at shoemaking during the winter, their work being brought mainly from Lynn and Danvers. At the present time, instead of depending on these two places for employment, our city furnishes work in our large factories for scores from those places.

A family that has long been identified with shoemaking is the Wallis family. Nathaniel, the first of the name, came here from Cornwall, England, and settled at Falmouth, now Portland, Maine, remaining there until driven off with the rest of the population by the Indians. He seems to have first come to Manchester and immediately afterward to Beverly, settling near the corner of Cabot street and what is now Columbus avenue. Several of his sons were shoemakers, of whom Caleb, afterward Deacon Caleb, married, in 1687, Sarah, a daughter of Nathaniel and Remember Stone, the latter being a daughter of Ensign Samuel Corning, who owned all the land west of Cabot street, from Milton street to Pond street and Corning's Cove, near the Herrick grain warehouse. Deacon Caleb built a shop on the corner of Cabot and Wallis streets, which was afterward occupied by another Caleb of the next generation. Of the brothers of this latter Caleb, who worked in the old shop, were Josiah and Henry.

Another shoemaker was Bartholomew Wallis, who lived on the corner of Cabot street and Wallis streets, opposite the factory built by the elder Caleb. His sons, Bartholomew, Andrew, Israel and Levi, worked with their father for some time, and afterward for themselves. Bartholomew and Andrew built the three-story house on Cabot street just this side of Fayette street; the former had a shop in the yard, the latter made custom shoes to measure, and lived in the house across the street

from Bartholomew, now owned and occupied by Mrs. Jesse G. Trask. Israel bought the estate on the corner of Cabot and Judson streets, where is now the Ware Theatre.

Ebenezer, who lived on Wallis street—and by these names we see that Wallis street was rightly named—also made shoes, as did his sons, Ebenezer, Jr., Joshua and Eleazer. His cousin, whose house stood on the site of the A. C. Lunt block, corner of Cabot and Bow streets, had a shop between his house and the house adjoining the Lovett house, which occupied a portion of the site of the Rogers block, where he worked at the business with his sons, Ebenezer, Jeremiah, William and Joseph. A bright and tonguey member of the craft was Jonathan Herrick, whose wife was from the Wallis family. He served during the war of 1812 under Harrison at "Tippecanoe," which appellation he bore ever afterward. His shop was known as "Tar Bay," and stood on Water street until it was removed in the latter part of the nineteenth century, when Michael Harrington erected his new house on its site.

Another character was Harry Ellingwood, who learned his trade of Deacon Roundy; he was lame, and during his youth was a pretty reckless fellow, but was afterward converted and became quite a zealous Christian. He emigrated to Kentucky and was for many years a successful and influential preacher there.

Lewis Eliot, who married in North Beverly, and who kept a shoe store in Salem, advertised extensively, believing, as our wide-awake and energetic dealers do today, in a liberal and judicious use of printer's ink. Some of his advertisements were attractive for their originality and uniqueness. Many of them were in rhyme. One of his verses reads thus:

Cheap, cheap, cheap was the cry
From Buffum's corner to the neck;
Shoes to buckle, shoes to tie
Neatly will your feet bedeck.

Another loyal character who served during the war of 1812 was Josiah Foster, known as "Cape Sire." He lived on Essex street and worked with Jeremiah Trask, Jr. In some conditions and on some occasions, while telling of scenes through which he had passed, he would imagine himself on board a man-of-war. Those associated with him were all Englishmen, and he would often "clear the deck" of the whole shop's crew.

A very tall shoemaker known as Jack Ayers, who lived on the Charles H. Patch estate at Centerville, had an entry built on to his shop, in order, it was said, to accommodate his legs, and the boys took special delight in twitting him of it, serving to provoke him beyond endurance. This was one of their songs of annoyance:

It was long tall Jack
Said his Whip he would crack
On the wicked boys' back
Who persisted in calling him "Lofty."
But "Aloft what's the weather?"
They all answered together,
And then they would change his name to "Softy."

Mr. Ayers was a soldier in the militia, and of such great length of leg that no one else could keep step with his enormous strides, hence he

was allowed to fall out on the march. Had he lived in these modern days, he would no doubt have been a champion pedestrian.

More than seventy-five years ago, a boy by the name of Abner tried to learn the shoemaker's trade at Deacon Roundy's shop, where then worked Thomas L. Pickett, a bright and witty character, who one day, examining the production of this young struggler, said: "Well, Abner, you have made something we can all worship, for it is the likeness of nothing in the heavens above, or the earth beneath, or the waters under the earth." And the best part of this was that Abner took the credit of the joke to himself and really thought that its brightness offset any shortcomings in the shoe manufacturing line.

One of the early Wallis shoemakers was Daniel, who lived in a square one-story house, in the then open field, where is now the junction of Rantoul and Wallis streets. He, too, was a cordwainer, and reared a large family, including several who worked at that trade. In the later years of his life, he came under the delusion that he was dead, and in constant association with those who had gone before. Hence he was known as "Deadman Daniel," to distinguish him from another Daniel Wallis. It may be there was something akin to Spiritualism in the controlling influences which thus developed themselves in those early days.

It may be of interest to know that the first shoe factory in the United States was located in the neighboring town of Danvers. It was established by Zerubbabel Porter, who waxed prosperous by making brogans for heavy slaves in the South. These were made by hand and in the cheapest possible manner. Following the establishment of this shop in Danvers, other small shops sprang up about the beginning of the eighteenth century. The uppers, soles and linings were cut by hand and given out to residents of the vicinity to be finished, the women doing the stitching, the rest being done by the men, who were mostly farmers or fishermen, and worked at shoemaking during their spare time. Hundreds of families added to their scanty incomes in this way. One specialty was fishermen's boots, which the local shoemakers would make up and take to the local wharves and the neighboring seaport towns, where they would find a ready sale for them on the arrival of the fishermen from a successful trip.

The following is the list of the principal shoe manufacturers in Beverly today: The Baby Comfort Shoe Company, The J. H. Baker Shoe Company, Bartlett & Trask, E. F. Bell & Co., Bray & Stanley, Criterion Shoe Co., P. A. Field Shoe Co., Flint Brothers, Kane & MacDonald, Millett, Woodbury & Co., F. A. Seavey & Co., Peabody Shoe Co., Reliance Shoe Co., M. Shortell & Son, Woodbury Shoe Company.

Beverly has always been noted for the number of its churches, and today the list includes the following: Unitarian, Congregational, Baptist, Episcopal, Methodist, Universalist, Penticostal, Jewish Synagogue, Roman Catholic and Salvation Army Post.

The Second Church of Beverly is connected with the Congregational denomination. The meeting-house, at the junction of Cabot and Conant streets, is a handsome and imposing specimen of colonial architecture. Considerable difficulty was encountered in separating from the First Parish, but permission was finally obtained from the "Great and General Court." The first meeting of the new precinct was held at the house

of Captain John Dodge, on November 13, 1713. At this meeting it was voted "to proceed forthwith to ye building a meeting hous for ye public worship of God; to choose a committee of nine persons to manage ye affair of building and finishing ye sd hous, any fine of them agreeing; ye hous to be 48 feet long, 38 feet wide, and 22 feet stud; and unanimously agreed that ye meeting-hous should be set up by ye county road, neare ye hous of Mr. Jabez Baker." The house originally stood about thirty feet farther north and faced Cabot street. The first religious service was held on December 14, 1714.

The first pastor was Rev. John Chipman, who had been graduated from Harvard in the class of 1711. During his pastorate of almost sixty years the church enjoyed uninterrupted success and prosperity. On the morning of December 28, 1715, a "Preamble and Covenant" was duly drawn up, publicly acknowledged, and signed by fifteen males, thereby instituting a "Church of Christ" in the northern section of the town. Later that day, Mr. Chipman "was set apart to the gospel ministry in this place by solemn ordination." In 1753 Mr. Robert Hooper, Jr., presented the first bell, which continued to be used until 1822.

Mr. Chipman's long pastorate closed in the turmoil of the Revolution. It appears that, like many of the older men, the good pastor had Toryish sympathies. But it is not surprising to find that the young man who was called to assist the aged pastor, Rev. Enos Hitchcock, was a fiery patriot, and perhaps the extraordinary fervor of the inhabitants of the Upper Parish in the cause of the Revolution was somewhat due to his brave and enthusiastic spirit. On July 14, 1774, the fast appointed by the authority of the people to supplicate the divine favor for the liberties of America, was observed with solemnity by the ministers and congregations in the lower and upper parishes in Beverly. A collection for the poor of the town of Boston was taken up, and a very generous sum was contributed. While the town was arming for the fray, this meeting-house was the center of the movement in the Upper Parish. Here, on November 24, 1774, the minute-men met. On February 15, 1775, a second meeting of the minute-men took place in this meeting-house. Between 9 and 10 o'clock on April 19 the alarm rang out from the bell of this church, and on that day Reuben Kennison of this parish was killed—the first soldier of Beverly to give his life for his country.

During the period of the Unitarian controversy, this church was greatly weakened by the secession of those who could not accept the new views. Pastor Robinson, by his pronounced Unitarian views, so offended certain members of the church that they either remained at home on the Sabbath or attended some church where they could hear doctrines preached to which they could assent. Thus it came about that the Fourth Congregational Church and Society of Beverly was organized with four male and sixteen female members. This society as such ended its existence in 1866, when the two societies were reunited. Since that time

the church has remained true to the orthodox wing of Congregationalism. The church building was repaired in 1865, and rededicated on December 28 of that year, it being the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the church's organization. Not until 1870 did the reunited church formally adopt the name, "The Second Congregational Church in Beverly." During the pastorate of Rev. E. Melville Wylie the time of preaching service was changed from afternoon to morning; the dual system of church and society was also abolished, and the church was duly incorporated in June, 1904.

In 1921 it is possible to say that the church is in a flourishing condition. There are 175 members, and the church is the center of the religious and much of the social life of the community. The services are well attended. Under the capable leadership of Miss Daisy Raymond two choirs render exceptionally good music. The senior choir sits in the choir gallery at the rear of the church, while the members of the junior choir, wearing cassocks and surplices, occupy seats behind the pulpit. On July 22, 1906, was first used the splendid organ which was presented to the church by Mrs. Raynol Bolling. The commodious parish house, with auditorium, stage, anterooms, kitchen and modern conveniences, was erected in 1908, and is in constant demand for parish purposes, so that the church edifice is used for nothing but services of worship. The individual communion service, in use since 1906, was given by Mr. Charles Arthur Foster, as a memorial of his mother. The tennis courts are greatly used by the young people during the summer. The expense of preparing these was defrayed by the munificence of Mr. William Phillips, now American minister to the Netherlands.

The church officials in 1921 are as follows: Clerk, Charles Brown; moderator, Fred Wallis; deacons, George Glines, C. E. Wilson, Solon Lovett; Sunday school superintendent, Sidney N. Tappan; treasurer, Roland A. Stanley; president Woman's Union, Mrs. Francis A. Brown. The pastorate of Rev. Ralph Ernest Bayes, A. B. (Yankton, 1916), S. T. B. (Andover, 1919), began on March 1, 1919.

Immanuel Congregational Church is situated in the suburb of Beverly known as Rialside. It developed originally from a Sunday school, and was served at first by the Beverly pastors alternating in their services. About the year 1901 it was decided to call a student from Andover Theological Seminary to preach, Mr. Perley C. Grant, and at the end of two years' service, on November 18, 1903, nineteen persons pledged themselves to form a church, with Mr. Grant as pastor. The church thus formed was undenominational and was called a Union Church. On May 23, 1904, Mr. Packard was called as pastor; November, 1905, D. J. Grose was called, and in May, 1908, R. A. Goodwin was called. Rev. C. M. Harwood was called as pastor in October, 1908, and under his leadership, on February 11, 1910, it was unanimously voted to become a Congregational church and ask to be admitted to the Essex South Confer-

ence of Congregational Churches. In April, 1910, the church adopted the creed recommended by the Congregational National Council, and was admitted into the Essex South Conference, May 11, 1910. October 31, 1910, the church was incorporated, and called John Esaias as pastor, December 4, 1911. March 24, 1914, voted either to enlarge the present house of worship or build a new one; finally voted, April 10, to build a new church. Dr. J. T. Tarr was called to the pastorate in May, 1914, and was installed as pastor December 2, 1914.

March 17, 1915, it was decided to build the new church on Bates lots on Bridge street, which is the location of the present house of worship. The corner-stone of the new church was laid November 6, 1915, and the church was dedicated with impressive services, Saturday, March 14, 1916. A call was extended to Rev. Charles C. Keith, December 22, 1918. He was ordained into the ministry in Immanuel Church, October 15, 1919. Thus the church started with so small a membership and carried on so faithfully, has prospered gloriously and now has about two hundred members on the roll.

The first men who settled in Salem and Beverly were Episcopalians, but Roger Conant (who determined to stay on at Salem when almost all his companions had resolved to leave), very wisely determined to yield his preference in church matters for the good and peace of the settlement, and was a tower of strength by his influence and example to the early settlers. The Episcopal church was established in Beverly in July, 1863, when the rector of St. Peter's Church, Salem, established a mission in Beverly. The present church building, St. Peter's, was built in 1864-65, and was consecrated in 1865. There have been eight rectors, including the present one, the Rev. E. J. V. Huiginn. The parish house was built adjoining the church at the close of the last century, and was the first parish house in Beverly. There is a fine rectory, and the parish is a prosperous and growing one.

St. John's Episcopal Church at Beverly Farms was begun by the Rev. Mr. Huiginn in 1900; the church was built in 1902. In 1911 St. Peter's Parish, by unanimous vote, set St. John's Church apart as a separate parish, and the Rev. Nelson Poe Carey was called as first rector. Under his charge the parish has prospered and there are now a fine parish house and a rectory.

The Christian Endeavor Church of Centerville, Beverly, is an evangelical church. The first religious services in Centerville were held prior to 1870 in an old schoolhouse on Standley street. Later, pews were placed in the building and a Sunday school was instituted. It is very largely a community church and the center of all activities for the welfare of the community. A beautiful village church was planned in 1906, erected, and is now completely out of debt. The church is affiliated with the Baptist denomination, but welcomes all people within its doors. The pastor is the Rev. Rial Benjamin.

The Dane Street Congregational Church was formed at the time of the Unitarian movement in the Congregational churches in New England. The Washington Street Congregational Church was formed from the Dane Street Congregational Church.

The first Unitarian church in Beverly, according to the accepted view of the people of the parish, was located near the site of the present church. However, it would seem from documents recently discovered by a well known Beverly citizen that the first meeting-house was located in the vicinity of Gloucester Crossing. Roger Conant, the first settler in Salem, and Thomas Lothrop of Bloody Brook memory, were the chief men in organizing the church body in Beverly, when the Salem church, of which Conant had been a chief founder, gave the Beverly people the right to have their own settled minister and church organization and ordinances.

In September, 1667, the first parish and church in Beverly was organized and Rev. John Hale was invited to be the first minister. The church members for a long time outnumbered the parish members, and the covenant was Trinitarian and Calvinistic until the early days of the nineteenth century. The church since that period has been Unitarian. Altogether, there have been thirteen pastors. Several of these have been noted men, as Hale, Willard, McKean and Abbott. The present church structure is a noble and dignified building of the well-beloved New England style of architecture. It has had several men of great influence on its rolls during the more than two centuries and a half of its existence. The parish claims the honor of establishing the first Sunday school in New England, but there was a Sunday school in Rhode Island as early as 1790, and no doubt classes for catechism and teaching the young had been part of the work of the early church from early days. The parish is a strong, active one, and its well-wishers hope for it a future even greater than its past. A fine parish house was built in connection with this church some years ago.

There were Baptists in Beverly as early as 1786, for in that year several persons from this town united with the Baptist church in Georgetown. Later, in 1793, a Baptist church was organized in Danversport, and some of the members resided in Beverly. The Baptist Society of Beverly was organized September 30, 1800, and the First Baptist Church on March 25, 1801. Fourteen of the nineteen constituent members came by letter from the Danvers church, and the others united by baptism. About 2800 names have been added to the list of members since that time, and the present membership of the church is over 900.

There were Baptists among the teachers of the Union Sunday school which was organized in Beverly in 1810, and when, in 1819, it was decided to divide this school, the Baptists organized a separate school, which has had a continuous existence to the present time. The Baptist Bible school has been notably successful, having a present membership of over

1100, not including the cradle roll and the home department. There are five grades in the active school, besides several organized adult classes, large classes for men being a prominent feature. The present superintendent, Mr. Leland H. Cole, is just completing twenty-six years of continuous service in that position. Other important organizations in the church are the Woman's Missionary and Benevolent Society, which had as forerunner the Beverly Baptist Female Mite Society, beginning in 1808; all departments of the Christian Endeavor Society, Young Men's Club, Boy Scouts and Camp Fire Girls.

The places of worship have been as follows: First, a small unfinished and unfurnished vestry on Wallis street. The first meeting house was erected in 1801 on Cabot street, corner of Elliott street. This building was enlarged in 1831 and abandoned on completion of the second meeting house in 1837. The second building stood on Cabot street on the site now occupied by the Roman Catholic church. In the records of the church it was noted that this building was constructed without an accident and without the use of intoxicating liquor. It was enlarged in 1854, but, being still inadequate to the needs of the congregation, was succeeded by the present building, corner of Cabot and Abbott streets, which was dedicated in 1869. It was enlarged and improved by the addition of the chapel in 1898. Earlier chapels used by the church have been as follows: the one on Wallis street, which was used until 1805; a building on Central street, which was moved to Vestry street in 1818; the third chapel stood on Essex street in the rear of the church building; the fourth chapel was on Cabot street; it was built in 1864 and enlarged in 1867 and is now occupied by the Grand Army of the Republic and the American Legion.

The church has had seventeen pastors, several of whom continued in service for a long period. The list is as follows: Joshua Young, Sept. 30, 1800—Dec. 1802; Elisha Scott Williams, June 15, 1803—Oct. 7, 1812; Nathaniel West Williams, Aug. 14, 1816—Nov. 7, 1824; Francis Greene Macomber, Nov. 30, 1825—July 1, 1827; Richmond Taggart, Feb. 1, 1829—Dec. 25, 1829; Jonathan Aldrich, June 30, 1830—May 24, 1833; John Jennings, Sept. 10, 1834—June 20, 1836; Nathaniel West Williams, Aug. 26, 1836—April 17, 1840; Charles Worthen Flanders, Nov. 11, 1840—Sept. 13, 1850; Edwin Barnard Eddy, Feb. 5, 1852—Nov. 16, 1855; Joseph C. Foster, Aug. 7, 1856—Dec. 31, 1872; Elisha Benjamin Andrews, July 2, 1874—Aug. 18, 1875; Dura Pratt Morgan, Dec. 3, 1875—May 1, 1888; Roland Dwight Grant, Sept. 1, 1888—March 6, 1890; Albert B. Coats, Jan. 1, 1891—Sept. 30, 1898; Herbert Judson White, Dec. 1, 1899—Nov. 1, 1905; Carey W. Chamberlin, Feb. 1, 1906, now serving the church.

Twenty members of the congregation were soldiers or sailors in the Civil War, and 140 in the Great War. Captain John H. Chipman, for whom G. A. R. Post 89 was named, and Corporal Earle T. Wardell, for

whom the American Legion Post 12, was named, were both members of this congregation. The centennial of the church was celebrated by a week of notable exercises in September, 1900, and the centennial of the Bible School by equally worthy observances in 1919.

The first believer in the Universalist faith in Beverly was probably Mr. Joseph Woodbury, who moved from North Beverly in 1810, bringing letters from the Second Congregational Church to the Old South. He was examined by a committee of which Robert Rantoul, Sr., was a member. It was discovered that he, to quote the committee, "not only holds but freely professes his firm belief of the final salvation of all mankind, that he disseminates that doctrine among his neighbors as opportunity offers, and that his wife embraces the same sentiments." Though the Old South had grown so liberal that two years earlier the Dane Street Society had been formed by conservative dissenters from its teachings, it could not tolerate a believer in universal salvation, and therefore Mr. Woodbury and his wife were refused membership. The present First Universalist Church is nearly on the site of his old home, which was at the corner of Judson and Cabot streets.

Doubtless many of those who early accepted the Universalist faith were taught directly or indirectly by John Murray, the Father of Universalism in America, who at Gloucester or at Boston was within easy reach of those who were inclined to hear him. Sylvanus Cobb preached the first Universalist sermon ever delivered in Beverly, in the old Briscoe Hall, some time in the fall of 1834. The leader in the movement that terminated a year later in the formation of a working cooperation was Daniel Hildreth, often called Father Hildreth, who seems to have fully earned the title; for to him more than anyone else belongs the credit of establishing this society. With him were associated Benjamin S. Lunt, Stephen Lovett, and Haskett Whitney.

In 1838, Daniel Hildreth, Stephen Lovett, Jeremiah Wallis, John Bell, Benjamin Lunt, Benjamin Grant and possibly one or two others, met in Mr. Lunt's tinshop and organized formally for the support of Universalist preaching. Father Hildreth was chosen treasurer and collector, and Joseph Porter clerk. After two years, in 1840, a call was issued under the warrant of Stephen Baker, justice of the peace, for the formation of a legal parish organization. The utmost sum able to be raised during the first year was $154, which supported occasional preaching. In 1843 the organization had increased enough to talk of building a chapel and securing a regular preacher. The first minister, the Rev. Charles Webster, a student under Rev. Mr. Everett, of Salem, was called at a salary of $300. During his pastorate the Sunday school and Ladies' Aid Society were organized, and have continued unbroken since that time.

Under the next pastor, the Rev. William Cambridge, likewise a student, and who remained two years, $3,725 were raised for the erection of a church building. This was completed in 1846, the building standing

on the lot directly back of the present City Hall, on Thorndike street. In this year of 1846, the Rev. John L. Stevens was ordained and installed at a salary of $400, and on June 18th of the same year the church building was dedicated, Rev. Sylvanus Cobb, who had preached the first Universalist sermon in Beverly, giving the sermon on this occasion also. Mr. Stevens shortly left to join James G. Blaine in editing a newspaper. In 1847 the Rev. Ira Washburn became pastor, but was forced to resign on account of ill health; and, dying soon after, was buried in the Hale Street cemetery. The next ministers were Rev. Stillman Bardon and Rev. D. W. Coffin. For a year following Mr. Coffin, there was no settled pastor and, things going badly, a meeting was called to discuss selling the property, but other counsels prevailed. Rev. John Nichols was called in 1856, and in 1858 the church (the religious organization in connection with the society) was formed, with Daniel Hildreth, Jeremiah Wallis and Ephraim Hathaway as deacons.

In 1863 the original proprietors turned the property over to the parish, which undertook important improvements. Meantime, in 1867, the pastorate of Mr. Nichols came to a tragic close, he being stricken with paralysis while in the pulpit, and dying the same evening. The next pastor was Rev. George Whitney, 1867-72, during which period a pipe organ was installed. He was followed in 1872 by Rev. J. W. Emery, who continued in office for ten years, and in turn was followed by Rev. E. W. Preble, two years; Rev. C. S. Nickerson, one year; Rev. A. J. Aubrey, two years. He was succeeded in 1891 by Rev. Harold Marshall, during whose pastorate of seven years the old building was sold and the present building on Judson street erected, the dedication taking place Thursday, March 22, 1894, Rev. A. A. Miner, D.D., preaching the sermon. Then followed the pastorates of Rev. Edward M. Barney, 1898-1901; Rev. Oliver M. Fisher, 1901-02; Rev. Arthur A. Blair, 1902-04; Rev. Ezra A. Hoyt, 1905-08; Rev. Paul Harris Drake, 1909-11; Rev. James D. Tillinghast, 1912-17, during whose term the church celebrated its seventy-fifth anniversary (Oct. 18, 1915) ffi Axel Gerhard Dehly, 1918-19. The present pastor is Rev. Harold W. Haynes, who assumed charge in April, 1920.

Among the subsidiary organizations are the Ladies' Aid, Sunday School, Mission Circle, Y. P. C. U., Men's Club, Woman's Club, Campfire Girls, Bluebirds, as well as the organized classes—the Hathaway Class for men, and the Ballou Class for women.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Above, Lynn Shore Drive, looking west. Nahant at left, with Boulevard separating the Ocean from Lynn Harbor. Below, Goldfish Pond, Lafayette Park, Lynn. Stone tablet marks approximately site of home of Edmund Ingalls, Lynn's first settler

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

## CITY OF LYNN

The history of the settlement, growth and development of Lynn cannot be complete without some allusion to the conditions before the coming of the white settlers in 1629, and to the environs and the environment under which the great work of colonization was undertaken.

As showing the desirability of the land comprising the present territory of Greater Lynn, and also its habitability, it is quite sufficient to point out that the greater part of the territory settled under the Charter of the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay in New England was possessed and occupied by a powerful tribe of Indians known as the Pawtuckets. The domain of the Pawtuckets extended from the Charles river to the Piscatiqua on the ocean front and northward as far as Pennacook, now Concord. This great territory was penetrated by the Merrimac river, and the name of the Indian nation is perpetuated in Pawtucket Falls at Lowell.

In the generation previous to the coming of the white settlers to this region, the Pawtuckets were ruled by Nanpashemet, one of the most powerful of the Indian leaders of that period. His home, in peace times at least, was on that low bluff-like eminence extending along the present ocean front of Lynn from about the junction of Newhall and Washington streets to near the Swampscott line, and set forth on the oldest local maps as Sagamore Hill. Nanapashemet, or the New Moon, was one of the most powerful Sachems of his time. He had an immediate fighting strength, according to Gookin, of three thousand warriors in the days before the pestilence of 1617 swept away such great numbers of the natives along these shores. His influence was far-reaching among the Indian tribes, and was potent even among the Nipmucs of the upper Connecticut Valley.

When Captain John Smith, in 1614, passed along these shores on a voyage of trade and exploration, he recorded many interesting facts concerning the country and its people. Of this section of the coast he says: "The Sea Coast as you pass, shows all along large corne fields, and great troupes of well proportioned people." He further says: "We found the people of those parts verie kinde; but in their furie no less valient."

Nearest in contact with the Pawtuckets, and occupying the territory south and west of the Charles river, was a tribe known as the Massachusetts, a name derived from the Blue Hills of Milton, according to Roger Williams, and signifying "a hill in the form of an arrow" in the Indian vocabulary of Josiah Cotton. This tribe was governed by Chickataubut, whose village was on the Neponset river, and while occupying less extensive territory than the Pawtuckets, the Massachu-

setts were about their equal in fighting strength. Smith, in 1614, speaks of their territory as "the Paradise of all those parts"; and refers to the "many Isles planted with corn, groues, mulberries, saluage gardens and good harbors." Weymouth and Canton seem to have been the southern bounds of this tribe.

The Wampanoags occupied the country around Plymouth from Cape Cod to Narragansett Bay. They were governed by Massasoit, who ruled over 32 tribes. He was one of the most powerful of the Sachems and could have readily called three thousand warriors into the field, yet he was a peaceful man and proved a strong friend of the Pilgrims. For more than forty years he kept his people from war and in tranquility. Stronger than any of the before-mentioned nations, the Narragansetts inhabited the region to the west of the Narragansett Bay in Rhode Island, and were governed by two Sachems, Canonicus and his nephew, Miantonomo. Their fighting strength was about five thousand warriors. The Narragansetts were for many years bitter enemies of the Pequots, against whom they joined with the white settlers in 1637.

The Pequots occupied territory in Connecticut adjacent to that of the Narragansetts, and their sachem was Sassacus, who commanded four thousand men, and who lived at the present location of New London. The Pequots were a warlike people, and the name of Sassacus was one to spread terror wherever it was known.

In the region constituting the present interior of Massachusetts dwelt the Nipmucks. This tribe was without a great leader, but was inclined to listen to the council of Nanapashemet.

To the eastward of the Pawtuckets, and occupying the territory from the Piscatiqua to the Penobscot, were (according to Lewis) the Chur-Churs, who were governed by a mighty chieftain called a Bashaba. An old map of this region from Palfrey's History of New England (Map of New England, 1628 to 1651) indicates that the Abanaquis occupied a part of this territory.

Occupying the land east of the Penobscot were the Tarratines, a very turbulent people, frequently at war, and travelling hundreds of miles to carry on their depredations. Their great Sachem was Nultonanit, and their expeditions frequently led them into the territory of the Pawtuckets. Bradford, in speaking of the Massachusetts, says: "They were much afraid of the Tarratines, a people to the eastward, which used to come at harvest time and take away their corn, and many times kill their persons." So great was the apprehension of an attack from the Tarratines that, we are told, a watch was constantly kept on Beacon Hill to guard against surprise by them. Coming along the coast in their war canoes, it was necessary for them to go ashore at night, and the smoke of their camp-fires was recognized as a "wireless" warning of danger.

Of these great Indian nations (not to mention several smaller

tribes) who, according to Gookin, had a fighting strength of twenty-five thousand warriors, the Tarratines in the far east and the Pequots in the southwest were the warring Indians that were constantly at war with the other tribes, and were the great source of trouble to the settlers in later years. To these must be added the Mohawks, who, although chiefly outside the limits of New England, were never out of mind of its inhabitants. They have left the evidence of their incursions into this territory in the "Mohawk Trail," which was their gateway to the Connecticut Valley and points farther east, where we find that the Indians of the Saco Valley early employed carpenters from the white settlements to help to build forts for protection against them.

It will be seen from this brief summary that the territory of the present Greater Lynn, and, in fact, of the first settled portion of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, was located in a zone far from the territory of the warlike Indians, and that the early settlers in this section were much more exempt from the terrors and ravages of Indian wars than were their neighbors farther to the east or west, or were the early Virginia colonists.*

William Wood and John Josselyn have left us a rich legacy in their description of the Indians and their habits and customs. The contribution by Wood is of especial interest in this connection, because he was one of the first five settlers in the present territory of Lynn (then Saugus), in 1629, and his writings, which he published on his return to England in 1633, are a "first-hand description" and relate especially to this vicinity. The picture of the Indian savage, with feathers and war paint, breech clout and tomahawk, has often been painted; but the peaceful Indian, cultivating fields of corn, readily adopting white man's dress and customs, and living in peace with the invaders of his territory, is not so well known. Since Wood settled here in 1629, and was the first New England writer to publish a book, "New England's Prospect," published on his return to London in 1633:

John Josselyn first came to Boston July 3, 1638, and remained in New England until October, 1639, spending most of his time at Black Point (Scarboro, Me.) Dr. Cobb speaks of Josselyn as "a good deal of a naturalist and something of a physician," and refers to Wood as "sort of a press agent for New England." ("Some Medical Practice among the New England Indians and Early Settlers," by Carolus M. Cobb, M.D.) Josselyn's description of the Indian women is an appropriate corollary to Wood's general description of the Indians, and is so appropriate that we give it here:

The Men are somewhat Horse Faced, and generally Faucious, that is, without beards, but the women many of them have very good features, seldome without a

*Worth states that in none of the early settlements are there to be found so many of the earliest buildings as in this vicinity, owing to the immunity from Indian depredations.

Come to me, or Cos Amoris, in their Countenance, all of them black eyed, having even short teeth, and very white, their hair black, thick and long, broad breasted, handsome straight bodies, and slender, considering their constant loose habit. Their limbs cleanly, straight, and of a convenient stature, generally, as plump as Partridges and saving here and there one, of a modest deportment.

Their Garments are a pair of sleeves of deer, or Moose skin drest, and drawn with lines of several colours into Asiatick Works, with Boskins of the same, and short Mantle of Trading Cloth, either Blew or Red, fastened with a knot under the chin, and girt about the middle with a Zone wrought with white and blew Beads into pretty Works; of these Beads they have Bracelets for their Neck and Arms, and Links to hang in their Ears, and a fair Table curiously made up with Beads likewise, to wear before their breast, their Hair they comb backward, and tie it up short with a Border, about two handfulls broad, wrought in Works as the other with their Beads. ("New England Rarities.")

Geographically, Lynn appears to have been a convenient meeting place for the several tribes of Indians in those days, when the trail through the woods and the trackless path of the canoe afforded the only means of travel from place to place. We find in one of the school text books of almost a century ago this allusion, under the caption of Lynn: "They called the place Saugus, and the eastern part of it Swampscott, which is its present name. . . . On Lynn Beach, which joins Nahant to this town, Indians of various tribes used to assemble and engage in friendly sports and games."*

Alonzo Lewis enters into the subject more in detail in his history of Lynn.

We can well believe that here in Lynn the council fires of the Pawtuckets burned, and that here the Great Sachem Nanapashemet met his advisers in dignified assemblage, and considered the weighty affairs of the Indian state. Since the white explorers, fishermen, adventurers and traders were, even before 1615, becoming known along these shores, it is entirely conceivable that here was considered the great question of the coming of the strange people, and the policy to be pursued toward them.

When the turbulent Tarratines invaded this territory, in 1615, Nanapashemet, the great leader, moved to a fort on the Mystic. There he successfully met the issues of war for two years, and survived the desolating pestilence that swept the country in 1617, reducing strong tribes to mere handfuls. Still the foes from the eastward were insatiable in their thirst for the blood of the great chieftain, and in 1619 he fell a victim to the hate and deadly vengeance of the Tarratines, while living in his house near the fort on the Mystic. Thus passed one of the great characters in Indian history, leaving a name venerated in Indian tradition and honored in being perpetuated by the white people in many ways. His death seems to have checked the war lust of the Tarratines for a time, and a period of quiet followed. He left three sons, who were to succeed him in accord with the Indian custom, all of

*—"A Geography of Essex County for Young Children."

whom attained the rank of Sagamore. Their names were Wonohaquam, Montowampate and Wenepoykin. He also left a daughter, whose name was Yawata.

The youngest of these sons, Wenepoykin, is believed to have been but three years old at the time of his father's tragic death, Montowampate to have been but ten years old, and Wonohaquam probably a little older. For this reason Tehatawan, the widow of Nanapashemet, and the three sons divided the government between them. Tehatawan was a woman of unusual ability as a leader. She became known as the Squaw Sachem, and she did not surrender her authority even after she became the wife of Webbacowat, the medicine man of the tribe. According to the recollection of Rev. John Higginson of Salem, Wenepoykin lived with his mother, the Squaw Sachem, in the early days of the settlement at Salem.

The map of Southern New England prepared by William Wood in 1633, and published in 1635, shows the location of the camps of Sagamore John on the Mystic and of Sagamore James on the Saugus river (Lynn). It does not give the name of any other Sagamore between the Charles river and the Merrimac, but it does indicate the camps of many other Sagamores outside that territory. Had Wenepoykin been of the age to exercise sovereignty over Naumkeag, there is little probability that Wood should overlook that fact. On the death of his two brothers, who died from smallpox in 1633, Wenepoykin became Sagamore of Saugus and Winnisimit (Lynn and Chelsea), and was called by the English, Sagamore George. Wonohaquam was Sagamore of the Mystic river and lived at Winnisimit. He was called by the English, Sagamore John, and was "of gentle and good disposition." Mr. Dudley speaks of him as "affecting English apparel and houses."

Montowampate, a boy of ten years of age at the death of his father, became the Sagamore of the Saugus and returned to Lynn to live on Sagamore Hill. Tradition states that his home was near the present intersection of Sagamore and Newhall streets, and early visitors to his home speak of the small number of warriors in attendance upon him, owing to the ravages of the pestilence. He became known to the settlers as Sagamore James. Dudley speaks of him as "of far worse disposition than his brother John." According to Lewis, he was Sagamore of Saugus, Naumkeag and Masabequash (Lynn, Salem and Marblehead.)

At the coming of the white settlers, Montowampate had arrived at man's estate, and gave them permission to settle in Saugus. In the same year he married Wenuchus, the daughter of the venerated Indian priest Passaconoway, who lived at Pennacock, now Concord, New Hampshire. The romance between Montowompate and Wenuchus was the inspiration of Whittier's poem, "The Bride of the Pennacook." This couple spent a few brief years on Sagamore Hill, years in which adven-

ture was mixed with the affairs of every-day life. Here, always at peace with their white neighbors, they received the visitations from their friends on the Merrimac; for the companionship, the bathing, the fishing and the sports on the beach were all attractive then as now. (George H. Martin, "Lynn in the Early Indian Wars.") Here, too, their children were born; but the family was destined to be broken up by the death of Montawompate in 1633, and the succession of his brother Wenepoykin as Sagamore.

What may have been the influence of the white men on the Indians in the pre-settlement period we must leave to conjecture, but an influence there must have been.

Professor Horsford presents (his) evidence that this region was the place of an Icelandic settlement, and there is much to suggest that Thorwold visited these shores over nine hundred years ago. Indeed, Nahant has been by description identified as one of the various points where Thorwold had his encounter with the Skrellings (Indians), and where he afterwards died. In the absence of positive identification, it will serve to prolong the investigation and to add to the sum total of historic knowledge if we assume, for the purpose of continuing the discussion, that the "Krossanes of Thorwold is the Nahant of today." Certainly if it were to be decided by the testimony of the great adventurer, who, on going ashore, said: "Here it is beautiful, and here I should like to fix my dwelling," there could be no question as to the identity of Nahant.

The coast to the eastward, comprising the present shores of Massachusetts, New Hampshire and Maine, was well within the sphere of acquaintance and observation. The Gulf of Maine had for many years been the fishing ground for the ships of five European Nations. Explorers, traders and adventurers had coasted along these shores. Indians from various points had been taken to Europe and some had returned.

There is no doubt that previous to 1600, the shore of Essex County was visited by the white men. When Gosnold visited these shores in 1602 there is very good evidence to support the claim that he anchored off Nahant, and it is accepted as more than a tradition that he was visited by eight Indians, one of whom wore a complete suit of white man's clothing, which he had obtained by trading to the eastward. Admitting the identity of Savage Rock as Nahant, then, we find that Martin Pring visited the same spot in 1603 in search of sassafras. The ships of four nations visited Plymouth between 1600 and the coming of the Pilgrims in 1620, and Pring's ship was among them. Sir Francis Poppham had established his settlement at the mouth of the Kennebec, and had built a decked-over vessel in 1607, called the Virginia of the Saggadahoc.

Captain Richard Vines, with a ship's crew of about forty men, had spent the winter of 1616-17 at Biddeford Pool, to test the winter cli-

mate and had soon commenced to bring over settlers to the region at the mouth of the Saco. The English language and a knowledge of the white men had filtered through all along the coast. The first white settler came to New Hampshire in 1623, and the same year a fishing station was established at Gloucester, which was three years later removed to Salem. There had been a seepage northward along the coast from the Colony at Plymouth, and about 1624 Rev. William Blackstone and family had established themselves in Boston. The Indians in 1617 had been ravaged by disease and greatly reduced in strength.

Therefore it would appear that when the five white men came to Lynn in 1629, seeking homes, the Indians were prepared to welcome them, rather than to repel them; and to give them the privilege of establishing homes in this choice spot in the land of the Pawtuckets. Thus do we attempt, in few words, to portray the conditions existing at the time of the coming of the first white settlers in 1629 to lay the foundation for Greater Lynn.

The lapse of almost three centuries gives perspective to the incidents of the settlement of Greater Lynn. We can be familiar with the facts of that period only as they are preserved for us in record and tradition. The work of the historian is to correlate rather than to create. He constructs a mosaic, of which he must find, not make the parts. He can add to the work of previous historians only as more extensive research may have placed him in possession of historical data that may not have been accessible to previous writers. The vanguard of the Puritan migration arrived in Essex County before the Charter of the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay in New England had passed the seals, March 4, 1629. Central location, a good harbor and the advantages of a settlement of white people already established (in 1626) made Naumkeag, now Salem, the objective of this early migration.

From Salem came the first group of white settlers in 1629 to Lynn, then known by its Indian name of Saugus, and comprising the present towns of Lynn, Lynnfield, Saugus, Swampscott and Nahant. In this group of pioneers, which is estimated to have numbered about 25 persons, were five men, whose names are here given: Edmund Ingalls, Francis Ingalls, John Wood, William Wood, William Dixey. Four of these five men appear to have brought families with them.

Thirty-eight years later, William Dixey made a deposition in the Essex Court (July 1, 1657,) which sets forth that application was made, on his arrivel in Salem, "for a place to set down in; upon which Mr. Endicott did give me leave to go where we would; upon which we went to Saugus, now Linne, and there we met with Sagamore James and some other Indians, who did give and the rest leaue to dwell there or thereabouts; Whereupon I and the rest of my master's company did cut grass for our cattell, and kept them upon Nahant for some space of time; for the Indian James Sagamore and the rest did give me, in be-

half of my master Johnson, what land we would; wherefore we set down in Saugus, and had quiet possession of the above said Indians, and kept our cattell in Nahant the Summer following."

Thus with "Puritan simplicity" was laid the foundation for a city destined to become the twelfth largest in New England, to contain one-tenth of one per cent. of the entire population of the new Nation that was in the making; to draw its inhabitants from all parts of the world, and to become world-famous for its industrial products.

According to Woodbury, these early settlers "set out from Salem and landed at Deer Cove between Red Rock and the bastion of the Boulevard about June, 1629." (See "Historical Priorities in Lynn"). This would have been the logical place for the landing, since Montowompate occupied the long, low bluff-like elevation extending along the ocean front known as Sagamore Hill, and this landing was quite accessible to his habitation. Moreover, there are repeated references in the older writings, showing that the waters adjacent to King's Beach were used at that early date for harbor purposes. These early settlers must have brought with them all that was necessary for establishing homes, so there must have been a considerable quantity of goods, equipment and supplies. Since at that period there were no roads or facilities for land transportation even between Salem and Lynn, these goods must have come by water. From the early writers, it appears that Sagamore Hill was occupied by the Indians, so these first settlers found a "fair playne" for their homes. Whatever may have been the location of this plain, it is quite certain that it covered an extensive area; for the settlers of that period were a land-hungry people. Farming was a necessity in such a pioneer settlement, and other vocations were combined with it.

Edmund Ingalls established his home very near the present Goldfish Pond, and the bronze tablet erected on Fayette street, (now Lafayette Park) a few years ago, by Mr. Charles S. Viall, marks the approximate location of the original Ingalls homestead in Lynn. He was classed as a farmer, but also had a malt house near his dwelling. Malt was at that time considered a great necessity by the English, and is estimated to have constituted about one-third of the cost of living of a family in England.

Edmund Ingalls' family consisted of his wife and nine children, six of whom were born in England. The name has been associated with Lynn through all its years of development. He was accidentally drowned in 1648, when his horse fell through the bridge known as "Lynn Bridge" across the Saugus river on Boston road. For this, the General Court paid £100 sterling to his children.

Francis Ingalls was born in England in 1601. Apparently, he held land in common with his brother Edmund; for in 1638 there was apportioned to "Edmund and Francis Ingalls, 120 acres." Lewis has not mentioned that he had any family; he was a tanner, and established the

first tannery in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. This was located on the brook later known as "Humphrey's Brook," where it crosses Burrill street in Swampscott; and the tannery vats were there until 1825, or later. While this was the first tannery in the Colony, it can not claim to be the first in New England.

John Wood was a farmer, and in the division of land in 1638 received a lot of one hundred acres. His location is believed to have been near the intersection of Essex and Chestnut streets. The local name of "Woodend," applied to that vicinity, has served to perpetuate the name of John Wood, the first settler.

William Wood is believed to have been the son of John Wood and to have resided with his father. He was about twenty-one years of age, and possessed a very good education for the time. To him, we are indebted for much of our information concerning the early days of the settlement and the Colony. He was the first of the Colonists to write and publish a book relating to the Colony and he also published a map of Southern New England, which showed the location of the settlements in the Colony, as well as the shore lines. He was made freeman in 1631. After spending about four years in Lynn, he returned to London, August 15, 1633, and there published his book of one hundred pages, called "New England's Prospect." This was a great addition to the Colonial literature and history, and is accepted and largely quoted to the present time. While the book bears the date of 1634, yet the work was completed before he left for London, August 15, 1633. Having completed the publication of his book and map, he returned to Lynn in 1635, accompanied by his wife Elizabeth. Soon after, he left Lynn; it is claimed by Lewis that he was one of fifty men who commenced the settlement of Sandwich. (Others think that he may possibly have gone to Concord.)

William Dixey came to Salem as an employee or servant with Mr. Isaac Johnson, who was one of the founders of the Colony. Mr. Johnson was a man of considerable wealth, owning property in four counties in England. He married Lady Arabella, daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, and sister of Lady Susan, who was the wife of Deputy Governor John Humphrey. It is not probable that William Dixey remained many years in Lynn, as we find, according to Felt, that he moved to Salem, and kept a ferry-boat across the North river. According to James R. Newhall, he had several children baptized at Salem. He died in 1690, aged 82 years. Mr. Dixey's conspicuous contribution to Colonial records was his deposition of July, 1657, which we have quoted above.

The settlement period is quite devoid of momentous incidents during the first year of occupation. When, in the spring of 1630, the great wave of Puritan migration broke on these shores, the effect must have been thrilling to the little company which had been so long isolated. Eleven vessels early in the spring of 1630 left the harbor of South-

ampton for New England, most of them coming to Salem. The arrival of 1700 colonists at Salem during the month of June was an event to thrill the hearts of those who had long been separated from homes and friends, but necessity compelled a speedy departure to their prospective homes. In the general distribution, Dudley says that some of them settled "upon the river of Saugus." The history of Lynn, written by Alonzo Lewis in 1829, republished in 1844, and revised by James R. Newhall in 1865, gives much space to the family history of more than fifty heads of families who came to settle in greater Lynn in 1630. Of some of them little is known; of others, volumes could be written. The appended list will give the names:

Settlers of 1630—John Armitage, Godfrey Armitage, James Axey, Allen Bread (Breed), William Ballard, George Burrill, Edward Baker, John Bancroft, Samuel Bennet, Nicholas Brown, Boniface Burton, Thomas Chadwell, Clement Coldam, Thomas Coldam, William Cowdry, Thomas Dexter, Robert Driver, William Edmunds, George Farr, Henry Feake, Jeremiah Fitch, Samuel Graves, John Hall, Adam Hawkes, John Hawkes, Edward Holyoke, William Hartshorne, Daniel Howe (Lieut.), Edward Howe, Thomas Hubbard, Thomas Hudson, Christopher Hussey, George Keyser, Christopher Lindsey, Jonathan Negus, Thomas Newhall, Robert Potter, John Ramsdell, Joseph Rednap, Edward Richards, Daniel Salmon, John Smith, Samuel Smith, John Taylor, Edward Tomlins (Capt.), Nathaniel Turner (Capt.), Thomas Talmadge, Richard Walker (Capt.), John White, Bray Wilkins, Thomas Willis, William Witter, Richard Wright (Capt.)

Limitation of space, rather than inclination, restricts us to only a passing comment on a few of these pioneer planters. Joseph Armitage opened the Anchor Tavern, the first hostelry in the plantation. This for 170 years was the most celebrated tavern in Essex County, being midway between Salem and Boston on the west side of the river on Boston Road. Allen Breed gave the name of "Breed-End" to the western end of Lynn, and his name has been perpetuated in the Breed School, on which a tablet was placed in 1920 by his descendants. Other settlers were:

George Burrill was one of the richest of the planters. He was the ancestor of many who have been distinguished in the history of the town and Commonwealth.

John Bancroft (sometimes spelled Barcroft) was the ancestor of George Bancroft, the eminent historian.

Boniface Burton lived to the age of 113 years, according to Sewell.

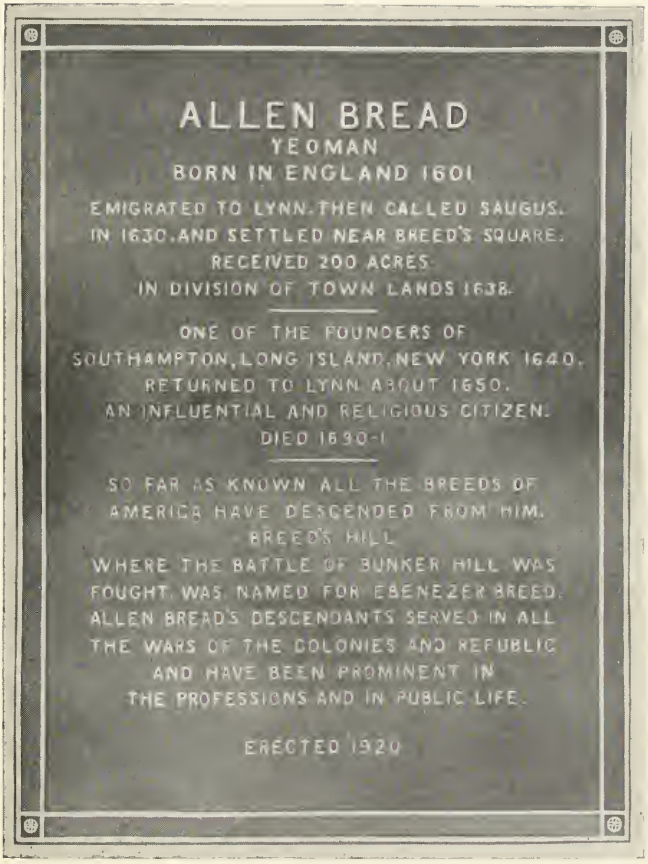
Thomas Coldam was a miller and "kept Mr. Humfrey's windmill on Sagamore Hill."

William Cowdrey became clerk of writs, town clerk, selectman and representative of Reading.

Thomas Dexter purchased Nahant from Poquanum for a suit of clothes. He owned 800 acres of land, and was called Farmer Dexter.

Henry Feake was Representative in 1643-4.

Samuel Graves not only gave the name "Graves-end" to the section


ALLEN BREAD
YEOMAN
BORN IN ENGLAND 1601
EMIGRATED TO LYNN, THEN CALLED SAUGUS,
IN 1630, AND SETTLED NEAR BREED'S SQUARE.
RECEIVED 200 ACRES
IN DIVISION OF TOWN LANDS 1638.
ONE OF THE FOUNDERS OF
SOUTHAMPTON, LONG ISLAND, NEW YORK 1640.
RETURNED TO LYNN ABOUT 1650.
AN INFLUENTIAL AND RELIGIOUS CITIZEN.
DIED 1690-1
SO FAR AS KNOWN ALL THE BREEDS OF
AMERICA HAVE DESCENDED FROM HIM.
BREED'S HILL
WHERE THE BATTLE OF BUNKER HILL WAS
FOUGHT, WAS NAMED FOR EBENEZER BREED.
ALLEN BREAD'S DESCENDANTS SERVED IN ALL
THE WARS OF THE COLONIES AND REPUBLIC
AND HAVE BEEN PROMINENT IN
THE PROFESSIONS AND IN PUBLIC LIFE.
ERECTED 1920

MEMORIAL TABLET

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

near Floating Bridge, but in 1635 he gave about £300 to the Colony.

Adam Hawkes owned the land in Saugus where the iron ore was found.

Edward Holyoke was a farmer, who possessed 500 acres of land. He was many times chosen Representative and was a member of the Essex Court. One of his descendants, Dr. Edward Holyoke of Salem, was a President of Harvard College, and lived to the age of 100 years.

Daniel Howe was a representative to the General Court five times, was one of the organizers of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, and chosen a lieutenant at its first election.

Edward Howe, of whom Governor Winthrop said: "a Godly man," was several times chosen Representative, and was a member of the Essex Court in 1637.

Christopher Hussey was father of Stephen Hussey, the second white child to be born in Lynn. He removed to Newbury in 1636, was Representative in 1637 and the next year he was one of the first settlers of Hampton, and was chosen a Councillor.

Christopher Lindsey was wounded in the Pequot war.

Thomas Newhall was the owner of extensive lands in the vicinity of Federal street, and was the father of Thomas Newhall, the first white child to be born in Lynn.

Captain Edward Tomlins built the first mill in Lynn, it being on Strawberry Brook, near the junction of Boston and Franklin streets.

Timothy Tomlins was a Representative in thirteen sessions of the General Court. From him the pine forest known as Tomlin's Swamp took its name.

Captain Nathaniel Turner was a Representative to the first seven sessions of the General Court. He was made a captain of the militia in 1633 and in 1636-7 had a command in several expeditions in the Pequot war. At one time he owned Sagamore Hill, which he sold to Edward Holyoke. His name is perpetuated in Turner's Falls. His later days were spent in New Haven; he was lost at sea while on a voyage to England in 1647.

Of the fifty-three heads of families who arrived in 1630, the greater part were farmers; they occupied from 10 to 200 acres of land each. In the agreement that had been made with the Council, each person who advanced £50 was to receive an allotment of 200 acres of land, and each person who came at his own expense should receive 50 acres. They brought with them a large stock of horned cattle, sheep, goats and swine. Most of this stock was pastured in Nahant, and a rail fence from ocean to harbor across the beach, which now constitutes Nahant road, served to keep out the wolves and to keep the cattle secured. As a further protection against the wolves, which were very numerous, a great many wolf pits were dug around Lynn, some of which are still extant.

In 1631, provisions became very scarce. Wheat sold for 14 shillings a bushel ($3.11), Indian corn from Virginia, 11 shillings ($2.44), and a good cow was valued at 25 pounds ($111.11). It is shown that there was great apprehension of invasion by the Indians, because on April 12, it was ordered "that every Captain shall traine his companie

on saterday in every week." That there was reason for this alarm is shown by the record that one hundred Tarratines attacked the village of Aggawam (now Ipswich), wounded Wonohaquam and Montowompate, killed seven Indians and captured Wenuchus, the wife of Montowampate, who was visiting in that village at the time. She was held for ransom, and in a few months was returned to her home in Lynn, but this incident must have occasioned great excitement among these settlers. In October, Governor Winthrop passed through Lynn and the note: "A plentiful crop," appears in his Journal of Oct. 28.

In 1632 Rev. Stephen Bachiler and family arrived in Boston, after a tempestuous voyage, being 88 days from London. He immediately came to Lynn and formed the First Church here, which was the fifth church in the colony, and had a membership of eight persons. Rev. Bachiler was 71 years of age at the time he came here, and one of his first duties was to baptize Thomas Newhall, the first white child to be born in Lynn, and also to baptize Stephen Hussey, who was born the same week. Gov. Winthrop entered in his Journal under date of August 2d, "This week they had in barley and oats at Saugus about 20 acres good corn, and sown with the plough." In 1633, William Wood left the settlement August 15, to return to London. As to the health of the plantation, he makes this record: "Out of that towne from whence I came, in three years and a half, there died but three." The first corn mill in the settlement was built this year along Strawberry Brook.

Late in the Fall of 1633, smallpox broke out among the Indians and Wonohaquam, Sagamore of Winnisimit, and Montowampate, Sagamore of the Saugus, and many other Indians, died. They were succeeded by their brother, Wenepoykin, as Sagamore.

In 1634 the House of Representatives for the Colony assembled May 14. Eight towns were represented by three delegates each. This action was taken, in order that the settlements might not be depleted of their men at the time of the meeting of the General Court, because Indian outbreaks were threatening. The three representatives from greater Lynn were Captain Turner, Edward Tomlins and Thomas Willis. Also in this year, the Hon. John Humphrey, who was one of the original proprietors of the Colony, and its first Deputy Governor, arrived, accompanied by his wife, Lady Susan, who was the daughter of the Earl of Lincoln. They arrived at Salem in July on the "Panther," and went to reside on his farm at Swampscott. Timothy Tomlins was appointed overseer of the "powder and shott, and all other ammunition in the Saugus plantation," according to James R. Newhall.

About thirty new families came to this plantation in 1635, among whom was Philip Kertland, the first shoemaker of record. Money was so scarce that brass farthings were prohibited, and musket bullets were ordered to pass for farthings.

The names of the heads of families arriving in 1635 we give as

presented in Lewis and Newhall's History of Lynn, where the family history is set forth with considerable detail.

Abraham Belknap, James Boutwell, Edmund Bridges, Edward Burcham, George Burtt, Henry Collins, Timothy Cooper, John Cooper, Jenkin Davis, John Deacon, Edmund Farrington, Joseph Floyd, Christopher Foster, George Fraile, Edmund Freeman, Dennis Greere, Nathaniel Handforth, Richard Johnson, Philip Kertland, Thomas Laighton, Francis Lightfoot,, Richard Longley, Thomas Marshall (Capt.), Thomas Parker, John Pierson, John Pool, Nicholas Potter, Oliver Purchis, Richard Sadler, Thomas Townsend.

Doubtless the names thus far presented do not comprise all who had come to the Third Plantation during the years 1629 to 1635 inclusive, yet in the list here presented there were the elements of constructive citizenship that not only placed this settlement at the head of those in this immediate section, which later comprised Essex county, but there were those who went out into the surrounding country, even to the distance of hundreds of miles, to establish settlements and towns.

The Virginia Colonists established in 1619 the House of Burgesses, which gave the form of Representative Government to the world. The Pilgrims, by misadventure, arrived at Cape Cod instead of the Northern part of Virginia, in 1620. They landed where they had no rights of Charter and where no government existed; therefore they wrote for themselves a Charter and formed for themselves a Government pledged to enact only such laws as were just and equal. Thus did the Mayflower Compact proclaim justice and equality in government to the world.

The Colony of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, duly chartered and approved by King and Council, after due deliberation brought its Charter to the new world, and thus took the great step in Independence in Government. The people of the Colony elected their Governor and their Representatives to the General Court, and so breathed the air of a greater liberty than had ever before swelled the bosoms and reddened the blood of man.

Thus did the Cavalier, the Pilgrim and the Puritan contribute to that structure which we call liberty and self-government. Then did Greater Lynn feel the throb of that progress and prosperity which is founded on those impulses that create homes.

### "THE TOWN SAUGUST IS NOW LIN"

The function of town government became operative in the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay in New England when, on March third, 1636, the Great and General Court decreed that each town should have the power to regulate its own affairs. While the date of 1830 seems usually accepted as that of the incorporation of the town, yet its affairs were in the hands of the General Court until the passage of the above-mentioned act. The vital part of the provision consisted in authorizing

each town to choose a number of "prudential men" not to exceed seven in number, to order their municipal concerns. The right to set fines on offenders, not to exceed twenty shillings, was of secondary consideration and designed largely as a matter of convenience, to avoid long trips to court to settle small matters. The action of March third was the legal authorization of those officers so necessary to carry on the affairs of towns, and now usually called selectmen. Lynn (Saugus) elected seven men to serve in this capacity and continued to do so until the year 1755, when the number was reduced to three. The term of service was only three months in the beginning. Tything men were also chosen, one for each ten families, "to observe their conduct and report any violation of public order."

The year 1636 was important for greater Lynn, yet some of the incidents that gave zest to life at that time seem much out of focus now. Historic values change with years or periods. Events of thrilling and vital interest then appear now as mere incidents viewed through the perspective of centuries. Also, things at that time scarcely mentioned stand out now like the writing of destiny.

The wolf pits dug in 1630 were a vital necessity at the time. Those which remain are now a reminder of the exigences of that stern period of peril and privation. Yet the Pine Tree coinage, for which the dies were so quietly made in Lynn, marks an epoch in the progress of liberty. In 1636 the Quarterly Court was established at Salem for the benefit of that and adjoining towns, and Captain Nathaniel Turner and Mr. John Humphrey were among those selected by the Court to assist the Magistrate. The licensing of Mr. Timothy Tomlins "to draw wine for the town of Saugus" and also "to keep a house of intertainment," indicated something of the growth of the town. Mr. John Humphrey built a wind-mill on the easterly mound of Sagamore hill, and Capt. Nathaniel Turner was appointed one of a valuation committee in preparation for a tax levy on the several plantations. Mr. John Humphrey and Captain Nathaniel Turner were appointed by the Court to lay out the bounds of Ipswich. So there was plenty of work for busy men to do.

The affairs of the Rev. Stephen Bachiler having culminated in his removal from town in February, there came from England in June, 1636, the Rev. Samuel Whiting, who was installed pastor of the First Church at Saugus (Lynn), the 8th of November. This church was composed of only six members, besides the minister, even after the council had remained here two days to complete the organization. Among other things, the Rev. Samuel Whiting brought with him the first fruit trees to be brought to this town. (Woodbury, "Historical Priorities in Lynn"). Was it prophetic of the fruit of his labors, which endure to the present day?

Trouble with the Pequot Indians resulted in the expedition against

them. Governor Henry Vane ordered out four companies of Volunteers in August, 1636, and they proceeded against the Indians at Block Island, where they destroyed considerable property and killed one Indian, and later at New London, where more damage was inflicted. Captain Nathaniel Turner commanded one of the companies of volunteers. The expedition returned in September, but the trouble was only delayed. In April, 1637, it became necessary to send another expedition against the Pequots, and the soldiers from Massachusetts and Connecticut, with Indian allies, proceeded against them, attacked Sassacus, the Pequot Sachem, and killed about 700 of his followers, thus breaking his power. Toward this campaign, known as the Pequot War, the quota of Boston was 26, Saugus (Lynn) 21, Cambridge 19, Salem 18, and smaller numbers from the remaining ten towns from the Colony. The Lynn troops did not arrive in time to take part in the massacre, according to Lewis and Newhall. Indian troubles and antinomian disturbances caused the churches to call a fast, June 20th. Three days later Governor Winthrop visited Lynn, and was escorted by the inhabitants to Salem, returning at night, on account of the extreme heat, which caused many deaths. John Humphrey and Edward Howe were members of the Quarterly Courts; the tax for Lynn was £28.16 in a total levy of £400. Corn was legal tender at 5 shillings the bushel.

The first burial in the Old Burying Ground at the west end of the Common, according to James R. Newhall, took place in 1637, being the remains of John Bancroft, ancestor of George Bancroft, the historian. In this year also a committee, consisting of Daniel Howe, Richard Walker and Henry Collins, was chosen to divide the lands. The land suitable for cultivation was divided; and the woodlands were held as common property until sixty-nine years later. This was not the first allotment of lands to be made, for to cite one case, the General Court allotted 500 acres to Mr. John Humphrey in Swampscott in 1633, although he had not arrived in the Colony, but was active in managing its affairs in England.

The Pequot war and other threatened disturbances caused the Colonists to organize for more adequate defence, and in 1638 the organization now known as the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company was formed in Boston. Daniel Howe, William Ballard, Joseph Hewes, Richard Walker, Edward Tomlins and Nathaniel Turner were members of the company from Lynn, and Daniel Howe was chosen lieutenant. The organization has always been popular with Lynn men, and many have been members of it.

An earthquake caused considerable damage to property and alarm to people on June first, and lasted about four minutes, and was followed by less severe shocks during the succeeding weeks. The division of lands was accomplished in 1638, but only a part of the records are available. To the Right Honorable, the Lord Brook was allotted eight

hundred acres, which was the largest grant. To Mr. Thomas Willis and to Mr. Edward Holyoke were allotted 500 acres each. Edward Holyoke was also authorized to manage the estate for Lord Brook. Saddler's Rock, a landmark to the present time, was allotted to Richard Sadler, in addition to his 200 acres. Lewis and Newhall present the names of 102 persons to whom land was allotted, this being a list taken from the original Town Book of Records by Andrew Mansfield, town recorder, March 10, 1660.

The establishment of a ferry across the Saugus river between Needham's and Ballard's Landings and the building of a bridge across the same river at the Boston street (road) crossing were important accomplishments of the year 1639. This matter was under the jurisdiction of the Colony, and the Court granted to Garret Spencer "the ferry at Linn for two years." The fare was fixed at 2 pence for a single person to the farthest place, and one penny for each additional person. To the nearest place the fare was one penny, thus indicating that there were two stopping places on each passage. The Court allowed the town for the building of the bridge over the Saugus river the sum of £50, and an additional sum of fifty shillings yearly for keeping it in repair. The building of bridges in the settlement days followed the building of roads. Travel in the early days of the settlement was a serious undertaking. A tradition is recorded in Felt's Annals that certain persons traveling between Salem and Boston were four days on the road, and the following Sunday thanks were returned at the church service for their safe delivery from the perils and hardships of the journey. Traveling by land between Boston and Salem, it was necessary to ford the Saugus river at a point near the present location of Pranker's mills at Saugus Center.

The old map reproduced bearing notations by Governor Winthrop, and now in the British Museum, was evidently drawn in 1633-4. It shows the trail lines radiating from Lynn, one to Salem, another to Ipswich and yet another to Medford, which would have been along the line of land travel to Boston. The building of the bridge over the Saugus river, in 1639, on the Boston road, determines where the heaviest travel flowed between Salem, Lynn and Boston. The establishment of settlements and towns was for a long time only in places easy of access by water communication. Until 1803, Boston street remained the great thoroughfare between Boston and Salem and points farther east. Then the opening of the turnpike between Boston and Salem somewhat changed the tide of travel. The turnpike was opened September 22, 1803, as a "toll road." It cost $189,000 and was to become the property of the Commonwealth "when the proprietors shall have received the whole cost, plus twelve per cent. interest." The same year the Lynn Hotel was built, and was for many years the relay station, where horses were changed on the stage lines running through Lynn.

Lynn was never the scene of Indian hostilities, although frequently disturbed by Indian alarms. Andover and Haverhill were the nearest points to feel the ravages of Indian warfare directed against the white settlers, but this town was always ready to contribute its quota toward the common defense. The reported determination of the Indians in 1642 to exterminate the English caused great alarm among all the settlers of the Colony. The General Court established a code of signals to be observed "for the better direction of watch and alarums." In addition to the "county alarum," the Court ordered that "One musket discharged shall be an alarum to all the sentinels at the severall quarters of each towne, who shall answer said alarum by going and awakening the several houses within their quarters, by crying 'Arme! Arme!'" Then followed directions as to conducting the defense. Lynn was so much disturbed by the general apprehension that two block houses were built, one for the soldiers and one, about forty feet long, for a place of safety for the women and children. These houses were built, not at the present center of the city, or on High Rock, as might have been expected under the present geographical lines, but on Vinegar Hill, within the limits of Saugus and near Walnut street, the site of which now belongs to the Lynn Historical Society. In the same year the Court ordered that every house should aid in the "breeding of salt peeter", and its enforcement in Lynn was placed in the hands of Sergeant Tomlins. Three years later a renewal of the alarms caused a provision to be made for drilling all the boys between ten and sixteen years of age in the use of "small arms, half-pikes, bows and arrows." (See Massachusetts Records, II, p. 99). Thus was preparedness a cardinal virtue in the Colony.

Volumes have been written concerning the history of Lynn, and each passing year gives new contributions to the recorded annals of the town and city. The participation of Lynn in the Indian wars has been exhaustively studied by George H. Martin, A.M., Litt.D., and his research has been preserved in the archives and published in the Register of the Lynn Historical Society. Fortunately, Lynn was not a frontier town, and did not suffer directly from Indian warfare, nor does it possess the scene of battles in any of the wars within its borders. While Lynn participated in all the Colonial wars, yet her part in the French and Indian War, that war which drove the French from American soil and made possible the American revolution (which could never have been successful with frontiers to guard against two nations,) has never been exhaustively written.

To the late Honorable Howard K. Sanderson we are indebted for the publication of his exhaustive study of the participation of Lynn in the American Revolution. His research shows that the city has 196 known graves of Revolutionary soldiers, the largest number recorded in any city, and that with a population of 465 polls in 1774, Lynn furnished 483 soldiers. The records of the church at Lynnfield show that the first

death to occur in the American Revolution was that of Joseph Newhall of Lynn, on March 9, 1775, resulting from exposure at the encounter at the North Bridge, Salem, the 26th of the previous February; this being the first armed resistance which the British encountered. A part of Arnold's forces marched through Lynn on the expedition to Canada. The War of 1812 came closer to the doors of Lynn than any other, for the encounter between the "Chesapeake" and the "Shannon" took place off the shores of Nahant, and at times the ships came within less than a mile of the shore. It is also cited by Woodbury that the "Constitution" was built by Edmund Hart of Lynn at his shipyard in Boston where Constitution Wharf is now located. ("Historical Priorities in Lynn," Woodbury.) He further calls attention to the fact that it was Captain Joseph Floyd of Lynn, a pump maker, who devised the "Quaker guns" at the Charlestown Navy Yard. The Mexican War, the Civil War, the Spanish-American War and the World War drew heavily from the resources of Lynn.

Settlement extension, or the establishing of new towns, early proved attractive to the pioneers of Greater Lynn. In 1636, Rev. Stephen Bachiler, having removed from Lynn, went first to Ipswich, from which place he, with some of his friends, went on foot, in the very severe winter of 1637, to Yarmouth, a distance of about one hundred miles. It was his intention, we are told, to plant a town and build a church. Unforeseen difficulties prevented him from doing this, but in 1639 he and his son-in-law, Christopher Hussey, sold their possessions in Newbury and removed, with 14 others, mostly from Lynn, to Hampton, New Hampshire, where they built a town and formally established a church. In 1637 permission having been obtained from the Plymouth Colony, a large number of people removed from Lynn and commenced the settlement of Sandwich. Settlements were begun by Lynn people in 1639 at Yarmouth and at Barnstable. In 1638 Nathaniel Turner "removed with others to Quilipeake, where a new settlement was begun and called New Haven." He gave his name to Turner's Falls, and in 1640 he purchased the tract which is now Stamford, Connecticut. He was also, with others, largely interested in the purchase of land on both sides of the Delaware river, which was intended for development. About 1640 there was an extensive movement to settle towns on Long Island. In this migration Captain Daniel Howe appears quite prominently. Some difficulty was experienced with the Dutch, but eventually Southampton and several other towns were founded. In 1733 Lynn people settled Amherst, New Hampshire. On March 13, 1638, Lynn was granted "six miles into the country." This land was called Lynn End for many years, and constitutes the present town of Lynnfield. September 9, 1639, a tract of land four miles square was added to the territory of Lynn. This was settled and became known as Lynn Village, until it was set off March 17, 1653, as a separate town and called Reading. It now comprises the towns of Reading, North

Reading and Wakefield. This tract was purchased from the Indians for £10.16, and the deed was signed by Sagamore George, his sister Abegaile, and several other Indians.

Therefore we find that in the days of its pioneer struggles, Lynn was the parent town of Sandwich, Yarmouth, Barnstable, Massachusetts; Amherst and Hampton, New Hampshire; New Haven and possibly Stamford, Connecticut; Southampton, Gravesend, Jamaica, Hempstead and Oyster Bay on Long Island. By separation Lynn was the parent town of Reading (now divided into Reading, North Reading and Wakefield) in 1653; Lynnfield, which was set off in 1814, Saugus in 1815, Swampscott in 1852 and Nahant in 1853. Doubtless there are many other towns besides the eighteen mentioned that owe allegiance to Lynn in the same way.

Of the various industries associated with the early days of Lynn, none became of more immediate importance than the establishing of the iron works. In 1642 Mr. Robert Bridges took some iron ore from the bog near the Saugus river to England, and in London he formed the "Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works." Eleven men of wealth in and around London financed the undertaking, and advanced the sum of one thousand pounds for the beginning. Land was bought of Thomas Hudson, and a foundry erected near the present site of Pranker's Mills in Saugus.

John Winthrop, Jr., was connected with the enterprise. Several came from England to engage in the work, and the village that sprang up around the iron works was called Hammersmith, from the village in England from which the workmen came. For several years the history of Lynn contains much pertaining to the matters of the iron works. Richard Leader was the general agent for the company and Joseph Jenks was the superintendent. He was an able and important man in the Colony, for he superintended the affairs at the iron works, made the first dies for coining money, received in 1654 the order from Boston for "an Ingine to carry water in case of fire"—the first fire engine in this country—took out the first patent to be issued on this side of the water, produced a scythe of such a design that the length of former scythes was doubled, and made improvements in the machinery of his industry that materially increased its efficiency. At his foundry was cast the first iron kettle in America, which is preserved at the Lynn Public Library. He was a widower when he came to this country, and married Elizabeth —, who died in July, 1679. He had two sons born in England: Joseph, Jr., resided some time in Lynn. He removed to Pawtucket, where he built a forge, which was destroyed by the Indians. In 1681 he was an assistant in the government of Rhode Island, and he had a son, Joseph Jenks, who was Governor of Rhode Island from 1727 to 1732.

The name of Joseph Jenks deserves to be held in perpetual re-

membrance by the people of Lynn for his accomplishments in iron and brass in the days of the infant Colony.

The many other industries of Lynn have been exhaustively studied by Mr. Warren M. Breed. They consisted of tanning, iron works, salt works, shipbuilding, fisheries; mills for various branches of industry, as corn mills, chocolate and spice mills, "tide mills", saw and shingle mills, mills for the grinding of snuff, spice, tobacco and coffee, mills for hair pulling, silk working, bleaching, dyeing and fabric printing; silk industry, India rubber manufacture, bakery, wall paper printing, whaling, steam heating and power, falming, malting, glue making, friction matches, stove polish, lead pencils, stoves, sash blinds, bedsteads, artificial stone, spinning, weaving, making soap and candles, and many other industries, which have all or largely passed by, leaving a city that has earned the reputation of being "first in shoes and second in electrical equipment" among the cities of the world. (Some Abandoned Industries of Lynn, Lynn Historical Society Register, 1910).

Many instances are recorded of arbitrary regulations established by town and colony. Smoking was prohibited out of doors within five miles of a habitation. In 1633 it was ordered that no one should "take any tobacco publiquely, under pain of punishment," and the penalty was set at "one penny for every time he was convicted of taking tobacco in any place." In 1637 it was ordered that no person should make any cakes or buns "except for burials, marriages, and such like special occasions." 1639. "No [woman's] garment shall be made with short sleeves; and such as have garments already made with short sleeves shall not wear the same, unless they cover the arm to the wrist; and hereafter no person whatsoever shall make any garment for women with sleeves more than half an ell [22½ inches] wide."

Antinomianism and the teachings and beliefs of Mistress Ann Hutchinson found an echo in Lynn, as was shown by the fasts ordered by the churches, and in 1642, Lady Debora Moody, who resided in Lynn, and retained her church affiliation in Salem, together with Mrs. King and the wife of John Tillton, was presented at the Court "for houlding that baptising of Infants is noe ordinance of God." Sleeping in church or being a "common sleeper" was a punishable offence which often came before the Quarterly Court.

In 1642 Edwin Tomlins was arraigned before the Court for expressing an opinion against singing in the churches; but having recanted, he was discharged. In 1652 Esther Jenks, the wife of Joseph Jenks, Junior, was presented at Quarterly Court "for wearing silver lace." The witchcraft delusion only touched the borders of Lynn, when in 1680 Dr. Philip Read of Lynn complained at the Court in Salem of Mrs. Margaret Gifford as being a witch. Nothing materialized of this complaint; but some persons were cast into prison and others "cried out against" as witches during the period of excitement.

Momentous in the history of the onward progress of independence and liberty was the first act of rebellion, or of treason, which occurred in Lynn. The scarcity of small currency in the Colony led to the establishing of a mint in Boston, in 1652, for coining silver. Again quoting from Woodbury's "Priorities": "The first act of independence was not by resolution or rebellion, but by the issuance of coinage without the essential reference to the King by Grace of God." The dyes for the Pine Tree coinage were made at the Saugus Iron Works, from designs furnished by Esther Jenks, the wife of the Superintendent."* This coinage bore on one side the word Massachusetts, with a pine tree; on the other side the letters N. E. Anno. 1652, and III, VI or XII, denoting the number of pence. The dies were made by Joseph Jenks, superintendent of the Saugus Iron Works. Of such precarious nature was the coining of the Pine Tree currency that the date was never changed on the dies, although the coining continued for some fifty years.

In a community whose population was approximately 2000 people, where there were no newspapers, no places of entertainment in our modern acceptance of the word, few books, only primitive schools, where travel was slow and perilous, and settlements and neighbors were far apart, small matters assumed the importance of large affairs. A whale 75 feet long cast up on King's beach December 9, 1655, a 400 pound bear killed in Lynn Woods a year later, and a catamount killed there in 1658, became matters of historic record. Now such events would receive a headline and a short write-up in the daily press, and become "dead matter" in a day or two.

The ordering of a fire engine by the town of Boston in 1654, to be built by Joseph Jenks at the Saugus Iron Works, is a record of importance, as marking the beginning of certain progress in community life; and the purchase of a fire engine in 1796 for public use in Lynn shows the growth and the growing necessities of the town. The rending of Dungeon Rock by an earthquake in 1658, and the entombing of Thomas Veal, the pirate, with treasure, afforded thrills that lasted through many years.

Making Lynn a market town in 1646, the order of the court in 1681 allowing Lynn to have two licensed public houses, the building of the Old Tunnel Meeting-house in 1682, were indications of growth and development. The Old Tunnel Meeting-house, built in 1682, was the successor of the first meeting-house, built in the early days of the settlement at the present north-east corner of Summer and Shepard streets. That earlier structure was typical of the primitive buildings, as the floor was below the level of the ground, and entrance was gained by descending several steps. The "Old Tunnel" was a more pretentious structure, fifty feet long by forty-four feet wide, and was erected upon the Common, op-

*Elizabeth was the name of the wife of Joseph Jenks, as previously stated, and Esther was the wife of Joseph Jenks, Jr.

posite the present location of Whiting street. It was not only the religious, but the civic center for many years, and in it were held the town-meetings until 1806—long after the separation of the Church and the town had taken place.

The deed given by the Indians in 1686 to confirm the act of Sagamore James in granting land to the settlers was of importance to the Colony and the town, and is set forth in detail by Lewis and by Newhall in their histories; the second division of the land in 1706 gave title to the settlers in the lands that had been held in common.

The first mill on the Saugus river, built at Boston Road crossing, in 1723, denoted industrial progress, and the award of £13.15 to Nathaniel Potter as a premium or bonus for three pieces of linen manufactured in Lynn indicated further industrial development. The dark day of 1716 and of 1780, when the houses were lighted during the day as at midnight, have been fruitful causes of conjecture as to their cause. Potato rot, plague of grasshoppers, comets, northern lights, earthquakes, snow in July (1804), severe winters, dry summers, terrific storms, all serve to fill the pages of the history of the town. Repeated epidemics of small pox were a real peril to the community. The coming of John Adam Dagyr, skilled shoe-maker, in 1750, marks an epoch in the industrial history, not only of Lynn, but also of the Colony. The establishing of a church in 1635, the building of a town house and establishing a bank in 1814, the holding of the first dancing school in 1800, the establishing of the first Masonic lodge in 1805 (Mt. Carmel), the chartering of the Light Artillery in 1808, with two brass field pieces, and the formation of the Lynn Light Infantry in 1812—all are steps in the stair of progression. The linking of centuries and events was well illustrated in 1830 in the death of Donald McDonald at Lynn, October 4th, at the age of 108 years. Born in Scotland in 1722, he was present at the battle of Quebec, when Wolfe fell, was with Washington at Braddock's defeat, passed through the period of the French and Indian War, the Revolution and the War of 1812. Born at the time that Lynn was a little hamlet, he died when her population was 6,138. During the period of his life, Massachusetts as a Colony and a Commonwealth had been under the administration of twenty-four governors.

Having narrated something of the progress and development of Lynn through nearly two centuries, it seems appropriate that we present the pen picture of the town as seen about one hundred years ago by Timothy Dwight, S.T.D., LL.D., once president of Yale College. In 1821, he published his observations gathered in his extensive travels through the Eastern States. These journeys of observation commenced in 1796, and were continued through a series of years, and were given to the public in the form of a series of letters. Some of the letters indicate that the place was visited more than once. Passing through Essex county, he says: "Essex (County) may be considered as an ancient

settlement, and no county in Massachusetts except Suffolk, which is composed almost wholly of Boston, is equally populous. In 1790 it contained 7644 dwelling-houses, 10,883 families and 57,913 inhabitants. There are about 453 square miles in the county * * * . Of every thousand pounds raised by a State tax, this county pays £193 13s 7d; almost a fifth part of the whole; * * * . No County in the United States is believed to be more friendly to literature; and perhaps none is more distinguished for its morals." Referring to Lynn, he writes:

On Friday, October 14th, at 11 o'clock, we set out from Salem for Charlestown, through Marblehead, four miles; Lynn, eleven; to Charlestown, eighteen. By turnpike road, since made, the distance is thirteen miles. The road, which we travelled, was tolerably good * * * . Lynn is a pretty town, situated about nine miles from Boston, at the head of a bay. That part of it, which borders upon this piece of water, is a beautiful slope, limited on three sides almost entirely by hills, and open on the fourth to the ocean. The smooth surface, and elegant declension, of this ground, its cheerful meadows, and neat habitations, form a very pleasant contrast to the rougher scenery of the neighborhood. In another view, this town became still more interesting. The houses, with scarcely an exception, appear to be the abodes of industry, competence and thrift. Few of them were large, or expensive; but almost all were tidy, and well-repaired. At the sight of them a traveller could scarcely avoid concluding, that a peaceful and comfortable fire-side must be found within the walls. By the side of almost every house stood a small, neat shoemaker's shop. These boxes originate the prosperity of Lynn; and usually contain two hundred master-workmen, and six hundred apprentices, employed continually in manufacturing women's shoes. The number, annually made, is calculated at three hundred thonsand pair; and has amounted to four hundred thousand. These are sold in the neighbouring commercial towns; particularly, in Boston; and probably yield to the inhabitants from $200 to $250,000 a year. Few towns through which we passed left a more pleasing impression on our minds, than Lynn. A beach, extending a mile from the shore, called Lynn-beach, connects Nahant point, the northern extremity of the harbour of Boston, with the main. This beach is a favorite resort for parties of pleasure from the surrounding country. It has, also, been employed as a race-ground; and is one of the only two spots, which, so far as my knowledge extends, is used for this purpose in the State of Massachusetts. Lynn includes two Presbyterian Congregations, a society of Friends, and another of Methodists. It was incorporated in 1637 (?) and in 1790 contained three hundred houses, and two thousand two hundred and ninety-one inhabitants; in 1800, 2,837 inhabitants; and, in 1810, 4,087. (From Travels in New England and New York.)

Dr. Dwight further stated: "From Lynn to Malden the road is good." From these observations it is evident that he traversed the entire extent of the town from east to west and his pen picture is an illuminating supplement to the description of the same territory given by William Wood nearly two hundred years earlier, in the days of the first settlers and quoted in an earlier section of this narrative. This journey was taken, evidently, before the building of the Boston-Salem Turnpike in 1803.

The observations of Doctor Dwight, made over one hundred years ago, are worthy of repeating today. Relative to the religious aspect of New England, he says:

In New Hampshire, Massachusetts and Connecticut, the public worship of God

has always been established by law, and for a long time, without the communication of peculiar privileges to any class of Christians. Here only, in the history of man, has this experiment been made. The first practical answer, therefore, to the great question, whether such a thing is consistent with the public peace, good order, and safety, has been given in these States. Speculations on this subject have never satisfied the understanding, or the fears, of inquisitive men. An experiment was absolutely necessary. Here the experiment has been extensively made; and to say the least, has gone far towards proving, that Christians of different classes can live together harmoniously under a government which confers on them equal privileges.

The same conclusion had evidently been reached by the citizens of Lynn nearly a century earlier, when on March 5, 1722, there was an amicable separation of the affairs of the town and the parish. This is believed to be the first record of the separation of church and State in history to be carried out without struggle or controversy, and its far-reaching effect was presented in masterly form by Judge Nathan Mortimer Hawkes at the two hundred and seventy-fifth anniversary of the First Church of Lynn.

There are twenty-one beaches along the shore of Greater Lynn. Of these, commencing at the east, are Phillips', Whale, Swampscott (Fisherman's) and Humphrey's (King's) in Swampscott; Lynn, Nahant, Stoney, Bass, Canoe, Bathing, Pea Island, Joseph's, Curlew, Crystal, Dorothy's, Pond, Lewis, Coral, Reed, Johnson's and Black Rock. The above is the enumeration given by Lewis and Newhall, and the extent of the beaches is about nine miles. The most of the beaches are of smooth sand and well adapted to the sea bathing for which this section of the "North Shore" is famous in summer. King's Beach is, in part, within the limits of Swampscott and in part in Lynn, but its entire length, as well as a part of Lynn Beach, forms the outer border of the Lynn Shore Drive, which borders the ocean front of Lynn and is famous for its beauty. Interspersed between the beaches are sections of rock bound shore, precipitous, picturesque and wonderfully attractive, and adorned with names to appeal to the fancy and the imagination: Black Will's Cliff, Red Rock Point, Sliding Rock, Dread Ledge, Shag Rocks, Pulpit Rock, Irene's Grotto, Swallow's Cave, East Point, Natural Bridge, The Cauldron, Castle Rock, Cedar Point, Roaring Cavern, Pea Island, Swallow's Cliff, Castle Rock, Spouting Horn, Iron Mine, Dashing Rock, John's Peril; and out in the Bay, its cliffs of dark rock rising 86 feet above the water, yet so proportioned that it bears a striking resemblance to a crouching lion, Egg Rock bears aloft at night its flashing beacon and keeps watch over all.

The establishment of the first post office in Lynn on Boston street, near the junction with Federal street, indicated the central part of the town in 1793, and the building of the turnpike and the opening of the Lynn Hotel in 1803 indicated that the vicinity of Federal street was still central. The opening of the Eastern railroad in 1838 brought about a

change in the center of population and the business center. The railroad was opened for travel from Boston through Lynn to Salem, August 28, 1838, and it rapidly supplanted the stage coaches that had furnished transportation along its line. Travel was stimulated to the extent that for the first three months the road had an average patronage of 348 persons each day. Following this successful demonstration of its practicability, it was rapidly extended to Portland. The stage coach business, which accommodated the traveling public previous to the opening of the railroad, may be summed up at the figures given by James R. Newhall, who says: "In 1836, twenty-three stages left Lynn Hotel for Boston daily, and there were likewise numerous extras." The Lynn Academy was opened in 1805 and appears to have been the first school in Lynn of superior grade. Lynn had been settled almost 200 years before its first newspaper was published. It was called the "Lynn Weekly Mirror," was first issued September 3, 1825, by Charles Frederick Lummus, and bore only nineteen lines of editorial matter.

The distribution of surplus United States revenue in 1837, whereby Lynn received $14,879, was an example of the frugality then practiced in the affairs of the National Government, and must have gladdened the citizens of Lynn, as it was applied to reducing the indebtedness of the town. At the commencement of the Mexican War in 1846 Lynn furnished twenty volunteers. In the same year Congress boots were first manufactured in Lynn. The carriage road over the harbor side of Long Beach was built in 1848, giving better access to Nahant, and Lynn Common was fenced. In 1849 occurred the great exodus to California, in which about two hundred from Lynn joined in the frenzied rush for the gold fields, some by water and some overland. In the same year the Lynn Police Court was established, a step toward making Lynn a municipality. Thus briefly do we attempt to portray some to the steps of progress which Lynn took in passing through its township days, in preparation for assuming the civic responsibilities of a city.

Lynn is unique among the commercial cities of the Atlantic seaboard. While other cities are sheltered at the bottom of harbors or on navigable rivers, the residential part of Lynn is upon the direct ocean front, where the waves of the broad Atlantic break unimpeded along the magnificent Lynn Shore Drive, which forms the ocean border of this "Jewel of the Third Plantation." Back of the Shore Drive is the long, low elevation of Sagamore Hill, which has been, since the remote days of Indian occupation, the chosen dwelling place of Sachems, Sagamores and citizens appreciative of the beauties of nature. Indeed, Sagamore Hill has been interpreted by some as "the Hill of Kings."

While the glories of sunrise have never been so popular with poets or people as the beauties of sunset, yet from this hill the beauty of the morning is quite as inspiring as the glow of declining day. We seldom

associate New England with the Mediterranean, yet the same parallel of latitude cuts both. One who has viewed the sunrise from the Lynn Shore Drive, or has witnessed such gorgeous sunsets as that of November 20, 1921, from the shores of Lynn, and has seen the wonderful colors of the sky reflected in the waters of the bay, cannot wonder that the comparison has often been drawn between the waters adjacent to Lynn and the Bay of Naples. Longfellow, in his extensive travels, often alluded in his journal to the sunsets in the lands where he sojourned, but never in a descriptive manner in any other place than at Nahant, his summer home, where he viewed the sunset across the waters of Lynn harbor. Into his "Departure of Hiawatha" he has written the glories of a sunset seen across the harbor and the low-lying hills of Lynn and Saugus. The peculiar miragelike effect so frequently seen here at sunset is also beautifully portrayed:

> And the evening sun descending
> Set the clouds on fire with redness,
> Burned the broad sky, like a prairie,
> Left upon the level water,
> One long track and trail of splendor,
> Down whose stream, as down a river,
> Westward, westward Hiawatha
> Sailed into the fiery sunset,
> Sailed into the purple vapors,
> Sailed into the dusk of evening.
> And the people from the margin
> Watched him floating, rising, sinking,
> Till the birch canoe seemed lifted
> High into that sea of splendor,
> Till it sank into the vapors
> Like the new moon slowly, slowly,
> Sinking in the purple distance.

Allusion has frequently been made to the fact that Lynn possessed no deep harbor for maritime commerce, and no rushing water courses to give power for manufactures, yet in its first four years of settlement it outstripped Salem in population, and has maintained its position as the metropolis of Essex county. The lack of the natural advantages of deep harbor and water power brought to Lynn in the beginning a class of people who were seeking desirable locations for homes. The same attractions have brought in later years the same class of people to a great extent. Homes were first established and the industries grew up around the home. Edmund Ingalls, the first settler, built his malt house near his home. In later years, the home makers of Lynn built their shoe shops adjacent to their houses, and established the reputation of Lynn as the City of Shoes long before the days of the concentration of industry and the building of great factories. In later years, when a great industry seemed on the point of withdrawing from Lynn, many of its employees and some of its officials refused to leave their homes.

ABOVE, CLASSICAL HIGH SCHOOL, LYNN. BELOW, ENGLISH HIGH SCHOOL

Therefore, whatever may be said of Lynn's great industries, the fact remains that this is a City of Homes, and that the industries have followed the homes rather than that the homes been made to follow the industries.

While the adoption of the charter making Lynn a city brought about changes in political affairs, the adoption in the same year of "the ten-hour day" was revolutionary in its economic significance. The presence of small pox in the town, fires in the city and in the woods, one hundred days of east wind, the fixing of physician's fees at seventy-five cents per visit instead of fifty cents, a tornado, a robbery, the potato-rot, and the drowning of thirteen members of a picnic party from Lynn at Humphrey's pond in Lynnfield furnished thrills of excitement and material for conversation, yet the incorporation of the city, adoption of the "ten-hour system" and the strong opposition to the "Fugitive Slave Law" passed by Congress stand out as the three salient points of general public interest. The consecration of Pine Grove Cemetery and the first burial therein, the dedication of the Central Congregational meeting-house on Silsbe street, and the anti-slavery discussion, have left their impress. October fifth a large and enthusiastic meeting, at which Mayor Hood presided, and Jonathan Buffum, Daniel C. Baker, Charles Merrie and William Bassett were vice presidents, passed strong resolutions condemnatory of the Fugitive Slave Act, which was quite in keeping with the liberty-loving sentiments inherited from pioneer ancestors who had sought these shores for liberty and for homes. With a population of 14,257, the total number of deaths in the year was 262, of which forty-three occurred from tuberculosis.

In 1850 Lynn became a city. A charter was granted by the Legislature on the tenth of April, and on the 19th of the same month the inhabitants voted to accept it. The population had reached 14,357, of which 3,379 were pupils in the thirty-four public schools, and there were nine male and thirty-four female teachers employed. The organization of the first city government was effected Tuesday, May 14, 1850, at Lyceum Hall. Before a large assemblage of men and women of the newly-chartered city, George Hood took the oath of office as mayor, Daniel C. Parker as president of the Common Council, and William Bassett as city clerk. The inauguration of the new city government was followed in the evening by a banquet at the old Town Hall, which was enjoyed by the city officials and citizens. The progress of Lynn as a municipality is indicated by the accompanying tabulation in decades:

| Years | 1850 | 1860 | 1870 | 1880 | 1890 | 1900 | 1910 | 1920 |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Population .. | 13,613 | 19,083 | 28,246 | 38,284 | 55,727 | 68,513 | 89,336 | 99,148 |
| Tot. Val..... | $4,835,000 | $9,649,000 | $10,819,000 | $23,400,000 | $40,730,000 | $51,655,186 | $73,000,000 | $101,554,572 |
| Tax Rate..... | 9.00 | 8.80 | 17.20 | 17.60 | 15.00 | 18.00 | 20.00 | 27.40 |
| Indebtedness | 71,400 | 123,100 | 910,000 | 705,100 | 1,745,000 | 1,580,838 | 2,049,161 | 4,820,000 |
| Appropriat'ns | 45,000 | 110,507 | 525,000 | 2,169,000 | 3,051,000 | 4,335,450 | 4,425,100 | 4,131,059 |

Following is a list of incumbents of the Mayoral office from the time of incorporation through the year 1921:

1850-51, George Hood; 1852, Benjamin F. Mudge; 1853, Daniel C. Baker; 1854, Thomas P. Richardson; 1855, Andrews Breed; 1856-57, Ezra W. Mudge; 1858, William F. Johnson; 1859-60, Edward S. Davis; 1861, Hiram N. Breed; 1862-65, Peter M. Neal; 1866-68, Roland G. Usher; 1869, James N. Buffum; 1870-71, Edwin Walden; 1872, James N. Buffum; 1873-76, Jacob M. Lewis; 1877-78, Samuel M. Bubier; 1879-80, George P. Sanderson; 1881-82, Henry B. Lovering; 1883-84, William L. Baird; 1885, John R. Baldwin; 1886-87, George D. Hart; 1888, George C. Higgins; 1889-90, Asa T. Newhall; 1891, E. Knowlton Fogg; 1892-93, Elihu B. Hayes; 1894-95, Charles E. Harwood; 1896, Eugene A. Bessom; 1897-98, Walter L. Ramsdell; 1899-1902, William Shepherd; 1903-05, Henry W. Eastham; 1906-07, Charles Neale Barney; 1908, Thomas F. Porter; 1909-10, James E. Rich.

In 1910 the commission form of government was adopted, and five commissioners replaced the mayor, board of aldermen and common council. The following named served as mayor and commissioner of public safety: 1911-12, William P. Connery; 1913-17, George H. Newhall. In 1917 the city again made a change in its charter, returning to a government of mayor and council, and Walter H. Creamer served as mayor from 1918 to the present time, 1921.

The incorporation of Swampscott as a separate town in 1852, which was followed in 1853 by similar action on the part of Nahant, reduced both the area and the population of the newly-chartered city of Lynn. Owing to the operation of the law requiring a majority of votes cast to elect, there was no choice for mayor in 1852, at the regular election; and when the city government was organized, on the 5th of April, Edward S. Davis was elected president of the common council. George Hood continued to act as mayor until his successor, after eight trials, was elected by a small majority on June 12, and took the oath of office four days later.

The visit of Louis Kossuth was a notable event in May, 1852, and the Lynn City Guards were for a time called the Kossuth Guards. Illuminating gas was first introduced in the city January 13, 1853, the price being fixed at $3.50 per thousand cubic feet; the Lynn Light Infantry was chartered and the Saugus Branch railroad opened the same year. The city charter was amended in 1855, making the first Monday in January the beginning of the municipal year. The incorporation of the Lynn Library Association and the Lynn Musical Association the same year showed a development of the literary and musical taste of the city, and the opening of the Five Cents Savings Bank indicated thrift. The passing by the Legislature of the plurality law in 1854 was important, as had been demonstrated in the Lynn election of 1852. The great strike of the shoemakers of Lynn in 1860 is still remembered. the passing of the Prince of Wales through the city is recorded his-

tory, and the opening of a horse-railroad line through Lynn marked a new development in local transportation.

Lynn was ready and generous in response to the call for troops in 1861. In five hours after the call came, two full companies were armed and ready for duty, the Lynn Light Infantry, Company D, and the Lynn City Guards, Company F, both a part of the famous 8th Massachusetts Regiment. Enlistments followed rapidly. War filled the minds of all through the following years of struggle and the War Mayor, Peter M. Neal, won high regard by his devotion to the welfare of the troops.

Following the war came the great industrial development of Lynn, which is portrayed elsewhere in this work, the calamity of the great Lynn fire in 1889, and following that the building up of a new industrial Lynn. The war with Spain and the World War brought the same ready response that had been given from the earliest days of the settlement, when danger threatened or need required. Being a city of varied industries, Lynn has suffered less from industrial catastrophies than have those cities of a single industry. Her growth has been remarkable and the standard of her citizenship high. With all her proximity to Boston and the metropolitan district, the abundant transportation facilities and moderate fares to the commuter, and the attractiveness of the city as a place of residence have all helped to increase the prosperity of the city.

The State has spent millions of dollars in improving the ocean front and making it a reservation open for all time to the enjoyment of the people. The Lynn Shore Drive ranks among the most beautiful boulevards of the country, and the State bath house at Lynn Beach, together with the supervision of the beaches and reservation by the Commonwealth, has gone far to make our shore unsurpassed for its beauty of scenery, its availability for recreation and its safety as a pleasure resort.

Lynn has had her experiences in various forms of city administration, and for a time turned to the Commission form of government. That form has now been replaced by a mayor and city council. Through all she has prospered. Quick to feel depressions, her industries are prompt to recover. And after all, the same attractiveness that caused families to come here to make homes, almost three centuries ago, is a great asset today in the balance sheet of social and industrial Lynn. Shorn of much of her original territory by the creation of Nahant, Swampscott, Lynnfield, Reading, North Reading, Wakefield and Saugus, Lynn still retains her lead as the metropolis of Essex county, largely from her attractiveness as a city of homes. Her industries and her attractions go hand in hand in her progress. Each supplements the other in making a desirable community for a home and the city is developing her varied resources judiciously.

While it is impossible to give special mention to all who are de-

serving of it in a narrative of this length, yet we glean from Woodbury's "Priorities" and other sources a few names of persons of accomplishment who owe allegiance to Lynn:

Tehatawan, the Squaw Sachem, who ruled the Penobscots after the death of Nanapashemet.

Maria Mitchell (Miss), first woman astronomer of recognized importance.

Abraham Pierson, first president of Yale College, and one of its founders.

Cornelius Conway Felton, president of Harvard College and an eminent Greek scholar.

Charles W. Eliot, President of Harvard College; summer home at Nahant.

Rev. William H. P. Faunce, president of Brown University, lived and married in this city.

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, summer home for many years in Nahant while it was a part of Lynn. He wrote many of his best works while there. In about twenty of his poems are found allusions to Nahant and Lynn. His "Bells of Lynn" is distinctly a Lynn poem.

Colonel Carrol D. White, statistician, head of departments of Commonwealth and Nation; president of Clark College; president of Drexel Institute. Resided and practiced law in Lynn.

Goold Brown, grammarian, lived in Lynn many years.

Mary Baker Eddy (Mrs.), founder of Christian Science, lived in Lynn many years, and much of her most important work done here, Red Rock being a favorite spot for her meditations.

Alonzo Lewis and James R. Newhall (Judge), writers of Lynn history.

George H. Martin, educator, and writer of local history.

Hon. Elihu Burritt Hayes, mayor of Lynn and member of Legislature. Framed and introduced the secret ballot law in 1888, which was adopted, and became the basis of similar laws throughout the nation. Also author of the Massachusetts Public Library law, which made it possible for every town to have a public library. (In reply to my question, several years ago, as to what he considered to be his greatest public service, he replied that he was uncertain which of the above laws that he had sponsored had been productive of the most far-reaching good). Also active in introducing books for the blind and instruction for the adult blind into the public libraries.

Nathan Mortimer Hawkes (Judge), writer of local history.

Elihu Thomson, eminent in science. Now acting for the second time as president of Massachusetts Institute of Technology. Long the head of the engineering department of the Thomson-Houston Co., merged into the General Electric Company.

Joseph Dixon, inventor, originated photo-lithography.

Three Merrill brothers, of Lynn, with Samuel Downer, extracting kerosene oil from heretofore worthless Nova Scotia shale.

Frederick Tudor, originated shipping of ice to the tropics.

Edward Appleton Haven, officer in the Zeigler Arctic Exploring Expedition.

William Gray, greatest New England merchant in Colonial days. Born in Lynn, business in Salem. His estate is said to have been the largest ever probated in this country at time of his death, being slight-

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

SOLDIERS' MONUMENT AND CITY HALL, LYNN

ly larger than that of George Washington, who died 26 years earlier.

Dalrymple brothers, managers of "largest farm in the world."

Charles Albert Coffin, shoe manufacturer, head of Thomson-Houston Co., and president of the General Electric Company.

Colonel John Emery Cowen, eminent engineer, of international renown.

John Elderkin, builder of mills.

Joseph Jenk(e)s, worker in iron and brass. Wherever he went, foundries sprang up; inventor and manufacturer.

Charles J. H. Woodbury, engineer, publicist, writer.

John Thornton Kirkland, president of Harvard College 1810-1828, biographer and author, son of Samuel Kirkland, missionary to the Oneida Indians and the founder of Hamilton College, was a descendant of Philip Kirtland, the first shoemaker of record who came to Lynn in 1635.

In 1907 Lynn extended her hospitality for a week, beginning July 28 and ending August third, to former residents in particular and to all comers, through the medium of an Old Home Week observance. Hospitality was the keynote of the entire observance, and at the same time the city took the opportunity to demonstrate in various ways its resources and its progress. With the opening of the observance on Sunday, all the churches held special Old Home Week services. The city, through its mayor and city government, gave receptions from day to day, the clubs, lodges, churches and business and social organizations extended hospitality and kept open house. The streets and public and private buildings were profusely decorated and entertainment was provided for each day and evening.

To show the progress of the city, an Industrial Exhibit was opened in the newly erected Vamp building (the largest building in the world devoted entirely to the manufacture of shoes), where more than one hundred exhibits by firms and individuals were displayed, and the shops and factories were open for inspection. Thousands of former residents of Lynn visited the city during the week, and many thousands of incidental visitors came to see the city and its sights. Mayor Charles Neal Barney appointed a citizen's committee, and a committee from the City Government was also appointed. These committees worked together in the utmost harmony, and carried out a programme that was a model in its arrangement. Its results were a revelation, alike to visitors and citizens, of the great strides the city had made socially and industrially in the period of fifty-seven years following its incorporation.

Vice-President Charles W. Fairbanks, with several members of his family, was the guest of the city one day, as was former Governor Frank W. Rollins of New Hampshire, the father of the Old Home Week movement. Mayor Barney also tendered a luncheon to the mayors of the New England cities, which was attended by many. The growth of the city departments was shown by a parade of all the city employees, with the equipment of their various departments, so far as it could be

utilized. Nothing could have more fully demonstrated the progress from tythingmen to a police department, from fire buckets to fire towers, from trail makers to street pavers and builders, with their great equipment of men and machinery, from prudential men to mayor, aldermen and city council, from primitive schools to complete educational equipment for over 10,000 pupils. The illumination of the city was one of the most striking demonstrations of the progress in electrical lighting in less than a generation.

From a personal familiarity with the celebrations of a simple character in the various great cities of the east, we feel justified in saying that never has been presented a better programme to entertain and instruct visitors in the progress and resources of a city, nor has there ever been a more cordial co-operation between citizens and city government in carrying out a programme of which hospitality and social and industrial progress was the keynote. The seal of the occasion had for its center a shoe, with the legend "The Shoe Center" around it. Surrounding this was a grouping of the emblems of the two great industries of the city, the awl and hammer of the shoemaker and the dynamo and the electric light of the electric industry. Outside these were High Rock, with its tower, symbolizing the tradition of the city; the Lynn Shore Drive, with its beautiful residences, symbolizing the homes and the beauties of Lynn; while the two great chimneys of the General Electric Company, with sections of buildings on one side and the Vamp building on the other, indicated the two great industries that have made Lynn industrially famous.

The following editorial, which appeared in the Lynn "Daily Evening Item," following the Old Home Week celebration, furnishes an analysis of the population of the city. While the present population of Lynn is approximately one hundred thousand, instead of 68,513, as at the time the editorial appeared in 1907, the relative proportions are probably not materially changed:

Dr. Charles H. Bangs, one of our well known and highly esteemed physicians, has performed a public service in his compilation of the birth statistics of Lynn, which we give below. A reading of the facts arranged by Dr. Bangs will convince any one that Lynn has a pretty full line of native citizens. Dr. Bangs says:

The recent discussion of Old Home Week has apparently given many the impression that Lynn is a city largely made up of foreign population. This is not a fact; for, while our city has very nearly doubled her population in the past 20 years and her diversified industries have given employment to those from almost every civilized country, yet it is a fact that a little better than five out of every seven of our people are of native birth, and, moreover, that about half of them trace their descent through several generations of American ancestry.

According to the latest statistics 50,771 of the 68,513 inhabitants of Lynn are of native birth, and over 30,000 of these are removed at least two generations from a foreign allegiance.

Of the native population of Lynn, 37,990 were born in Massachusetts, 5138 in

Maine, 2920 in New Hampshire, 2030 in New York, 614 in Vermont, 514 in Connecticut, and the remainder represent every State and Territory except Arkansas, New Mexico, Oklahoma, Indian Territory, and Hawaii.

The 17,742 of our population who are of foreign birth are distributed as follows:—Over one-half of them, or 9889, were born in Canada, 5306 in Ireland, 1527 in England, 812 in Sweden, 434 in Scotland, 306 in Italy, 288 in Russia, 261 in Germany, 164 in Turkey, 55 in China, 54 in France, 51 in Greece and the remainder from nearly every country except Spain, Japan and Mexico.

When we compare the analysis of the population of Lynn with that of other cities of the State we find that, while Fall River has but 52.3 per cent. of native born population, Holyoke, Lowell, Lawrence and New Bedford less than 60 per cent., Boston, Cambridge, Chelsea, Fitchburg, Gloucester, Salem and Worcester less than 70 per cent., Malden, Newton Somerville and Taunton a little over 70 per cent. yet more than 74 per cent. of the population of Lynn was born in this country, a percentage only slightly exceeded by Brockton, Haverhill and Springfield.

This is 6 per cent. greater than the average for the State and classes Lynn as one of the most "American" of Massachusetts cities.

CHARLES H. BANGS.

We have no doubt that the foregoing statement will surprise a good many readers. The nature of our industries, calling as they do upon young people as employees, gives the impression that the population is not permanent. The presence of large bodies of foreign-born workmen strengthens the idea that our people are not native to the soil. Dr. Bangs has set this matter in a different light, and is deserving of the thanks of Lynn people. It would be interesting to know what proportion of the 37,990 who were born in Massachusetts are natives of Lynn, and we believe that were the statistics available they would cause as much surprise as the facts which are now brought forward by Dr. Bangs.

Lynn is particularly fortunate in the matter of playgrounds. In addition to several miles of beaches, and to many hundred acres of parks, playgrounds have been acquired by purchase or reclamation to serve all parts of the city, and the summer months find the sports of these fields supervised by trained instructors. In the western part of the city, Little River Playground has an area of 9.5 acres, fronting on Boston street, and of five acres on Summer street. The most of this is reclaimed land, turned to a good purpose. Nearer the center is the Elm street ground of two acres and in the eastern district is the Sanderson avenue playground of three acres. With this the Meadow Park adds area and facilities for many sports.

Lynn is also blessed in the number, size, variety and distribution of her parks and playgrounds. In the division of the public lands in 1706, a training ground was reserved, easily accessible to the people. That ground today constitutes Lynn Common, a beautiful strip of ten acres, extending from City Hall Square westward to Market Square, and plentifully adorned with trees, and in parts with shrubs and plants. It is very centrally located for the western half of the city, and furnishes a delightful breathing spot for the people during the hot weather and a convenient place of assemblage. From the band stand near its

center are rendered frequently in summer programmes of choice music by the excellent bands of Lynn, while close by the Shute memorial fountain, the first electrically illuminated fountain to be erected in the east, lends color to the evening festivities.

Goldfish Pond and Park (Lafayette Park), in the easterly section of the city, is a most attractive spot at approximately the location which Edmund Ingalls selected for his home, when he came here, in 1629. In area the park is only 2½ acres. In its center is Goldfish Pond, which derives its name from the great number of gold fish that spontaneously breed there. In the center of the pond is an island, the entire effect of which is most pleasing. On the northerly border of the park a tablet was recently placed to mark the approximate location of the Ingalls homestead, and much of the land adjacent still remains in the possession of descendants of Edmund Ingalls, the pioneer.

Meadow Park, with an area of over 30 acres, is becoming both a beautiful park and a roomy and accessible playground. It is a reclaimed swamp, where a generation ago grew the wild flags and other swamp vegetation.

High Rock Park crowns the summit of High Rock, which, with its elevation of 190 feet, affords a fine outlook over ocean, harbor, city and surrounding country. Being scarcely a ten-minute walk from the City Hall or from Central Square, it is visited by a great number. At its summit is the High Rock Tower, a landmark from sea and land for many miles around. Associated with this beautiful recreation spot will ever be the name of the Hutchinson family, of fame as singers in the anti-slavery campaign, as well as during the Civil War, and whose home was at the foot of the rock. Restrictions imposed by the city council on the height of surrounding buildings will prevent an obstruction of the view for all time. At High Rock Tower the custodian keeps a register for visitors. During Old Home Week, July 28 to August 3, 1907, about two thousand people from the length and breadth of this land, as well as from many foreign countries, recorded their names, and in many instances a sentiment.

Lynn Woods, or the Great Woods of Lynn, is the crowning glory of the park system. Acquired by gift and purchase to protect the water supply of Lynn from contamination, it has been so administered as to preserve much of the natural scenery of this region as well. While the ravines have been dammed to create storage ponds, the remainder of the 2200 or more acres retain much of their primitive beauty. The forest has been judiciously conserved, and the winding roads reveal at each turn new scenes of beauty. A drive of four or five miles from the center of the city brings one to what, but for the roads, would seem to be the forest primeval. While the altitudes of Burrill Hill, Mount Hermon and Mount Gilead are respectively only 285, 278 and 267 feet, yet the contour of the surrounding country is such that very broad

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX FILDEN FOUNDATIONS

1. LONG BEACH. 2. CITY HOSPITAL, ADMINISTRATION BUILDING.
3. LYNN RAILROAD STATION, 1848-72. 4. LOOK OUT TOWER
HIGH ROCK

views are obtained from their summits. The names associated with the Great Woods are sufficient to stimulate the fancy of the casual observer and to arouse pleasant memories among those familiar with the territory. Dungeon Rock, Tracy Trail, Breed's Pond, Wolf Pits, Ox Pasture, Bow Ridge, Glen Lewis Pond, Hemlock Ridge, Tomlin's Swamp, Wake, Robin Spring, Old Man's Walk, Calf Pen, Penny Brook and Aaron Burrill's Pines all have their associations and their traditions.

A recent report of the Lynn Park Commissioners contains a compilation by L. A. Wentworth of the flora of Lynn woods. Omitting the mosses and fungi, which are very abundant, he enumerates some 545 varieties of trees, shrubs, plants, flowers, grasses and ferns that are native to the Lynn woods, and seventeen species that have been introduced. Again reverting to the writings of William Wood, who was one of the first five men to settle in Lynn in 1629, and whose "New England's Prospect" was the first book to be published that was written in New England, we find there the first lines ever penned about the woods of Lynn. So applicable are they to the Lynn Woods Park of today that we cannot refrain from quoting them:

Trees both in hills and plaines, in plenty be,
The long liv'd Oake, and mournful Cyprus tree,
Skie-towering Pines, and Chestnuts coated rough,
The lasting Cedar, and the Walnut tough;
The rosin-dropping Firr for masts in use;
The boatmen seeke for oares, light, neat-grown Sprewse,
The brittle Ash, the ever trembling Aspes,
The broad-spread Elme, whose concave harbors Waspes;
The Water-spongle Alder, good for nought,
Small Elderne by the Indian Fletchers sought,
The knottie Maple, pallis Birch, Hawthornes,
The Hornbound tree that to be cloven scornes,
Which, from the tender Vine oft takes its spouse,
Who twines imbracing arms about his boughes.
Within this Indian Orchard fruits be some,
The ruddie Cherrie and the jettie Plumbe,
Snake murthering Hazell, with sweet Saxaphrage,
Whose spurnes in beere allays hot fever's rage,
The dyars (dyer's) Shumac, with more trees there be,
Than are both good to use and rare to see.

At the beginning of the struggle for Independence, there were two rival postoffice systems—the British, or Parlimentary postoffice, operated by the deputies under Foxcroft and Finlay, and the Continental postoffice. The lastnamed was the outgrowth of the need for independent and secret means of communication among the leaders in the opposition against British control. Paul Revere, for example, was a postrider for the Massachusetts patriots as early as 1773, and his celebrated ride of April 19, 1775, was taken in the performance of his duties. In July, 1775, Congress established a Continental postoffice department,

with Benjamin Franklin as Postmaster-General, and a line of posts was directed to be established between Massachusetts and Georgia, with such cross posts as he might deem necessary. The town of Saugus, it would appear, was not forgotten by the Federal government in this establishment, for it is learned that on the old Newburyport road in Saugus and adjacent to it, there still remain some of these historic posts.

The first postoffice in Lynn, in 1793, was in existence ten years before the Salem turnpike and now known as Western avenue was constructed, and it was forty-five years later until the Eastern railroad was built from Boston to Salem. Mailbags in early times were usually thrown across a horse's back and so carried 'cross-country. In 1832, three mails daily were brought from Boston to Lynn and Salem, and as late as to 1872 Sunday mails were carried by John Dalton's stage, from Boston and Chelsea, Lynn and Salem, for which he received $600 per year. The Lynn office of 1868, at the corner of Market and Summers streets, was burned, after which the postoffice was kept in the city building for a time; later, various business houses were used, the list of which is of little general historic interest. What was styled the penny-post carrier system of free delivery in Lynn was established in 1812, with W. R. Badger as carrier. Not until about Civil War days did the city of Lynn have free delivery. The postal rates were much higher back in the fifties and earlier. A letter from Lynn to New York City cost the sender or receiver eighteen and three-fourths cents; the usual way was to let the person to whom the letter was addressed pay the postage when he received the letter. From Lynn to Philadelphia and Baltimore, the rate was twenty-five cents. Now two cents carries an ordinary letter to any place in the United States. The mail service has kept pace with the development of civilization and discovery—first by horseback, then by boat and stage coach; next came the steam car railway postoffice system, as used now; and the latest innovation is mail carried by means of air-ships, the first of which successful attempts was in bringing mail to Boston; but, as it happened, the first air-ship with regular mail landed in the Lynn postal district, hence Lynn claims priority. This landing was June 6, 1918.

In 1901, the Saugus postal service was annexed to Lynn district. At an early day all the mail was brought to one central point or station, which was East Saugus, and from there delivered to the various communities. East Lynn obtained a postoffice July 1, 1909, at the corner of Essex and Chestnut streets. The Swampscott office was established in July, 1899; Nahant, May 1, 1901; West Lynn, June 1, 1903. The present postoffice building in Lynn, proper, was first occupied on the night of March 1, 1898.

The first postoffice in Lynn was located in the general store of Postmaster Colonel James Robinson, at the corner of what is now known as Boston and Federal streets, but then called "Lower street" and "Rhoades

lane." The office is now one hundred and twenty-eight years old, and has had twenty-seven postmasters, with an average of about one month over four years terms of office. The following is a list of postmasters, with year of appointment: 1793, Col. James Robinson; 1802, Ezra Hitchings; 1803, Samuel Mulliken; 1807, Elijah Downing; 1808, Jonathan Batchelder; 1829, Jeremiah C. Stickney; 1839, Thomas J. Marsh; 1841, Stephen Oliver; 1842, Thomas B. Newhall; 1843, Benjamin Mudge; 1849, Abner Austin; 1853, Jeremiah C. Stickney; 1858, Leonard B. Usher; 1861, George H. Chase; 1869, John Batchelder; 1879, Capt. John G. B. Adams; 1885, William E. Parker; 1889, Capt. A. J. Hoitt; 1894, John D. Dennis; 1898, E. K. Fogg; 1900, Fred H. Nichols; 1900, Howard K. Sanderson; 1905, William F. Craig; 1913, (Feb. 1), E. C. Mansfield; 1913, T. W. Swift; 1913, Edmund S. Higgins, present postmaster, whose first commission is dated August, 1913, and signed by President Woodrow Wilson, as was also his second commission, dated 1918.

Lynn was made a branch of the Boston postoffice in February, 1913, but restored to its former status, September 5, the same year.

The present Lynn postoffice building was finished in March, 1898. It stands between Willow and Washington streets, on Liberty. It is a handsome yellow pressed brick structure, constructed at an original cost of about $125,000. The ground originally was the site of the old Kimball House. There are now (1921) twenty-three mails received at this office daily and twenty are dispatched during the twenty-four hour period. There are eighty-eight carriers in the city, and one rural route, that from East Saugus branch office. The recent amount in savings deposits was $124,633. Total business transacted (outside money order business) was in the last fiscal year $374,151.64.

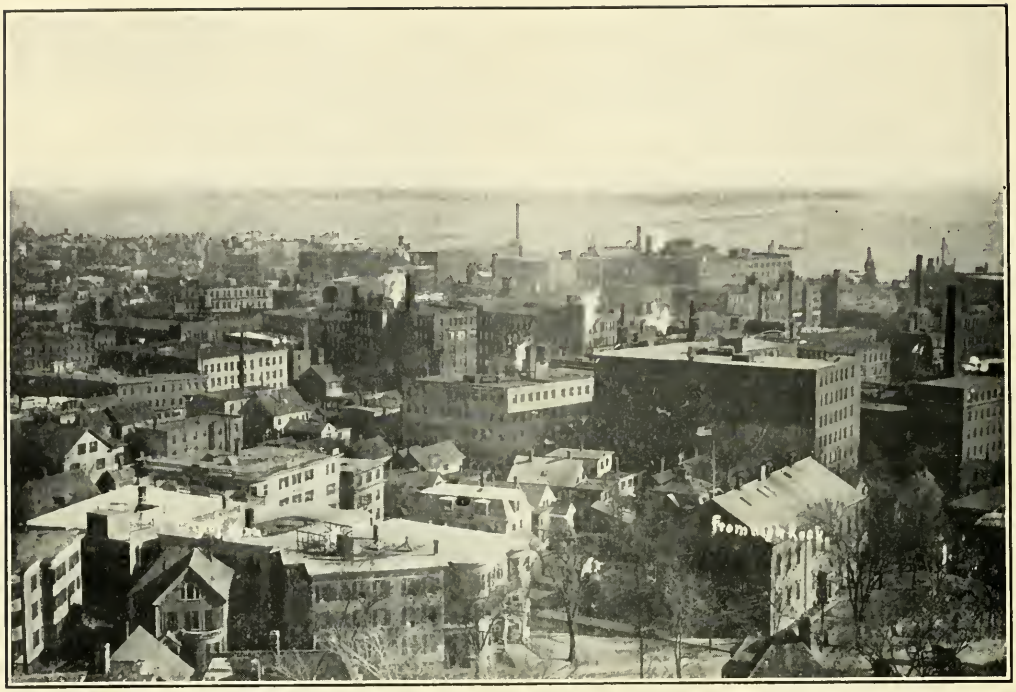
The present office corps is as follows: Postmaster, Edmund S. Higgins; Assistant Postmaster, William M. Minton; Superintendent of Mails, Frederick Frothingham; Assistant Superintendent of Mails, Thomas Emery; Foreman of Postal Accounts and Supplies, F. W. Robertson; Foreman of Money Order and Postal Savings, Minnie I. Aspinwall; Foreman Registry Section, George K. Poole; Foreman Mailing Division, George D. Rogers; Foreman in charge of motor vehicles and parcel post delivery, B. Frank Ford; Superintendent West Lynn station, Henry Garney; of East Lynn station, John F. C. Stevens; of Swampscott branch, Royer F. Butler; of Nahant branch, Mary T. Cusick; of East Saugus, William H. Merritt; of Saugus Centre branch, Fred E. Bramhall; of Cliftondale branch, Ernest C. Brown; of Station No. 8, Emma G. Hutcherson.

From a city directory, now at the Lynn Historical Society Rooms, the following is gleaned concerning Lynn in 1840-41: The population was 9,375. Town government was in vogue and the selectmen and assessors were Stephen Oliver, Daniel Farrington, Samuel Tufts, Nehemiah Barry and Henry Newhall. Thomas Bowler was the town clerk.

The town boasted two lawyers, J. C. Stickney and Thomas B. Newhall. There were eight regular physicians and one dentist. The vegetable physician was Dr. James Clark, who had an office at 4 North Common street, and the botanic physician was Dr. Benjamin K. Ross, who held forth at 16 South Common street. The solitary dentist was Dr. Isaiah Haley, at 5 Exchange street, which was "near depot, upstairs." The Beach committee in 1844 was composed of Israel Buffum, James Breed, Jr., Moses Breed, Samuel Tufts and Samuel Viall. Daniel Moulton was pound-keeper, and there were two newspapers, the "Lynn Record" and the "Lynn Freeman and Whig." Amos Rhodes was town treasurer, and was also librarian of the Lynn Social Library. There were three undertakers—Benjamin H. Jacobs for the Old Burying Ground; George Clarge for the Woodend Burying Ground; and Asa Breed for the Friends' Society. The marriages in 1840 were 76. There were three persons in the town over ninety years of age, three deaf and dumb people, and one blind man. The number of dwellings was 1,037; streets, sixty; United States pensioners, twenty-one; persons between 80 and 90 years of age, 32; persons over 21 who could not read or write, 51. Communication between Lynn and Boston was by the old Eastern railroad, and there were six trains each day in the week and one on Sunday. The hotels were the Lynn Hotel, Railroad House, Dye Factory Tavern, Swampscott House, New Cove House, Mineral Spring Hotel, Ocean House, Village Hotel, Nahant Hotel, and Johnson's Tavern. Among the citizens was Moses Yell, who lived at the corner of Newhall Court and South Shepard street. The directory was published by Benjamin F. Roberts, and printed by Perley & Stoneham, 8 Exchange street. Martin Van Buren was President of the United States and John Davis governor of Massachusetts. Saugus had a population of 1,202; Marblehead, 5,539; and Nahant had twenty-four, one-half of whom were Johnsons.

Many communities have their own peculiar bridges and manner of constructions. Lynn has had at least two bridge structures of quite an unusual history. What had been known since its construction in 1803 up to the present year (1921) as "Floating Bridge" was over the Glenmere pond, on the old turnpike between Salem and Boston. It was built under the direction of Captain Moses Brown. In building the turnpike, it was found that the bottom and edges of the pond which it had to span were too soft and muddy to permit of piers, so Captain Brown constructed a raft or huge barge, 511 feet long by 28 feet in width, moored at either end. As the decades went by, other and heavier plank and timbers were placed on top of the original material, until when the bridge was torn down in 1921, there was at least fifteen feet of timbers on top of the old floating barge bridge built in 1803. The people of at least four different generations have passed over this unique structure and learned to look upon it as a rare landmark. In the spring of 1921 it was found best to construct a more modern bridge, hence the old one was demolished.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS



Above, City of Lynn, from High Rock. Peninsula of Nahant in background. Below, another view of the city

The new bridge cost over $75,000. It is 115 feet long and 36 feet in width, with ample room for street car tracks, the company paying its portion of the expense. It is built on a hard pine foundation, with a concrete retaining wall six feet high and the road-way is macadamized. This connects Lynn with Salem, and is much used as a highway. It was constructed by T. Stewart & Sons Company, of Newton, Massachusetts. The new bridge was finished in the early autumn of 1921.

The following concerning the Chamber of Commerce is contributed:

The Lynn Chamber of Commerce came into existence in 1913, an outgrowth of the Board of Trade, the old Shoe Manufacturers' Association and the Lynn Merchants' Association. Its purpose was to foster the industrial, commercial, educational and moral advancement of the city. It is an organization through which the best thoughts, activities and ambitions of citizenship are crystallized. It develops civic pride and business patriotism by appealing to its members to be ever mindful of their obligations to their city, their state and their country. It brings about closer relations among the citizens of our city, and through the combined efforts of its members is able to do for the individual that which he cannot do for himself.

With the great primary object of promoting the general good of the City of Lynn, and recognizing that the combined interests which make up the Chamber have individual needs which do not apply to all, the Chamber of Commerce was organized on the bureau plan. Each bureau has a separate Board of Directors chosen from the membership of the organization with due regard to the individual interests of the directors. Each board contains twenty-one members. There are four of these bureaus, the Retail Trade Bureau, the Traffic Bureau, the Civic Bureau and the Industrial Bureau. Each of these bureaus had considerable latitude in handling its allotted work, as long as they conformed to the general policy of the organization.

The governing board was and is still a Board of Directors, consisting of twenty-one elected members, plus bureau chairmen, who serve as directors ex-officio. Each elected director serves a three-year term. There is also an Executive Committee, made up of five members, three of whom are chosen by the President from the Board of Directors, plus the President and Executive Secretary ex-officio. The duty of this committee is to direct the administrative work of the organization. Appointed by and under the direct supervision of this committee come all standing committees such as fire prevention, taxation, housing, legislation, etc.

The Retail Trade Bureau concerns itself with all matters which affect or concern the retail merchants of the city. It looks after all cooperative efforts, such as are manifested in the Municipal Christmas Celebration, Dress Up Weeks, Style Weeks, Dollar Days and similar special occasions. The bureau not only seeks to create an interest on the part of the citizens of Lynn in these occasions, but it endeavors to attract the favorable notice of people in outlying districts and nearby cities and towns. A most valuable adjunct to this bureau is its Credit Department, which maintains a history of the bill-paying habits of upwards of 70,000 people in Greater Lynn. In general, this bureau seeks to raise

the standard of local stores to improve business methods and promote the welfare of both merchants and consumers.

In 1917, it was felt that some of the previous methods of handling community problems had outgrown their usefulness, consequently the Traffic, Civic and Industrial Bureaus were abolished and the work previously performed by these departments was allotted to special or permanent committees, which have performed much more satisfactory work than seemed possible under the old plan. During this re-organization, the unit method of operation was adopted, with the aim of putting actively at work in some manner or other every member. This was accomplished in the following manner: The whole membership was divided into subdivisions of trade and professional groups, corresponding to the various lines of trade, industry and profession, manufacturers of a specific line, like shoes, forming one group; retailers of a certain line, like groceries, forming another group, and so on. About fifty different groups, or units, as they are termed, were formed, each a sub-division in itself. Some groups only meet occasionally, when something special arises, while others are very active, meeting monthly or semi-monthly, to talk over those problems of common interest to their unit and solicit such co-operation as they might need from the Chamber as a whole or some particular part of it. This method has unquestionably developed a better feeling among those engaged in the same line of effort, and has permitted accomplishments which otherwise would have been impossible. Each one of these units elects annually a chairman, who automatically upon election to office becomes a delegate to the Forum. This body meets semi-monthly, and is the initiative of the organization. Every meeting develops new and diversified problems, many of which, after investigation by forum committees, are settled by that body itself; while other problems, broad in their nature and involving a question of policy, are forwarded with recommendations, to the Board of Directors. The Forum also provides a referendum upon important matters of public policy, representing as it does every business, profession and trade. Under this plan of organization, every working element is co-ordinated, yet responsibilities and labor are systematically and judiciously segregated and placed.

In the spring of 1921, a Women's Forum was created, which, while still in its infancy, has already proved a valuable adjunct to the Chamber through its desire and proven ability to actively engage in the solution of problems affecting the every day life of Lynn citizens.

Probably but few outside of the Chamber's membership, which consists of upwards of a thousand of Lynn's leading men and women, appreciate that the organization is a big clearing house for the troubles of its members and the community. Every conceivable sort of information and advice is solicited and given daily. To handle such work promptly and efficiently a fund of authentic information must be available at all times.

The past presidents of the Lynn Chamber of Commerce are: Charles O. Blood, served during 1913-1914; C. Neal Barney, 1914-1915; Ralph S. Bauer, 1915-1917; Edw. S. Underwood, 1917-1919; Charles F. Sprague, 1919-1921. The present officers are: Ralph S. Bauer, president; Arthur K. Blood, C. Hudson Johnson, vice-presidents; Frank A. Turnbull, treasurer; William H. Day, Jr., secretary.

In some of the earlier histories of the city of Lynn, mention has been made of several manufacturing interests not now in existence.

When operated they were in what is now known as Saugus and Swampscott, etc., as they existed before the towns named were separated from Lynn. An account of such industries will be found in the respective histories of the towns named. Other industries which have a just place within the scope of Lynn history are included in what follows:

In 1726 the Salem court awarded to Nathaniel Potter, of Lynn, £15 15s. for the manufacture of three pieces of linen. It is not clear what kind of cloth this was, but probably it was "tow cloth." Certainly, much flax was grown in this section at that time, and was rotted in large amounts at what is now known as Flax Pond. Of course such fabrics as tow-cloth have long since ceased to be in use. In pioneer days there were quite a lot of fine-wool sheep, and from their fleeces were made the choicest of clothing, but years ago this industry passed, with other pioneer customs and practices.

The making of bricks at an early time was among the paying industries of Lynn. When wood for burning clay was much cheaper than now, this was a business of importance, but in later decades nothing has been done in this line. There was a time when there were but few brick structures in Lynn; as the years passed by, and lumber became more expensive, many built of brick, but the latter were mostly shipped to the city. The manufacture of paper and wooden boxes has long been classed among Lynn's industries, occasioned, of course, by the presence of many shoe factories.

As far back as 1885, the State reports show that the workers in Lynn received higher wages than those of many in the county. The average yearly earning of each employee were $467, this including both men and women. In Salem the average was $343. In Newburyport the average wages per year were only $268. Peabody came nearly up to Lynn, and was placed at $454. In Haverhill the yearly wages averaged $348. It will be remembered that this was thirty-six years ago. Wages have increased wonderfully with the passing decades, here, as well as elsewhere.

At one time, ship-building was carried on in Lynn. The celebrated frigate, "Constitution" was built in Boston, at the ship-yard of Edmund Hart, a Lynn man. In 1832 a yard was established in West Lynn, where a few small vessels were constructed. Salt-works were established in Lynn in 1805, but never grew to be of much consequence; these works were situated on Beach street, near Broad. Wall paper and rubber goods were also among the industries back in the seventies and eighties. The next industry was connected with the electric works, when Lynn was first lighted by the electric current.

Of all the industries of Lynn, the manufacture of shoes has taken the lead for many years. Historian James R. Newhall, of Lynn, is the authority for the subjoined account of this industry. He should have been well posted in this matter, as he was the great-grandson of Benjamin

Newhall, one of the very first to settle here. As Mr. Newhall relates:

Edmund Bridges and Philip Kirtland are usually spoken of as the first shoemakers here. They came in 1635. But John Adam Dagyr, a Welshman, who came in 1750, seems to have raised the humble occupation almost to the rank of a fine art. He took great pains to excel; and he imported the most elegant shoes from Europe, and dissected them for the purpose of discovering the hidden mystery of their make-up. Shoemakers from all over the town went to him for instructions, and he was called in the Boston "Gazette" in 1764, "the celebrated shoemaker of Essex." From this time Lynn took front rank in the manufacture of ladies' fine shoes. Mr. Dagyr, in a financial way at least, never profited much by his skill and labor. The writer has been told, by one who knew him well, that he lived in a homely way, was not very neat in his dress and did not keep his little shop, which was on Boston street, near where Carnes now opens, in the neatest order; in short, that he fell into such habits as were not conducive to a thrifty life. He finally became so destitute as to make his home in the almshouse, and there he died in 1808. Kirtland street in the west part of Lynn and Kirtland block in Union street perpetuate the name of the earlier craftsman, Philip Kirtland; and so, in its way, does the Kirtland hotel in Summer street. But as yet no such honor has been bestowed on the name of Dagyr, unless a wild spot in the domain of the Free Publid Forest Association, lately consecrated to his memory, be taken as such.

At the time of the arrival of Dagyr in 1750, there were but three men in Lynn who carried on the business to such extent as to employ journeymen; and these were William Gray (grandfather of the rich merchant, so extensively known by the inelegent sobriquet of "Billy Gray", John Mansfield and Benjamin Newhall; the latter, the writer is able and pleased to say, was his great-grandfather.

Among the more enterprising and far-seeing men of the town who helped to place the industry on its solid footing may be recalled Ebenezer Breed, a native of Lynn. In 1792 he visited England and other European countries, and from there sent over many fashionable shoes; he also engaged numerous skilled workmen to instruct operatives at home in the art. He seemed bound to make as fine a shoe here as could be produced in Europe. But the cheap labor of Europe prohibited the shoe men here from doing a competitive business. So Mr. Breed, with others, sought Congress, and asked that body to place a duty on shoes imported to our shores, in order to protect home industry. In this they finally succeeded, after which the business took on a new life and vigor which it has kept even to the present time.

In 1810 about one million pairs of shoes were made in Lynn, and the value of the same was not far from $800,000. The earnings of the female binders was $50,000. Twenty years later (1830) the number of pairs made was, in round figures, 1,670,000, while Lynnfield and Saugus had been set off as separate towns, and shops of their own were not counted in this reckoning. Twenty-five years later, in 1855, the number of pairs made was 9,276,000, Swampscott having been set off in the meantime and Nahant the same decade. From 1865 to 1875, there were made, on an average, not less than 10,000,000 pairs a year, of the average value of $1.20 a pair.

The United States Census for 1880 gave out the following: Num-

ber of shoe factories in Lynn, 174; average number of employees, 10,708; capital invested, $4,263,000; wages paid in one year, $4,931,000; stock used, $13,000,000; value of product, $21,000,000; gross profit, $3,097,000; average yearly product per employee, $1,956; average yearly earnings of employees, $461; percentage of men employed, 71; percentage of women employed, 29; percentage children employed, three-tenths of one per cent. It will be remembered that these statistics are for the year 1880—forty-one years ago.

Before the introduction of machinery for producing shoes, every community had its shoemakers, and the villages and towns had many "twelve footers", as the little shoeshops were called, for they were about twelve feet in length as well as width. Here the journeymen, or "jours", as they were called for short, used to be employed. One would usually make a case of shoes per week, and received from four to six dollars for his labor. He began his work at sunrise and worked into the late evening hours. He frequently had to take orders on the Union store, where he could get such goods as he needed at high profits. If he did not spend all, he was fortunate if he could sell his "order" for seventy cents on a dollar cash. If he refused to take "orders" as his pay, he seldom secured a job. Such a store as above mentioned was established in Lynn in 1830, and it was the property of a combination of shoe manufacturers. Every shoemaker in Lynn in the early days (if a man of family) kept a pig or two. Slaughters were quite common; shoemakers celebrated the butchering day and counted it a great holiday. In the panic of 1837, Lynn shoemakers lived mostly on pork, dandelions, and fish from the harbor.

Improvements in shoe-making machinery and tools included the edge-iron used for hot finishing edges. This tool displaced the old shoulder stick about 1834. In 1845 the Kimball last came into use. A typical shop of 1850, or just before the introduction of the McKay sewing machine, revolutionizing hand shoemaking, was that of Christopher Robinson & Co., of Lynn. It was a two-story brick building, 28 by 57 feet. Its cellar was used for storing upper and sole leather stock. On the first floor was the cutting rooms and the making of turned shoes. This firm employed nine men to cut leather in its factory, and it sent out parts of shoes to 375 men and women, who made them up into shoes in their own homes. John Brooks Nichols, a Lynn shoemaker, about 1851, adopted the hand sewed machinery to sew the uppers to the soles. The first machine was set up in Lynn in 1852 by John Wooldredge. In 1858 Lyman Blake invented a machine which sewed the soles to the upper. It was financed and improved by Gordon McKay, and became known the world over as the McKay Sewing Machine. The first of these machines were introduced in the factory of William Porter & Son, Lynn, either in 1861 or 1862. These were operated by foot power.

About 1880, John Ernest Metzeliger, an employee of the P. J. Har-

ney Company, shoe manufacturers, conceived the idea of a machine "with human fingers" to last shoes with. He died before his final efforts were shown to the public, yet his models and plans were taken up and gave the world a great time-saving invention. While working on his invention for a "lasting machine," young Metzeliger was told by workmen that he could not do it unless he could make a machine with "fingers like men," which gave the inventor an idea; and in following it out he achieved success. This inventor, born in Dutch Guiana, was a trained machinist. Through this discovery, shoe-making suddenly changed its place in the world of commerce. In olden days one man could "last" only sixty pairs of shoes in a long day's time. This machine as now perfected will allow the single man to "last" from two to seven hundred pair, according to the kind of shoe. At his death, which was caused by consumption, he gave to the North Congregational Church of Lynn a large block of stock he held in the company he had formed to manufacture these machines. In a few years the dividends from this stock paid off a heavy mortgage on the church just mentioned.

The first sewing machine to do practical sewing that the world ever knew, was that invented by Elias Howe, of Worcester, Massachusetts, in 1846, and it made him very wealthy; at one time his royalties amounted to $4,000 per day. In Civil War times Mr. Howe, who was a volunteer himself, finding the government unable to pay off the regiment to which he belonged, came home to Massachusetts, and took a chest with his own money in it to the front, and paid off all the comrades of his command.

In 1851, John Brooks Nichols, a Lynn shoemaker, saw in a Boston paper an advertisement of a lot of Singer sewing machines for sale. He bought one, and in Boston established a shop in which he sewed trousers on contract for tailors. Being a shoemaker, he wondered why it could not be made to sew leather as well as cloth. He made a machine which proved his theory correct. He took in a partner, William B. Bliss, of Worcester, and they set up business in Boston. In demonstrating his machine, this inventor came in contact with a bright young lady who told him, "I'd like to see you hung on a sour apple tree. You have made a machine that will rob me of my daily bread." Men still living well recall that when youths they had to come home from school early, in order to turn the sewing machine for mother. Later, water and steam power propelled the larger sewing machines.

With the advent of the Civil War, in 1861, great was the instant demand for men's army shoes. Many of the loyal shoemakers of Lynn left their "kit" in the shop and put on the blue in defense of the flag of the Union. But what men sometimes call "Providence" came along, in the person of Col. Gordon McKay, who brought out a sole-sewing machine, and so wonderful was it that it took the place of thousands of shoemakers at once. Moreover, it provided the people with more shoes and at a less price than ever before known in the world. This machine was

invented by Lyman R. Blake, a Yankee genius, born in South Abington, August 24, 1835. He worked in a shoe shop until of age, saved up $1,400, and purchased an interest in a shoe factory, as then styled. He set to work to make a machine to sew soles to the uppers. He whittled out his first models and patterns, and made his machine, also patented it in Washington. In 1858 he sold to Col. Gordon McKay for $70,000; $8,000 was paid down, the remainder to come from the profits in the company. A syndicate of Lynn shoe men tried to buy his machine, but they failed. Again he improved the original machine for McKay. Between 1861 and 1876, the Blake machine, its inventor testified in patent court, had made 177,665,135 pairs of shoes, and that at least eighteen cents per pair had been saved the makers by use of his invention. The Civil War period caused wages to increase, and men who had made shoes at the cobbler's bench for from four to six dollars per week (and worked fifteen hours per day), now commanded as high as $20 per day to run one of the McKay sewing machines, in sewing the uppers to the soles of shoes. However, it should be stated that this was paid in greenbacks and "shinplasters", worth thirty-three cents on a dollar. Under normal conditions, about 17,000 people find employment in the business of manufacturing and shipping shoes from Lynn. In the year 1920, Lynn produced shoes to the value of $75,000,000, while in the same year the allied products reached nearly $45,000,000.

The Goodyear machine did even greater things for the shoe trade than the McKay. It multiplied the product, increased the wages and provided the people with better foot wear. The original welt-machine reduced the cost of sewing both welt and soles to ten cents a pair, four cents of which went as royalty to the patentee. The total saving on a pair of shoes of this machine was sixty-five cents. The best hand-sewed shoes used to sell at from ten to fifteen dollars, but today as good a pair may be purchased (or could before the late war) for five dollars. As to the whereabouts of these various inventors of shoe machinery, it may be stated that Blake traveled through Europe, demonstrating his machines, and died, at the age of forty-eight years, in 1883.

Colonel Gordon McKay established the royalty system still in use, and became the promoter of the United Shoe Machine Company. In his will, he left $5,000,000 to Harvard University, saying: "Inasmuch as a large part of my life has been spent in the study and invention of machinery, I instruct the president and fellows to take special care that the great subject of mechanical engineering in all its branches, and in the most comprehensive sense, be thoroughly practiced from my endowment." Mr. Metzeliger died in young manhood, even before he knew what a blessing he had been to humanity, almost as much so as he who causes "two blades of grass to grow where one grew before."

The city directory in 1920 gave the number of firms engaged in the manufacture of shoes in Lynn, proper, as being one hundred and thirty-

four. There were also listed six shops making heels, three shoe forms, five concerns handling shoe machinery, nine making shoe patterns, 15 shoe stock manufacturers and 28 shoe trimming houses. This gives a total of sixty-six concerns handling shoe goods, besides the one hundred and thirty-four shoe factories.

Reaching back to 1918, the more prominent and extensive shoe manufactures in Lynn included the following: J. S. Barnet & Sons, calf and cowhide shoes; the A. G. Lewis Leather Company, organized in 1906; Hilliard & Merrill, organized in 1883; J. L. Libbey & Son; Williams, Clark & Co., organized in 1891; J. J. Grover's Sons, organized in 1865, the oldest concern in this country; the Cotter Shoe Company, organized, 1905; A. M. Creighton, organized 1878; the Harwood Counter Company (biggest in the world), organized in 1869; Littlefield & Moulton, box makers, established in 1818; G. W. Herrick Shoe Company, makers of heels, plant now covers ten acres; Bartlet, Somers Company; the Thomas A. Kelley & Co., makers of kid leather, established in 1885. Other concerns of greater or less magnitude are John L. Walker & Co., the Adams Shoe Company, incorporated in 1911; Mitchell-Gaunt Company, organized in 1910; Tufts & Friedman, Young & Sampson, C. P. Stanborn & Co., established in 1883, shoe machine makers; T. J. Kiely & Co., The Watson Shoe Company, etc. The Federal and State Bureau of Labor Statistics give the following figures concerning the shoe trade in Lynn for the dates indicated:

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1918—Values of Shoes produced | $47,084,181 | Persons employed | | 10,384 |
| Value of Cut Stock | 23,463,081 | " | " | 1,489 |
| Totals | $60,547,262 | | | 12,323 |
| 1919—Value of Product | 66,457,349 | " | " | 12,123 |
| Boot and Shoe Findings | 30,210,359 | " | " | 1,758 |
| Totals | $96,667,708 | | | 13,881 |
| 1920—Value of Shoes | 56,468,484 | " | " | 9,340 |
| Value of Cut Stock | 17,579,293 | " | " | 1,316 |
| Totals | $74,047,777 | | | 10,356 |

Lynn leather was evidently a very early commodity. One of the first five men who settled in what is now Lynn was Francis Ingalls; he was a tanner and carried on the trade on what is now Burrill street, Swampscott. By many it is claimed his was the first tannery within the Massachusetts Colony. George Keysar was among the next to operate a tannery, which he did from 1649 till he removed to Salem in 1680. He had sons in both Salem and Haverhill in the tannery business. In 1635 a child by the name of Elizabeth Newhall was drowned in one of the tan-vats of the Keysar tan-yards on Boston street. Robert and Nicholas Potter, father and son, were also pioneers in the business. Deacon John Lewis, Samuel Lewis, his son, and Daniel Newhall, were all early in this line, in Lynn. Joseph Moulton bought these premises in 1844. There

was a fine spring of water, and hard by was Strawberry brook, running through the tan-yard. In the latter part of the eighteenth century Benjamin Phillips had a tanyard and mill at Waterhill. There he had good water power and operated a fulling mill for the hides he tanned. Winthrop and Sylvanus Newhall had tan-yards on Market and Broad streets, then called Blackmarsh. Likely Winthrop was the last of the old-time tanners of leather here, the morocco trade having supplanted the other business in tanning. Salem and Danvers, from that time on, took the lead in this industry. The morocco business was commenced in Lynn by William Rose, on the same spot where the Burrills once operated their tannery. Later he had a tannery where now stands St. Stephen's Church on South Common street. Another early tanner of goat and sheep skins was Daniel Collins on Boston street. He was followed by Levi Robinson, and later this developed into a large establishment. The U. S. census report for 1880 gave these figures concerning the business in Lynn: Number of establishments, 23; employees, 768; wages paid during the year, $409,000; capital invested, $910,000; stock used, $1,658,000; value of product, $2,309,000.

It may be added that morocco was first manufactured in this country in about 1809, by William Rose, of Lynn. The leather industry, hide tannings, etc., began in New England in 1630. At present, the leather industry in Lynn consists of the business transacted by the following tanners: J. S. Barnett & Sons, Consolidated Tanning Company, and Kistler, Lesh & Co., and the following engaged in the production of morocco: Thomas A. Kelley & Co., A. B. Hoffman & Son, Donohue Brothers Leather Co., Benz Kid Factory Co., Agoos Leather Company.

The world-wide-known Lydia E. Pinkham Medicine Company, one of the firmly established institutions of Lynn, was founded in a small way in 1873-74, and through liberal advertising in all the newspapers of this and foreign lands, Mrs. Pinkham's remedies have become known throughout the world. The founder of these family remedies died a number of years since, but the well-founded business goes on as extensively as ever. Their laboratory and beautiful residence are passed on the street cars by tens of thousands annually. As now organized, the company comprises the following officers; William H. Gove, president and general manager; Arthur W. Pinkham, vice-president and secretary; Mrs. Aroline P. Grove, treasurer.

It has been remarked that the prosperity of any industrial community can be measured by the success of its printing business. In the Perry & Elliott Company alone, both the city of Lynn and the county of Essex have a satisfactory symbol of their own progress. Founded more than twenty years ago, this concern has steadily developed on its own well-earned reputation for quality, intelligence, and service, until it now embraces one of the largest and finest organizations in all New England. The plant itself at present consists of its original and unusually complete

shops at No. 17 Stewart street, Lynn; its newer subsidiary shop at No. 72 Loring avenue, Salem; and the offices of its sales and service department at No. 146 Summer street, Boston. The Lynn plant especially handles that most difficult of all branches in printing—advertising, which includes high grade catalogues, booklets, and folders of an unusual or special nature. Here are produced the most artistic half-tone work and color reproductions. The machinery is all propelled by individual electric motors and automatically fed presses. All presses and heavy machinery are set on solid cement bases, thus eliminating all vibration. The entire plant at Salem is devoted to publication printing—magazines, periodicals, books, etc., where long runs are required. Every known improved press, with other machinery, is employed in these offices. Besides the printing business, this company deals extensively in fine grades of printing papers, and is known as one of the most liberal buyers of paper in New England. The sales department, with the service corporation, aids the customer in producing the best results in advertising campaigns. Here are developed the best, most effective types of printed matter, the main object being not merely to accept orders for printing, but to create printed matter that will produce orders for customers. This company by its skill and scientific plans is well-known throughout all the Eastern States. Throughout the printers' "strikes," this concern stood the test and was running full force, doing its own work and also helping out neighboring cities where labor trouble existed. The present officers of this company are William H. Perry, president and general manager; and Frank S. Elliott, treasurer.

From such sources as the historian has been able to obtain, the history of the great General Electric Company, now employing in busy seasons about fifteen thousand persons (in the Lynn division alone), the importants facts are here given:

The foundation of the Lynn electric industry was the arc light and the appliances that produced the light. In the winter of 1879, Prof. Elihu Thompson, a teacher in chemistry in the Philadelphia high school, with his fellow professor, E. J. Houston, of the same school, invented the three-coil arc dynamo, which formed the basis of the arc lighting system introduced by the Thompson-Houston Company. It was first installed in a Philadelphia bakery. Wisely, these two inventors sought capital, and a stock company was formed, the American Electric Company, which operated in Philadelphia, and later in New Britain, Connecticut. After this company was formed, it was proposed to Professors Houston and Thompson that they abandon school work and devote their time exclusively to the development of this new enterprise due to their inventions. Professor Houston failed to comply, but Professor Thompson yielded, and now enjoys a world-wide fame. In 1880 and 1884 more than sixty applications for patents were granted him. In

1882 the Brush Light Company, feeling that the competition was too strong, bought a controlling share of the stock of the American Electric Company. About this time, some Lynn shoe men visited the plant, and became interested. As a result, a small arc light plant was brought to Lynn and installed in the Lennox building, on Market street. This plant convinced some Lynn investors of the value of the patents, and they soon purchased a controlling interest in the American Electric Company, the name of which was changed to the Thompson-Houston Electric Company. The plant was moved to Lynn in the summer of 1883, to a place on Western avenue, now known as "Factory A." The first officers of the reorganized company were: H. A. Pevear, president; C. A. Coffin, vice-president; S. A. Barton, treasurer; J. J. Skinner, secretary; and Elihu Thompson, electrician. B. F. Spinney and J. N. Smith were among the directors. In 1884 there were working in the shops of this concern 144 men; by 1892, the number had reached 3,492; in 1913 it was 12,000; and in 1916 the number of persons employed was 14,000 in the Lynn division of the General Electric Company.

This company was incorporated in 1892, acquiring at its formation all the capital stock of the Edison General Electric Company and that of the Thompson-Houston International Electric Company. More than five hundred different types of apparatus were here produced in 1916, including practically every class of industrial power application, lighting systems, mining and street railway appliances, ship propulsion, central station systems, etc. The products of these works include everything from a 50,000 horse-power turbine to the miniature Mazda lamp, and each article is tested to make sure of its being perfect. This vast industry at Lynn is now worked out day by day, by the energy and brains of about 15,000 persons. The ground area of the Lynn plant is about two hundred acres; floor space, three million square feet. It has the largest building in the world devoted to the manufacture of electric motors.

The works at Lynn are second only in size to the same company's plant at Schenectady, New York, where their main offices are located. The Lynn plant of this company makes thousand upon thousands of different electric appliances, by which heat, light and power are made to serve the best interests and convenience of the public. They light the six months' long night-time of the years and drive the wheels of industry through their motors. It requires five thousand motors to drive the machinery in use at these factories. The current for these motors is supplied from the great power plant on the Saugus river, where fuel is landed by barges at the coal pockets of the company. The plant is also situated on the line of the Boston & Maine steam railroad.

For the benefit of the thousands of employes, the company usually styled the "G-E", (General Electric), has provided several restaurants nearby, where the workers may secure their meals and lunches at a reasonable cost. There are also a public hall, with picture shows, and a

training school for the young men who expect to follow the electric business; as far as possible, the company is developing the co-operative plan. It issues stock for services rendered, in small denominations, ever looking to the interests of the army of employes.

The Campbell Electric Company was founded in Lynn in 1900 by two brothers, Fred A. and Charles E. Campbell, who began in the basement of the Keith building at No. 54 Central Square. The first business engaged in was wiring and construction work. Soon the demand for certain new appliances caused them to expand, and among other enterprises they commenced to make in large quantities a very simple and cheaply constructed electric switch, known as the "time switch". It was designed to turn off the current, at any given time of day or night, and was much used for turning off the street lights and signs using electricity. Many United States patents were granted this company. Hospitals, doctors and dentists in many parts of the country demanded certain novelties made by this enterprising company. Then came the manufacture of motors for street railways and also transformers. The quarters soon became too small, and the brothers bought the old site of the Electric Light and Power Company, at No. 17 Stewart street. The business was incorporated in 1909 by the two Campbells. Their sales were large five years ago. The marine and army hospitals of the United States; the field hospitals on the Mexican border-land, as well as the hospitals of France, England, Russia, Germany, Japan and China, all gave large orders for the various electric devices made in these works. In the Panama-Pacific International Exposition at San Francisco in 1915, awards were made this concern for the best in their line. They have kept pace with the years and are today one of the leading industries in Lynn.

In 1919 the City Directory reported the following concerning its various interests: Value of manufactured products, $200,000,000; sixteen solid banking houses with assets amounting to $75,000,000; 32,000 people employed in various industries; 55 churches; 4 hospitals; 5 public libraries; 48 public schools; 5 parochial schools; has the largest amount of women's shoes made of any city in the world.

The following paragraphs will tell the story, in brief, of many fires within the city of Lynn since Civil War days, the first of which was in May, 1865, when the fine mansion on Ocean street belonging to the widow of William H. Prescott, the celebrated historian, and where he had performed much of his work as an author, was destroyed.

September, 1866, Central Church edifice, Silsbee street, totally burned. It was a wooden structure erected in 1850.

Christmas night, 1868, occurred the greatest fire to that date from which Lynn had ever suffered. It started in the Lyceum building, on Market street, corner of Summer. The Central National Bank was in that building, and the vaults and safes proved to be indeed fire proof.

The postoffice was also destroyed, as well as Frazier's Block, which had cost $60,000 and Bubier's, valued at $65,000. All told, the fire cost Lynn $300,000.

Sunday evening, Christmas Day, 1870, the large frame church edifice of the First Church, on South Common street, was totally burned. So great was the light from this fire that it was easily seen from Lawrence.

February 20, 1871, a fire occurred on Walnut street, near the Saugus line. It started in the house of Mr. and Mrs. M'Kenney. The loss included the life of Mr. M'Kenney, who perished in the flames.

In 1873, in Union street, on the morning of August 25th, French's furniture store burned; 400,000 gallons of water were used to quench the fire.

In 1874, morning of January 10th, fire broke out in the barns of the Glenmere stage line, on Chatham street. The building was destroyed, along with ten fine horses.

July 26, 1876, there occurred a serious fire on Market street. The greatest loss was the store of R. A. Spalding & Co., Mrs. Lancey's millinery shop, and W. T. Bowers' store.

April 7, 1877, Sweetser's block, Central avenue and Oxford street, was burned. It was fitted up for the shoe business; the loss of property amounted to $115,000.

June 2, 1880, "Summit Villa," the fine mansion in Swampscott, was burned to the ground. The loss was $15,000; it was leased for the season for $3,000.

September 3, 1885, the large brick building owned by Lucius Beebe & Son, Western avenue, corner of Federal street, used as a glove-kid shop, was burned at a loss of $75,000.

July 8, 1887, was the date of the burning of the old Saugus River Mill, at the Boston street crossing. For generations this had been an historic mill. Here were ground not only flour and meal, but also snuff and spices. It was this mill that really started the famous Childs Chocolate article, which had a world-wide market.

In 1887 Thomas Green & Company lost their factory by fire on May 15th. Loss $21,000. A fire about that date at Lamper's wharf burned nineteen horses.

The Lennox brick factory, on Market, with other buildings, was burned December 22, 1888. Loss, $136,000.

January 30, 1889, the planing mill on Commercial street was burned, with several smaller buildings, involving a total loss of $27,000.

In the whole history of Lynn, no greater calamity ever overtook her than the conflagration of November 26, 1889. To this day, it is styled the "great fire." At noontime on that bright, sunny autumn day the fire broke out in the boiler-room of the large wooden building on Almont street, known as Mower's Block. The wind was blowing a stiff gale, and it was not very long before the numerous adjoining buildings were in flames. The firemen were powerless in their every effort. Telegraphic mssages were sent to Boston, Chelsea, Salem, Gloucester, Newburyport and other nearby places, imploring speedy aid. These towns and cities responded quickly, and joined forces with the Lynn fire department, in doing all they could to stay the fire so rapidly destroying the city. In less than two hours, a number of four and five story brick

structures had been destroyed, together with numerous less valuable buildings. The fire still swept on, in its relentless course, taking all before it. The First National, Central National, National Security and the Lynn Institution for Savings banks were in ruins and homeless, so far as banking building property was concerned. The two city daily newspapers—the Bee, and the Item,—were destroyed. The Lynn Press, which had announced its initial publication, was wiped out of existence on the day of its birth. The enterprise was never revived.

This fire covered an area of thirty-one acres, including streets and squares, and was in the heart of the business portion of the city. The Chief Engineer's report and that of the State Commissioner fixed the loss at $4,959,911. It was also stated that the amount of insurance carried on the property destroyed was $4,133,516. The number of buildings destroyed was 334, some of them huge brick and stone buildings, along with wooden structures, such as factories and frame dwellings.

The good people making up the rank and file of Lynn citizenship have ever been generous and mindful of the sufferings of those in other sections of the country, in times of calamity and distress. As examples, one may refer to the Chicago, Portland and Boston fires, a half century ago; to the Johnstown, Pennsylvania, flood, the Marblehead fire, etc. So, in the time of her need, these municipalities came to her rescue. Little did Salem think when she was aiding Lynn that twenty-six years later Lynn would be assisting her in the great fire of 1914.

The great fires in the winter of 1868-69 brought about a new sentiment in favor of providing some adequate system of water supply. Large reservoirs had been built in many sections of the city at no little expense, but did not prove satisfactory. The water was then taken from Flax Pond. Pipes were laid along the principal streets and the supply was first set flowing on the 8th of December, 1869, the first that Lynn had ever received water from any sort of an aqueduct. This was found insufficient for the growing demand for a water supply. An engineer was engaged to survey the situation, and he examined several water sources including Flax Pond, Sluice, Humphrey's and Breed's Ponds. Land was finally purchased around Breed's Pond and the work of construction pushed rapidly forward. The first cost of the Breed's Pond property was $21,500, exclusive of laying the pipes. Extensions were later made, pumps and reservoirs installed, and by 1880 the supply of water from Breed's Pond reached a million gallons daily. In January, 1885, it was shown that the expense thus far for the water works then in use had cost the city of Lynn $1,343,000; the average consumption was then about two million gallons a day. There were then seventy-four miles of pipe line in the city. The water department was then paying all expense of maintenance, the interest on the water debt, and had a surplus of $27,000 on hand. At present (1921) the city is using seven million gallons of water daily, the population of Lynn and Saugus being supplied with

water of the purest kind. The building of dams and huge retaining walls created great reservoirs in Walden, Breed's and Birch Ponds, and in 1893 a greater supply of water was obtained from Saugus river. In 1913, the construction of a thirty-six inch main from the Ipswich river was begun and pushed to completion. This assures Lynn a sufficient water supply for many years to come. There are now over 140 miles of main pipe from four to thirty-six inches in size. There are many more miles of service and court pipe; fifteen thousand services and nine thousand meters; twelve hundred fire hydrants on main pipes. The rates for water are reasonable. The present meter rate to consumers using less than 10,000 gallons daily is fifteen cents per hundred cubic feet (700 gallons), while the flat rate runs as low as $4 per year.

The Lynn Fire Department was orginally formed in 1797, with Relief Company No. 1, organized and supplied with a hand-tub and tools such as were then used in fighting fires. Then came the Despatch No. 2, in 1806; Reliance No. 3, in the same year; Perseverance No. 4, in 1807. The city's first steam fire engine arrived in September, 1863, and the change from hand power to steam apparatus was completely brought about in 1886. The first motor apparatus was used in the city in July, 1910, after which the faithful horses of the department were set aside for the good they had done. The present department has twenty-four pieces of motor-apparatus and three "chief cars." These modern appliances were more than paid for in two fires soon after the change was made.

During 1920 the department responded to 1,064 calls, including 259 bell alarms, 45 telephone calls, 196 automatic and 114 still alarms. The number of actual fires were 738, of which 582 were extinguished by chemicals. Hydrant streams were used at 89, engine streams at 6 and other means at 61. There were two two-alarm fires in the year. The property loss was $252,748.86. The value of property where fires occurred was $7,789,848. Insurance carried on same, $6,983,940. Insurance loss, $221,036.51. Loss on uninsured property, $31,712.35.

Lynn now has a $100,000 automatic and box-alarm system in use. There are sixteen fire companies, with 173 permanent members. The apparatus includes six fire engines, four ladder trucks, six chemicals, one combination chemical and hose engine; five hose wagons, two motor pump engines. There is also an extra chemical engine, in case of emergency. The present amount of workable hose is twenty-one thousand feet. Of late, the department has an automobile mechanic and a woman clerk at the general offices. With the city water supply so great, and 1500 hydrants, the city is well protected from the ravages from sweeping fires.

Among the later fire-chiefs or city engineers of this department have been A. C. Moody, who went out of office in 1890; C. H. Downing, who served from 1890 to 1900; Thomas A. Harris, from 1905 to 1912; present chief, Edward E. Chase, who took the position in 1912, but who has been

connected with the department since March 10, 1885, when he went in as a substitute fireman. Of the fifty-five active firemen who served through the great fire of 1889, only twenty-four still survive. With the return of the anniversary of that never-to-be-forgotten fire (November 26, 1889) the survivors hold their annual reunion and banquet, which has come to be a very interesting affair to the firemen of the community.

The present roster of the fire department includes the following: Edward E. Chase, chief engineer; William F. Welch, deputy chief; John H. Roberts, district chief; Herbert W. Robinson, district chief; Henry A. Brannan, district chief; Charles A. Harraden, district chief; Miss Mary J. Scanlon, clerk of the department.

It appears that for the first three years after the settlement of Lynn there was no regular minister settled as pastor of a parish, but doubtless religious services were held on the Lord's Day, at least.

What was known as the First Church later became known as the First Congregational Church (Trinitarian). Founded in 1632, it was the fifth in the Bay Colony, and "was gathered" in 1632. There was said of it, more than forty years ago, that it was one of the three or four of the early church organizations to preserve their fidelity to the ancient Puritanic faith. Nearly all of the other churches departed from the faith of their fathers, and became either Unitarian or Universalist. As a matter of fact, this church was not organized after the regular manner, but such irregularities were finally overcome. The founder was Rev. Stephen Bacheler, who, with his family, arrived from England in June, 1632. The chief inducement that brought him hither was that he had a daughter residing here, the wife of Christopher Hussey. With him came six other persons, who had belonged to his church in England. He commenced to minister to their spiritual wants, without regular installation. He was then about seventy-one years of age. Serious trouble arose between him and his little flock, and after a number of scandals, and when three years had passed, he found it for his best interest to move, which he did, first to Newbury and to Hampton later. He returned to England in 1651, aged about ninety years. He married a fourth wife, his third wife still living here. Rev. Bacheler died in London in 1660 in the one hundredth year of his age. It is affirmed that no less personages than Hon. Daniel Webster and J. G. Whittier traced their ancestry back to the lines of this family.

The second pastor was Rev. Samuel Whiting, installed in November, 1636. He had taken orders in the Church of England, and became a non-Conformist, by reason of which he had to resign, after which he settled in Lynn. He came from a family of note, and his descendants have made a brilliant record in America, as an example, Hon. William Whiting of Boston.

The subjoined list of names comprises the various pastors in this church to date: Stephen Bacheler, installed, or rather began to minister, 1632; Samuel Whiting, 1636; Thomas Corbet (colleague), 1680; Jeremiah Shepard, 1680; Joseph Whiting (colleague), 1680; Nathaniel Henchman, 1720; John Treadwell, 1763; Obediah Parsons, 1784; Thomas C. Thatcher, 1794; Isaac Hurd, 1813; Otis Rockwood, 1818; David Peabody, 1832; Parsons Cooke, 1836; James M. Whiton, 1865; Stephen R. Dennen, 1872; Walter Barton, 1876; Frank J. Mundy, 1885; James B. Dunn, Sept., 1889-July 24, 1892; John O. Harvig, 1893-95; William G. Merrill, 1896-1902; George W. Owen, July 1, 1903-Dec. 27, 1910; Watson Woodruff, Nov. 7, 1911, still pastor.

The first real meeting-house was the "Old Tunnel," so called. It was erected in 1682, under the pastorate of Rev. Mr. Shepard. It will be remembered that in those days the church and state were so closely allied that a church building could not be built unless the town so voted; nor could changes in the building or its fixtures be made without a permit from the town authorities, as will be observed by the following: Town Meeting, 1692. "January 8. It was voted that Lieutenant Blighe should have liberty to set up a pew in the northeast corner of the meeting-house, by Mr. King's pew, and he to maintain the windows against it."

The pulpit of the "Old Tunnel" was capacious enough to contain ten persons. A small bell swung in the little tower, and in the northeast corner of the gallery was a "negro pew," quite elevated and well boarded near the top. The colored brothers and sisters were required to sit there, where they might hear, but neither see nor be seen. It is not now practicable to enter into further detail about church buildings. It may be added, however, that June 8, 1882, this church celebrated its 250th anniversary, at its edifice on South Common street, when an historical address was made by Rev. Walter Barton, pastor. The present (1921) total membership of this church is 477, and of the Sunday school 282.

The Unitarian Church, for nearly ninety-seven years known as the Second Congregational Society in Lynn, when by legislative enactment (March 5, 1919.) the name was changed to the Unitarian Church of Lynn, was founded in 1822. Its promoters, restive under the shackles of the Calvinistic doctrine, and no longer disposed to assent to its principles, withdrew from the old First Church. On February 13, in the year above named, a meeting for the purpose of forming a new society was held at the home of William Badger. He acted as moderator, while James Homer was chosen secretary. The others present were Joseph Lye, William Chadwell, Benjamin Clifford, James Phillips, Jr., and Edward Rhodes. A week later, at the adjourned meeting, it was formally voted to form a new society. William Chadwell, William Badger and James Homer were appointed a

committee to "draw up a declaration, setting forth our separation from the established societies of this town and the reason of our forming a new society." On February 28th the committee reported, at which time the declaration then submitted to the little band was unanimously accepted. At the period in question, religious controversies were taking on a highly-spirited phase (mildly to express conditions), not only in various parts of New England, but also in other sections of the country. In Eastern Massachusetts the new movement, generally referred to as "liberal Christianity," was decidedly active. Because of the peculiar conditions then existing in respect of religious beliefs, as well as of the consequent defence of reason and private judgment by repudiators of the Calvinism of the day, extracts from the declaration in question will not be without significance to readers in this second decade of the twentieth century. After declaring, in the preamble, that "God has endowed every man with the right of worshipping Him in such a manner as shall best suit the dictates of his own conscience," protests against the Calvinistic scheme, along with affirmation of new principles, took form as follows:

> The dictates of our consciences will not let us join with the established societies, for we can not from all the knowledge that we have been able to obtain from Scripture, nature and reason, conceive that there is more than one Supreme God, who is omnipotent, unchangeable, all-wise, all-good, all-merciful . . . . . We can not acquiesce in the doctrine of total depravity, which, if true, would teach us to shun mankind as wretches, and which, we trust, is refuted by every-day experience. . . . . We can not believe in the doctrine of predestination, which makes our Maker the author of sin, and which, if true, would take away that accountability that every man ought to feel for his conduct. . . . . We must also protest against the doctrine of election and reprobation, which is repulsive to every feeling of justice and equity. . . And there are many other doctrines with which we can not join—doctrines which we conceive are a libel upon the wisdom and goodness of God. We therefore do hereby form ourselves into a society by the name of the Second Congregational Society of Lynn. . . . In forming this society, we shall endeavor to do it in a manner that is consistent with Christian charity and forbearance. Sensible that good men may differ in their belief, we shall always endeavor to treat all other societies with that respect and charity with which we should wish to be treated. As we claim for ourselves the right of private judgment, so shall we be willing that all others may enjoy the same privileges; as we acknowledge no one's right to dictate to us, so neither shall we presume to dictate to others.

On the 5th of April, 1822, the society was formally organized. June 5 following, a petition for an act of incorporation was presented to the General Court, sixty-six signatures being appended thereto. Ten days later the act of incorporation was approved by the governor. In the meantime the new society had been active in preparations for the purchase of a site and the erection of a meeting house. A lot of land on the south side of the Common, South Common street, was purchased of Timothy Alley. On November 5th of the same year

the cornerstone was laid with appropriate ceremonies, and on April 30, 1823, the structure was dedicated. The site thus chosen continued to be occupied by the society until the close of 1910, the church edifice, as the decades succeeded one another, undergoing those improvements and renovations common to the demands of new conditions. (Subsequently, the old edifice was sold to the Greek Orthodox Community.) Meanwhile, an agitation had started with reference to the purchase of a new site and the erection of a more commodious church edifice, in keeping with the progress of the society. Land was subsequently purchased at the corner of Atlantic and Baltimore streets. The cornerstone of the present beautiful stone structure was laid October 30, 1909. On December 29, 1910, the formal dedication took place, and January 1, 1911, the society occupied its new home for the first time. The church and parish house, together with appointments, represent an expenditure of approximately $130,000, including the land. Both from the standpoint of architecture and of fitness, the society, the sole local examplar of broad Unitarianism, possesses a splendid property. The present membership is about 300. Miss Marguerite Emilio is superintendent of the church school, and Miss Elsie Anderson, the secretary-treasurer. At the end of the first month of the 1921 school year, the number of enrolled children was 121. The pulpit has been filled in the following order: James D. Green, 1824-28; David H. Barlow, 1829-33; Samuel D. Robbins, 1833-39; William G. Swett, installed Jan. 1, 1840, died Feb. 15, 1843; John Pierpont, Jr., 1843-46 (during whose pastorate a new church covenant was adopted); Charles C. Shackford, 1846-64; Samuel B. Stewart, pastor emeritus, now resident of Schenectady, N. Y., from Oct. 4, 1865, until April 23, 1905, the longest pastorate in the history of the society; Alert Lazenby, 1906-15; Maxwell Savage, 1916-19; and Dudley Hays Ferrell, A. M., the present minister, who was installed March 1, 1920. The society has been the recipient of various bequests from sundry parishioners, and these funds are separately invested. There are the usual organizations, all of which are at this writing in a flourishing condition. The board of trustees, as chosen at the annual meeting in the spring of 1921, is composed of the following: Benjamin F. Arrington (chairman), C. Fred Smith, Miss Annie L. Newhall, Samuel H. Hollis, Edwin W. Ingalls, Miss Blanche L. Merritt, John C. Clendenin. Secretary of the parish, Fisher Keeler Rice; treasurer, Alfred E. Chase; collector, L. W. Whittredge.

The Second Parish Church was founded in 1720, the year in which Rev. Shepard died, and became the First Church of Lynnfield, and subsequently became a Universalist society.

The Third Parish Church was "gathered" in 1732, and later became the First Church of Saugus. Rev. Joseph Roby was settled as pastor here for more than fifty years. He was learned, pious and patriotic,

having served on the Committee of Safety in Revolutionary times. Like the Lynnfield church, this also went over to the Universalist faith.

Of the Trinitarian Congregational Churches, the "History of Essex County" by Lewis, in 1887, gives the following paragraph: "Of the Trinitarian Congregational—or, as they are usually called, the Orthodox—Societies, there are now four, namely: The First Church, already spoken of, and whose present place of worship is a fine brick edifice on South Common street, built in 1872; the Central Congregational, founded in 1850, and whose present house of worship is also a fine brick edifice, on Silsbee street, built in 1868; the Chestnut Street Congregational, commenced in 1857 as a Congregational-Methodist, and becoming distinctly Calvinistic in 1860, their house of worship being a frame structure on Chestnut street, built in 1857; the North Congregational, founded in 1869, and worshiping in their neat wooden church on Laighton street, built in 1870."

The North Congregational Church was founded in 1869 and a building erected on Laighton street, near Washington, in 1870. It has a total membership of 347, with a Sunday school attendance of 324; the present superintendent is W. Fred Haskell. The church and parsonage, together with the grounds, are valued at $40,000. The following have served as pastors: James W. Whiton, 1869-75; James L. Hill, 1875-1886; George B. Hatch, 1887-93; Willis A. Hadley, 1893-97; Arthur J. Covell, 1898-1908; Daniel Emory Burtner, 1908, and still serving.

Central Congregational Church (Trinitarian) was founded in 1850. Its first two pastors were Revs. Abijah R. Baker and Jotham Sewall. The beautiful edifice is situated on Broad street. The present membership is 417; the Sunday school has an average attendance of about 225. The 1921 superintendent is E. B. Redfield. The church buildings include the present $75,000 stone edifice at 97 Broad street. Two former buildings on Silsbee street were destroyed by fire, one was of brick and one of wood. The present church was dedicated December 29, 1892. It seats 558, and is centrally located at Washington Square. The pastors have been A. R. Parker, 1850-54; J. B. Sewall, 1855-65; A. H. Currier, 1865-1881; A. W. Moore, 1892-1900; C. F. Weeden, 1901-09; C. Thurston Chase, 1910-1921. The last-named pastor resigned May 14, 1921.

The Friends, or Quakers, commenced worship in Lynn as early as 1677. The strict laws against them which defamed the statute books of Massachusetts, and the story of their rigid enforcement, are all too well recorded in previous histories to here be reiterated. This sect in Lynn has ever embraced some of the most excellent people within the county of Essex. They still worship in a plain, large, well-preserved frame meeting-house, on the corner of Friend and Silsbee streets, the same having at first stood on Broad street, built in 1816, but in 1853 was removed to its present site. The lot of land upon which it stands contains the meeting-house and graveyard, besides a large and handsomely-cared-for

lawn, with a high iron fence surrounding the property. The Friends also have another meeting-house in Lynn, on Eastern avenue, where there is a fair-sized congregation.

The Second Universalist Church was formed in 1837. It worshiped in a wooden structure on South Common street, corner of Commercial, the same that was orginally used by the First Church (Congregational), and subsequently by a small society of another denomination. Some of the material in this building was at first used in the now famous old "Tunnel" building. From 1837 to and including 1863 the pastors were: Revs. Dunbar B. Harris, 1836; Edward N. Harris, 1839; Henry Jewell, 1840; John Nichols, 1843; O. H. Tillotson, 1845; John Moore, 1848; J. R. Johnson, 1850; E. Winchester Reynolds, 1852; Henry Jewell, 1858; William P. Payne, 1859; N. R. Wright, 1863.

The Christian Church, now known as the First Christian Church of Lynn, was formed in 1835, and is now situated at No. 270 Chestnut street. From 1835 to 1862 the ministers were Revs. Philemon R. Russell, 1835; Josiah Knight, 1841; David Knowlton, 1842; Warren Lincoln, 1843; Nicholas S. Chadwick, 1851; Seth Hinckley, 1853; William Miller, 1854; John Burden, 1860; Joseph Whitney, 1862; John A. Goss, 1862. The names of the pastors since then have not been furnished the compiler, with other required data.

The Universalists held their first meetings in the Woodend Village, when Rev. Sylvanus Cobb of Malden was invited to deliver lectures on the faith just beginning to be styled "Universalist" by the orthodox denominations. The date was October 12, 1831, the place Mechanics' Hall, corner of Chestnut and Mason streets. These lectures were continued both at Swampscott and in Lynn for a year or two. In January, 1833, the meetings were transferred to the Town Hall, and in that historic old building, March 25, 1833, the first Universalist Society was organized for Lynn. The resolutions adopted stated that the society should embrace those of the faith of the "sect everywhere spoken against." James M. Sargent was elected clerk, George Todd, moderator; Joseph Anderson, treasurer; Harris Nichols, collector and sexton.

The first meeting-house owned by this society was built on the lot on Union street, where now stands the East Baptist Church. The contract price was $3,775, but before completion the structure had cost $4,625. The building was dedicated December 5, 1835; in 1850 it was enlarged, as more audience room was needed. In 1864, in the midst of the Civil War, it was found necessary again to enlarge the church. Many changes were made, and when completed more than $8,500 had been spent before dedication took place. Only four years later there was a demand for a better and larger church building; the question was agitated until 1870, when it was decided to build a new church. March 20, 1871, the society sold the old church to the Union Street Free Baptist denomination for $20,000, and later the present East Baptist Church

society purchased the property. In January, 1871, the William S. Boyce estate on Nahant street was purchased by the Universalists, at a cost of $30,000. Other grounds were subsequently purchased, so that now the beautiful edifice, together with the parish house, is centrally located on Nahant street, at Washington Square. The corner-stone of the present building was laid May 27, 1872. The building was dedicated September 11, 1873. The structure is a handsome brick, trimmed in free-stone. The church, furnishings and land cost about $145,819, including the $90,000 donated by three young business men of the parish—Benjamin F. Doak, Joseph Davis, and Benjamin F. Spinney. Three hundred and eighty-six persons subscribed to this building enterprise. The seventy-fifth anniversary of this church took place March 22, 1908, and its program was exceptionally interesting in church circles of Lynn.

The substantial parish-house adjoining the church on Nahant Place was the gift of the late Earl A. Mower, the same having been his home. The church now has invested benevolence funds amounting to $34,000. The investment fund income for current expenses is $25,000. There has been a Sunday school connected with this church ever since its organization, and today it has an active membership of about 500 pupils and teachers. The pastor is now acting superintendent. The church has fully maintained its high position in the religious and civic life of the community. The board of management includes Fred H. Nichols (chairman), Harry M. Read, Arthur H. Stiles, Samuel T. Patterson, George H. Ball, Edward F. Breed, Charles E. Rolfe, Samuel L. Fisher, Arthur W. Pinkham, Harrison P. Burrill, clerk. The pastors have been: Revs. Josiah C. Waldo, 1833-38; Lemuel Willis, 1839-42; Horace Gardner Smith, 1843-44; Merritt Sanford, 1844-48; Darwin Mott, 1848-50; Eldredge Gerry Brooks, D.D., 1850-59; Sumner Ellis, 1860-62; Charles Wesley Biddle, D.D., 1862-79; John Colman Adams, D.D., 1880-84; James Minton Pullman, D.D., 1885-1903; Henry Blanchard, D.D., 1903-05; Frederick Williams Perkins, 1905, and still serving as pastor in 1921.

The First Baptist Church was founded in Lynn in 1816. No doubt the interference with State affairs created more opposition to this denomination at an early day than did their religious doctrines and teaching. However, that may have been, they were greatly persecuted, as were the Friends of that date. But long before the church was organized in Lynn, persecutions had ceased. They formed their society and erected a good frame church building on North Common street, but not until 1867 was this building completed and worshiped in. On the same spot the church still worships. Among the pastors prior to the Civil War were Revs. George Phippen, 1816; Ebenezer Nelson, Jr., Daniel Chessman, commenced in 1830; L. Stillman Bollers, came in 1833; Joel S. Bacon in 1837; Hiram A. Graves came in 1840; Thomas Driver in 1843, and William C. Richards in 1849. The writer is not in possession of the pastors' names from 1849 to 1884, when Rev. Francis T. Hazelwood came and re-

mained until 1891; Tillman B. Johnson, 1891-1902; James A. Braker, 1903-11; Addison B. Lorimer, 1912-20; Rev. Eben F. Francis, present pastor. The present membership is 651; the Sunday school attendance is large. The superintendent is W. W. Wass. The present value of the church edifice is estimated at $65,000; value of the parsonage and lot, $10,000.

From this, the parent church of the Baptist denomination in Lynn, has sprung numerous church organizations, including the following: East Baptist Church, of which see later description by the pastor, Rev. Arthur E. Harriman, D.D.; the Essex Street Union Baptist Church, Rev. Thomas Cain, pastor; the Lynnfield Baptist Church, Rev. Lewis Malvern, D.D.; the Washington Street Baptist Church, Rev. Chester J. Underhill, and the Zion Baptist Church, at Meadow Park, Rev. Jerome W. Miller, pastor. What was known as the Third Baptist Church was founded in 1858, of which organization Rev. Charles H. Cole was pastor in 1861. The High Street Free-Will Baptist Church was organized in 1858, and had for its first pastors, Revs. J. H. Tilton and Alfred Owen.

The following history of East Baptist Church is contributed.

On Tuesday evening, April 21, 1874, the East Baptist Church of Lynn was regularly organized with sixty-five constituent members. At this meeting the so-called "New Hampshire Confession of Faith," prepared by the Rev. J. Newton Brown, was adopted and a call was extended to the Reverend John S. Holmes. The first public service for worship was held on Sunday, April 28, the sermon being preached by the Reverend E. Benjamin Andrews, a student in the Newton Theological Institution, and, later, President of Brown University. For some weeks, until Mr. Holmes was able to enter upon his pastoral duties, Mr. Andrews continued to supply the pulpit and to his wise, enthusiastic leadership the church is greatly indebted.

A council, called in accordance with Baptist usage, met in Lynn on Thursday, May 14, and voted "to recognize the East Baptist Church of Lynn as a regular and independent church of Christ." The public service of recognition was held on Tuesday, May 19, the preacher being the Reverend Wayland Hoyt, D.D., then pastor of the Warren Avenue Baptist Church of Boston. Dr. Hoyt took for his text, Galatians 6:2, "Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ." It was a strong, eloquent and stimulating discourse and, in church anniversary meetings, it is still referred to by those who were present nearly half a century ago.

In the present meeting-house, the church was formed and launched upon its prosperous career, thought at that time the property was owned by the Free Baptist Church. After renting the edifice for about a year and a half, the East Church purchased the land and building for $18,000.

Mr. Holmes entered upon his pastoral labors on Sunday, July 5, 1874, and had the privilege, at his initial service, of administering the ordinances of Baptism and the Lord's Supper. Under the pastor's direction, the needful auxiliary societies were organized and all possible steps were taken to make the work of the new church efficient and fruitful. Congregations and church school attendance rapidly increased in numbers,

and many persons united with the church. It was with deep regret that the church parted from its first pastor. Deeming it his duty to accept a call to the Baptist church in Adrian, Michigan, Mr. Holmes closed his labors on the fourth anniversary of his settlement over the East Church. Mr. Holmes was a man of winsome personality, wise in counsel, and skilful in his conduct of parish work. On his occasional visits to Lynn, he was always given an ovation by his old parishioners. His recent death is lamented by many. Through the generosity of the Misses Sawtell, the church has been presented with a trust fund to be known as "The Reverend John S. Holmes Memorial Fund." The gift is made in memory of the late Miss Lena Holmes Sawtell, a namesake of the first pastor and a sister of the donors.

Immediately following the departure of Mr. Holmes, the Reverend Henry Hinckley, Harvard '60, entered upon his fruitful pastorate of fifteen years' duration. Coming to the church after two years of study in the Newton Theological Institution, and sixteen years of pastoral work, he brought a set of matured convictions and a disciplined practical judgment, which helped to make him a rare leader. He was a man of studious habits and a clear and forceful writer. He brought eternal truth to bear upon human lives in a strong, positive and unforgetable manner. His sermons are still bearing fruit in the lives of those who waited upon his ministry. He was a good pastor and cherished the conviction that "a house-going minister means a church-going people." Taking a deep interest in the spiritual welfare of young men, Mr. Hinckley was successful in directing several of them into the work of the ministry. One of Mr. Hinckley's "boys" is the Reverend Arthur W. Cleaves, D.D., editor of "The Baptist," the official organ of the Northern Baptist Convention. During this pastorate, also, there was founded in the East Church one of the strongest C. E. Societies in this part of the country. Mr. Hinckley was privileged to lead great numbers of people into the baptismal waters and, in every way, the church prospered under his leadership. Beginning his ministry on October 3, 1878, he took a letter of dismission, September 22, 1893, in order to enter upon the pastorate of the Roslindale Baptist Church of Boston.

The third pastor of the church was the Reverend Edwin A. Hainer, whose ministry of four years extended from 1894 to 1898. He came to Lynn from the pastorate of the First Christian Church of Haverhill, Massachusetts. Warm-hearted, sympathetic, approachable, Mr. Hainer soon won a strong hold upon the affection of his Lynn parish. He had a firm grasp upon the essential truths of Christianity and proclaimed them simply, clearly and persuasively. He was pre-eminently an evangelist, and he had the joy of hearing many ask, "What must I do to be saved?" One of the notable achievements of this pastorate was the founding of the "Hainer Class," an organization of men for Bible study. Mr. Hainer left Lynn to accept a pastorate in New Jersey. Later, he was called to a pastorate in Providence, and, while in the active discharge of that fruitful ministry, he was called to the Church Triumphant. About a year ago the Hainer Class established a permanent fund, which will be henceforth known as "The Reverend Edwin A. Hainer Memorial Fund." This memorial will perpetuate the name and labor of a man loved and honored during his life and deeply mourned in his death.

For its next pastor, the church called the Reverend Neil Andrews, Jr., pastor of the Baptist church in Shelburne Falls, Mass. Mr. Andrews graduated from Brown University in the class of 1892, and from

the Newton Theological Institution in the class of 1895. He served the church from 1899 to the latter part of 1901. Soon after leaving Lynn, Mr. Andrews entered upon the study of medicine. He is now a practicing physician in the Middle West.

On December 1, 1901, Rev. Arthur E. Harriman of Leominster, Massachusetts, became pastor of the East Church, and, with the exception of one year, has continued in the discharge of the duties of the pastorate. The present membership of the church is 620 and the church school has a total enrollment of 1145. The value of the church lot and edifice is estimated at $40,000.

The Board of Deacons is as follows: Joseph H. Cochey, Warren M. Breed, Robert O. Bent, George Walker, Lester B. Strout, Frank Strickland, Harry D. Brown, Lester J. Crawford, William L. Hatfield and Ralph M. Wade. Church Clerk, Harrie R. Bean; treasurer, Harry D. Brown; Director of Religious Education, Lester B. Strout; Auditor, Miss Caro R. Leland.

The following Catholic Church history is contributed:

A Catholic historian declared some time ago, "Religious statistics in our country have been at all times in a misty, unsatisfactory condition." This is, for Catholics of our time, and will be still more for those of the future, a deplorable fact; and yet, we can blame no one. In the busy lives of our first priests,—the only ones whom we expect to have kept records of those interesting days—there was little leisure for anything of the kind. Now, however, circumstances are more favorable; and, in many parishes, a calendar or something similar is used to record important parochial affairs, which, though briefly told, as needs must be, will still serve as interesting reminders of the past. As a foundation for these future records, the following brief sketch may be presented.

In 1790 the whole United States was one diocese, under Bishop Carroll. 1796, first record of visit of Catholic priests to eastern coast of Massachusetts, outside of Boston. 1808, Rev. John Cheverus consecrated Bishop of Boston, his diocese being all New England.

No doubt the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass was celebrated for the few Catholic families in Lynn; but we have no record of those days. There is a record that the first Mass celebrated in Lynn was in a house on Waterhill street, in the western part of the city, in the year 1835; and the room of that house was sufficiently large to accommodate all the Catholics of the city.

In 1841 Rev. Charles Smith, pastor of Chelsea, took charge of the Catholics of Lynn and its immediate vicinity; and he made it a mission of Chelsea. In 1848 the Catholics purchased a frame building which had served in turn for a Methodist church, a Baptist church, and for a schoolhouse. This church, forty feet by forty feet, accomodated the people for several years. It was situated in the Arcade on Ash street. Father Smith died in January, 1851. Shortly after the death of Father Smith, Father Strain was appointed pastor of Chelsea by Most Rev. Archbishop Williams. During the pastorate of Father Strain at Chelsea, Lynn remained a mission to Chelsea. The Catholics of Lynn at that time numbered about three hundred, and they attended their little church on Ash street until it was burned down on the 28th of May, 1859. It was generally believed that the fire was of incendiary origin. Meanwhile, in 1858, Father Strain purchased land on Lynnfield street for a cemetery

which is now called Old St. Mary's Cemetery to distinguish it from the New St. Mary's which adjoins the old, and which was laid out in 1908. The old cemetery was blessed November 4, 1858, and its lots are all taken up.

After the destruction of the first church, the Catholics, with Father Strain at their head, secured the use of Lyceum Hall, corner of Market and Summer streets, where now stands Odd Fellows Hall, for divine and other devotional services. In 1860 the site for the present St. Mary's Church was purchased, and immediately Father Strain opened negotiations with P. C. Kirby, a Brooklyn, New York, architect, and set about the building of the magnificent Gothic structure, St. Mary's Church, a monument to his zeal and piety. This structure, located in City Hall Square, was completed and dedicated in 1862. In 1867 Father Strain took up his residence in Lynn, and Lynn ceased to be a mission of Chelsea.

In 1872 Father Strain turned his attention to the mission of Nahant. In that year he secured land on the main street, ad built upon it the present church, which was dedicated to St. Thomas Aquinas. During all these years Father Strain, with one assistant, administered to the wants of the people of his parish, which comprised all of the city of Lynn, Nahant, Swampscott and Saugus.

In June, 1874, a new parish was formed in the eastern section of the city. To it Rev. J. C. Harrington, who was at that time assistant to Father Strain, was appointed by Most Rev. Archbishop Williams. Father Harrington, while building his beautiful church on Union street, corner of West Green street, hired for the time being the Christian meeting house on Silsbee street for the accomodation of his people, in which he had regular srvices on Sundays and days throughout the week. As soon as his church was roofed, he fitted up the basement and made use of it as a church until the building was completed. The cornerstone of the new church was laid by Most Rev. Archbishop Williams July 4, 1875. The church, dedicated to St. Joseph, was opened in the basement for divine service Christmas Day, 1875. In June, 1884, St. Joseph's Church was completed and dedicated, June 21st of the same year.

In 1879, Father Harrington purchased a large tract of land in Wyoma, thirty-two acres, for a cemetery, had it surveyed, and laid out in lots. At the present time most of these lots are taken.

In 1880 the parochial residence on Green street was purchased by Father Harrington, and is still occupied by the pastor and assistants, though at the present writing a new one is being built.

In 1886 the number of French Canadians had become considerable in the city. The pastor of the French Canadians of Salem, Rev. N. Gadoury, since deceased, under the instruction of the Archbishop, secured land for the building of a parish church on the corner of Franklin and Endicott streets. The church was commenced in March, 1886, and was completed in 1887 under the supervision of Father Gadoury. It was dedicated under the patronage of St. Jean Baptiste, by Archbishop Williams, December 4th, 1887. Rev. J. B. Parent was appointed pastor of St. Jean Baptiste, December 9, 1887. He took up his residence at Lynn December 18th of the same year. The following year he built the parochial residence in which he and his assistants lived up to the time of his death, and which is now occupied by his successor.

During Father Parent's thirty-three years pastorate in Lynn he did extraordinary work for his people. He bought two large lots in the rear of the church. In 1892 he extended the sacristy of his church on

one of these and in the extension established a temporary school which was taught by two lay teachers. In May, 1899, he commenced the erection of the large parochial school on Endicott street. This magnificent school was opened in September, 1900, under the direction of the Sisters of St. Ann, from Canada, who took up their residence in a portion of the school building. The school opened with 620 pupils. At the present time (1920), the school has 850 pupils. Father Parent did all the work of the parish without any assistant up to the year 1892. Shortly after the completion of the large school house, Father Parent bought an estate adjoining the church property on Endicott street, and converted the building on it into a convent for the Sisters, where they still reside. A few years before his death he purchased land on Boston street, opposite St. Joseph's Cemetery, for a parochial cemetery, and laid it out for the burial of his deceased parishioners. Father Parent was in bad health a few years previous to his death. He died January, 1919, beloved by his people and honored by the citizens of Lynn. Father Parent left a complete parish to his successor.

In the year 1880 Monsignor Strain crowned the whole of his magnificent work in Lynn by the building and establishing of a large and commodious parochial school close to St. Mary's Church, a school capable of containing nine hundred scholars. This school was opened in September, 1881, with five hundred children, the Sisters of Notre Dame of Namur having been engaged as teachers. A house on Tremont street with a large lot of land in the rear of the school building, was purchased and converted into a convent, the large lot of land serving as recreation ground for the Sisters. The Sisters were aided in their educational work by two lay teachers for the larger boys.

In the month of February, 1893, Monsignor Strain after a long and fruitful pastorate was called to his reward. He was highly respected and much loved by the whole community of our city, both Protestant and Catholic, which was strikingly manifested on the day of his funeral. Instead of the few lines to which we are confined in our sketch of Catholicity in Lynn, many pages might be devoted to the life and virtues of this holy man who was God's principal instrument in effecting the glorious results which we witness in our city today. Monsignor Strain, being the first pastor of Lynn and its immediate vicinity, it is proper that a short obituary notice be given of him in this sketch.

This revered priest was born in Ireland in 1827; came to this country at an early age; and after many years of earnest preparation for the exalted duties of the priesthood, both in this country and in France, was ordained at St. Sulpice, in Paris, in the spring of 1850. On his return from France he was, as has been already stated, appointed to the pastorate of Chelsea and Lynn, with the results already stated. At the age of sixty-five he was made permanent rector by Archbishop Williams; in 1887 he was raised to the dignity of Missionary Apostolic to the Holy See, and four years later received the Royal purple of a Domestic Prelate to the Pope, with the title of Right Reverend Monsignor. Notwithstanding advancing age, Monsignor Strain was still planning for the advancement of the church and the welfare of his people, when in the spring of 1892 he was brought to death's door by illness resulting from a severe cold contracted some time before, during his return voyage from a visit to the Holy Father. He rallied from that, however, for a few months until the early winter, when he was again seized with illness. He recovered sufficiently to say Mass,—his last—on Christmas morning.

Again he was stricken; and from that time forth, grew weaker and weaker until Tuesday, February 7, 1893, when, fortified by the Sacraments of the Church, with which he had consoled thousands of dying Christians, he passed to his reward. His funeral services on Friday morning, February 10, were most solemn and impressive. His Grace Archbishop Williams and a multitude of priests testified by their presence their respect for the memory of their departed brother, while the whole city of Lynn mourned an esteemed friend; and his parishioners wept for a beloved and faithful Father.

About one month after the death of Monsignor Strain, Rev. Arthur J. Teeling, who was pastor of Newburyport for twenty-two years, was appointed pastor of St. Mary's Parish by Most Rev. Archbishop Williams, since which time the writer of this article, the present pastor of St. Mary's, is quite familiar with the history of Catholicity in Lynn.

In the month of April, 1893, Father Teeling took up his residence in Lynn. He hired a house on Western avenue; he tore down the old parochial house and set about the building of the present parochial residence, which was finished and occupied the beginning of February, 1894. July 10, 1893, the land and house, which stood between the parochial residence and the church grounds, was purchased from Sarah E. Tirrell of Weymouth. The building remained on the Tirrell estate until the year 1900. Meanwhile, the church having no basement, the want of a place for morning Masses, hearing confessions, meetings of societies, was very much felt; consequently the pastor set about the forming of a chapel out of the two schoolrooms, in the northeastern part of the school building, in September, 1894. This chapel was dedicated under the patronage of the Sacred Heart, and its marble altar consecrated by his Grace Most Rev. Archbishop Williams, on November 21st, 1894.

In the month of May, 1894, the pastor purchased a lot of land,—17,000 square feet with the buildings thereon—on Boston street, opposite Cottage street, for the forming of a new parish. This estate was known as the Merril and Collins property. Shortly afterwards he purchased the whole of the adjoining property, known as the Colburn estate, comprising 60,750 square feet, making in all 77,750 square feet. In the middle of June that same year, the deeds of these pieces of land with buildings thereon were handed to the Most Rev. Archbishop. The first—17,000 square feet with the building located upon it—was paid for by St. Mary's Parish and presented as a gift to the new parish about to be formed. In the latter part of the month of June, 1894, the Most Rev. John J. Williams appointed the Rev. Denis F. Sullivan, then assistant at Malden, to take charge of the new parish. Father Sullivan came to reside in Lynn, in a house near the church grounds, in the beginning of July, and gave to the new parish the name of the Sacred Heart. He built a large and commodious house on a portion of the Colburn estate for a parochial residence and took up his abode therein the beginning of 1895. He hired a building on Wyman street, formerly a cigar factory, and used it for religious purposes, until he completed the basement of the parish church on the land mentioned above, in the year 1896, which being roofed over and made water-tight, was used as a church until the completion of the building. When Father Sullivan was appointed pastor he also acquired the whole of the town of Saugus as a mission. In 1898 Father Sullivan built a church at Pleasant Hills in the town of Saugus, and dedicated the church to the Blessed Sacrament the following year. Father Sullivan was ever desirous of providing for the children of his

parish a Christian education and training. In the spring of 1902 he commenced the building of his parochial school, on Robinson street. This school opened its doors for the children in the month of September, 1902, with the Sisters of Notre Dame of Namur as teachers, who took up their residence in the school building, where they reside at the present writing. Father Sullivan died after a lingering illness, in July, 1905. It may well be said of him: "In breve explevit tempus multa."

On account of the large number of children in St. Mary's School and because the Sisters could not take charge of the larger boys—the number of the pupils had increased from four hundred to nine hundred—the pastor deemed it advisable to secure four Brothers of the Christian Schools, from Manhattan College, New York, to instruct the larger boys. The Brothers made their entry into the parish, August, 1895, four in number, and took up their residence in a house, (which was the property of the parish), 47 Tremont street. After a few years residence in this house, the pastor built for them a very fine residence, of which they took possession in the year 1907. The Brothers performed their work as teachers for several years. In the year 1917 the Sisters agreed to teach the larger boys, and as a consequence the Brothers took their departure from Lynn at the close of the school year of 1917.

The Sisters' Convent on Tremont street being in a rather dilapidated condition, it was found necessary to build for them a large and convenient home; this building, situated in the rear of St. Mary's School, was commenced in May and completed in December. The Sisters took possession of their new home a few days before Christmas, 1895, and there they still reside.

In January, 1896, a large tract of land, the Newhall estate, was purchased by the pastor for cemetery purposes; it was the property adjoining the St. Mary's Cemetery. He also purchased the Dawson estate which adjoined it, making in all, about seventeen acres. In taking charge of the parish, Father Teeling found that all the land for burial purposes in the old cemetery had been taken up, and as these two lots adjoined the old cemetery, it was deemed advisable to secure them. This land was surveyed and laid out in lots in the years 1906 and 1907, and commenced to be used for burial purposes in 1908.

On account of the increase of the number of parishioners in the southwestern part of St. Mary's Parish, the pastor purchased lots of land on the corner of Light and Hathaway streets. On June 27th, 1896, he commenced the building of a church and school, a combination building. It was solemnly dedicated, under the patronage of St. Patrick, and its beautiful marble altar, presented by Mr. P. B. Magrane, consecrated by Archbishop Williams, on December 10th, 1896. The school department of this building was opened in September, 1897.

Father Harrington, pastor of St. Joseph's, recognizing the necessity of a parochial school for the children of his parish, secured for this purpose a large piece of land with a building thereon on Green street, adjoining the land on which stands the parochial house. In the spring of 1898 he commenced the erection of his beautiful school, which with the fourteen rooms and the large hall is, without exception, architecturally and otherwise, the finest grammar school building in Lynn. While building the school he fitted up a large house which stood on the southern part of the lot for a Convent for the Sisters of St. Joseph, whom he had already engaged as teachers of this school. Father Harrington opened this school in September, 1899.

To return to St. Mary's Parish; as the number of Sisters had considerably increased, an addition to the Convent was built in the summer of 1901, and thereby the Convent was furnished with ten more rooms. In July, 1901, the unsightly building, 2 South Common street, then standing on the Tirrell estate, which had been purchased in 1893, was removed; and an opportunity was thus given to put the grounds of the church and parochial residence in their present satisfactory condition. Foreseeing the necessity of a primary school in the northwestern part of the parish, the pastor of Saint Mary's built upon land which he had individually purchased some years previous, a school of four rooms. The building was so constructed that by folding the doors which formed the division of the schoolrooms, one main auditorium was formed. In this auditorium, on Sundays and holydays, the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass was offered for the benefit of the people who resided in that neighborhood. The building was dedicated August 10, 1902, under the title of St. Anthony of Padua, by the pastor, who presented the land and building as a personal gift to the people. On that day Mass was celebrated for the first time, and continued to be celebrated regularly until the building was presented as a gift to the Parish of the Sacred Heart, on condition that it be ever after used for school purposes. School had been opened in the building in September, 1902. With the building there was also given over to that parish a block of territory in that section, which was inhabited by about seven hundred Catholics.

In the year 1902, the pastor of St. Mary's had the parish church renovated by putting in new stained-glass windows, and a beautiful marble altar, and marble sanctuary rail; and on September 1st, 1902, this magnificent structure was solemnly consecrated to God by Rt. Rev. Bishop John Brady, auxiliary Bishop of the diocese (since deceased), his Grace Archbishop Williams celebrating Pontifical High Mass on the occasion.

The people of Nahant, who had been attended by the priests of St. Mary's for the previous thirty years, desired a separate parish, and St. Mary's pastor consulted with the Most Reverend Archbishop, and the latter raised Nahant to that dignity. St. Thomas Aquinas Church, at Nahant, was built and dedicated during the administration of Monsignor Strain, as already stated. The Archbishop appointed Rev. Francis P. Hannawin, then assistant at St. Mary's, pastor of St. Thomas' Church, Nahant; and he soon after purchased a house beside the church and took up his residence in the parish. Father Hannawin was assistant to the pastor of St. Mary's from the time of his ordination first at Newburyport, and then at Lynn, until his appointment at Nahant. Father Hannawin served Nahant as a faithful and devoted pastor for several years until he was promoted to the pastorate of Randolph, where he continues the faithful work in the vineyard of the Lord. He was succeeded at Nahant by Rev. William T. O'Connor, assistant at Wakefield, who during his seven years pastorate did good and laudable work. He removed the old parochial house, bought a large house with the land adjoining the church property, and laid out the grounds in a beautiful manner. Father O'Connor watched over his flock faithfully until he was promoted to the parish of West Quincy in the fall of 1918. The successor of Father O'Connor is the Rev. John F. Kelly, who still has charge of the parish.

In the month of April, 1904, Father Harrington, of St. Joseph's

Parish, secured a piece of land on Humphrey street in the town of Swampscott; and early in May commenced the building of a church for the people residing in that section of his parish. This handsome little church, facing on the main street, is an ornament to the town. It was dedicated under the title of St. John the Apostle, on the first Sunday of September, 1905, by the Right Reverend Bishop Brady.

During the years 1902, 1903 and 1904, the Polish people came in large numbers to Lynn; and they took up their residence principally in the western part of the parish. The pastor of St. Mary's accordingly felt that something should be done for these people; and after a consultation with the Most Reverend Archbishop, a Polish priest, Father Duda, was sent to them as pastor by the Archbishop. The Polish people under their new pastor assembled every Sunday in St. Mary's school chapel, and made the chapel their church for several months. In the summer of 1905, Father Duda commenced the building of a church on Summer street, near Cottage street. This building was completed in the early part of 1906, and was dedicated under the name of St. Stanislaus towards the end of April, 1906. Its name has since been changed to St. Michael. Shortly after the dedication, Father Duda resigned, and was succeeded by Rev. James Tatuski. Father Tatuski took up his residence in Lynn in October, 1906. Father Tatuski purchased the school-house, corner of Summer and Cottage streets, from the city, and opened it as a parochial school, September 7, 1919, with a community of Polish Sisters as teachers.

As all the rooms of the St. Mary's School building became necessary for the girls and the smaller boys, the pastor in July, 1904, started a building of four rooms in the summer of 1905. The Brothers and their classes of boys were transferred in September, 1905, to this building. On the departure of the Brothers from the parish, the high school girls occupied this building, and it is known as the Girls' High School.

In May, 1906, Father Harrington set apart the town of Swampscott and a portion of the eastern section of his parish in Lynn and handed the territory over to Archbishop Williams for a parish. In the same month the Archbishop appointed Rev. Patrick Coleman, at that time assistant to Father Harrington, its first pastor. One week after his appointment, Father Coleman took possession of the new parish. Father Coleman lived for a while in a house in the rear of the church, which he purchased. After a couple of years he purchased the large house facing on Humphrey street, next to the church, for a rectory, where he with his assistants reside at the present time. Father Coleman has labored hard for the welfare of his parish, which has considerably increased in population. He has increased the land tenure by purchasing lots in the rear of the church. His church is no longer a small church, for by adding to it he has doubled its sitting capacity.

In the month of June, 1906, the pastor of St. Mary's Parish put into execution his long cherished desire of making St. Patrick's of his parish—that is, the territory situated between the Saugus Branch railroad and the main road of the Boston & Maine railroad—a separate parish, by handing the same over to Archbishop Williams. In July of the same year, the Most Reverend Archbishop appointed Rev. Patrick Masterson, assistant and brother to Rev. M. J. Masterson, of Peabody, pastor of St. Patrick's Parish. He took possession of his

parish on his appointment; purchased a small house adjoining the church land; fitted it up for a rectory; purchased the land and house adjoining his own rectory; secured the Dominican Sisters of Springfield, Kentucky, as teachers for the children of the parochial school (who had been taught heretofore by the Sisters of Notre Dame from Saint Mary's Convent); and fitted up the house next to his own for a Convent. The Sisters now occupy the former rectory together with their convent as one house, making a far more roomy convent. The Parish Rectory is now located on Summer street, near the Saugus Branch railroad. Father Masterson, on account of health, resigned his pastorate at St. Patrick's, December, 1909.

On August 30th, 1906, the venerable Archbishop Williams died. He was lamented by the priests and people of the Archdiocese of Boston, over which he had presided for forty years. He was revered, venerated and beloved by all. His successor, Cardinal O'Connell, was consecrated Bishop of Portland, May 19, 1901; named Archbishop of Constantia and Coadjutor, with the right of succession, to the Archbishop of Boston, February 8, 1906; and on August 30, 1906, took in hand the government of the Archdiocese of Boston. He was created Cardinal by Pope Pius X on November 27, 1911. Cardinal O'Connell is a man of marked talent and wonderful ability. He governs his diocese with love and kindness.

After the resignation of Father Masterson, who died at Braintree, August, 1920, His Eminence Cardinal O'Connell appointed Rev. Philip Gormley, December 22, 1909, to the parish of St. Patrick. Father Gormley died January 8, 1911, after a brief illness. His Eminence the Cardinal appointed Rev. Florence Hallaran, then assistant at St. Peter's, Dorchester, to succeed Father Gormley, January 13. 1911. Father Hallaran purchased the house on Summer street, already referred to, during the month of February, 1912, and took up his residence there in the same month in the same year. Father Hallaran was promoted to the parish of Wakefield by His Eminence and took up his residence there in September, 1913, where he is still pastor. The Cardinal promoted Rev. Michael Welch, then pastor of Concord Junction, to the pastorate of St. Patrick's, in the month of September, 1913.

As we have seen, Father Sullivan, pastor of the Sacred Heart, died in July, 1905. Archbishop Williams appointed Rev. James Gilfether, then assistant at Newton, to the pastorate of the Sacred Heart, August, 1905. Father Gilfether immediately moved to Lynn and continued the work on the church, commenced by Father Sullivan. He raised the walls on the basement, and opened the magnificent church for public worship in the year 1908. He also improved the property by the purchase of more land upon which he proposed to build a convent for the Sisters, the teachers of his school. Father Gilfether died January 21, 1917.

On the death of Father Sullivan, Saugus ceased to be a mission of the Sacred Heart and was given to Rev. Timothy J. Holland, pastor of Maplewood. Father Holland built the basement of a future church on the main road between Saugus Centre and Cliftondale, which is now the parish church. In the month of May, 1917, Saugus ceased to be a mission of Maplewood, and His Eminence Cardinal O'Connell made it an independent parish, with Rev. Michael J. Coffey its pastor. Father Coffey at that time was assistant at the Church

of the Assumption, Brookline. Father Coffey took up his residence in Cliftondale, where he still resides.

In the early part of 1912, Father Harrington gave up a portion of his parish, known as Wyoma, and a portion of Glenmere, for a new parish. He purchased land for the church in this section and presented it to the new parish. In May, 1912, Cardinal O'Connell appointed Rev. John Gorham, then assistant at St. James, Haverhill, to be pastor of the new parish. Father Gorham on his appointment hired a house on Maple street opposite the land purchased for the church. He hired a hall on the corner of Western avenue and Maple street, where he conducted religious services for his people while he was building the basement of the future church, and gave the name of St. Pius to his parish. Father Gorham completed the basement and made it weather-tight and had regular services for his people therein for several years. Father Gorham was promoted to the parish of Woburn in March, 1917. Rev. William T. Deasey, assistant at Randolph, was appointed by His Eminence Cardinal O'Connell to the parish of St. Pius. Father Deasey took up his residence in the house formerly occupied by Father Gorham; purchased it, and made it the rectory for the parish. Father Deasey is laboring hard for the completion of the church. He will no doubt in a short time raise on the walls of the basement the future structure which will take its place among the beautiful Catholic churches of the city of Lynn.

Father Harrington, after laboring in the ministry for over forty years, died February 15, 1913. He was a true citizen and did much for the welfare of the city, and for the advancement of the church. His funeral services took place in the church built by him, February 18, 1913, his Eminence Cardinal O'Connell presiding at the Mass. A very large attendance of the clergy testified their love for the holy priest by their presence, and the church was filled to its utmost capacity by his loving and bereaved parishioners.

Cardinal O'Connell, shortly after the death of Father Harrington, appointed Rev. E. J. Dolan, pastor of St. Edward's Parish of (Montello) Brockton, to succeed Father Harrington as pastor of St. Joseph's. Father Dolan then engaged in the building of a large and convenient rectory on the corner of Green and Violet streets, facing on Green street.

In April, 1917, the pastor of St. Mary's laid the foundation for a large building on land purchased by him in 1914, for a Home for Working Girls. This large building, containing forty-five rooms for guests, was completed in the summer of 1918, and was dedicated by His Eminence, June 6, 1918, to God, under the title of St. Teresa House, that day being the fiftieth anniversary of Monsignor Teeling, pastor of St. Mary's, to the Holy Priesthood. It is a beautiful building, well equipped for its purpose, and is a boon to the working girls. Its location, under the title of St. Teresa House, is 32 City Hall Square. The House was opened in September, 1918, under the supervision of the Sisters of Charity of Nazareth, Kentucky. Finding the House was not large enough for all who desired entrance, the pastor the following year fitted up the former residence of the Brothers on Tremont street, for lodgers, who take their meals at the main house. Both at the present writing are filled with happy lodgers.

The great work accomplished for the good of religion could not have been effected without the commendable zeal of the many assist-

ants of the various parishes (some of whom have gone to their reward and others to their respective parishes), and the ever-to-be praised co-operation of the people.

The present assistants of parishes in our city are:

St. Mary's Church—Rev. Charles O'Brien, Rev. Joseph P. Lawless, Rev. Myles J. McSwiney.

St. Joseph's Church—Rev. Michael F. Madden, Rev. George A. Gately, Rev. William J. Clark.

St. Jean Baptiste Church—Rev. George Godreau, Rev. Remi J. Maynard.

Sacred Heart Church—Rev. William F. Lyons, Rev. Patrick J. O'Connell.

St. Patrick's Church—Rev. William J. O'Connell.

What great progress the Catholic Church has made in the city of Lynn may be learned from the perusal of the foregoing pages. Ever since the year 1893, what wonderful advance has been hers! In 1893 there were three parishes in the territory that comprises Lynn, Swampscott, and Nahant. Now there are eight parishes in that same territory. In the same territory in 1893 there were six priests. Now there are twenty-three. In the city of Lynn, in 1893, there was one parochial school with twelve Sisters to take charge of its four hundred children. Now there are six parochial schools, with ninety Sisters to take charge of their three thousand two hundred fifty pupils. Indeed, a wonderful growth!

It is fair to say that the Catholic population of the city of Lynn today is forty thousand. Compared with the few Catholics when they first came together for Divine Worship, what a wonderful increase in a little more than half a century!

The "History of Methodism," by Mr. Daniels, speaks of the experiences of Rev. Jesse Lee in New England, and especially in Lynn. "Here he was more hospitably received and there he founded his first society in Massachusetts. The date was February 20, 1791, and the first membership was only eight"; on the 27th of the same month he increased it to twenty-nine members. The first conference was held in Lynn, August 3, 1792—the first in New England. There were eight persons besides Bishop Asbury. Lynn also established the first Methodist Sunday school in New England, as well as formed the first Missionary Society in American Methodism. Many churches of this denomination have sprung from this the "first church." The First Methodist Episcopal Church edifice, in which the congregation still worships, at City Hall Square, was built in 1879; it is a fine large brick building, which today with other church property is valued at $109,000. The present membership is 553; Sunday School attendance, 476. The pastor (1921) is Rev. LeRoy W. Stringfellow.

St. Paul's Methodist Society was formed in 1811. The present house of worship was erected in 1861; it is a frame structure on Union street. The former building was totally destroyed by fire in 1859. This church now has a membership of 744, and a Sunday school attendance of 1,270. The property owned is valued at $36,000. The pastors have

been: John C. Smith, 1869-72; Daniel C. Knowles, 1872-75; Daniel Steele, 1875-78; David Sherman, 1878-81; Raymond F. Holway, 1881-84; William R. Clark, 1884-87; William H. Meredith, 1887-90; Levi W. Staples, 1890-94; William T. Worth, 1894-98; T. Corwin Watkins, 1898-99; R. C. T. McKenzie, 1899-1900, (supply only); E. T. Curnick, 1900-03; Charles Tilton, 1903-07; John D. Pickles, 1907-08; Donald H. Gerrish, 1908-16; Walter Healy, 1916-21; Francis W. Brett, 1921, still serving. Dr. Pickles died during his pastorate; Dr. Watkins went into the work of the New England Deaconess Association.

Boston Street Methodist Episcopal Church, Rev. Howard G. Hageman, has a membership of 720. This society was founded in 1853. The edifice on Boston street, Lynn, is valued at $30,000, with the land on which it stands. The Sunday school has an attendance of 848.

South Street Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in 1830. The present pastor is Rev. Ray Stevenson. The present membership is 273; Sunday school attendance, 316; value of church property, $20,000.

Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church was formed near Tower Hill, in 1873, and the neat frame edifice was built soon thereafter. The present pastor is Rev. E. L. Farnsworth; total membership, 302; Sunday school attendance is 455; value of present church property, $23,000.

Broadway Church, Rev. E. E. Small, present pastor, has a membership of 135, and Sunday school attendance of 250; value of property, $13,500.

Highland (Norwegian and Danish), Rev. G. M. Hansen, present pastor, with a small membership, and a building and lot worth $5,000.

Lake Shore Park Methodist Episcopal Church, on Bay State Road, Rev. Harry Hill, pastor, has ninety-six members; a Sunday school of 148; value of church property, $12,000.

Lakeside Methodist Episcopal Church, Rev. P. M. Hicock, pastor, has a membership of 148; Sunday school, 183; property valued at $5,200.

Maple Street Methodist Episcopal Church, old Glenmere Village, was formed in 1850. They built a frame building on Maple street in 1872. The present pastor is Rev. G. Morgan; present membership is 287; Sunday school attendance, 510; value of church property, $26,000.

St. Luke's Methodist Episcopal church, Oakwood avenue, Rev. D. T. Morton, pastor, has a membership of 222; Sunday school attendance of 493; valuation of church property, $18,500.

Dorr Memorial Methodist Episcopal Church, Rev. T. A. Tuttle, pastor, has twenty-three members; Sunday school of 102; value of property, $3,500.

Bethel A. M. E. Church, organized late in 1856, has had its home on what was formerly Mailey street, now Shorey, from the beginning. The present edifice was erected in 1906. The membership is approximately one hundred, with a Sunday school numbering the same. The church interests are administered by a board of nine trustees, while the

spiritual affairs are managed by a board of seven stewards. The Sunday school is under the superintendency of C. B. Gaines, who is assisted by a corps of teachers, most of whom are students in the Lynn School of Religion. The graded system prevails, and is composed of the junior, primary and adult departments. The present pastor, Rev. William H. Lacey, D.D., is now rounding out the fourth year of his service. A graduate of the Gammons Theological Seminary, Atlanta, he also spent three years in the Yale Graduate School of Religion. During his pastorate a number of improvements have been made in the church property, while a parsonage has also been added to the possessions of the society. The first settled pastor was Rev. Joseph P. Turner in 1857, with succeeding pastorates as follows: Ebenezer Williams, 1858; Edward Davis, 1860; William Chase, 1861; John Brown (afterwards elected bishop), 1864; Daniel Mason, 1865; Joseph Smith, 1866; William M. Johnson, 1868; John T. Hayslett, 1862; William J. Laws, 1871; James H. Madison, 1873; Stephen Douglas, 1875; Perry L. Stanford, 1877; Horace Talbot, 1879; Thomas Davis, 1883; John T. Hayslett, 1885; Joshua H. Jones (now a bishop), 1887; McC. Brooks, 1889; A. B. Whaley, 1892; F. D. Jacobs, 1893; John T. Hayslett, 1895; C. Thomas, 1896; W. Warwick, 1897; I. C. Sands, 1898; C. P. Cole, 1899; Beecher Carter, 1900; J. D. Nichols, 1902; J. Hagins, 1904; H. K. Spearman, 1906; W. H. Williams, 1909; H. M. Shirlds, 1911; I. S. Jacobs, 1913; J. H. Fordon, 1913; S. A. Lynch, 1914-17; and William H. Lacey, D.D., now serving.

The Saugus Methodist Episcopal churches are as follows: Cliftondale Church, Rev. J. G. Cairns, pastor; membership, 449; Sunday school attendance, 675; value of church property, $96,000. Saugus Center Church, Rev. W. Chicoine, pastor, membership, 52; Sunday school attendance, 117; value of church property, $3,000. East Saugus Church, Rev. F. A. Leitch, pastor; membership, 191; Sunday school, 372; value of church property, $31,000.

The Swampscott Methodist Episcopal Church is situated on Reddington street. The present pastor is Rev. M. M. Thornburg.

These Methodist churches have all sprung from the parent church—The First Methodist Episcopal church, formed by Rev. Jesse Lee, one hundred and thirty years ago.

St. Stephen's Protestant Episcopal Church in 1844 succeeded the corporation of Christ's Church, which was established in 1836, and had erected a house of worship on North Common street, but discontinued worship in 1841. Both successions of ministers are given to 1863 as follows: Revs. Milton Ward, 1836; George Waters, 1837; Frederick J. W. Pollard, 1839; William A. White (Lay Leader), 1841; George D. Wildes, 1844; Isaac W. Hallam, 1846; Edward H. True, 1860; George H. Paine, 1863. Mr. Ward was the first minister of Christ's Church and Mr. Wildes the first of St. Stephen's Church.

Really, the bed-rock of the Episcopal church work in Lynn was in

1819, when what was styled St. John's Church of Lynn was organized and at first much encouraged by Bishop Griswold. Ere long, the membership became too liberal for him, and he caused them to lay aside the Prayer Book and make no claim to membership of an Episcopal church, which they consented to do, and became Unitarian in their church faith.

The first services for St. Stephen's Church were held September 20th, 1844, at Edward S. Davis' house. There $1,620 was raised with which to buy back the old St. John's Church, then an unattractive building, styled the "little black church," on account of its dingy, slate color. But to hasten with what must be a brief mention of a wonderfully interesting church history, let it be said that the present edifice of St. Stephen's is among the finest in this section of the commonwealth. It was, in fact, a gift from Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge. It was consecrated November 2, 1881, and cost $250,000. Its exterior and interior are beautiful to behold. A chime of bells was added in 1886. The parish house cost $100,000; the rectory and other buildings cost $75,000. The present membership of this church is 3,500 adults and children. There are 1,350 families and individuals. The number of communicants is not far from 1,500. The Sunday school attendance is now about 675. One person should not be overlooked—the sexton, Charles K. MacLeod—who has served for twenty-five years, and now retired. The outstanding features of this church are its young people's clubs. The Order of Sir Galahad, for boys, has a membership of 350; the Fleur-de-Lis, for girls, has over 200 members; and the Girls' Friendly Society has about 100. Then there are the Mothers' Parish Society, St. Stephen's Club, the St. Luke's Chapter of Visitors, and the Altar Guild.

The rectors have been in the order here named: Revs. George D. Wildes, resigned, 1845; Isaac W. Hallam, resigned in 1860, and succeeded by Rev. Edward H. True; George S. Payne followed him as rector. January, 1865, Rev. Gordon M. Bradley became rector, at $600 a year; he resigned on account of ill health and was succeeded by Rev. B. W. Atwell, and he by Rev. Edward L. Drown, who received $2,500 per year. The next and in many ways the most important rector St. Stephen's has ever had was Rev. Louis De Cormis, who served until 1885, when he was succeeded by Rev. Frank L. Morton. In 1890, came Rev. James H. Van Buren, who was later elected Bishop. Then came Rev. Augustus H. Amory, who was brought to his death by breaking through the ice on Flax Pond, while on a pastoral call. Next came Rev. E. J. Dennen, rector from 1905 to 1914, succeeded by the present rector, Rev. W. Appleton Lawrence, whose assistant is Herbert L. Johnson.

The Church of the Incarnation was formed in Lynn in 1886, chiefly from members who withdrew from St. Stephen's Church. They built a handsome stone chapel at the corner of Broad and Estes streets, where they still worship. Rev. W. I. Morse is the present rector.

St. Andrew's Protestant Episcopal Church is maintained by sum-

mer residents. The chapel was built in 1860 and is open only during the watering season, and there have been no settled ministers.

The First Presbyterian Church has a building on Franklin, near Hanover street. The present pastor is Rev. Fred White Tingley. The writer could not obtain sufficient data upon which to formulate a history of this church.

The oldest burial place in Lynn is in the western part of the city. There rest the remains of the earliest fathers and mothers of Lynn. So far as known, the earliest burial there was the body of John Bancroft, in 1637. He was the ancestor of the distinguished historian, George Bancroft. It was here also that the first white male child born in Lynn (Thomas Newhall) was buried.

The Friends' Burial Place seems to have been set apart for sacred purposes about 1723, as it is recorded that Richard Estes conveyed to the Society of Friends an eligible lot of land at the corner of Broad and Silsbee streets, the deed being dated December 9, 1722. In 1826 one hundred and nine bodies of Friends were removed from the cemeteries of Boston to these grounds in Lynn.

What is known as the Eastern Burial-Place, on Union street, was opened in 1812, and now contains the sacred dust of many worthy people.

Pine Grove Cemetery was consecrated July 24, 1850. The first burial in these grounds was on Sunday, October 13, 1850. Down to 1885, there had been laid away to rest in this sacred enclosure the remains of 9,600 people, and of this number of interments, 465 were buried there during 1885.

St. Mary's (Roman Catholic) Cemetery, on Lynnfield street, near Wyoma, was consecrated November 4, 1858.

St. Joseph's (Roman Catholic) Cemetery, on Boston street, in the northeastern outskirts of Lynn, was consecrated October 16, 1879. (It should be added that the old burying-ground at Lynnfield was opened in 1720, and one at Saugus about 1732, both of these towns then being within Lynn).

The grounds above named as Lynn cemeteries, have from time to time, been enlarged with the growth of the city. They are now well kept and provided with all modern improvements and contain numerous beautiful and costly monuments.

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building

form 410